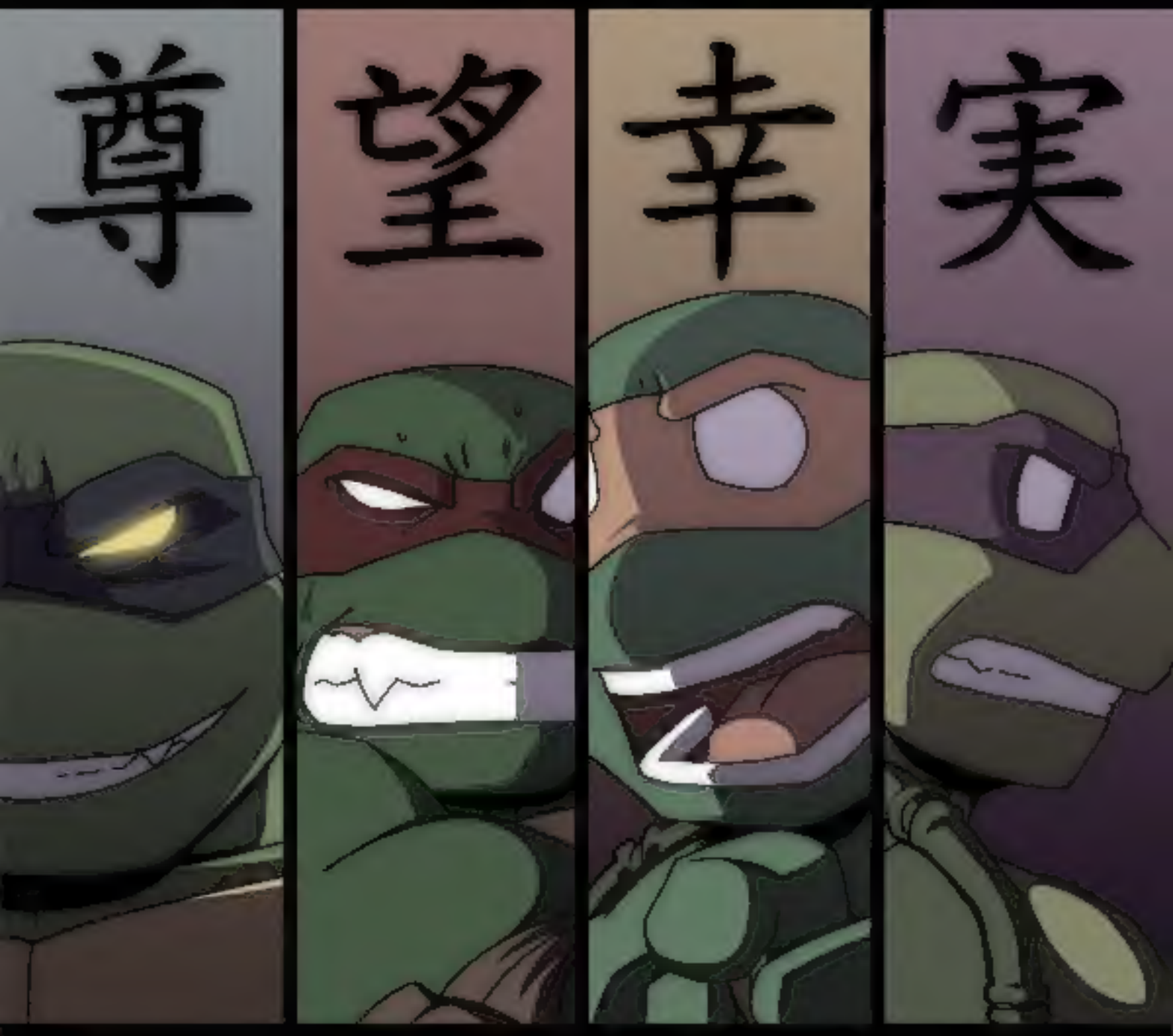
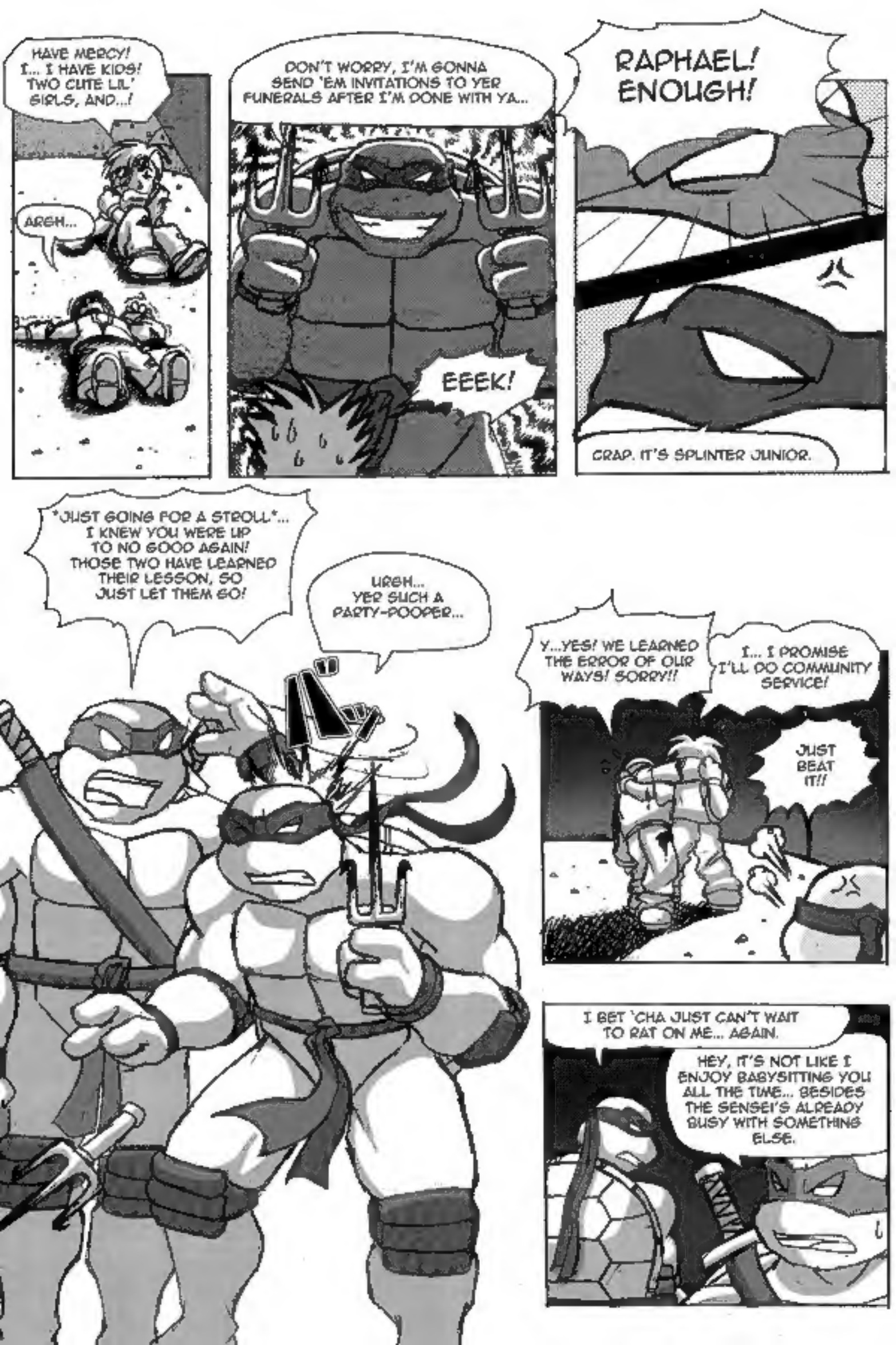
MUTANT NINJA TURTLES GAIDEN

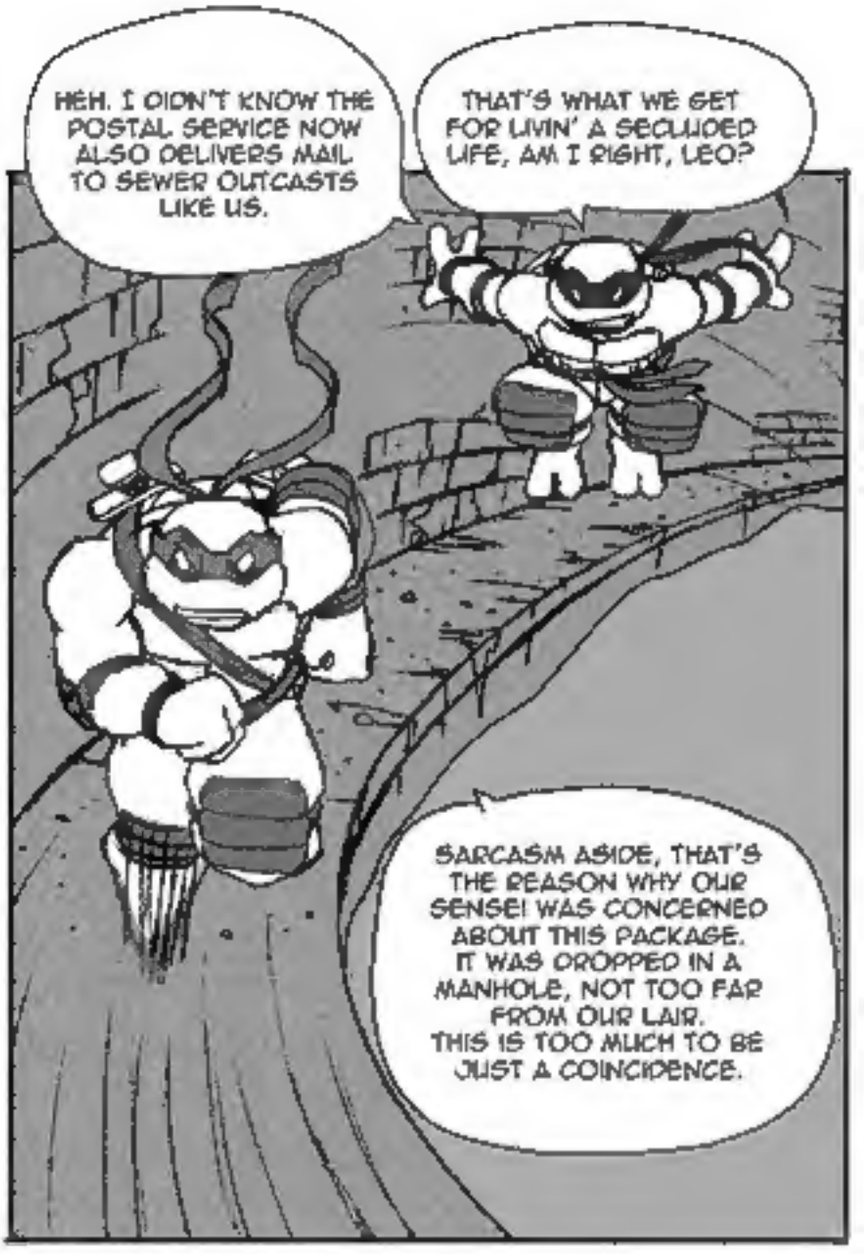


PROLOGUE


FEE-FI-FO-FUM. I SMELL THE BLOOD OF SCUMMY HOOLIGANS.
BE THEY POLITE OR BE THEY PRICKS...
LOOKIE HERE... TONIGHT'S LUCKY WINNER.
...I'LL BEAT THE CRAP OUTTA THEM FOR BEIN' SO DAMN UGLY.
IF YOU WANNA GET HOME IN ONE PIECE AND KISS YOUR WIFE G'NIGHT, YOU'D BETTER PAY THE TOLL.
COUGH UP THE DOUGH OR ELSE...
HEH.
BRING 'EM ON!
WHAT THE F...!
EEEP!


HAVE MERCY! I... I HAVE KIDS! TWO CUTE LIL' GIRLS, AND...!
ARGH...
DON'T WORRY, I'M GONNA SEND 'EM INVITATIONS TO YER FUNERALS AFTER I'M DONE WITH YA...
EEEK!
RAPHAEL! ENOUGH!
CRAP. IT'S SPLINTER JUNIOR.
JUST GOING FOR A STROLL... I KNEW YOU WERE UP TO NO GOOD AGAIN! THOSE TWO HAVE LEARNED THEIR LESSON, SO JUST LET THEM GO!
URGH... YER SUCH A PARTY-POOPER...
Y...YES! WE LEARNED THE ERROR OF OUR WAYS! SORRY!!
I... I PROMISE I'LL DO COMMUNITY SERVICE!
JUST BEAT IT!!
I BET 'CHA JUST CAN'T WAIT TO RAT ON ME... AGAIN.
HEY, IT'S NOT LIKE I ENJOY BABYSITTING YOU ALL THE TIME... BESIDES THE SENSEI'S ALREADY BUSY WITH SOMETHING ELSE.


YA MEAN HE'S ACTUALLY DOIN' SOMETHIN' ELSE THAN DRINKIN' TEA AND PRETENDIN' TO SLEEP?
TO ANSWER YOUR QUESTION, YES. HE "RECEIVED" A PARCEL FROM JAPAN THAT WAS DESTINED TO HIS LATE MASTER, HAMATO YOSHI.


HEH. I DIDN'T KNOW THE POSTAL SERVICE NOW ALSO DELIVERS MAIL TO SEWER OUTCASTS LIKE US.
THAT'S WHAT WE GET FOR LIVIN' A SECLUDED LIFE, AM I RIGHT, LEO?
SARCASM ASIDE, THAT'S THE REASON WHY OUR SENSEI WAS CONCERNED ABOUT THIS PACKAGE. IT WAS DROPPED IN A MANHOLE, NOT TOO FAR FROM OUR LAIR. THIS IS TOO MUCH TO BE JUST A COINCIDENCE.


OUR SENSEI EVEN THOUGHT THAT IT WAS A PRACTICAL JOKE FROM OUR FRIENDS ON THE SURFACE, LIKE APRIL OR CASEY. YOU KNOW, THE ONLY ONES WHO KNOW OUR LAIR'S LOCATION.
LIKE CASEY HAD THE TIME TO COME UP WITH A JOKE LIKE THAT...


HE'S SO BUSY FIGHTIN' CRIME ALL THE TIME... IN FACT I FEEL LIKE GOIN' OUT THERE AND JOININ' HIM NOW!
YEAH... NO WONDER YOU TWO GET ALONG SO WELL. BUT I'D SAY YOU'VE HAD ENOUGH ACTION FOR TODAY.
RAPHAEL, YOU'RE BACK!


MY SON... WHY DO YOU ALWAYS GO FOR SUCH LONG STROLLS WITHOUT LETTING ANY OF US KNOW? I KNOW YOU ARE FOND OF THE SURFACE, SO I'M CURIOUS... WHAT WERE YOU DOING UP THERE, ALL BY YOURSELF?
THIS IS NOT GOOD. I CAN SENSE MASTER SPLINTER'S ANGER. IF HE DOESN'T HEAR THE TRUTH, THINGS WILL GET UGLY.
THE OL' RAT'S IN A GOOD MOOD. I GUESS I CAN GET AWAY WITH IT TODAY.
I WAS JUST LOOKIN' AT 'EM TREES IN THE PARK. YA KNOW... TO COMPARE 'EM TO... ER.... MY SPIRIT WHEN I MEDITATE. YEAH!
MM. MM.
LEONARDO? ANYTHING YOU WANT TO SAY?


A.. ACTUALLY, MASTER SPLINTER. IT'S NOT TRUE. RAPHAEL DID FIGHT SOME PUNKS IN CENTRAL PARK. WHEN THEY BEGGED FOR THEIR LIVES, RAPHAEL DIDN'T INTEND TO RELENT. I HAD TO STEP IN TO STOP HIM.
!!

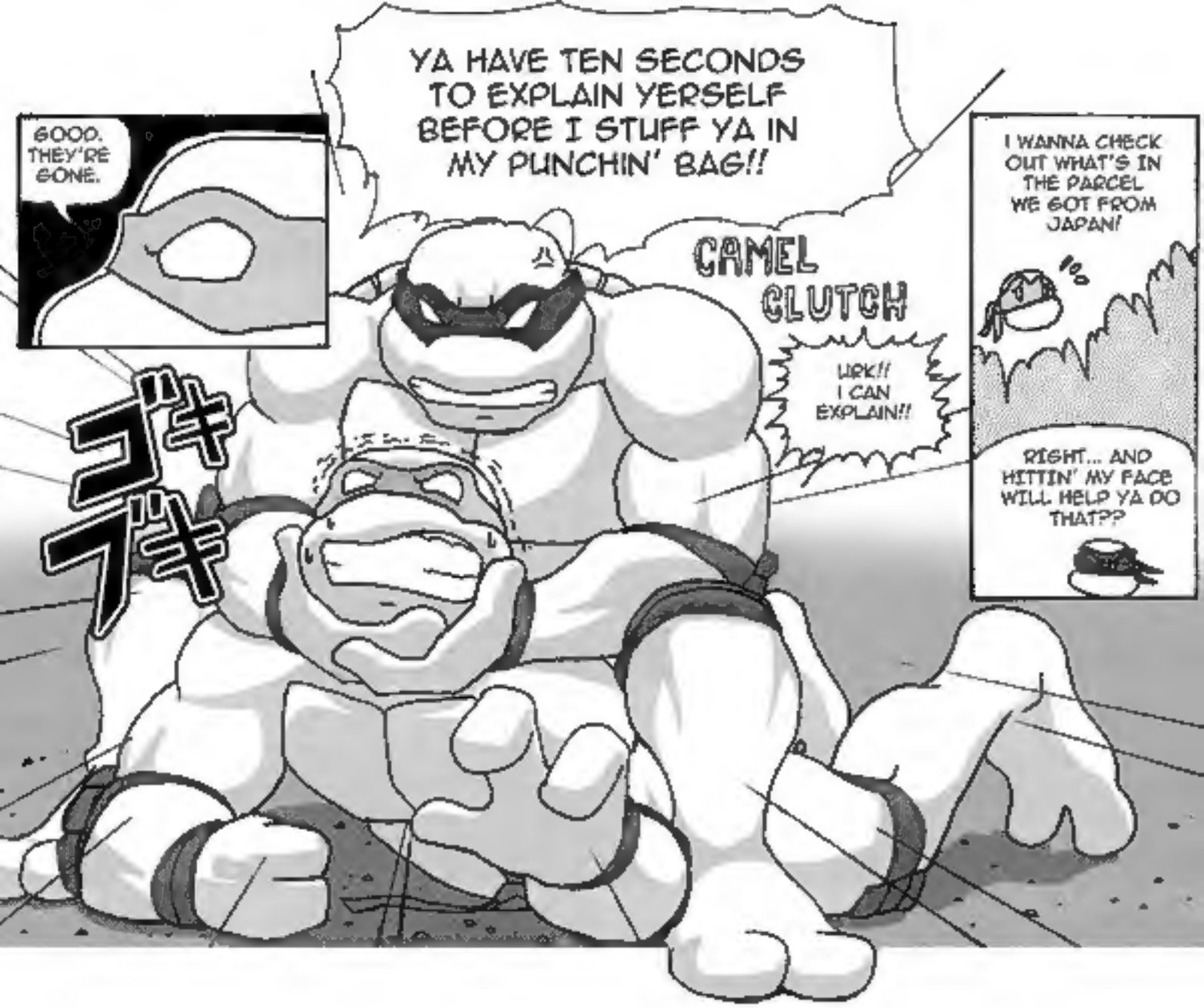

TSK TSK... I SHOULD'VE KNOWN.


HE JUST HAD TO SUCK UP TO SPLINTER NOW. JUST WHEN THINGS WERE GONNA WORK OUT FOR ME!


RAPHAEL... SOMETIMES YOU SIMPLY ASTONISH ME. NEVER FORGET THAT YOU ARE A NINJA. NOT A BARBARIAN. YOU MUST RELY ON STEALTH AND FINESSE, NOT BRUTE FORCE... I DON'T EVEN WANT TO KNOW WHAT PERVERSE EMOTIONS WENT THROUGH YOUR MIND WHILE YOU FOUGHT THOSE HUMANS.
YA, I KNOW!
YOU COULD'VE JUST KNOCKED THEM OUT AND LEFT THEM ALONE. BESIDES, THEY ARE NOT WORTH YOUR TIM
I GET IT, I GET IT!


GOOD. THEN I UNDERSTAND YOU'LL WHOLE-HEARTEDLY ACCEPT YOUR PUNISHMENT: YOU ARE NOT TO SET FOOT ON THE SURFACE FOR THE REMAINDER OF THIS MONTH. DO I MAKE MYSELF CLEAR?
WHA...? BUT I...
LEONARDO, COME WITH ME. I'D LIKE TO HAVE A FEW WORDS WITH YOU.

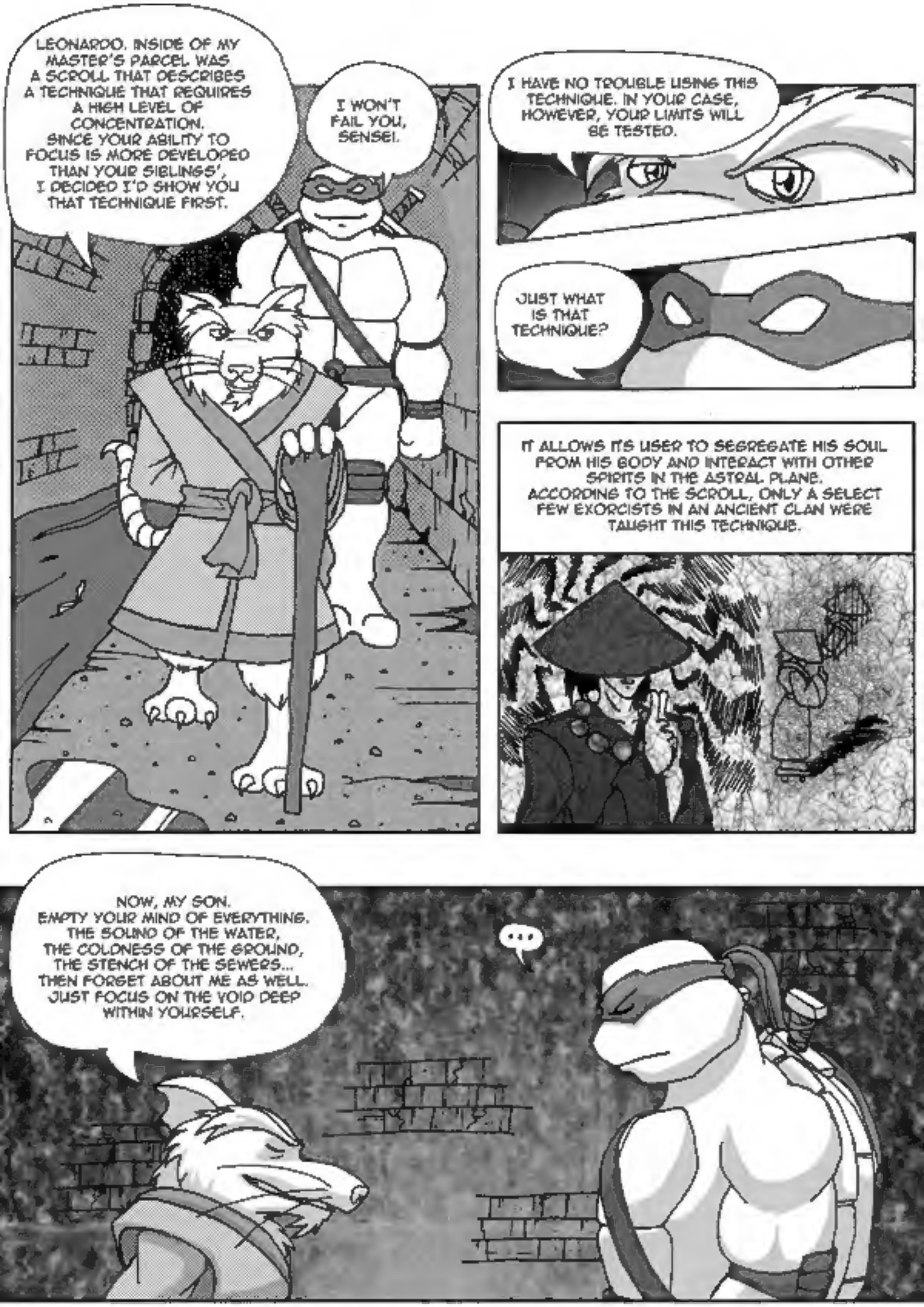

LEO! YOU...!
...
I WAS AN IDIOT TO TRUST YA! YA SAID YOU'D KEEP YER MOUTH SHUT!! TRAITOR!
I CAN'T LIE TO HIS EYES, RAPH.
THOSE TWO... ALWAYS CLASHING.
WHAT THE HELL'S THAT SUPPOSED TO MEAN??
YO, BRO! LET'S SPAR!!
OOF!!
HAHAHA! MOVE IT, YOU SLOWPOKE! THINK YOU CAN CATCH THE FASTEST TURTLE OF THE HAMATO CLAN?
GRRAR!
MIKEY'S QUICK ON HIS FEET.
COME, LEONARDO.


YA HAVE TEN SECONDS TO EXPLAIN YERSELF BEFORE I STUFF YA IN MY PUNCHIN' BAG!!
GOOD. THEY'RE GONE.
CAMEL CLUTCH
ゴキブキ
URK!! I CAN EXPLAIN!!
I WANNA CHECK OUT WHAT'S IN THE PARCEL WE GOT FROM JAPAN!
RIGHT... AND HITTIN' MY FACE WILL HELP YA DO THAT??

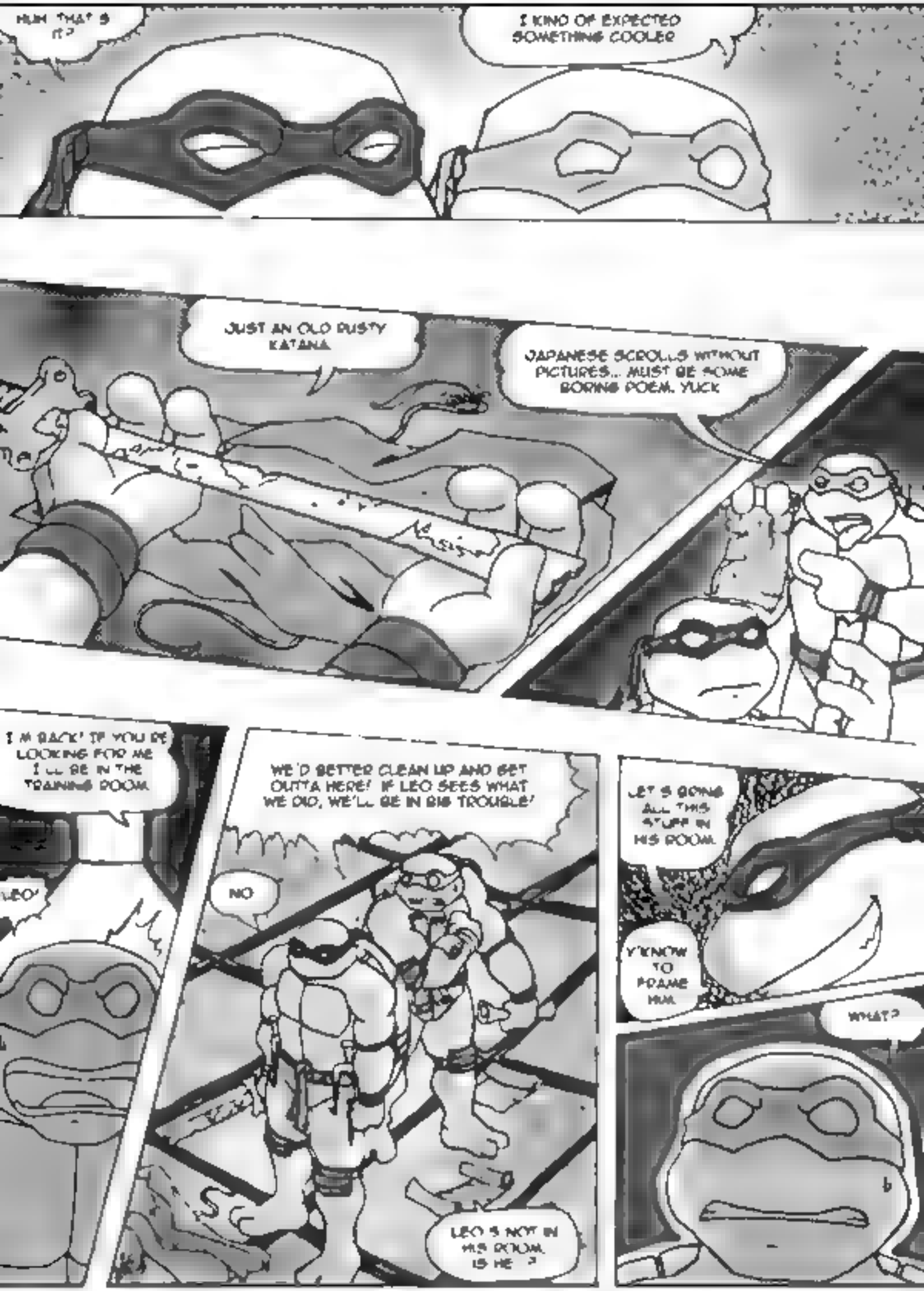

AAW... CHILL OUT, DUDE! THE LONGER YOU AND LEO BICKER OVER YOUR DIFFERENCES, THE LONGER THE SENSEI STAYS IN MY WAY! C'MOOOOON. I KNOW YOU'RE JUST AS CURIOUS AS I AM ABOUT THAT PARCEL!
WHATEVER. SOONER OR LATER... I'LL MAKE YOU PAY!


HEEHEE. I CAN'T BELIEVE I'M SNEAKING IN THE SENSEI'S ROOM.
ズー

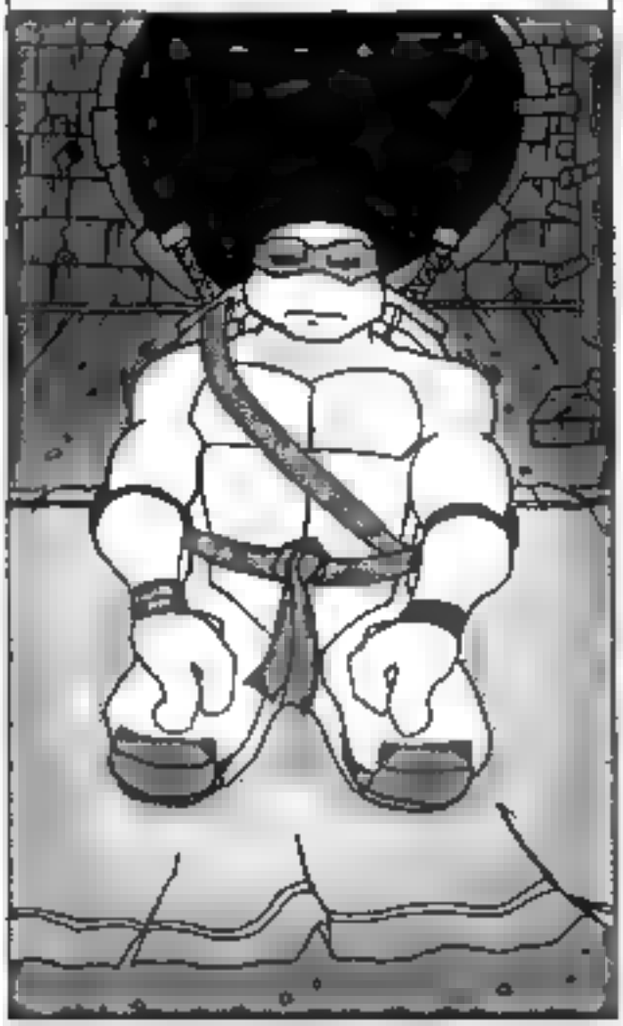

THIS IS IT?
YEAH! LET'S OPEN IT!


LEONARDO. INSIDE OF MY MASTER'S PARCEL WAS A SCROLL THAT DESCRIBES A TECHNIQUE THAT REQUIRES A HIGH LEVEL OF CONCENTRATION. SINCE YOUR ABILITY TO FOCUS IS MORE DEVELOPED THAN YOUR SIBLINGS', I DECIDED I'D SHOW YOU THAT TECHNIQUE FIRST.
I WON'T FAIL YOU, SENSEI.
I HAVE NO TROUBLE USING THIS TECHNIQUE. IN YOUR CASE, HOWEVER, YOUR LIMITS WILL BE TESTED.
JUST WHAT IS THAT TECHNIQUE?
IT ALLOWS IT'S USER TO SEGREGATE HIS SOUL FROM HIS BODY AND INTERACT WITH OTHER SPIRITS IN THE ASTRAL PLANE. ACCORDING TO THE SCROLL, ONLY A SELECT FEW EXORCISTS IN AN ANCIENT CLAN WERE TAUGHT THIS TECHNIQUE.
NOW, MY SON. EMPTY YOUR MIND OF EVERYTHING. THE SOUND OF THE WATER, THE COLDNESS OF THE GROUND, THE STENCH OF THE SEWERS... THEN FORGET ABOUT ME AS WELL. JUST FOCUS ON THE VOID DEEP WITHIN YOURSELF.
...


...
プルルルル
...
HMM... IT'S THE SHELLCELL.
I CAN'T CONCENTRATE...
プルルルル
WAIT A SECOND, LEONARDO. I MUST TAKE THAT CALL.
IT'S THE BLINKING GREEN BUTTON, SENSEI.
YES, YES. I REMEMBER VERY WELL, MY SON.
HI, MASTER SPLINTER! LEO'S WITH YOU, RIGHT? MAY I TALK TO HIM? I'D LIKE HIM TO GO COLLECT SOME SPARE PARTS FOR MY NEW INVENTION...
I'LL GET THEM FOR YOU, DONATELLO.
DON'T WORRY. THIS OLD RAT STILL STILL HAS ENOUGH LIFE IN HIM TO OCCASIONALLY RUN ERRANDS FOR HIS SONS. YOU SHOULD GO HOME AND REST. WE SHALL RESUME THIS SESSION TOMORROW EVENING.
YES, SENSEI.


HUM THAT'S IT?
I KIND OF EXPECTED SOMETHING COOLER
JUST AN OLD RUSTY KATANA
JAPANESE SCROLLS WITHOUT PICTURES... MUST BE SOME BORING POEM. YUCK
I'M BACK! IF YOU'RE LOOKING FOR ME I'LL BE IN THE TRAINING ROOM.
LEO!
WE'D BETTER CLEAN UP AND GET OUTTA HERE! IF LEO SEES WHAT WE DID, WE'LL BE IN BIG TROUBLE!
NO
LEO'S NOT IN HIS ROOM. IS HE?
LET'S GONG ALL THIS STUFF IN HIS ROOM.
Y'KNOW TO FRAME HIM.
WHAT?

MASTER SPLINTER BELIEVES IN MY POTENTIAL. I MUST NOT LET HIM DOWN. NEXT TIME I WON'T LOSE MY CONCENTRATION, AND





AW



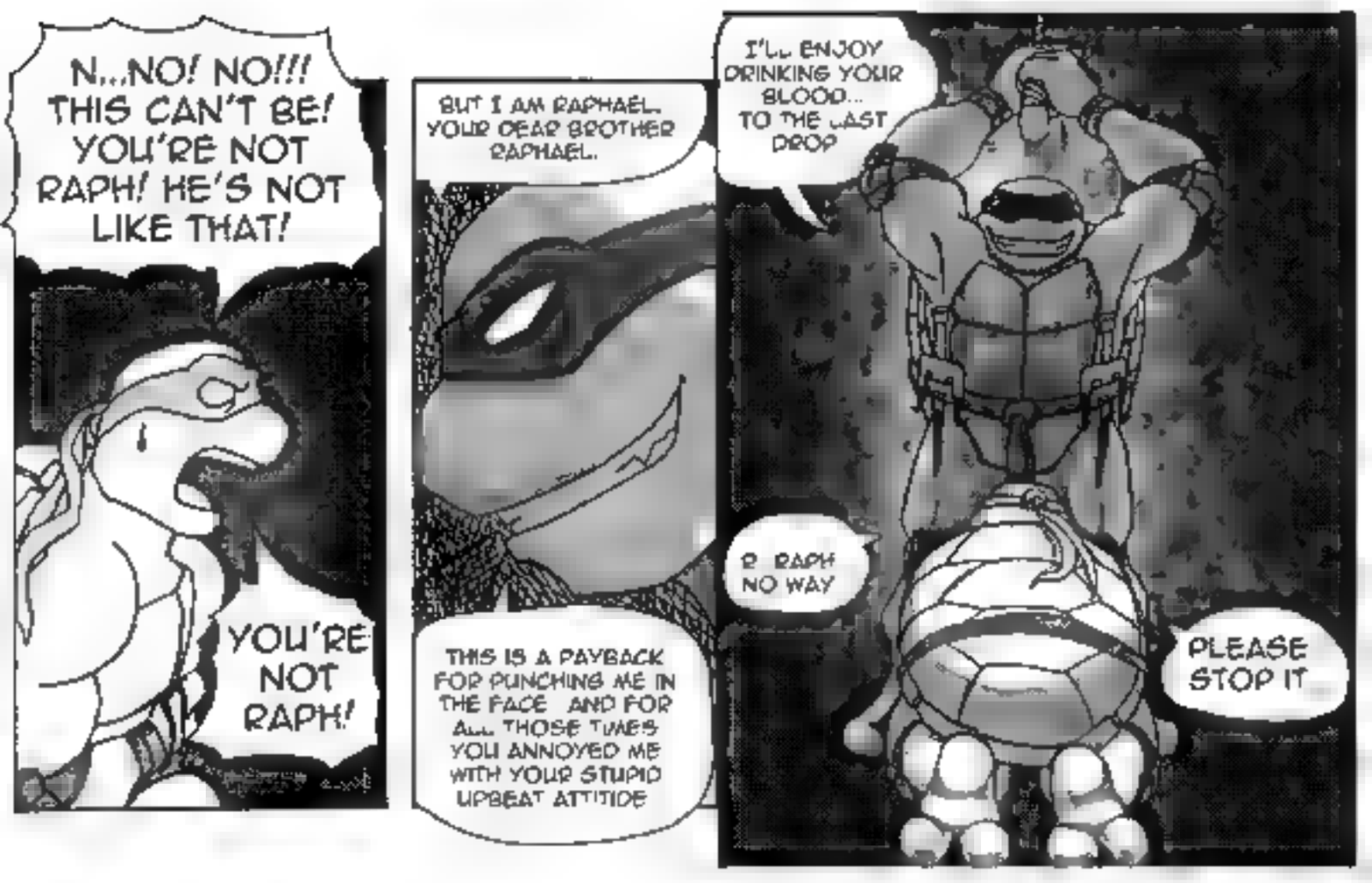
WHY DO I FEEL SO MUCH NEGATIVE ENERGY COMING FROM MY ROOM?

RAPH! CUT IT OUT! ARE YOU CRAZY? AAAARGH!!!

MIKEY?

AW

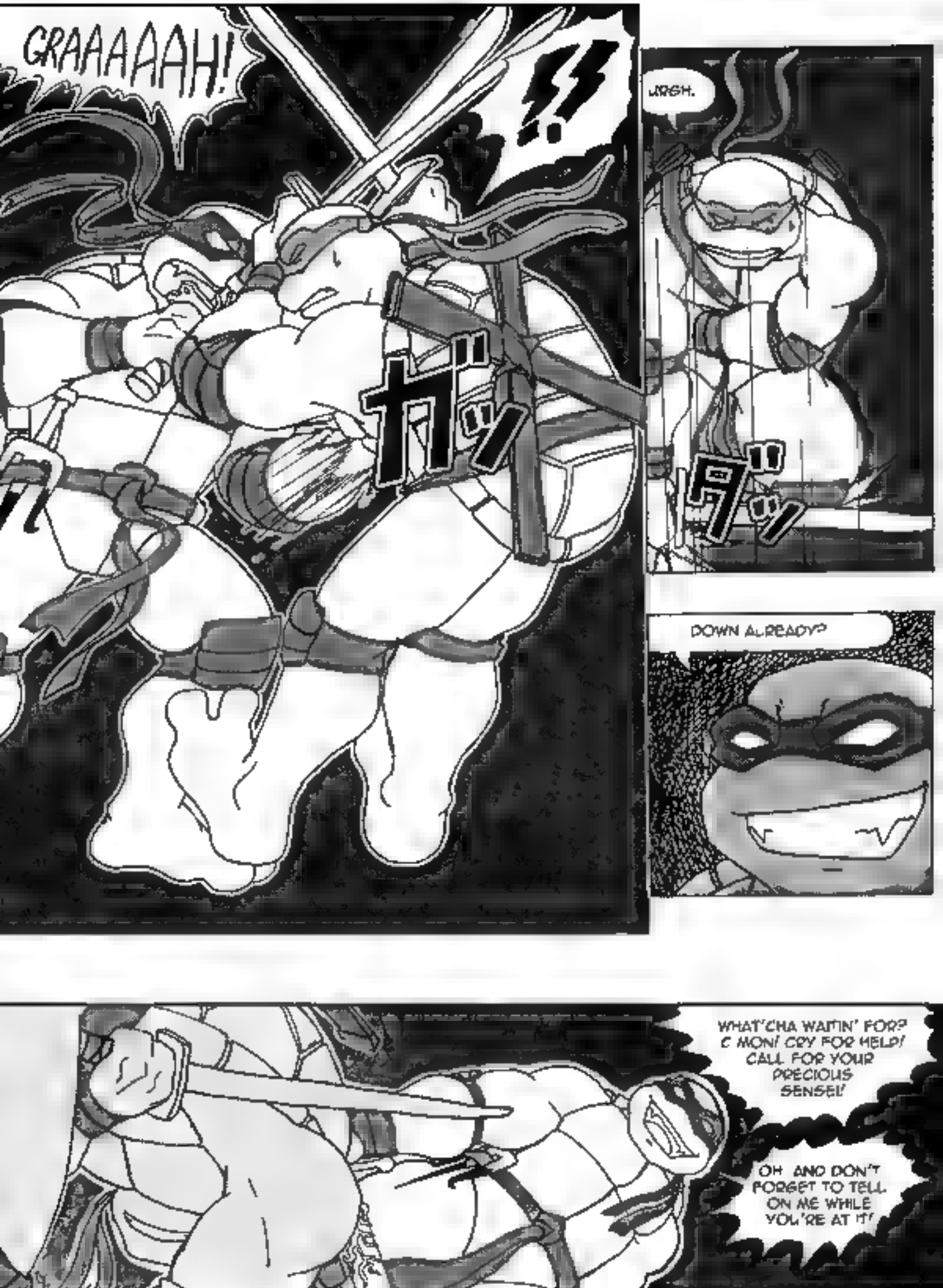

H...HAVE YOU GONE NUTS?
HEH.. HEH HEH..
WHY NOT AT ALL. BRO.
IN FACT, I NEVER FELT BETTER I JUST LOVE THE BITTER TASTE OF FRESH BLOOD
YOURS.

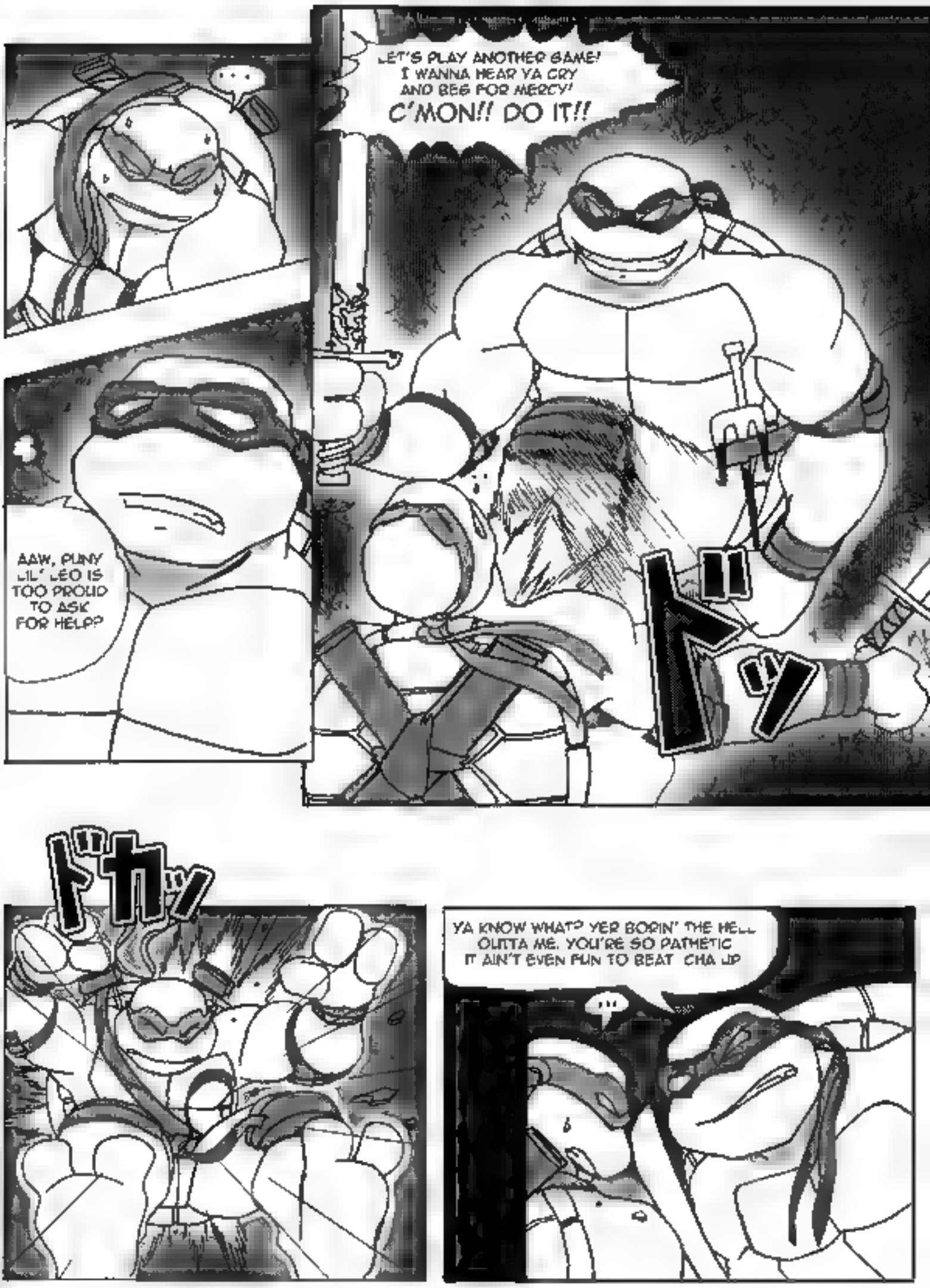

N...NO! NO!!! THIS CAN'T BE! YOU'RE NOT RAPH! HE'S NOT LIKE THAT!
YOU'RE NOT RAPH!
BUT I AM RAPHAEL. YOUR DEAR BROTHER RAPHAEL.
THIS IS A PAYBACK FOR PUNCHING ME IN THE FACE AND FOR ALL THOSE TIMES YOU ANNOYED ME WITH YOUR STUPID UPBEAT ATTITIDE
I'LL ENJOY DRINKING YOUR BLOOD... TO THE LAST DROP
R RAPH NO WAY
PLEASE STOP IT


DIE!
!!!
ガキーン
NEVER SHED YOUR OWN BROTHER'S BLOOD, RAPHAEL.
NEVER.
URRRRGH..
LEOOO..
LEOOOO...


LEEEOO!!
GRAARRR!!!
ガバッ
ガキーン

MIKEY! GET DONNIE TO TREAT YOUR WOUND!
LEAVE RAPH TO ME!

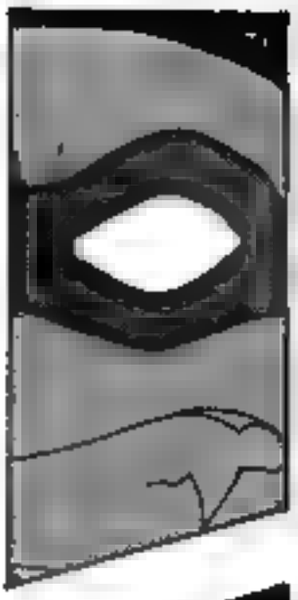

GRAAAAAH!
!!
ガッ
UGH.
ガッ
DOWN ALREADY?
WHAT'CHA WAITIN' FOR? C MON! CRY FOR HELP! CALL FOR YOUR PRECIOUS SENSEI!
OH AND DON'T FORGET TO TELL ON ME WHILE YOU'RE AT IT!


AAW, PUNY LIL' LEO IS TOO PROUD TO ASK FOR HELP?
LET'S PLAY ANOTHER GAME! I WANNA HEAR YA CRY AND BEG FOR MERCY! C'MON!! DO IT!!
YA KNOW WHAT? YER BORIN' THE HELL OUTTA ME. YOU'RE SO PATHETIC IT AIN'T EVEN FUN TO BEAT CHA UP

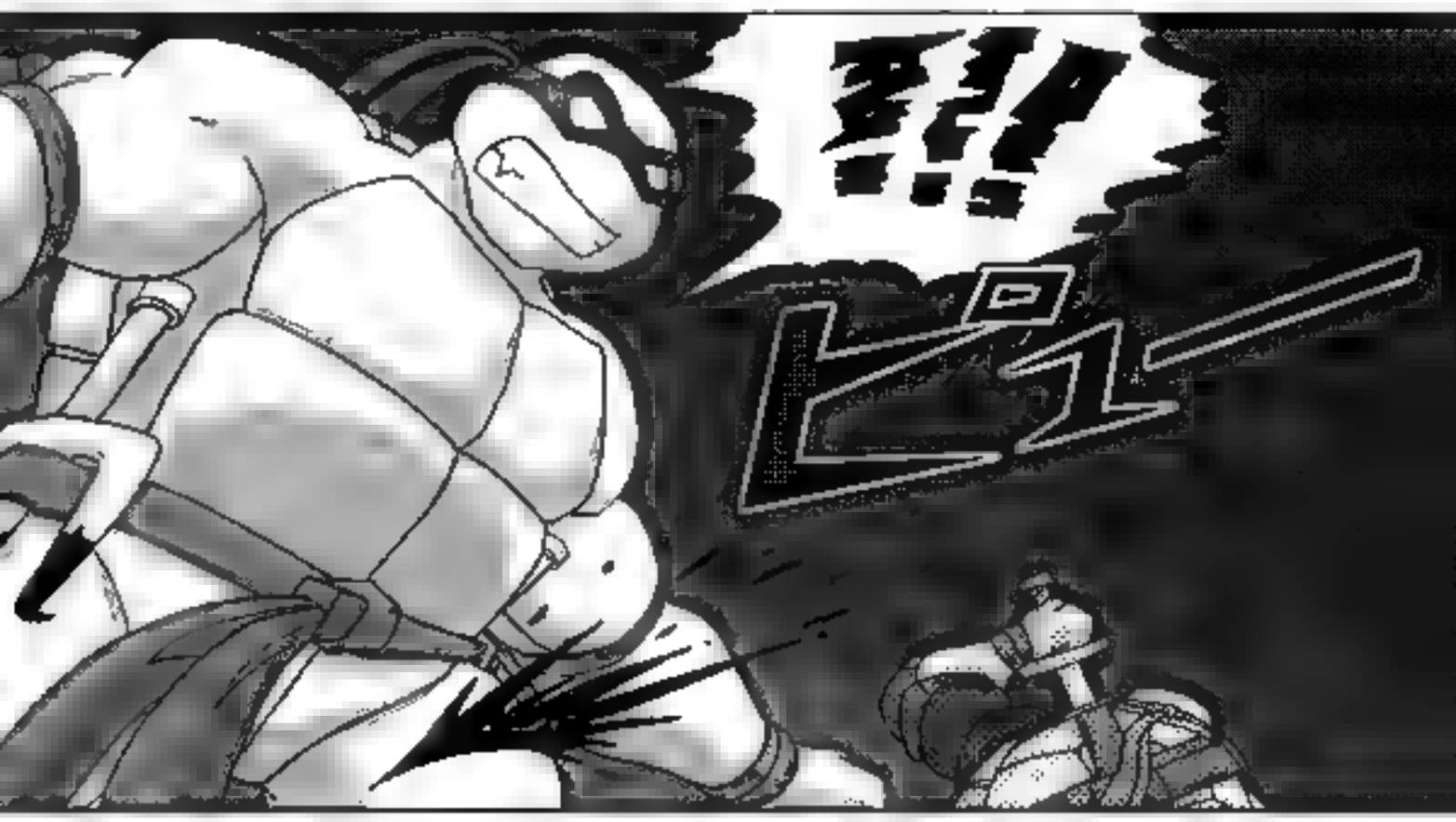

I'M JUST GONNA CATCH UP WITH MIKEY AT LEAST HE WAS ENTERTAININ'
THIS TIME I'LL DRAIN HIM OF ALL HIS BLOOD AND LISTEN TO HIM SCREAM IN AGONY
I'LL MAKE HIM SCREAM TIL HIS LUNGS BURST!!
I WON'T LET YOU
I WON'T LET YOU DO THAT, RAPHAEL!
I SWORE TO PROTECT MY BROTHERS LIVES AS LONG AS I LIVE!
YOU HEAR ME? I WON'T LET ANYONE DIE! EVEN IF I MUST DO THIS!!!


HOW PATHETIC...
SORRY I HAVE NO CHOICE
HUMPF
...??





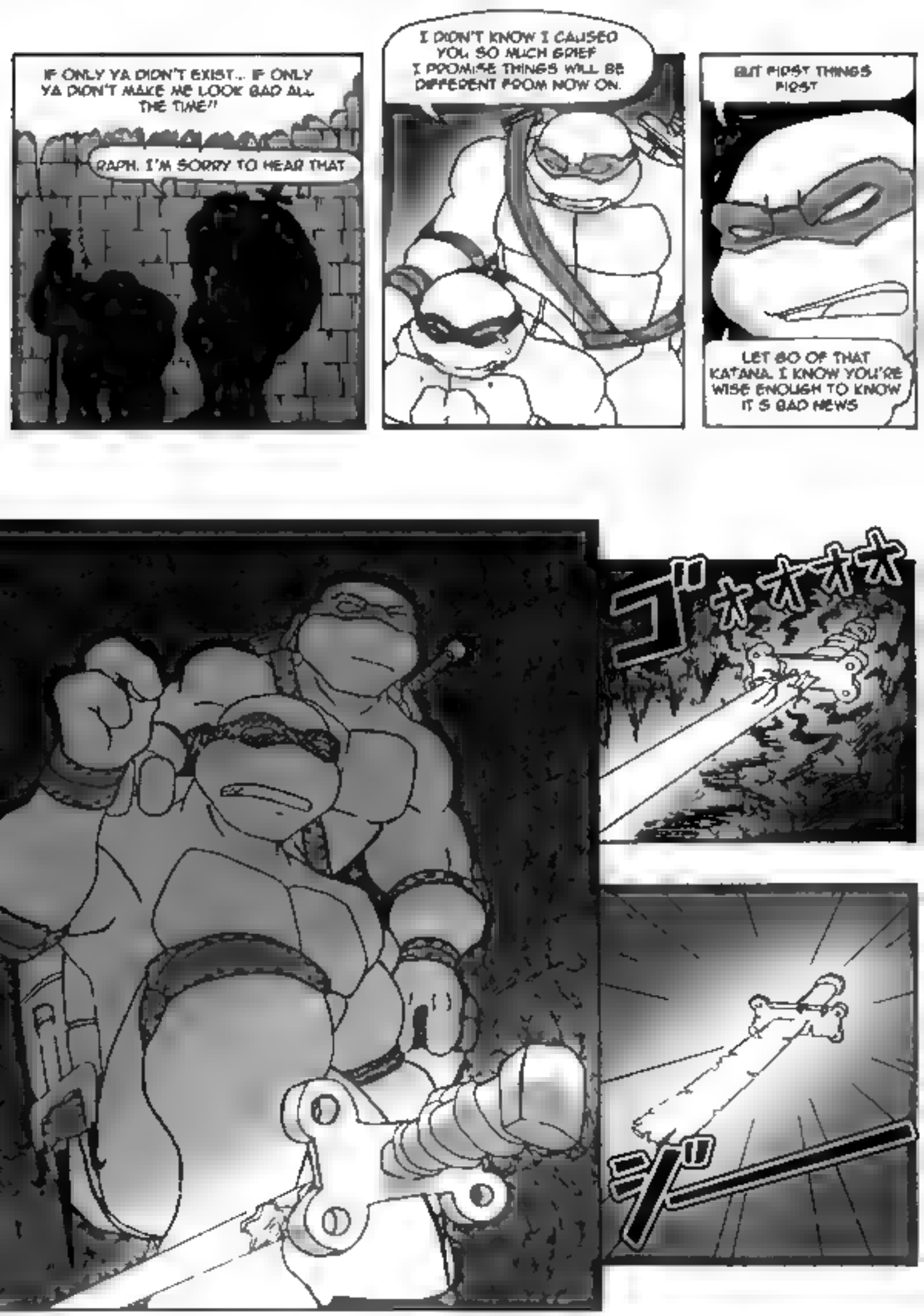

SORRY

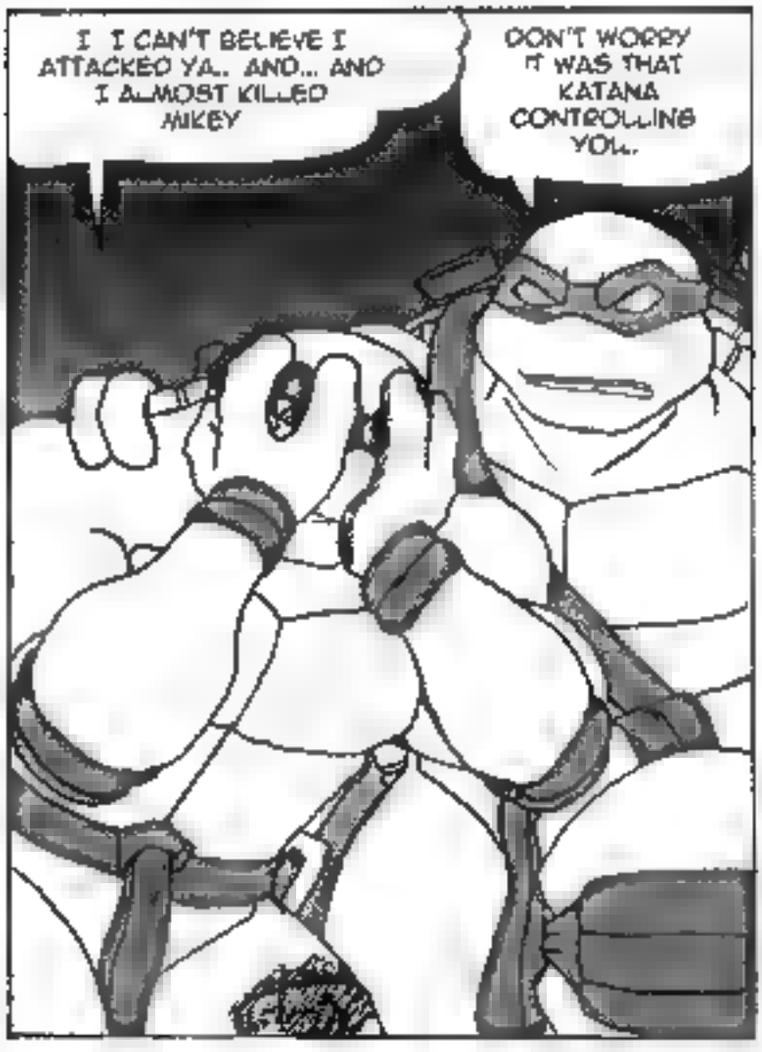



GWAAAAAAR!!!
SHIT, SHIT, SHIT, SHIT!
SO YOU THINK IT'S OKAY TO SHED OTHER PEOPLE'S BLOOD. YET YOU FREAK OUT AT THE SIGHT OF YOUR OWN?
IT'S JUST A NICK TO MAKE SURE YOU WON'T GET TO MIKEY SO EASILY
S...SHUDDAP! MIKEY WAS IN THE WAY!
IN THE WAY OF WHAT RAPHAEL? WHAT WERE YOU DOING?

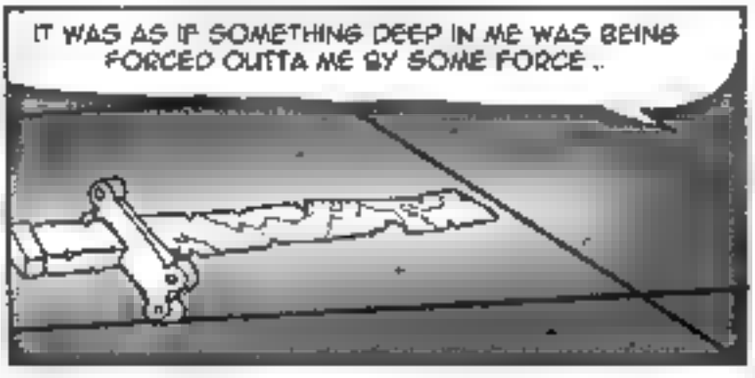

GETTIN' BACK AT YOU, DUMBASS!! WHADDYA THINK?
WHAT?
IF SPLINTER FOUND HIS JAPANESE JUNK IN YER ROOM, I'D FINALLY GET TO SEE YOU BEIN' SCREWED UP! BUT THAT PESKY MIKEY GOT IN THE WAY
SO I SHUT HIM UP SERVES HIM RIGHT.. I ALWAYS WANTED TO DO THAT
THE KATANA TOLD ME TO DO IT .. IT UNDERSTOOD MY THIRST FOR VIOLENCE. IT KNEW HOW MUCH Y'ALL PISS ME OFF ALL THE TIME .!
THE KATANA SPOKE TO YOU?
RAPHAEL WHATEVER IT IS, IT'S MESSING UP YOUR MIND! LET GO OF IT!
MY MIND? MY MIND?? IT'S ALWAYS THE SAME!! Y'ALL THINK I M THE ONE WITH ISSUES!! ME ME, ME!! DON'CHA REALIZE IT'S YER FAULT?
RAPHAEL??


YOU'RE ALWAYS BETTER THAN ME! ALWAYS MORE RELIABLE THAN ME!
ALWAYS SPLINTER'S FAVORITE SON!!
WHERE I FAIL, YA SUCCEED!
WHERE I SUCCEED, YA ALWAYS DO BETTER!!
YOU GET ALL THE LOVE
I GET.. NOTHING..
THAT'S WHY..
I HATE YA, LEO! I HATE YER FRICKIN' GUTS!!
IT WAS 'CUZ OF YOU THAT I DID ALL THAT! IT'S ALL YER FAULT!!


IF ONLY YA DIDN'T EXIST.. IF ONLY YA DIDN'T MAKE ME LOOK BAD ALL THE TIME!!
RAPH. I'M SORRY TO HEAR THAT
I DIDN'T KNOW I CAUSED YOU SO MUCH GRIEF I PROMISE THINGS WILL BE DIFFERENT FROM NOW ON.
BUT FIRST THINGS FIRST
LET GO OF THAT KATANA. I KNOW YOU'RE WISE ENOUGH TO KNOW IT'S BAD NEWS
ゴォォォォ
シュ

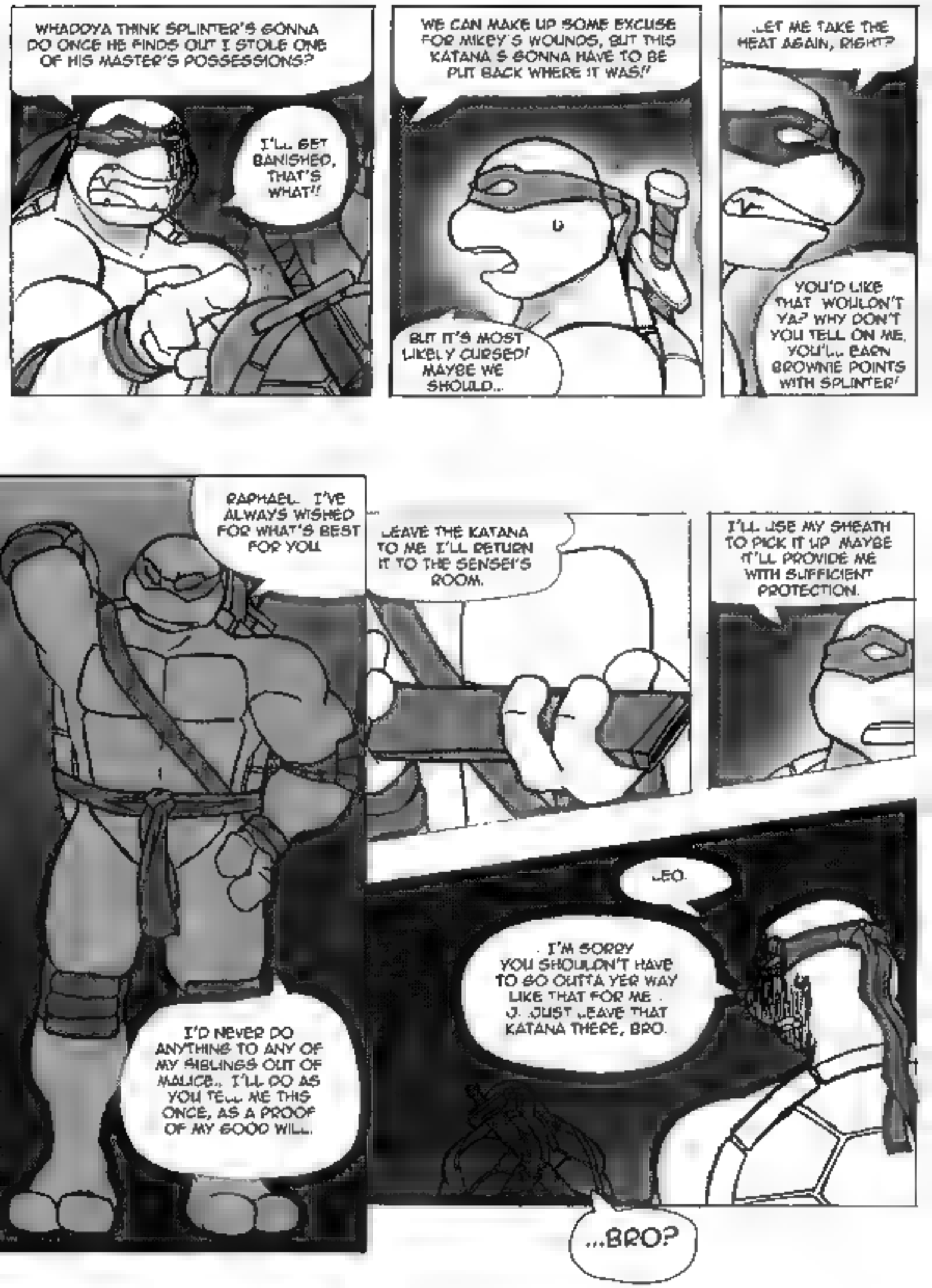

I I CAN'T BELIEVE I ATTACKED YA.. AND... AND I ALMOST KILLED MIKEY
DON'T WORRY IT WAS THAT KATANA CONTROLLING YOU..


NO.. I WAS CONSCIOUS OF MY ACTIONS..
I WAS... MYSELF..

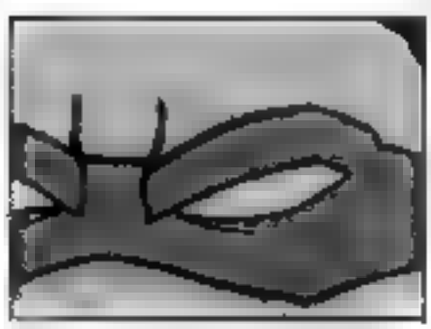

IT WAS AS IF SOMETHING DEEP IN ME WAS BEING FORCED OUTTA ME BY SOME FORCE..

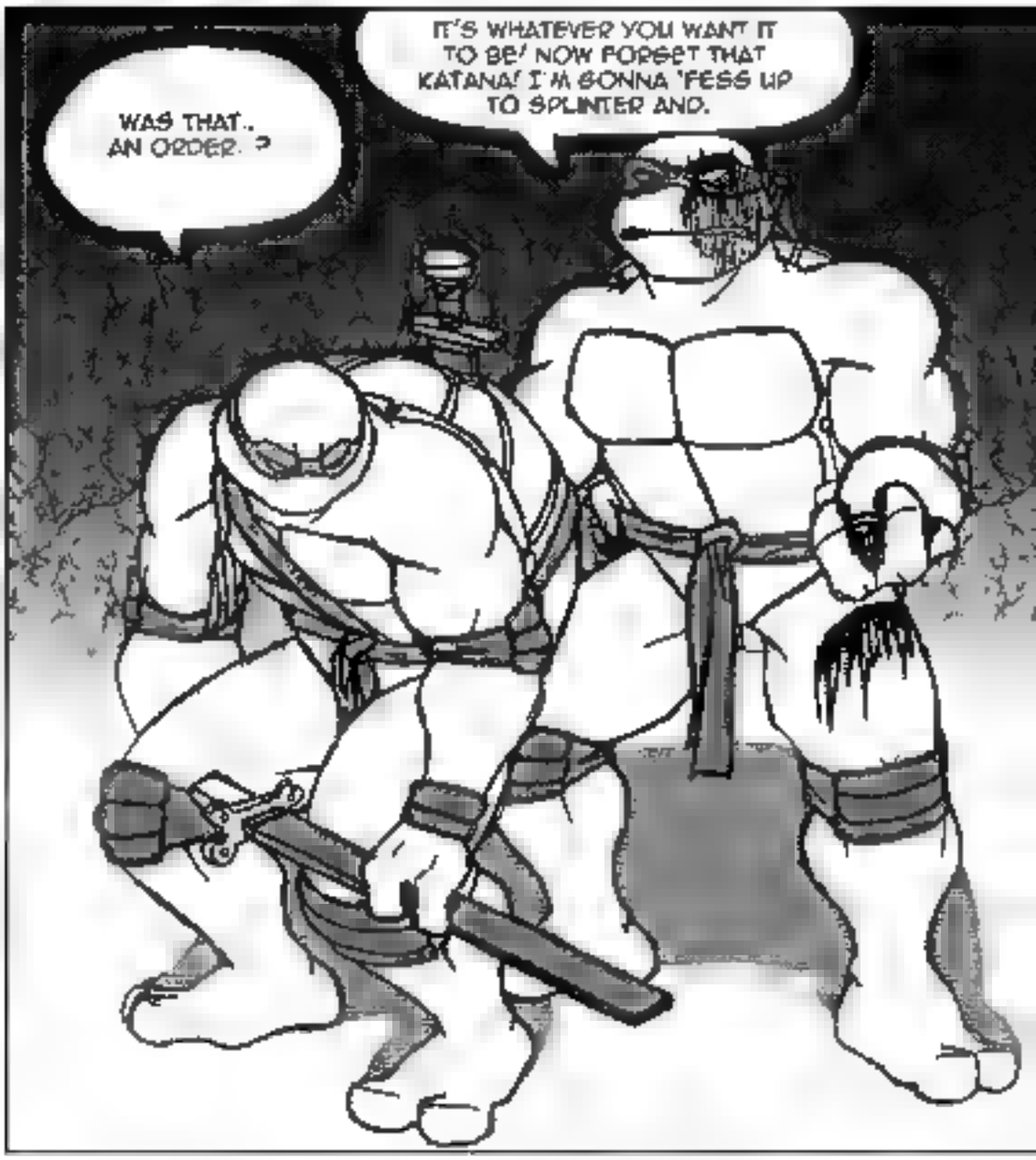

ALL MY DARKEST EMOTIONS.. I COULD NO LONGER CONTAIN THEM... SHIT I REALLY SCREWED UP THIS TIME
LEO WE GOTTA DO SOMETHIN' BOUT THAT KATANA OR SPLINTER'S GONNA KILL ME.
WE WILL RAPH. BUT FIRST WHY DON'T WE GO CHECK UP ON MIKEY? YOU OWE HIM AN APOLOGY


I TOLD YA WE NEED THIS MESS CLEANED UP AND YA DECIDE TO IGNORE ME AND ACT ALL HIGH AND MIGHTY AGAIN!! DO YA CARE 'BOUT ME OR NOT? MAKE UP YER MIND!!
CALM DOWN!


WHADDYA THINK SPLINTER'S GONNA DO ONCE HE FINDS OUT I STOLE ONE OF HIS MASTER'S POSSESSIONS?
I'LL GET BANISHED, THAT'S WHAT!!
WE CAN MAKE UP SOME EXCUSE FOR MIKEY'S WOUNDS, BUT THIS KATANA'S GONNA HAVE TO BE PUT BACK WHERE IT WAS!!
BUT IT'S MOST LIKELY CURSED! MAYBE WE SHOULD..
..LET ME TAKE THE HEAT AGAIN, RIGHT?
YOU'D LIKE THAT WOULDN'T YA? WHY DON'T YOU TELL ON ME, YOU'LL EARN BROWNIE POINTS WITH SPLINTER!
RAPHAEL. I'VE ALWAYS WISHED FOR WHAT'S BEST FOR YOU.
I'D NEVER DO ANYTHING TO ANY OF MY SIBLINGS OUT OF MALICE.. I'LL DO AS YOU TELL ME THIS ONCE, AS A PROOF OF MY GOOD WILL.
LEAVE THE KATANA TO ME. I'LL RETURN IT TO THE SENSEI'S ROOM.
I'LL USE MY SHEATH TO PICK IT UP. MAYBE IT'LL PROVIDE ME WITH SUFFICIENT PROTECTION.
LEO.
. I'M SORRY YOU SHOULDN'T HAVE TO GO OUTTA YER WAY LIKE THAT FOR ME . J. JUST LEAVE THAT KATANA THERE, BRO.
...BRO?


YEAH, I'M TALKIN' TO YOU, LEO! LET GO OF THAT KATANA!

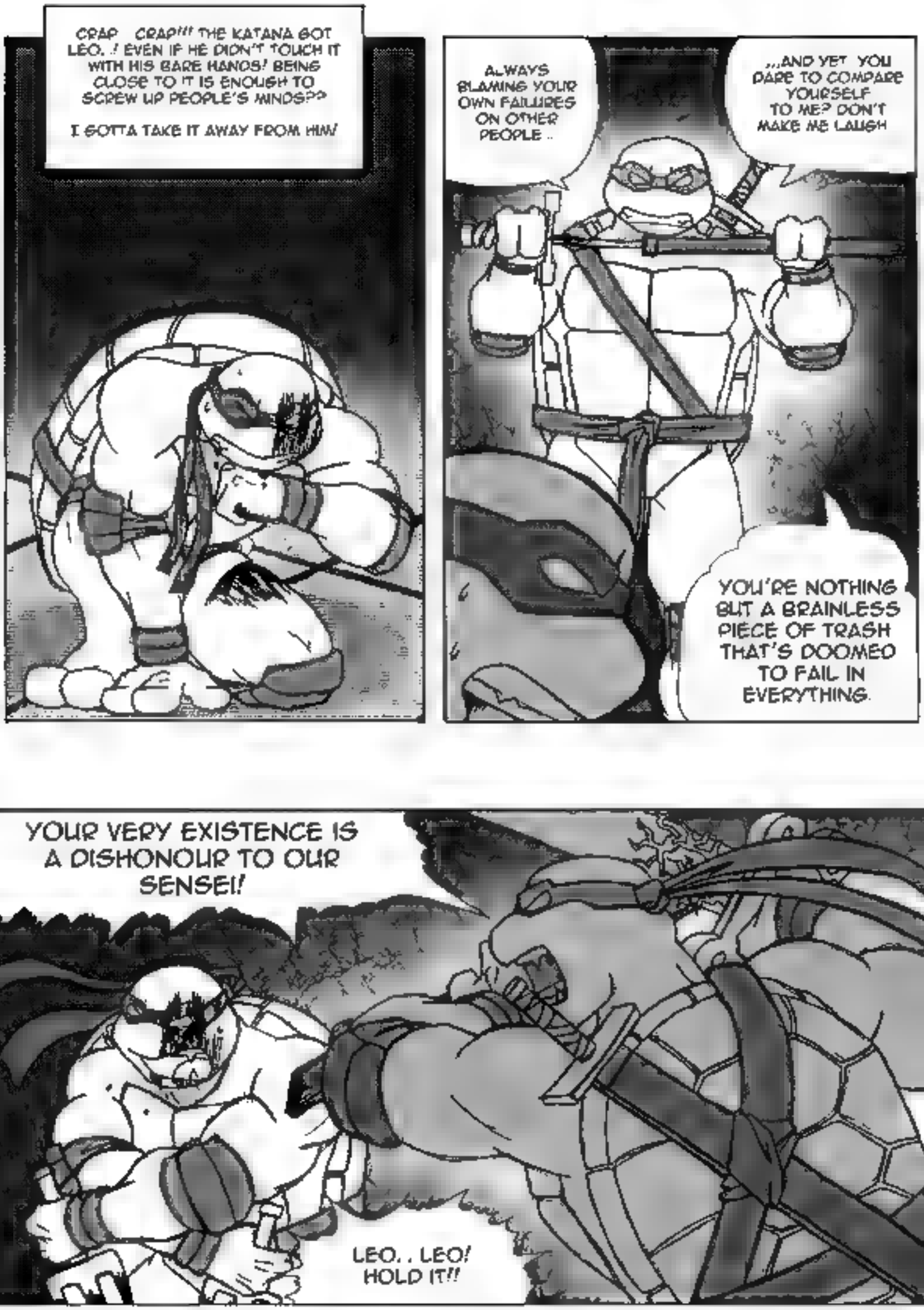



WAS THAT.. AN ORDER..?
IT'S WHATEVER YOU WANT IT TO BE! NOW FORGET THAT KATANA! I'M GONNA 'FESS UP TO SPLINTER AND.

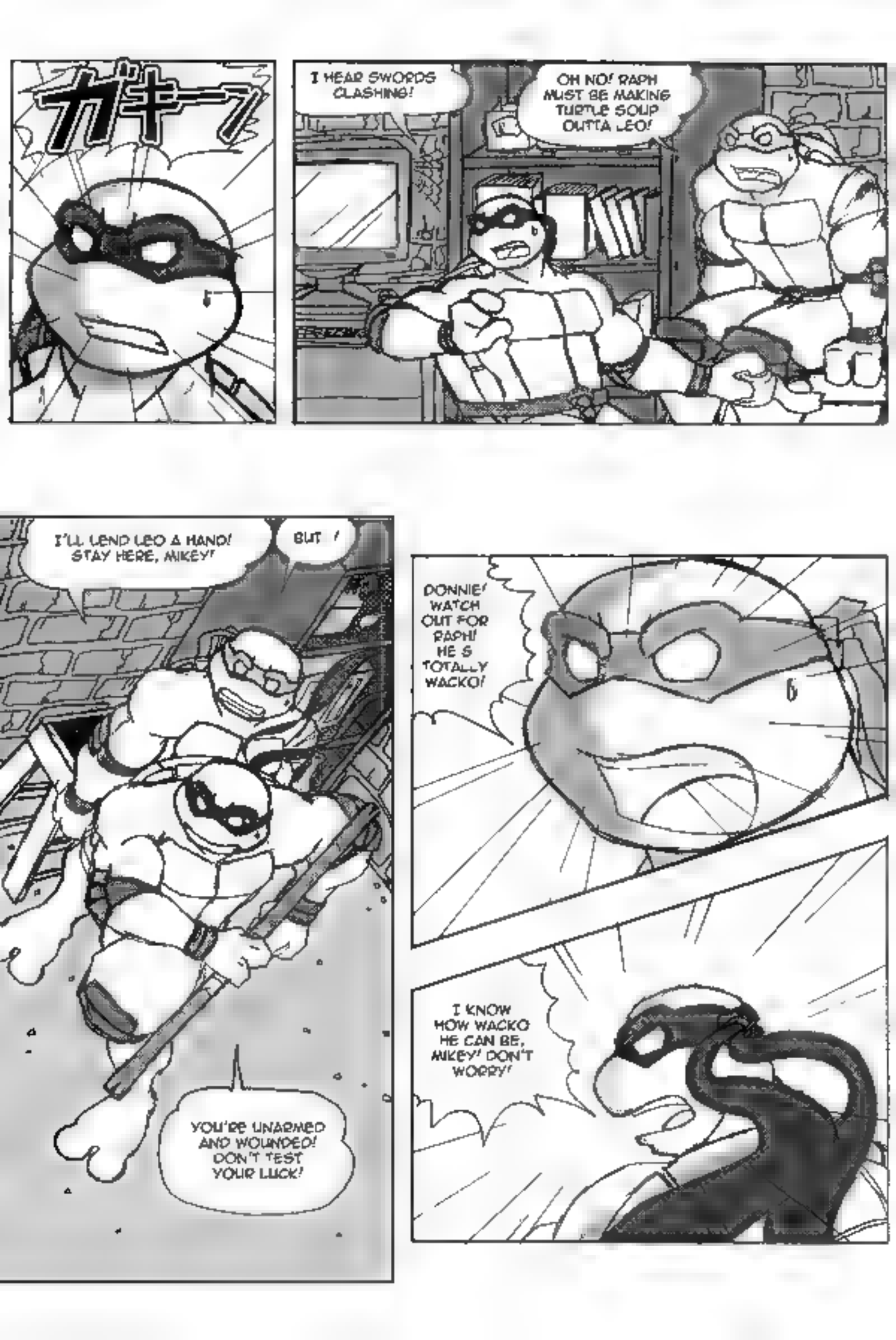

SHOW ME SOME RESPECT, YOU IMPERTINENT FOOL!!

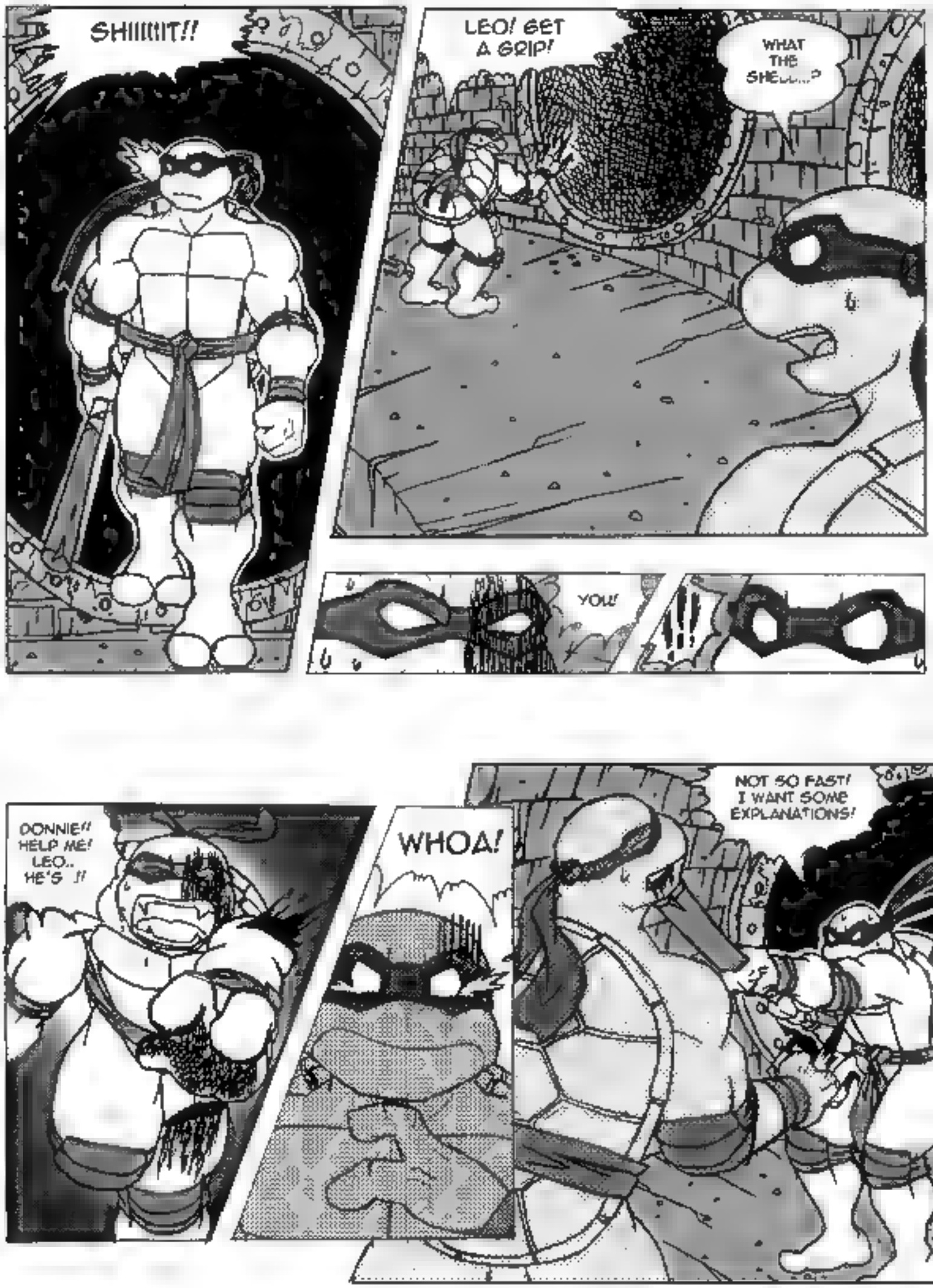

...THE FUCK'S YER PROBLEM? GODDAMMIT!


WATCH YOUR TONGUE!
URGGH!

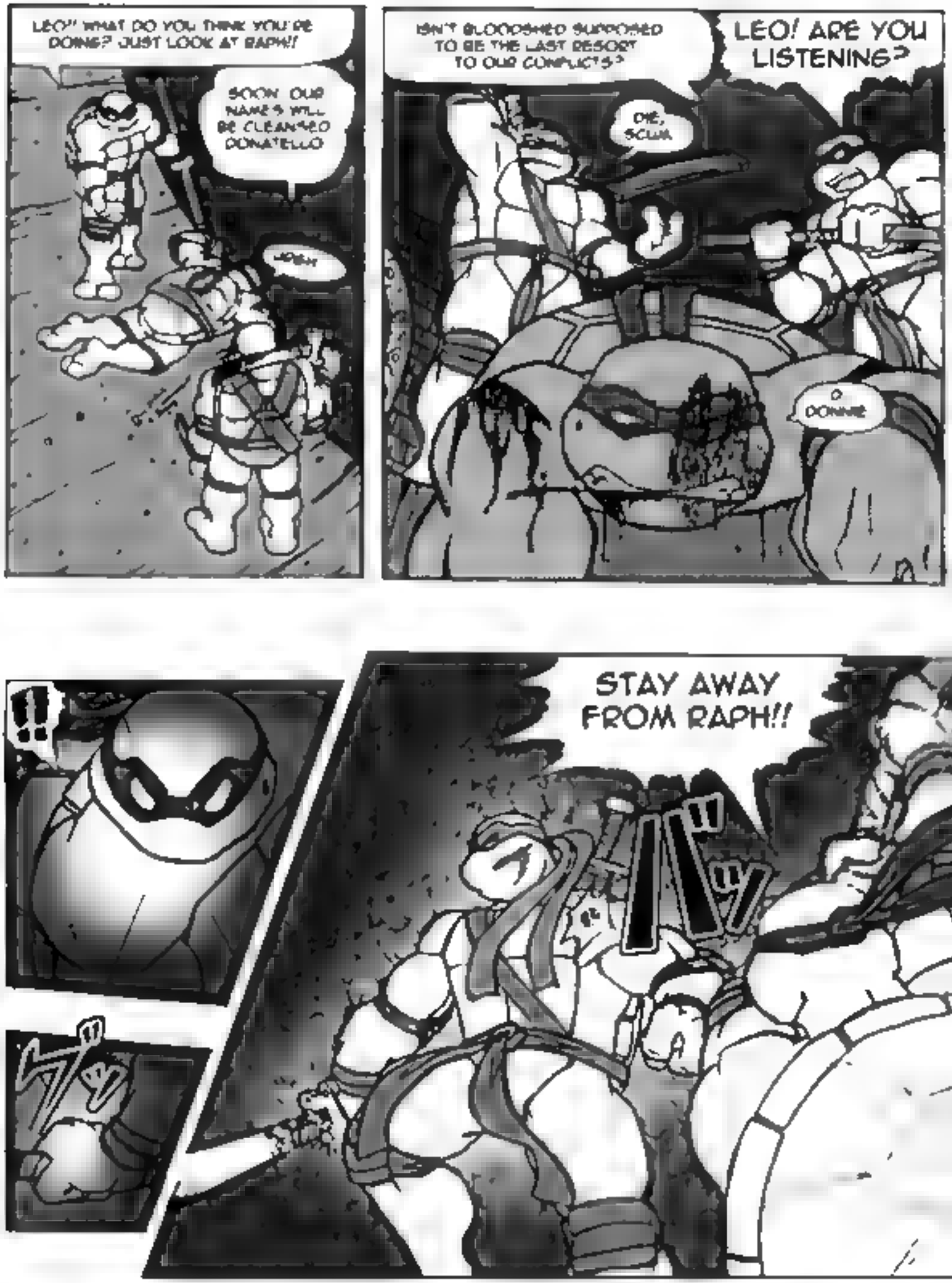

CRAP CRAP!!! THE KATANA GOT LEO..! EVEN IF HE DIDN'T TOUCH IT WITH HIS BARE HANDS! BEING CLOSE TO IT IS ENOUGH TO SCREW UP PEOPLE'S MINDS?!
I GOTTA TAKE IT AWAY FROM HIM!
ALWAYS BLAMING YOUR OWN FAILURES ON OTHER PEOPLE..
...AND YET YOU DARE TO COMPARE YOURSELF TO ME? DON'T MAKE ME LAUGH
YOU'RE NOTHING BUT A BRAINLESS PIECE OF TRASH THAT'S DOOMED TO FAIL IN EVERYTHING.
YOUR VERY EXISTENCE IS A DISHONOUR TO OUR SENSEI!
LEO.. LEO! HOLD IT!!


WHAT THE... THERE'S BLOOD ON MY SAI... MUST BE FROM THOSE PUNKS I BEAT UP EARLIER!
THAT'S WHAT LEO MEANT WHEN HE SAID [redacted] COULDN'T LIE TO SPLINTER'S EYES..
EVEN IF HE LIED I'D BE FOUND OUT
IF HE DIDN'T RAT OUT ON ME... SPLINTER WOULD'VE PROBABLY GIVEN ME A HARSHER PUNISHMENT
LEO... YOU DID THINK OF ME... DIDN'T YOU?
I SHOULDN'T HAVE BLAMED YOU, BRO... AND NOW YOU'RE IN DEEP SHIT BECAUSE OF [redacted].
IT'S MY TURN TO TAKE CARE OF YOU
I WON'T BACK OUT ON YA!!


ガキーン!
I HEAR SWORDS CLASHING!
OH NO! RAPH MUST BE MAKING TURTLE SOUP OUTTA LEO!
I'LL LEND LEO A HAND! STAY HERE, MIKEY!
BUT !
YOU'RE UNARMED AND WOUNDED! DON'T TEST YOUR LUCK!
DONNIE! WATCH OUT FOR RAPH! HE S TOTALLY WACKO!
I KNOW HOW WACKO HE CAN BE, MIKEY! DON'T WORRY!


SHIIIIIIT!!
LEO! GET A GRIP!
WHAT THE SHE...?
YOU!
!!!
DONNIE!! HELP ME! LEO.. HE'S !!
WHOA!
NOT SO FAST! I WANT SOME EXPLANATIONS!


WHY ARE YA POINTIN' THAT AT ME? LEO'S MAD AND WE GOTTA KNOCK THAT KATANA OFF HIS HANDS !!
MIKEY'S RIGHT YOU'RE TOTALLY MAD! YOU'RE NOT MAKING ANY SENSE AT ALL!!
I'LL PUNISH YOU, RAPHAEL
YOU'LL NEVER TARNISH OUR SENSEI'S NAME AGAIN!
GWAAARRGG!!

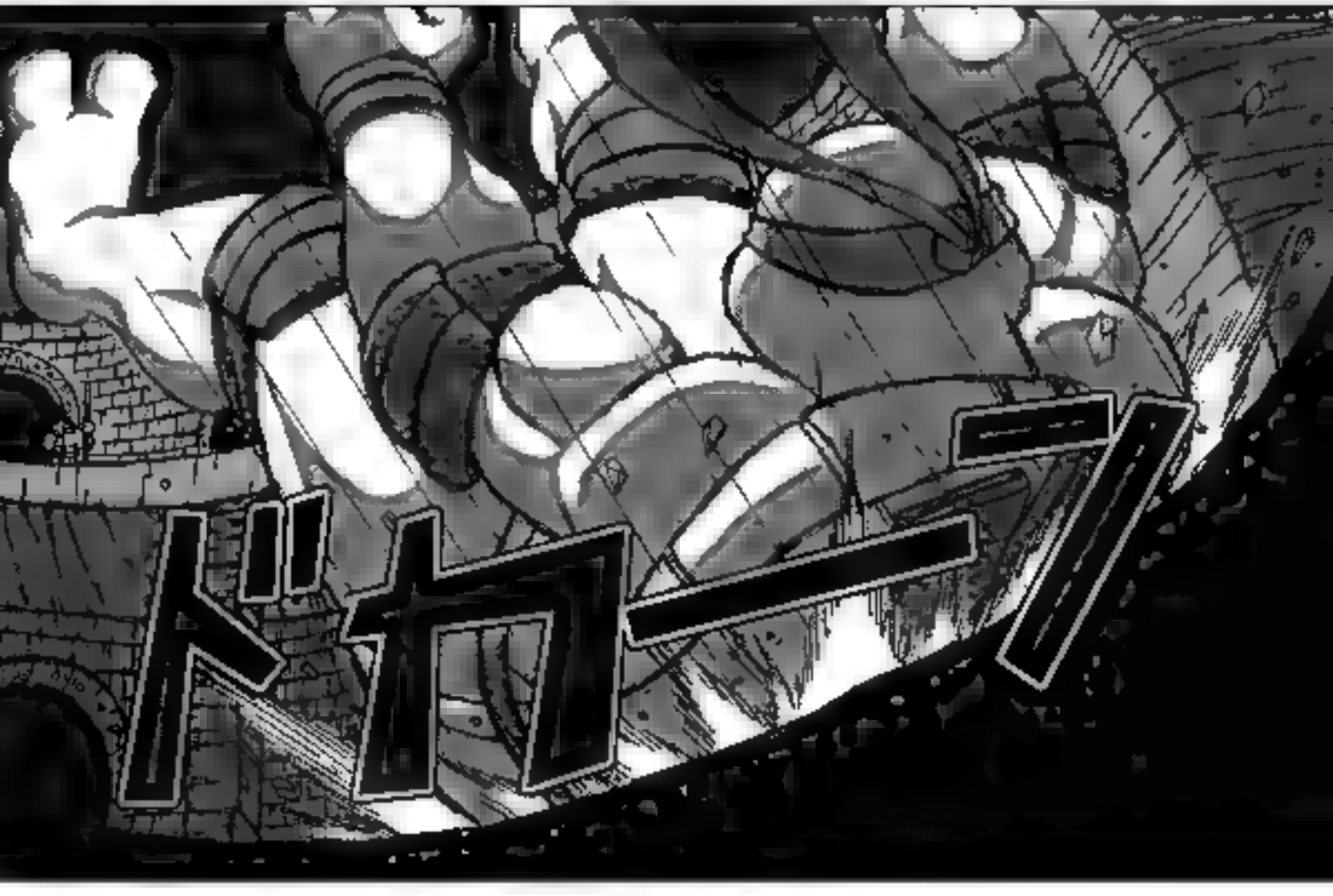

LEO!! WHAT DO YOU THINK YOU'RE DOING? JUST LOOK AT RAPH!!
SOON OUR NAME'S WILL BE CLEANED DONATELLO
HOW?
ISN'T BLOODSHED SUPPOSED TO BE THE LAST RESORT TO OUR CONFLICTS?
LEO! ARE YOU LISTENING?
DIE, SCUM
DONNIE
!!
STAY AWAY FROM RAPH!!

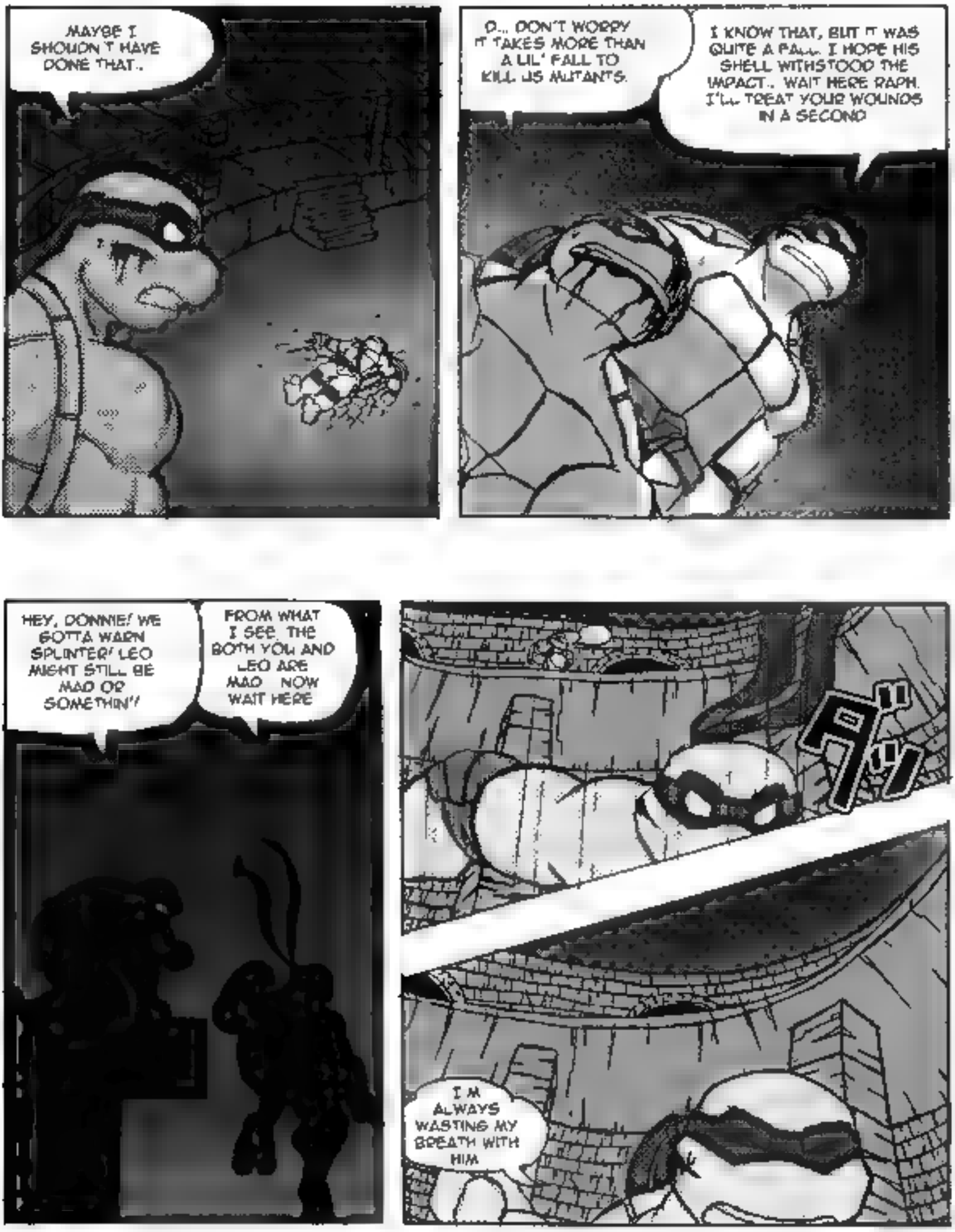

YOU... YOU IMPUDENT VERMIN. !
YOU WON'T LAY A FINGER ON HIM!
I THOUGHT YOU WERE WORTHY OF BEING SPARED . BUT NOW I SEE YOU DESERVE TO DIE TOO!
SHTTTTT
URGH!
KU
!!

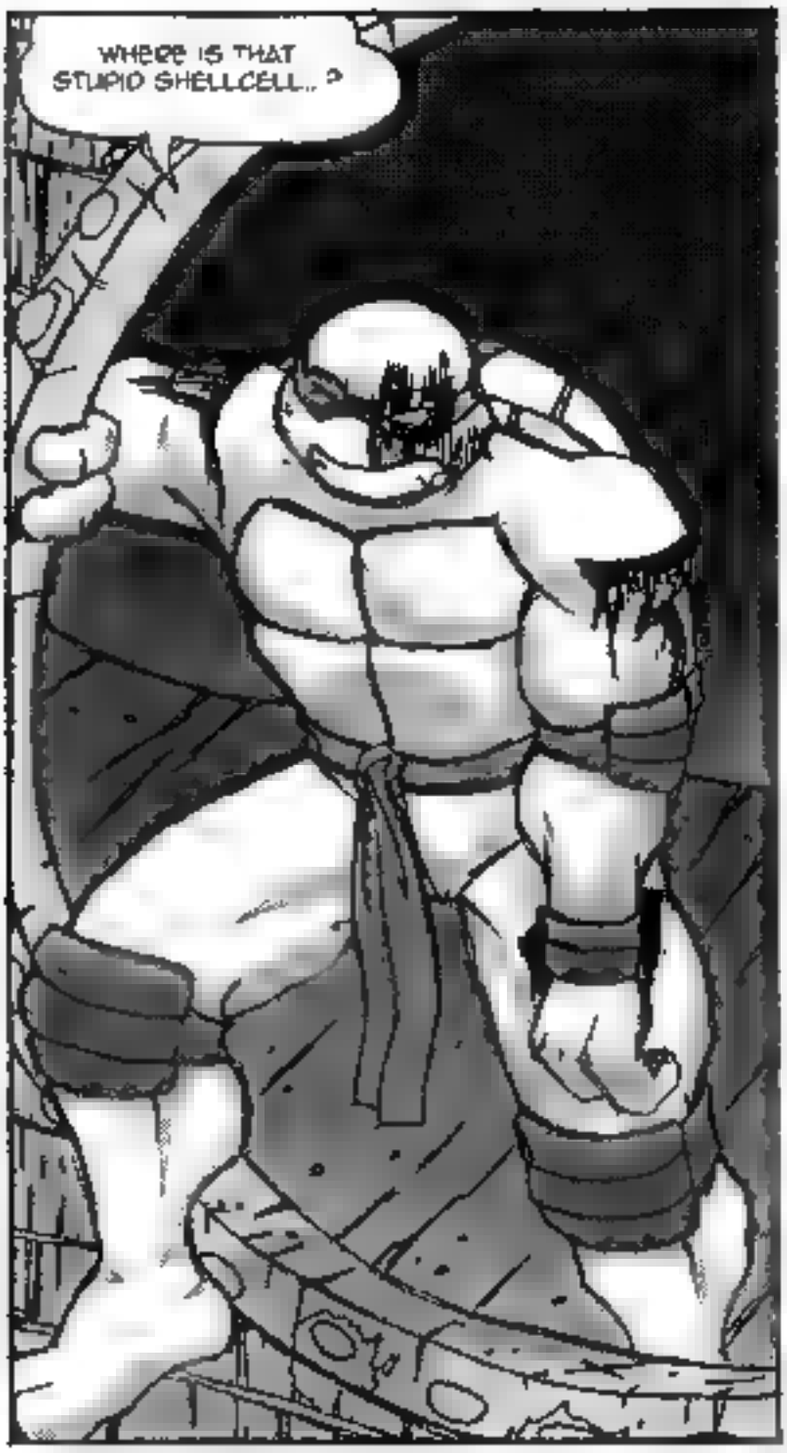

NOW!
LEO! SORRY, BUT I HAVE TO DO THIS!
WHA...!


YOU
TRAITOOOR!!


OW!




MAYBE I SHOULDN'T HAVE DONE THAT..
O... DON'T WORRY IT TAKES MORE THAN A LIL' FALL TO KILL US MUTANTS.
I KNOW THAT, BUT IT WAS QUITE A FALL. I HOPE HIS SHELL WITHSTOOD THE IMPACT.. WAIT HERE RAPH. I'LL TREAT YOUR WOUNDS IN A SECOND
HEY, DONNIE! WE GOTTA WARN SPLINTER! LEO MIGHT STILL BE MAD OR SOMETHIN'!
FROM WHAT I SEE, THE BOTH YOU AND LEO ARE MAD NOW WAIT HERE
I M ALWAYS WASTING MY BREATH WITH HIM

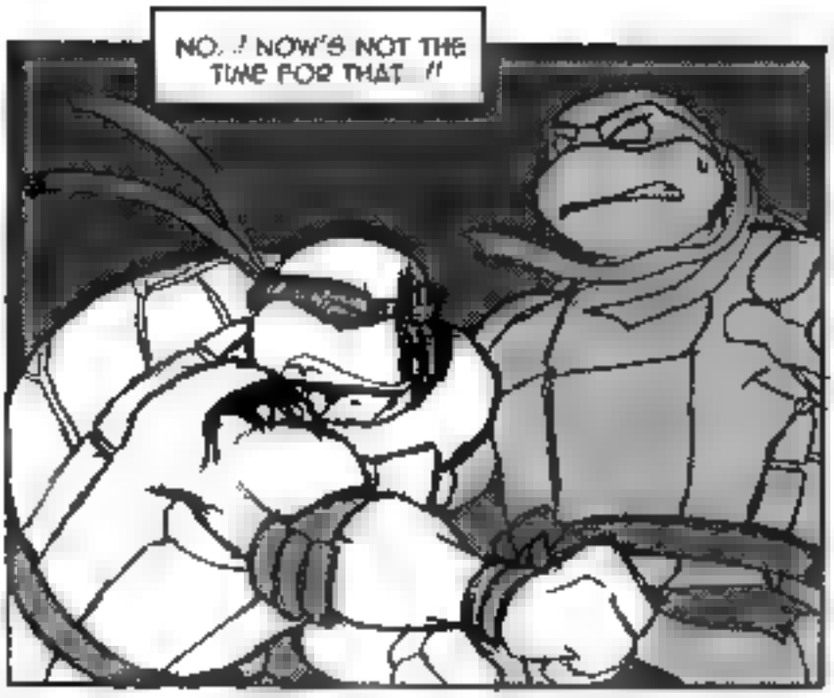

WHERE IS THAT STUPID SHELLCELL..?

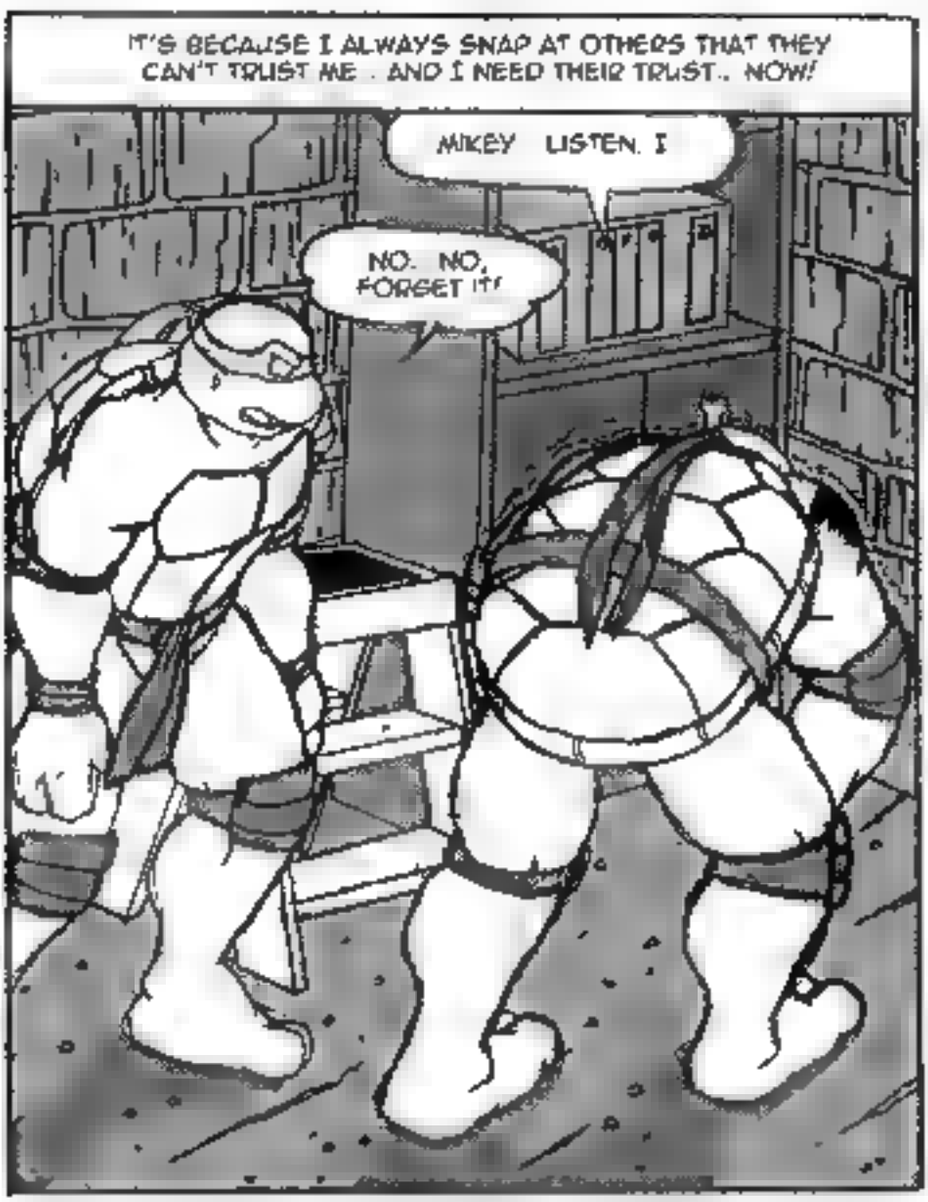

M...MIKEY!!
RAPH!!

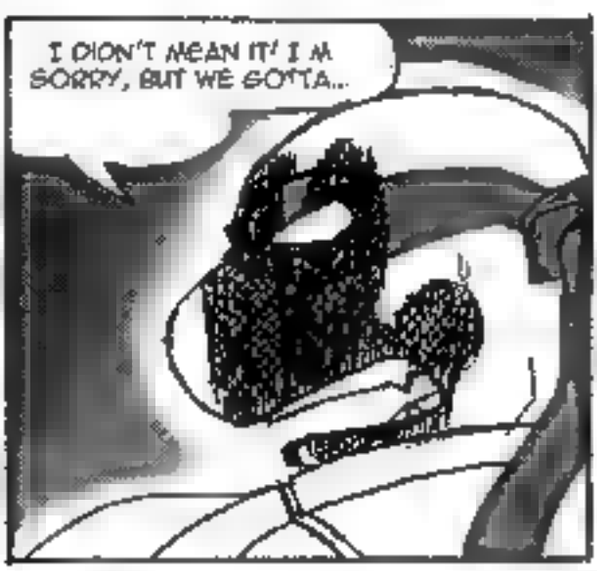

WHERE'S THE SHELLCELL? I GOTTA TALK TO SPLINTER!
BACK OFF!

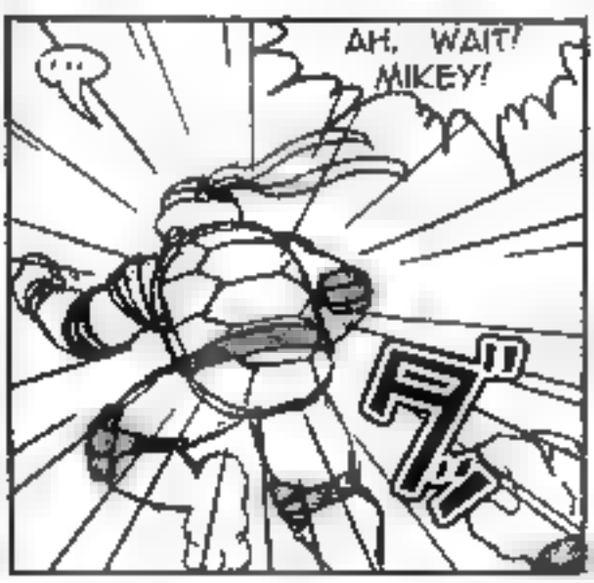

WHAT?
YOU HEARD ME RIGHT, RAPH! BACK OFF, YOU MANIAC!
YOU WANT THE SHELLCELL TO DESTROY IT AND PREVENT US FROM CALLING THE SENSEI FOR HELP I KNOW IT!
SO THAT'S HOW YOU THINK OF ME DON'T YOU?
B. BACK OFF
LEAVE ME ALONE!
SHADDAP!!!
YOU THINK I'D DO THAT?

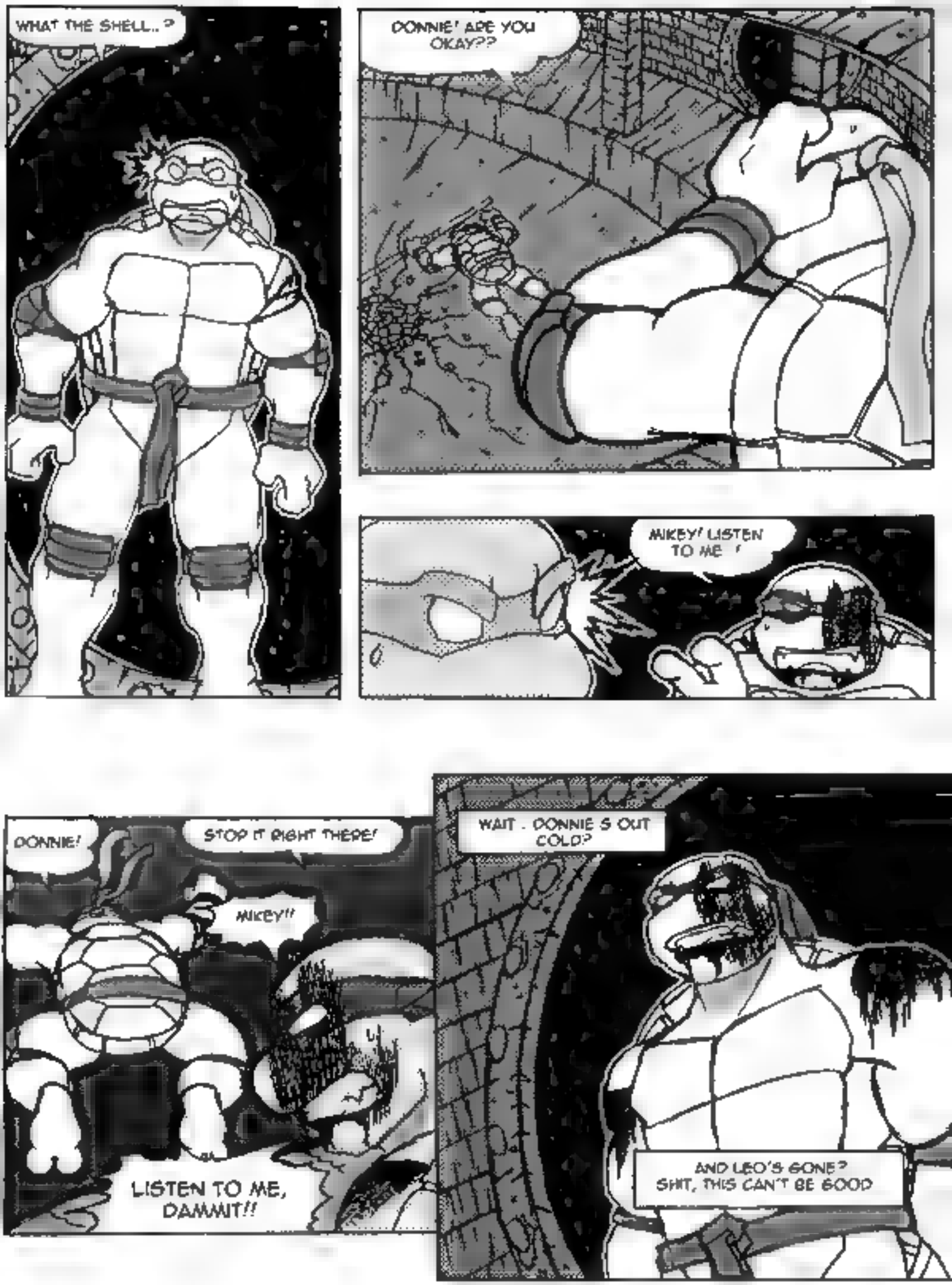

WHOA!


NO..! NOW'S NOT THE TIME FOR THAT..!!

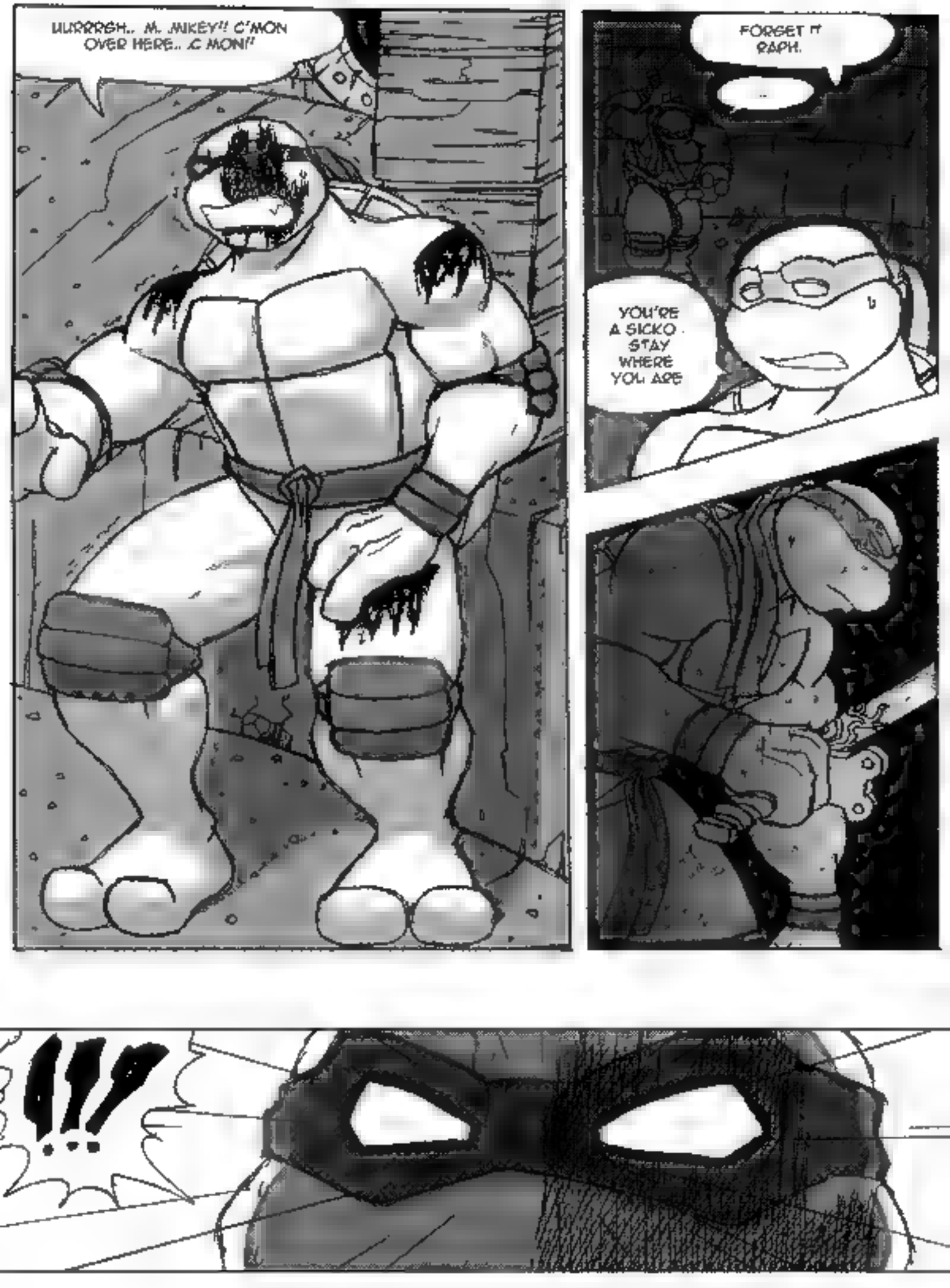

IT'S BECAUSE I ALWAYS SNAP AT OTHERS THAT THEY CAN'T TRUST ME.. AND I NEED THEIR TRUST.. NOW!
MIKEY LISTEN, I
NO. NO, FORGET IT!

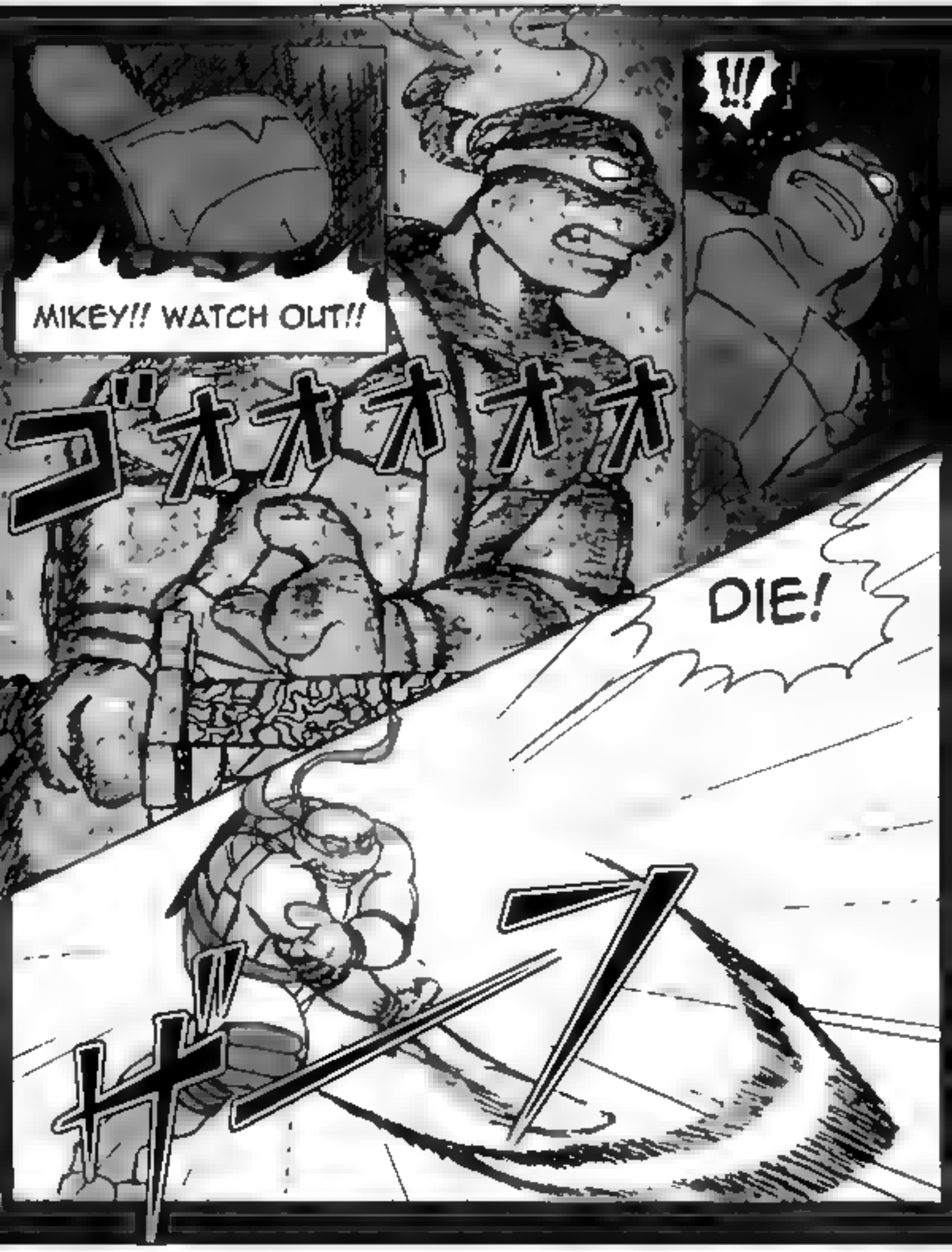

I DION'T MEAN IT! I M SORRY, BUT WE GOTTA..


AH. WAIT! MIKEY!

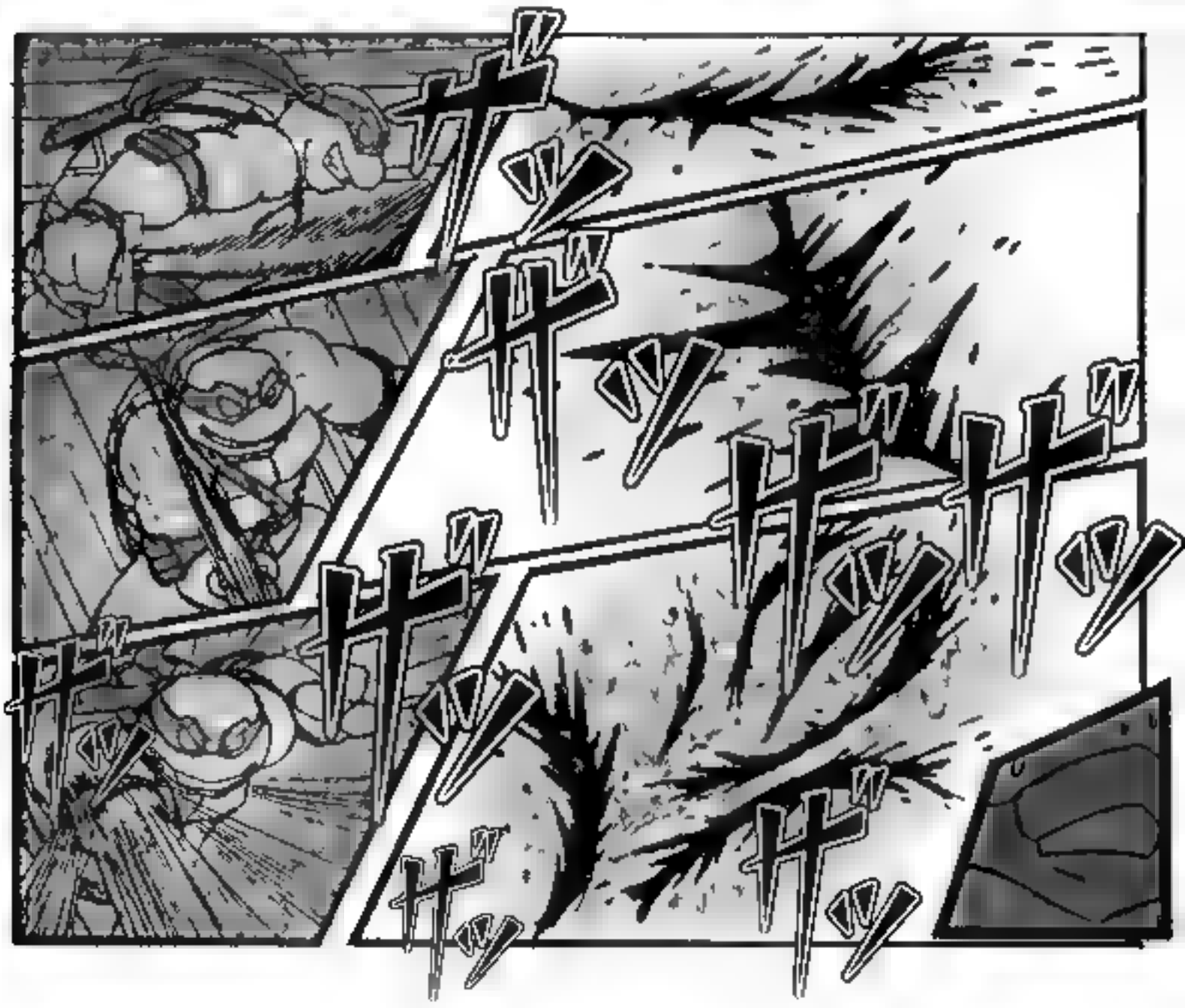

WHAT THE SHELL..?
DONNIE! ARE YOU OKAY??
MIKEY! LISTEN TO ME!
DONNIE!
STOP IT RIGHT THERE!
MIKEY!!
LISTEN TO ME, DAMMIT!!
WAIT - DONNIE'S OUT COLD?
AND LEO'S GONE? SHIT, THIS CAN'T BE GOOD


DONNIE! COME ON, WAKE UP!
MIKEY, WHATEVER YOU'RE THINKIN', I DION'T DO IT!
L... LEO WATCH OUT FOR LEO!!
HE THINKS HE CAN FOOL YOU, EVEN AFTER WHAT HE DID TO YOU
AS YOU CAN SEE RAPHAEL'S CRAZY
DONATELLO CONFRONTED RAPHAEL AND WAS A LITTLE LESS LUCKY THAN YOU WERE
DON'T LISTEN TO HIM IF YOU KNOW WHAT'S BEST FOR YOU.
YOU LIAR!!
WAIT TIL I GET MY HANDS ON YA, I'M GONNA "
URGH!!


UURRRGH.. M. MIKEY!! C'MON OVER HERE.. C MON!!
FORGET IT RAPH.
...
YOU'RE A SICKO. STAY WHERE YOU ARE
!!!


MIKEY!! WATCH OUT!!
ゴオオオオ
!!!
DIE!

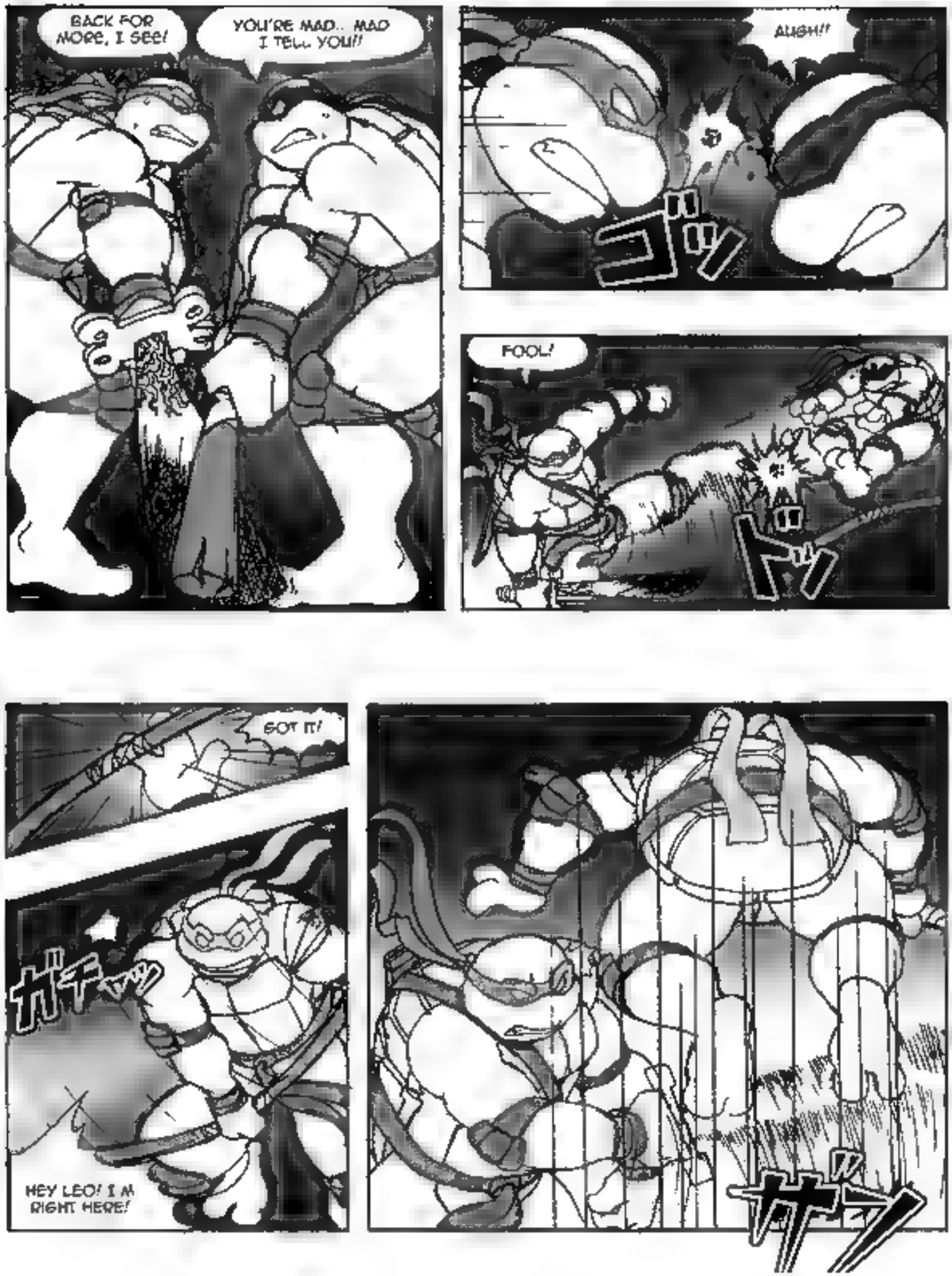


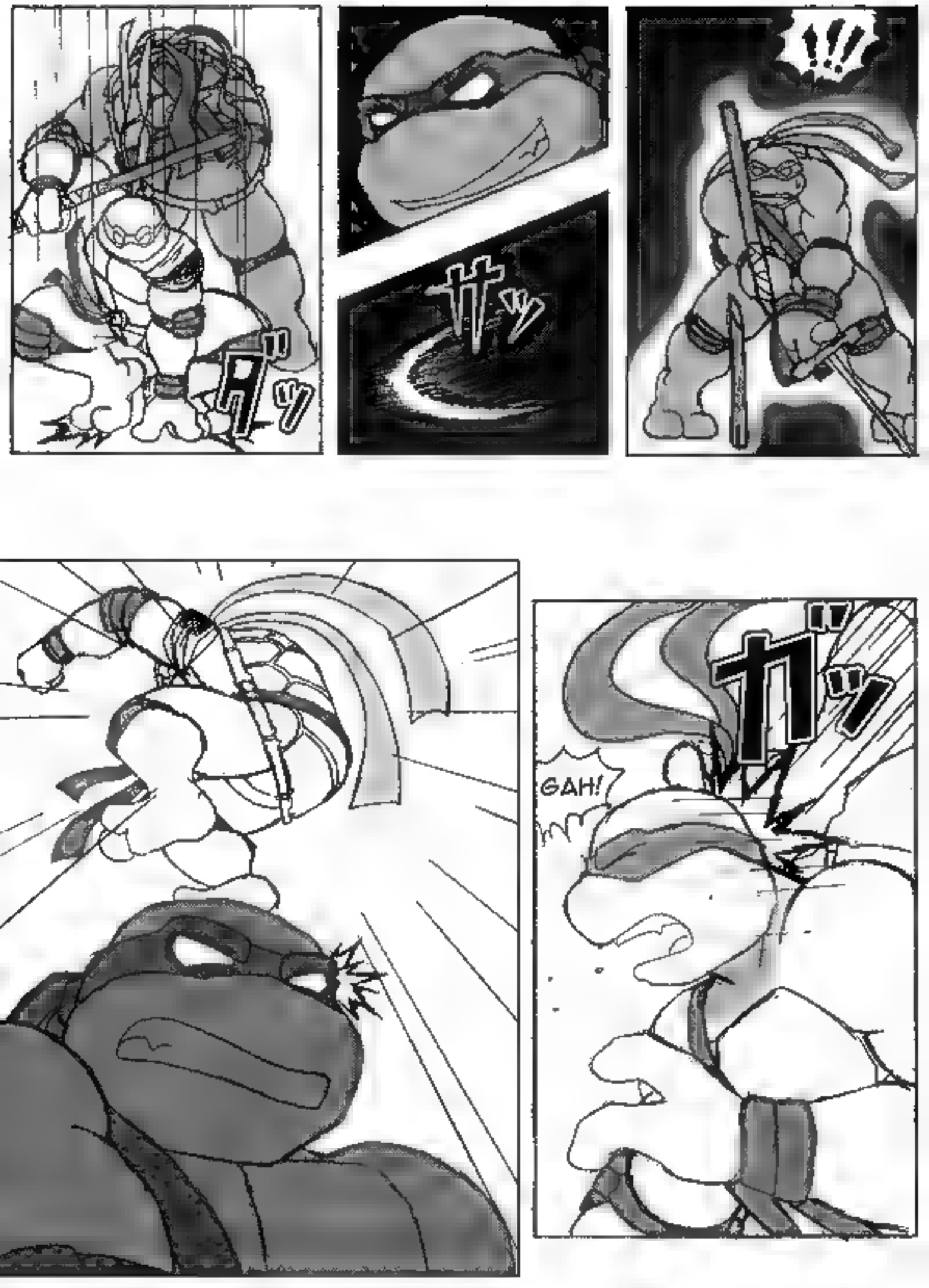





YOU. OKAY ..?
R.. RAPH. ..?
ドサッ!
HU..RRY RUN..
RAPH!!
I..IDIOT! I... TOLD YA... TO RUN... GET OUTTA HERE.
BUT YOU'RE...!
SCRAM!!
NO WAY! I WON'T!
I'LL NEVER FORGIVE MYSELF IF I LEFT YOU TO DIE HERE!


DON'T LET YOUR GUARD DOWN...! THIS NIGHTMARE'S NOT OVER YET!
HEADS UP, MIKEY!!
Mikey
DONNIE! YOU'RE OKAY!!
WE WON'T LET RAPH'S SACRIFICE GO TO WASTE!! LET'S DO THIS TOGETHER!
YOU WITH ME, MIKEY??
GOT IT!!


BACK FOR MORE, I SEE!
YOU'RE MAD.. MAD I TELL YOU!!
AUGH!!
FOOL!
GOT IT!
HEY LEO! I M RIGHT HERE!


GAH!


THIS IS FOR RAPH!
ガッ
ドカッ
ゴゴ
ゴゴゴ


DONNIE, YOU OKAY?
NEVERMIND ME. WE NEED TO CHECK ON RAPH!


IT'S ALRIGHT IT'S NOTHING YOUR MUTANT GENES CAN'T REGENERATE
M..MIKEY.. W WHERE ARE YOU ?
I'M RIGHT HERE BRO! JUST TAKE IT EASY


I SHOULD'VE PAID MORE ATTENTION TO WHAT RAPH SAID
BUT THEN AGAIN, MIKEY TOLD ME A DIFFERENT STORY NONE OF THIS MAKES SENSE...!!


I CAN'T BELIEVE RAPH RISKED HIS LIFE FOR ME
AT LEAST WE'RE ALL SAFE FOR NOW


Y.. YOU UNWORTHY VERMINS . DON'T YOU REALIZE THAT YOU'RE NO MATCH FOR ME?
I'M LEONARDO HAMATO I M THE SENSE- S ONLY WORTHY SON I'M... THE PERFECT NINJA!
ゴオオオオ...


UNLIKE MYSELF YOU ALL LACK FOCUS
YOU'LL NEVER REACH YOUR FULL POTENTIAL!
MICHELANGELO'S ENJOYMENT OF PETTY THINGS IN LIFE.
DONATELLO'S OBSESSION FOR SCIENCE AND MACHINES.
RAPHAEL'S BITTERNESS ABOUT HIS LIFE
YOU'RE ALL CORRUPTED BY LIFE'S ILLUSIONS! YOU'RE ALL FAILURES! I'M THE ONLY ONE WHO FULLY DEDICATED HIMSELF TO NINJUTSU! I'M THE ONLY ONE WHO... WHO THREW AWAY HIS LIFE TO SET THE RIGHT EXAMPLE
..TO YOU SELFISH BASTARDS!!
SO ALL THIS TIME
LEO WAS CONSUMED BY..
..ENVY..

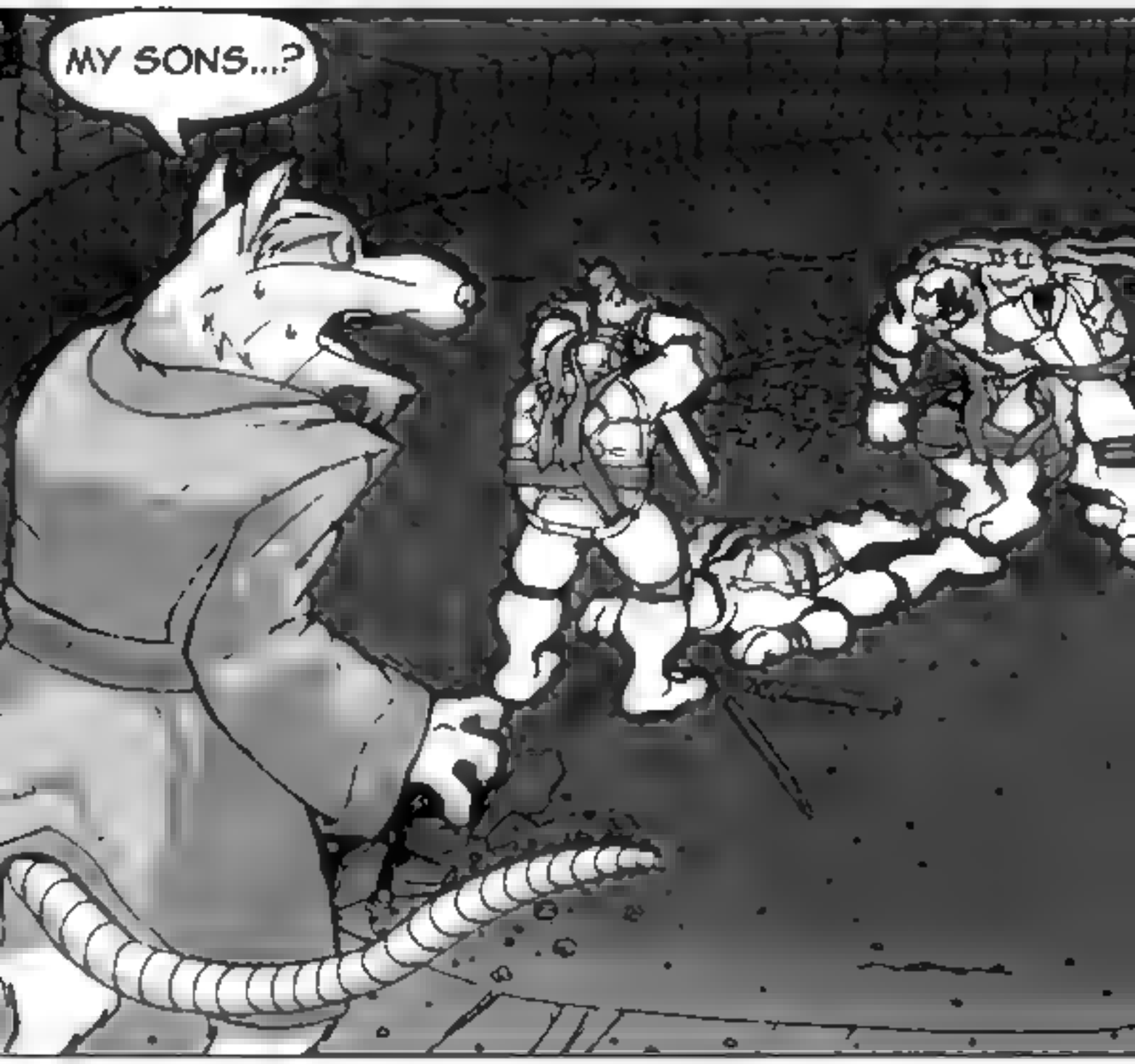

LET'S END THIS. YOU PARASITES HAVE POISONED MY LIFE LONG ENOUGH.
MIKEY! TAKE RAPH AND GET OUTTA HERE NOW!
WHAT? NO WAY!
THAT'S WHY I MUST PUNISH YOU.
O DONNIE! WH WHADDYA DOIN?
I'LL BUY YOU SOME TIME! JUST GO!!


TIME TO DIE..
I DON'T THINK SO.
YAAAHH!
!!!
WE WON'T GO DOWN SO EASILY!! WE.. WON'T...
A...AAAAAARGH!! MY HANDS!!
OOF!!


GHH. . . UGHHH...
ドサッ
ガッ
URGH!
A FOOLISH ATTEMPT TO BEST ME. BUT YOU HAVE GUTS.
I'LL REWARD YOU WITH A SWIFT AND PAINLESS DEATH.
L...LEAVE... HIM.... ALONE... Y... YOU BASTARD!!
RAPH! DONNIE TOLD US TO RUN!! C'MON!
LET GO OF ME! LET GO!!
NO, RAPH!!
DONNIIIIIIIIE!!!


ガラッ
ガラッ



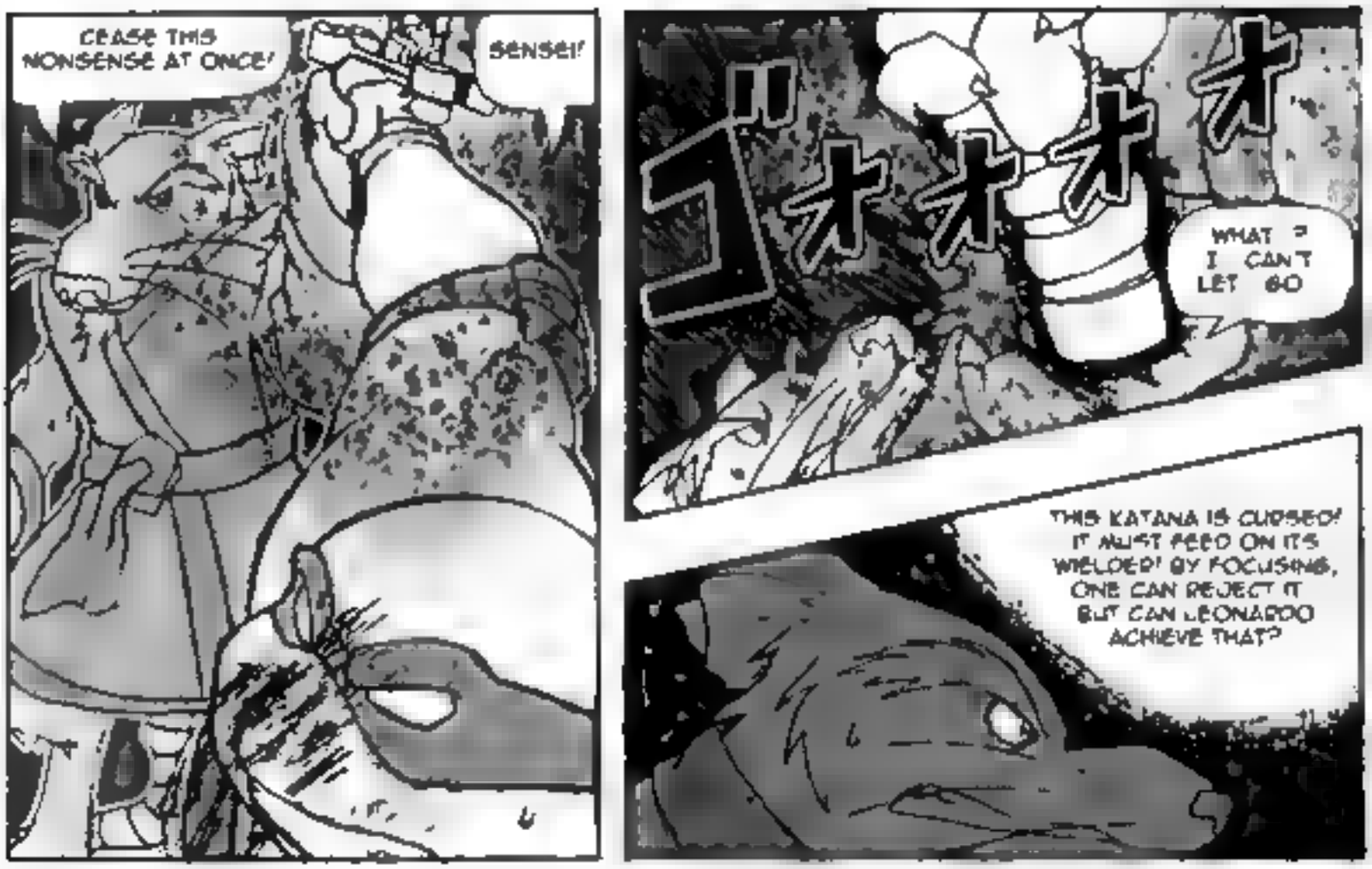

MY SONS...?

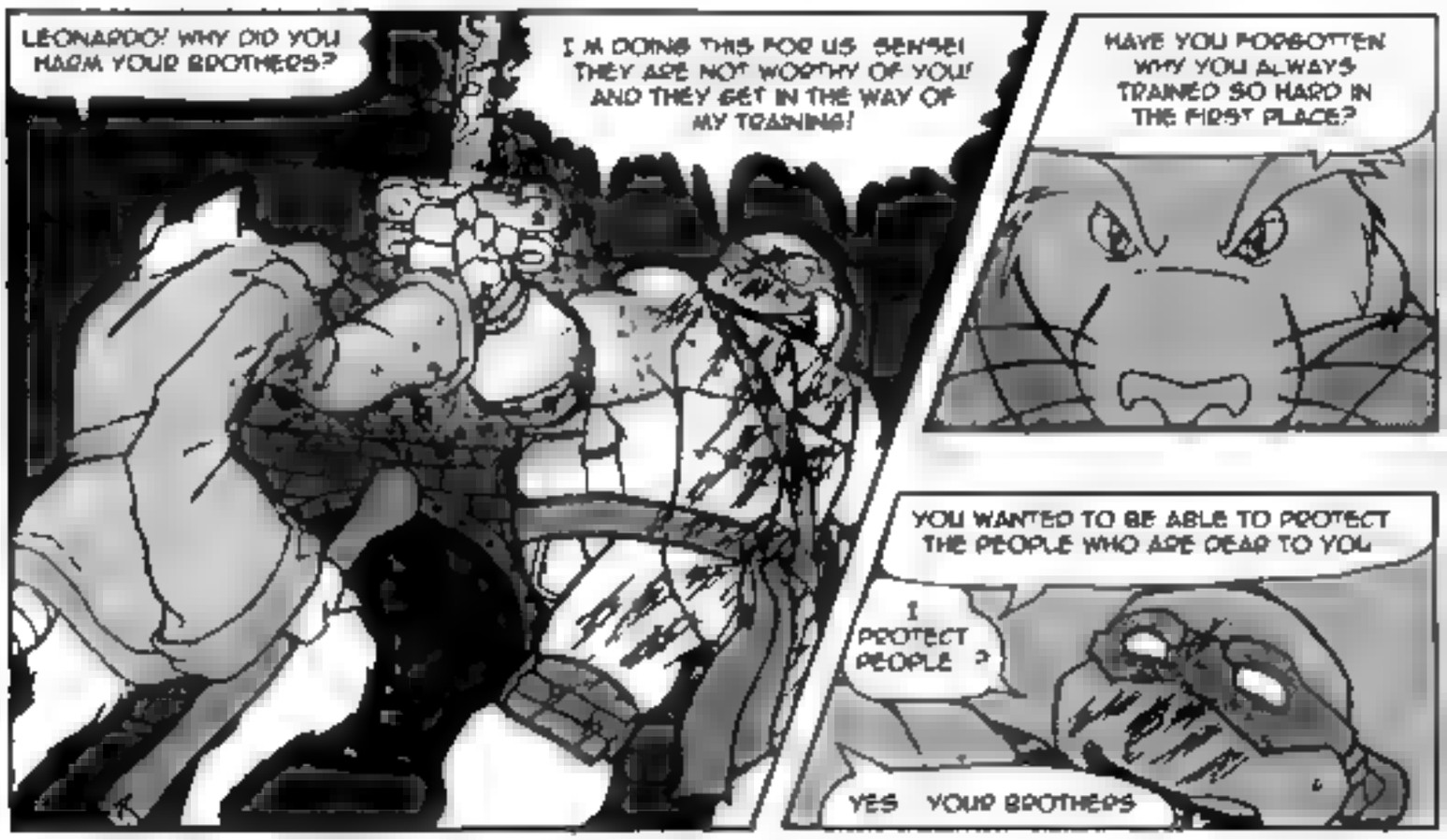

WELCOME HOME, SENSEI.
M...MASTER... TH...THE KATANA... IT... LEO... L...LEO'S MAD!!


HOW DARE YOU SPEAK TO MY VENERABLE SENSEI, YOU FOOL!
LEONARDO!!

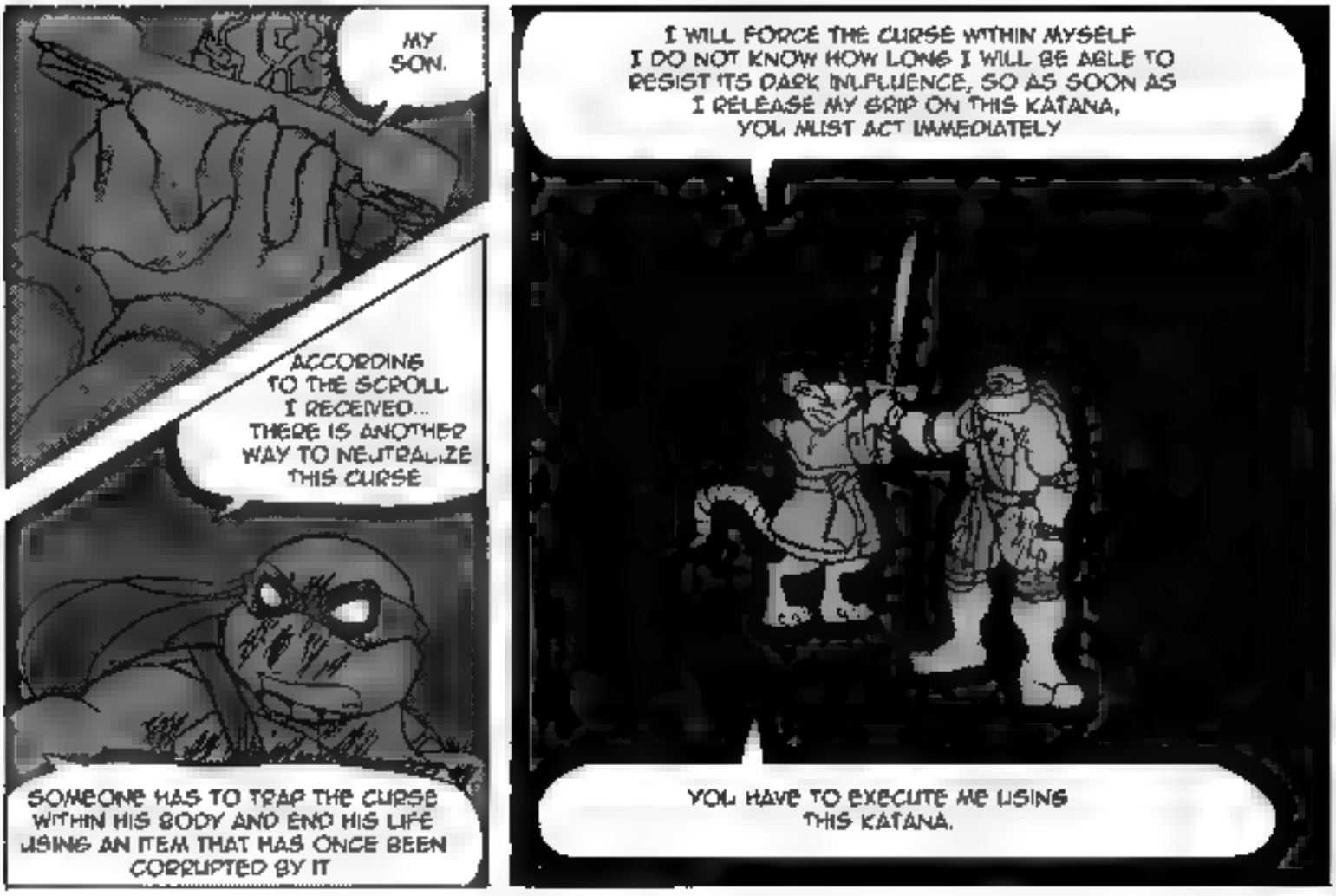

YOUR BROTHERS DESERVE AS MUCH RESPECT AS I DO. BEHAVE YOURSELF AND DROP YOUR WEAPON.
S-SENSEI!
ME? BEHAVE? GUT...!!

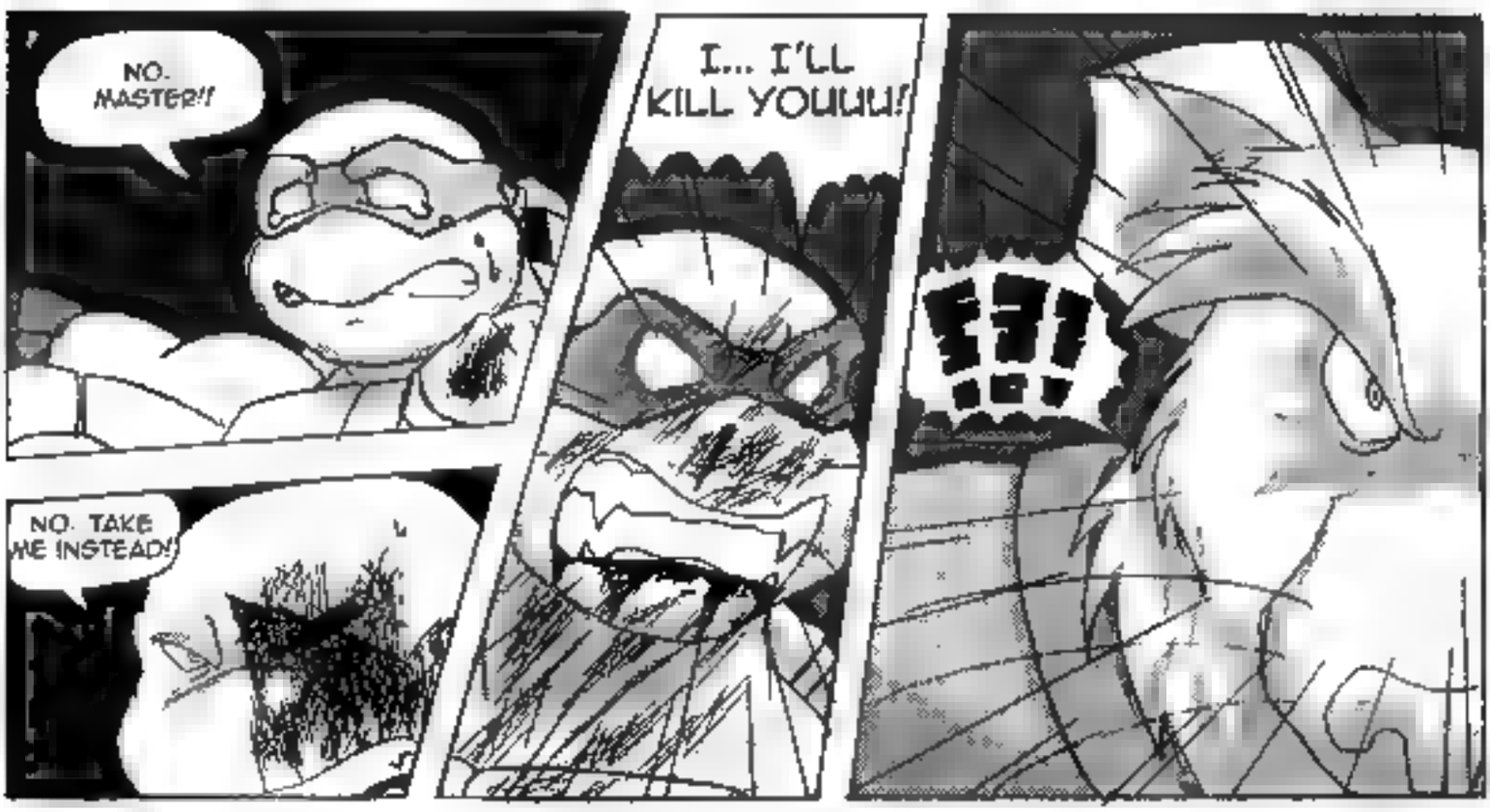

LEONARDO. DIDN'T YOU HEAR WHAT I SAID?
ゴォォォ
TH THE KATANA! IT IT'S MESSIN' UP PEOPLE S MINDS! M MASTER! PLEASE HELP HIM!!
YA KNOW HIM BETTER THAN ANY OF US!
I SEE I SCREWED UP I M NO LONGER PERFECT TO MY SENSE S EYES I DISAPPOINTED HIM.
AND IT'S ALL YOUR FAULT!
IF ONLY YOU DIDN'T EXIST!!
ENOUGH!


CEASE THIS NONSENSE AT ONCE!
SENSEI!
ゴオオオオ
WHAT ? I CAN'T LET GO
THIS KATANA IS CURSED! IT MUST FEED ON ITS WIELDER! BY FOCUSING, ONE CAN REJECT IT BUT CAN LEONARDO ACHIEVE THAT?

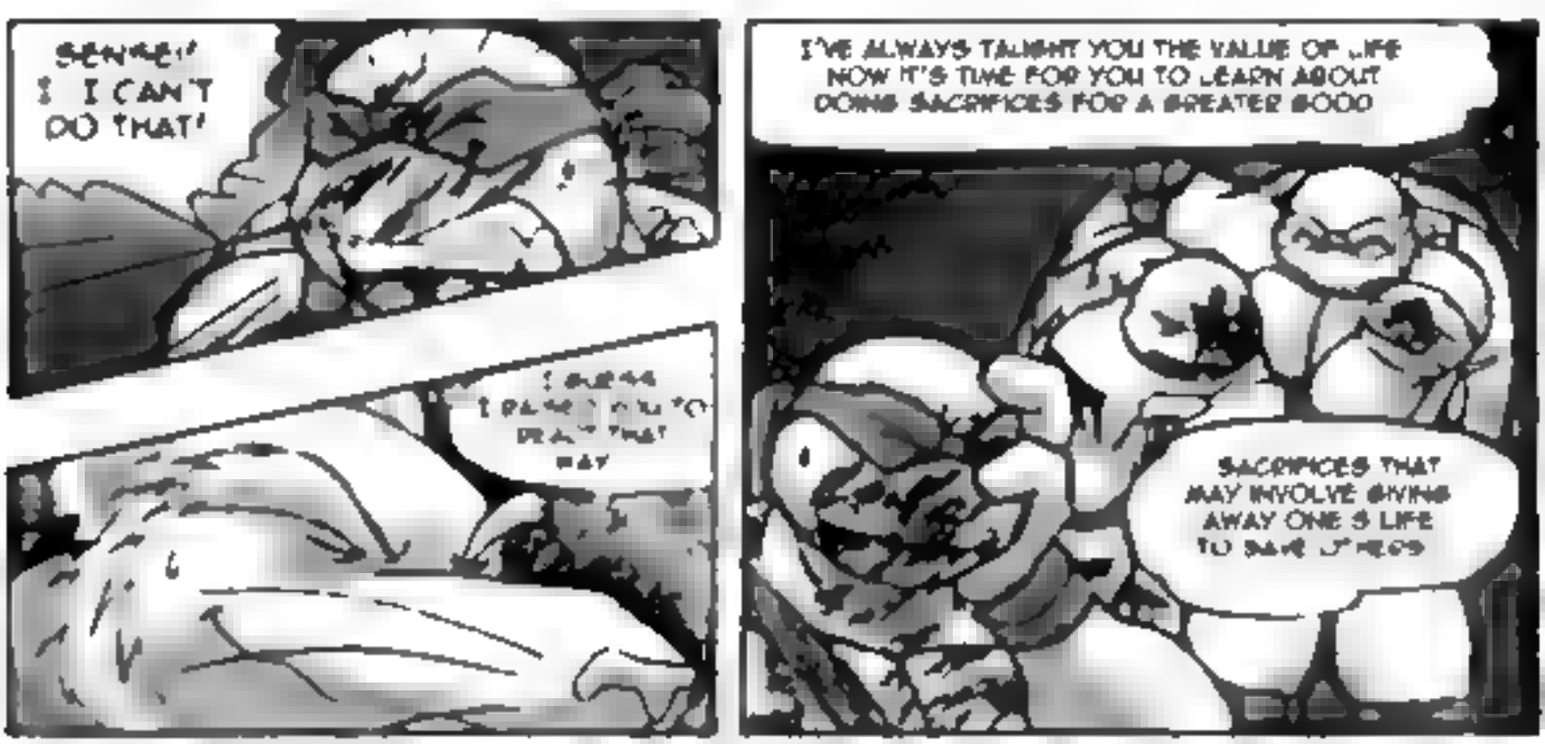

LEONARDO! WHY DID YOU HARM YOUR BROTHERS?
I M DOING THIS FOR US SENSEI! THEY ARE NOT WORTHY OF YOU! AND THEY GET IN THE WAY OF MY TRAINING!
HAVE YOU FORGOTTEN WHY YOU ALWAYS TRAINED SO HARD IN THE FIRST PLACE?
YOU WANTED TO BE ABLE TO PROTECT THE PEOPLE WHO ARE DEAR TO YOU
I PROTECT PEOPLE ?
YES YOUR BROTHERS


NOW LISTEN WELL! THIS KATANA SEEMS TO FEED OFF THE DARK SIDE OF YOUR SOUL! THE MORE YOU EMBRACE YOUR NEGATIVE EMOTIONS, THE HARDER IT WILL BE TO LET GO OF THIS KATANA!
MY... NEGATIVE EMOTIONS ?
FOR NOW, YOU NEED TO FOCUS ON EMPTYING YOUR MIND AND GIVE THAT KATANA NOTHING TO HOLD ON TO!
MAKE A VOID IN YOUR MIND LIKE WE DID BEFORE!
I'LL FOCUS WITH YOU MY SON.
YOU CAN DO IT!
I FAILED THEM. I FAILED MY BROTHERS
NO THEY FAILED ME.. AGAIN!!
I'LL KILL YOU!
LEONARDO IT SEEMS YOU LOST TO THAT CURSE I HAVE NO CHOICE


MY SON.
ACCORDING TO THE SCROLL I RECEIVED... THERE IS ANOTHER WAY TO NEUTRALIZE THIS CURSE
SOMEONE HAS TO TRAP THE CURSE WITHIN HIS BODY AND END HIS LIFE USING AN ITEM THAT HAS ONCE BEEN CORRUPTED BY IT
I WILL FORCE THE CURSE WITHIN MYSELF I DO NOT KNOW HOW LONG I WILL BE ABLE TO RESIST ITS DARK INFLUENCE, SO AS SOON AS I RELEASE MY GRIP ON THIS KATANA, YOU MUST ACT IMMEDIATELY
YOU HAVE TO EXECUTE ME USING THIS KATANA.


NO. MASTER!!
NO. TAKE ME INSTEAD!
I... I'LL KILL YOUUU!
!!!


LEONARDO! THERE ISN'T MUCH TIME! YOU MUST PUT AN END TO THIS CURSE BEFORE IT'S TOO LATE!
NO!


I'VE ALWAYS TAUGHT YOU THE VALUE OF LIFE NOW IT'S TIME FOR YOU TO LEARN ABOUT DOING SACRIFICES FOR A GREATER GOOD
SACRIFICES THAT MAY INVOLVE GIVING AWAY ONE'S LIFE TO SAVE OTHERS


LEONARDO... THIS WAS YOUR FINAL LESSON. NOW SHOW ME THAT YOU UNDERSTOOD IT
I KNOW ASKING YOU TO CARRY OUT THIS TASK IS A VERY SELFISH REQUEST


HOWEVER... I CANNOT BEAR THE THOUGHT OF MY CHILDREN KILLING OFF EACH OTHER.
OR EVEN WORSE: THE THOUGHT OF MY SONS KILLED BY THEIR OWN FATHER
THIS IS YOUR MASTER'S FINAL REQUEST
PLEASE DO WHAT MUST BE DONE TO PROTECT YOUR FAMILY




I WISH I COULD'VE STAYED LONGER TO SEE EACH OF YOU FIND YOUR OWN HAPPINESS
HOWEVER I CAN STILL LEAVE WITH MY DEBT TO ALL THOSE YEARS I SPENT WITH THE FOUR OF YOU KNOWING WE WERE WITH A LIFE TIME OF HAPPINESS
REMEMBER YOU ARE NEVER ALONE YOU HAVE EACH OTHER


BE WELL... MY DEAR BONE.
FAREWELL...
ゴリオオオオ


THIS IS ALL THAT'S LEFT OF OUR SENSEI? NO . NO!! IT'S CAN'T BE!!!!!!
IT HAS TO BE A NIGHTMARE!! IT HAS TO!!
I'LL... I'LL WAKE UP AND IT'LL BE AS USUAL! LEO SPARRING WITH THE SENSEI, RAPH SCOUTING THE CITY, MIKEY MESSING WITH MY STUFF..
O .DONNIE.. IT S NOT A DREAM. MASTER SPLINTER.. HE 'S NOT GONNA COME BACK .
.. ME... IN MY LAB . ALONE.. WORKING..!!!
LET HIM BE


I'LL PUT OUR SENSEI'S ASHES IN AN URN.
DON'T YOU DARE TOUCH HIS ASHES .
YOU HEARTLESS MURDERER
YOU KILLED OUR FATHER, YOU SON OF A...!!
DONNIE, CALM DOWN! IT'S NOT HIS FAULT!
I SAW HIM!
DONNIE! EASY!!!
LEO! I'LL... I'LL KILL YOU FOR THAT YOU... YOU UNGRATEFUL BASTARD!!!


S... STOP IT.. T'WAS ME
!!!
I I PICKED UP THAT C . CURSED KATANA. . I.. I STARTED EVERYTHING..
T TAKE IT OUT ON ME.. NOT LEO.
SHUT UP! SHUT UP!!!
FIRST YOU TELL ME THAT EVERYTHING THAT JUST HAPPENED IS REAL!
AND NOW YOU'RE ASKING ME TO DENY THE REALITY I SAW WITH MY EYES???
JUST WHAT AM I SUPPOSED TO BELIEVE? WHAT IS REAL IN ALL THIS MESS??
DONNIE LEO... HE.
DONNIE'S RIGHT OUR SENSEI DIED A DISHONOURABLE DEATH BY MY HANDS..
L...LEO...?
I MUST ATONE FOR MY SIN. ALONE


I'LL GO TO JAPAN AND UNCOVER THE TRUTH BEHIND THE PACKAGE THAT WAS SENT TO US I WON'T RETURN UNTIL I FIND SOME ANSWERS
N..NO... WHY BANISH YERSELF?? IT .. IT SHOULD BE ME ME.. AND MIKEY...!!
RAPH! HE KILLED OUR SENSEI AND THAT S THAT! I DON'T CARE WHERE HE GOES AS LONG AS HE'S FAR AWAY FROM US!!
LEO!!
I M OFF
SORRY FOR EVERYTHING
MIKEY!! WHY DON' CHA SAY SOMETHIN' TOO? IT'S YER DAMN FAULT TOO!!!
RAPH! IT WAS LEO'S DECISION! I... I - DONNIE! SAY SOMETHING!
LEAVE ME ALONE!!


"SENSEI, I BELIEVE IN POWER IN NUMBERS, BUT... WHAT IF..."
"...IF YOU ALL SPLIT UP? MY SON, EVERYONE MUST PART WAYS AT SOME POINT IN THEIR LIVES."
"SENSEI... I SWEAR I'LL DO MY UTMOST TO KEEP EVERYONE UNITED AS LONG AS I'M ALIVE!"
L...LEO!! YOU.. YOU FORGOT YOUR STUFF.
YOU.. FORGOT ME..
RAPHAEL.. YOU'RE NOT COMING
WE'RE BROS, LEO!
AND BROS STICK TOGETHER! I AIN'T GONNA LET YA CARRY THAT BURDEN ALONE!
I THANK YOU FOR YOUR KINDNESS, RAPHAEL.. BUT THIS SIN IS MINE ALONE TO ATONE FOR
I'LL MISS YOU. BRO.
LEO, I---
"YOUR WORDS ARE
HOWEVER, IF THE STRUCTURE OF OUR FAMILY SOMEHOW BECOMES UNSTABLE..."
"I'LL BE THE LAST ONE TO LEAVE! I'LL STAY BEHIND AND TRY TO REASON WITH MY BROTHERS!"
"EVEN IF PARTING WAYS IS WHAT'S BEST FOR THEM AT THAT POINT?"
"I... I DON'T KNOW, SENSEI..."


I... I... FELT LIKE TALKING TO SOMEONE NORMAL
"SHARDS OF HAPPINESS." HUH? THAT WAS POETIC. I'LL REMEMBER THAT.

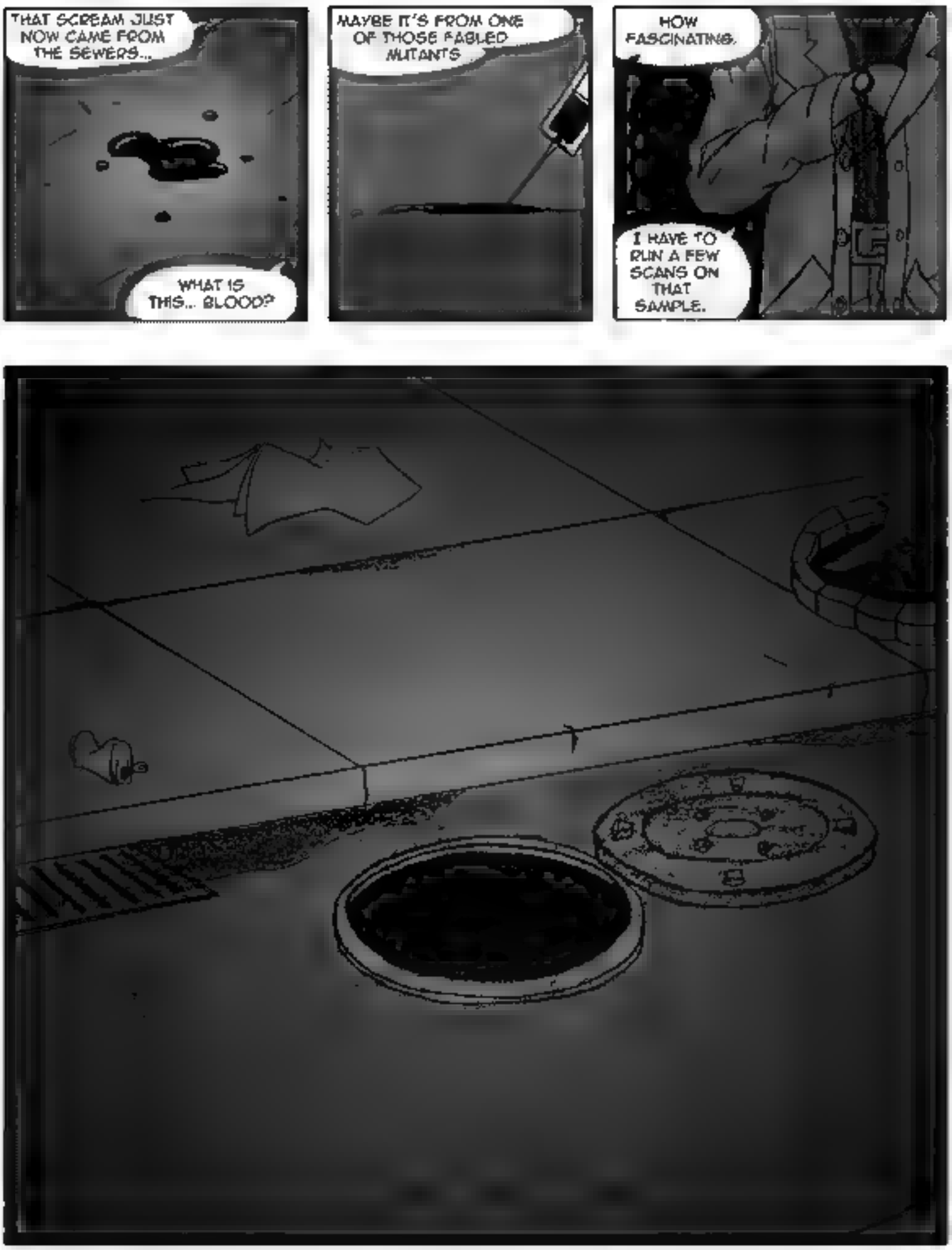

HAPPINESS.
幸
OF COURSE MARY
OF COURSE WE'RE FAMILY
WE'LL ALWAYS BE THERE
FOR EACH OTHER


"SENSEI. PLEASE LOOK AT MY NEWEST INVENTION! IT'S A VIRTUAL WORLD SIMULATOR!"
"DONATELLO. I UNDERSTAND YOUR PASSION FOR TECHNOLOGY..."
"...BUT REMEMBER NOT TO LET ITS ILLUSIONS DISTORT YOUR VISION OF REALITY".
"I KNOW... BUT SOMETIMES, I HATE OUR WORLD SO MUCH."
"YOU MUST NEVER DENY REALITY, NO MATTER HOW HARSH IT MAY BE.
I... I'M RIGHT HERE, SENSEI! I WON'T BE GOING ANYWHERE.
REALITY.
実


THAT'S WHY I HAD TO LEAVE QUICKLY
I DIDN'T WANT THEM TO SEE ME LIKE THIS...
FAREWELL FATHER
HONOR.
誇


U URGH SH. SHIIT.
"WE LIVE HIDDEN FROM THE WHOLE WORLD. ONLY A HANDFUL OF HUMANS ACCEPT US FOR WHO WE ARE. WE HAVE NO FUTURE, NO FACE, NO
C CAN'T WALK A ANY FURTHER
HUFF HUFF
"DON'CHA SEE, SENSEI? OUR LIFE IS TROUBLESOME. THERE'S SO MUCH OUT THERE, AND IT'S OUT OF OUR REACH [illegible]
"SENSEI, DO NOT CONSIDER THE REALITY OF BEING ALIVE."
"AS LONG AS THERE IS LIFE, THERE IS HOPE... HOPE FOR A [illegible] TOMORROW."
I I'LL NEVER CATCH UP WITH LEO... THAT IDIOT
W WHY.. WHY DOES HE HAVE TO CARRY ALL THE BURDEN ON HIS SHOULDERS? WHY . WON'T HE LET ME HELP HIM...?
C CAN'T DO A DAMN THING ABOUT IT SHIT!!

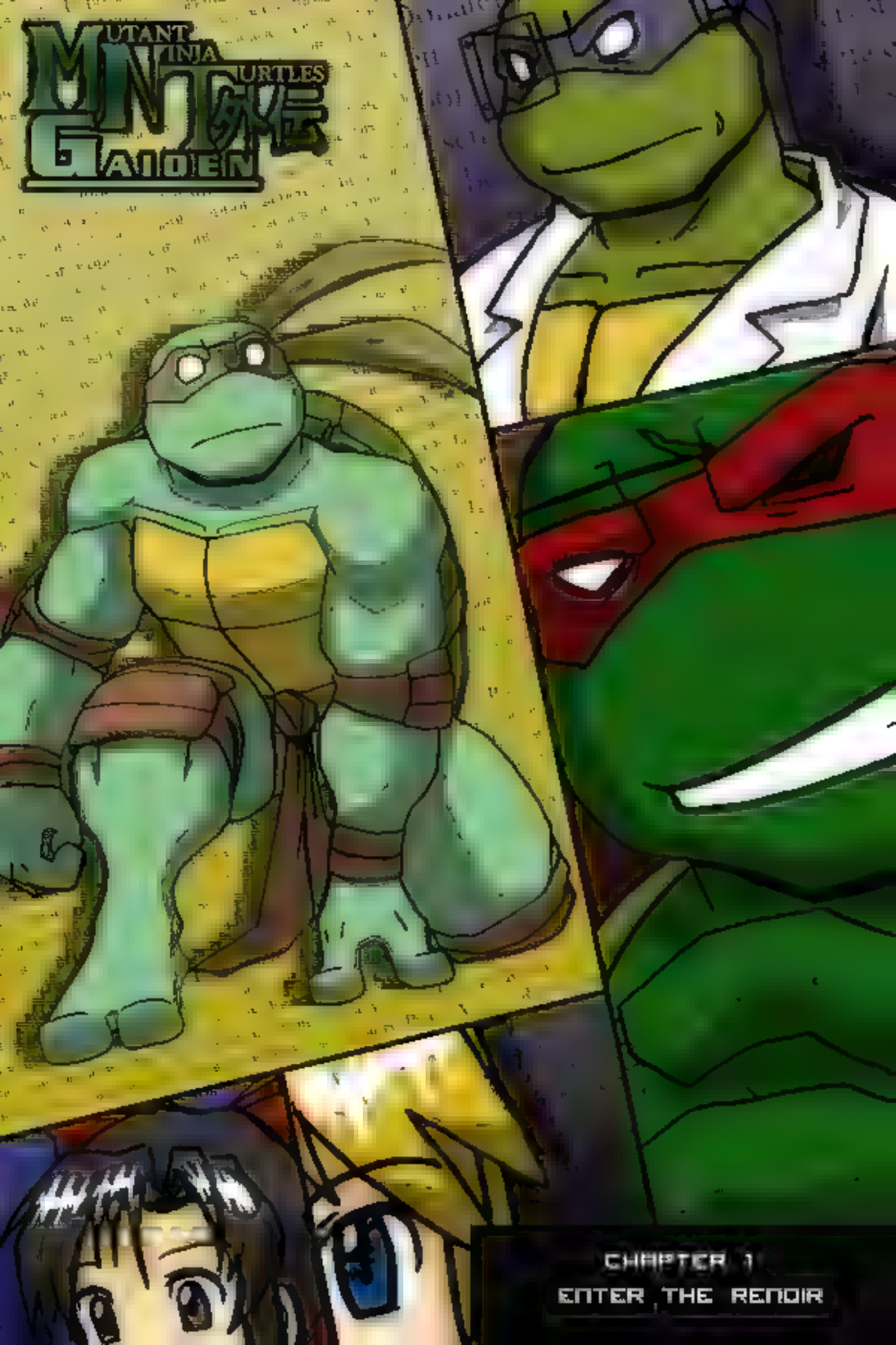

HOPE.
望
AND THIS IS ALL MY DAMN FAULT!!


THAT SCREAM JUST NOW CAME FROM THE SEWERS...
WHAT IS THIS... BLOOD?
MAYBE IT'S FROM ONE OF THOSE FABLED MUTANTS
HOW FASCINATING.
I HAVE TO RUN A FEW SCANS ON THAT SAMPLE.

17 YEARS LATER...

THE MUTANT NINJA TURTLES SIDESTORY

BEGINS...

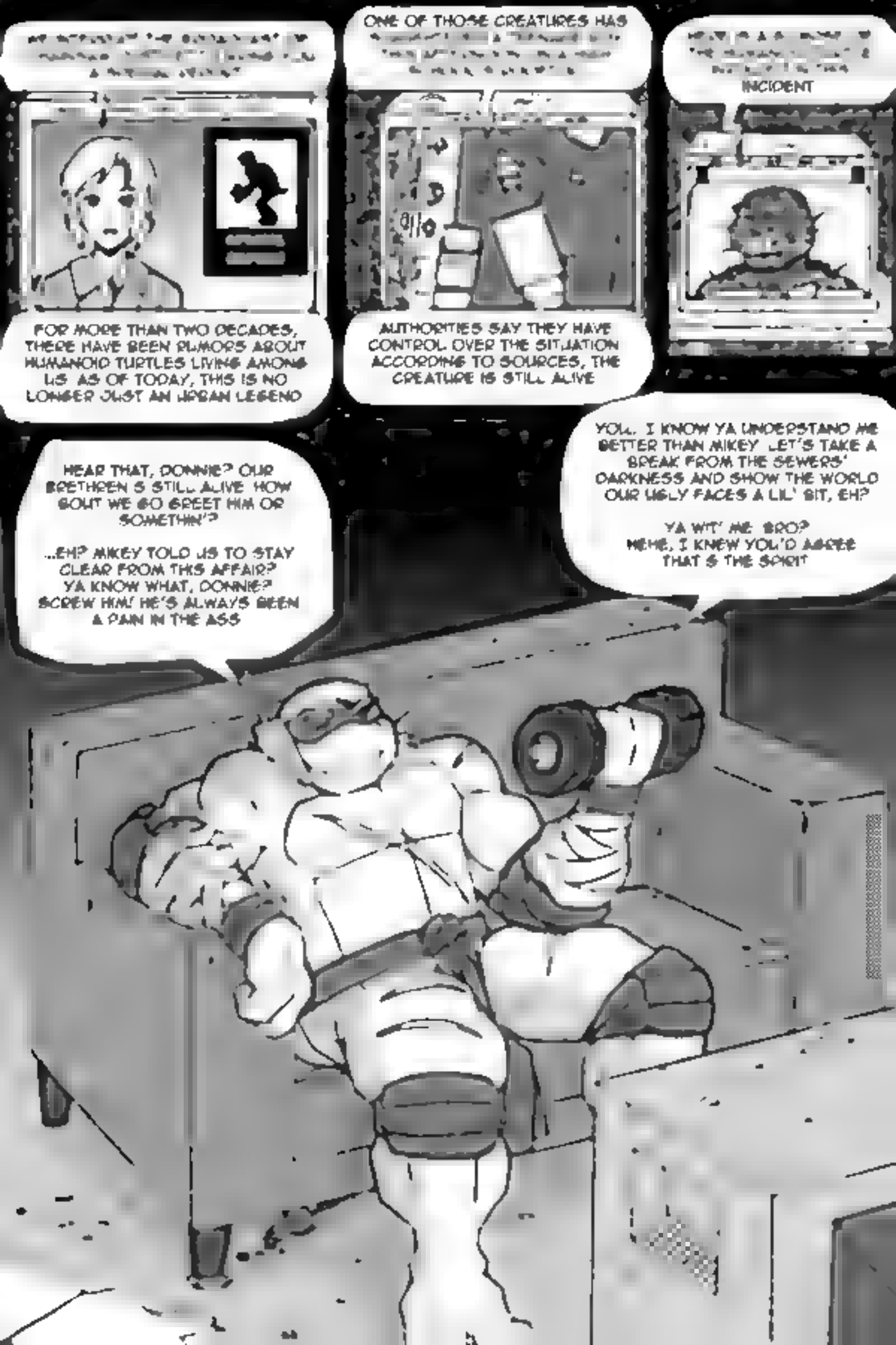

MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
MNT外伝
GAIDEN
CHAPTER 1
ENTER THE RENOIR


THIS TIME HE'S GONE TOO FAR.. THIS TIME. THIS TIME.
..HE'S NOT GETTING AWAY WITH IT!!
AAH WASSUP, DAVIANNA? IS SOMETHING WRONG?
THAT IDIOT.. HE DID IT AGAIN !
SHADOW !!
JUST NOW, HE. HE.
..HE AND HIS FRIENDS PEEPED AT US AFTER OUR SOCCER GAME.
..WHILE WE WERE CHANGING!!
THAT... THAT LOUSY PERV!!
FORGET ABOUT HIS FRIENDS! LET'S ATTACK THE CORE OF THIS PROBLEM!


ドン
ドン
ドン
バタン
AAAAH!!
GLOOMC


GRAAARRHH!!
YAAH!
SHADOW!!
NO... NO!! IT'S COMING... IT'S
DAVIANNA! STAND BACK!!
FUDDY!
ガッ
S OUT COLD! IT'S OKAY, NOW../ IT'S OKAY..
SHADOW.. HE S


DON SPEAKING MIKEY .. I THOUGHT YOU WERE TOO BUSY WITH YOUR NEW LIFESTYLE TO KEEP IN TOUCH WITH UNDERGROUND CREATURES LIKE ME. WHAT DO YOU WANT?
Incoming call: CASEY & APRIL (home)
SAY WHAT? A WILD MUTANT TURTLE? IN SHADOW'S PRIVATE SCHOOL? IT DEVOURED A STUDENT? BUT IF THE POLICE A READY ON THE CASE. WHAT DO YOU EXPECT ME TO DO? ROAM ABOUT AND FREAK OUT MORE HUMANS? BESIDES I HATE GOING TO THE SURFACE!
OH... YOU JUST WANTED TO LET ME KNOW SO I WON'T GET INVOLVED IN THIS, RIGHT? OKAY, OKAY
I.. I KNOW, I KNOW, YOU HAVE A REPUTATION TO PRESERVE BUT WHAT'S THE USE? NONE OF YOUR READERS KNOWS YOU RE A MUTANT ANYWAYS.
OKAY, OKAY, I GET IT! I'LL WARN RAPH ABOUT IT GOOD EVENING


FOR MORE THAN TWO DECADES, THERE HAVE BEEN RUMORS ABOUT HUMANOID TURTLES LIVING AMONG US AS OF TODAY, THIS IS NO LONGER JUST AN URBAN LEGEND
ONE OF THOSE CREATURES HAS
AUTHORITIES SAY THEY HAVE CONTROL OVER THE SITUATION ACCORDING TO SOURCES, THE CREATURE IS STILL ALIVE
INCIDENT
HEAR THAT, DONNIE? OUR BRETHREN S STILL ALIVE HOW BOUT WE GO GREET HIM OR SOMETHIN'?
..EH? MIKEY TOLD US TO STAY CLEAR FROM THIS AFFAIR? YA KNOW WHAT, DONNIE? SCREW HIM! HE'S ALWAYS BEEN A PAIN IN THE ASS
YOU. I KNOW YA UNDERSTAND ME BETTER THAN MIKEY LET'S TAKE A BREAK FROM THE SEWERS' DARKNESS AND SHOW THE WORLD OUR UGLY FACES A LIL' BIT, EH?
YA WIT' ME BRO?
HEHE, I KNEW YOU'D AGREE THAT S THE SPIRIT


New York City
ONE-ON
JUMPIN' ON THE ROOFS OF NEW YORK. IN THE MOON-LIGHT. LIKE IN THE GOOD OL' DAYS EH?
RAPH.. I DIDN'T COME ALONG TO
WITH YOU
I AGREED TO HELP YOU BECAUSE I KNOW HOW TERRIBLY LIMITED YOUR KNOWLEDGE OF COMPUTERS IS. YOU
GONNA GET VERY FAR WITHOUT ME
THIS IS IT. RAPH. THE FACILITY WHERE THAT KILLER MUTANT TURTLE IS BEING CONFINED. ACCORDING TO THE DATA I DOWNLOADED BY HACKING INTO THE FBI'S SYSTEMS. THE
LOOKING FOR IS ON THE SECOND TO LAST FLOOR
HEH. SO WHAT MY NINJA SKILLS AIN'T GOOD
FIRST OF ALL,
SINCE YOU LAST INFILTRATED A
WANT TO RELY
ALONE
WE'RE TALKING ABOUT A HI-TECH LAB HERE
DEVICES


UNHAND THAT KNIFE!
GAH...!
THAT VOICE !
IT CAME FROM DOWN THERE ..!
YOU CREEPS HAVE PICKED THE WRONG NIGHT TO CROSS MY PATH .
WUSSIES
TH . THAT'S OUR LINE, BITCH!!
DUDE! THE VIGILANTE'S A CHICK! WE CAN TAKE HER ON!!
I'M GONNA CARVE YA UP!!
YA FREAKIN' DYKE!!


OW!
URRRFFFFHHH!
(MY NUTS!)

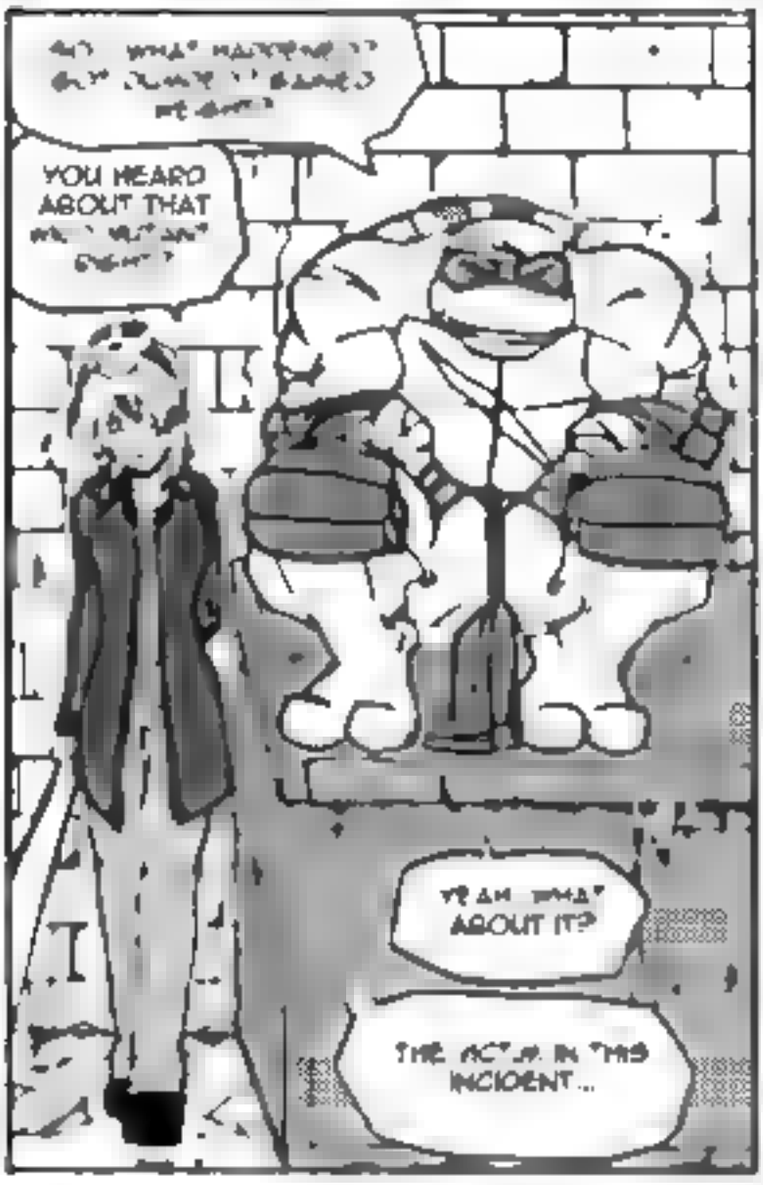

WHY YOU..!


PATHETIC!
GEH!
SO ANYONE UP FOR SECONDS?




I COME IN PEACE, AMATEUR.
UNCLE RAPH?
UNCLE DON?


CLEANING THE STREETS OF NEW YORK FROM PURPLE DRAGON GANGSTERS JUST LIKE YOUR DAD EH? NOT BAD, SHADOW
I HAD TO KEEP MYSELF BUSY WITH SOMETHING AFTER WHAT I WITNESSED


YOU HEARD ABOUT THAT
YEAH WHAT ABOUT IT?
THE ACTS IN THIS INCIDENT...


HE WAS MY CHILDHOOD FRIEND. HE GOT RIPPED TO SHREDS BY THAT MUTANT. I
ANYTHING

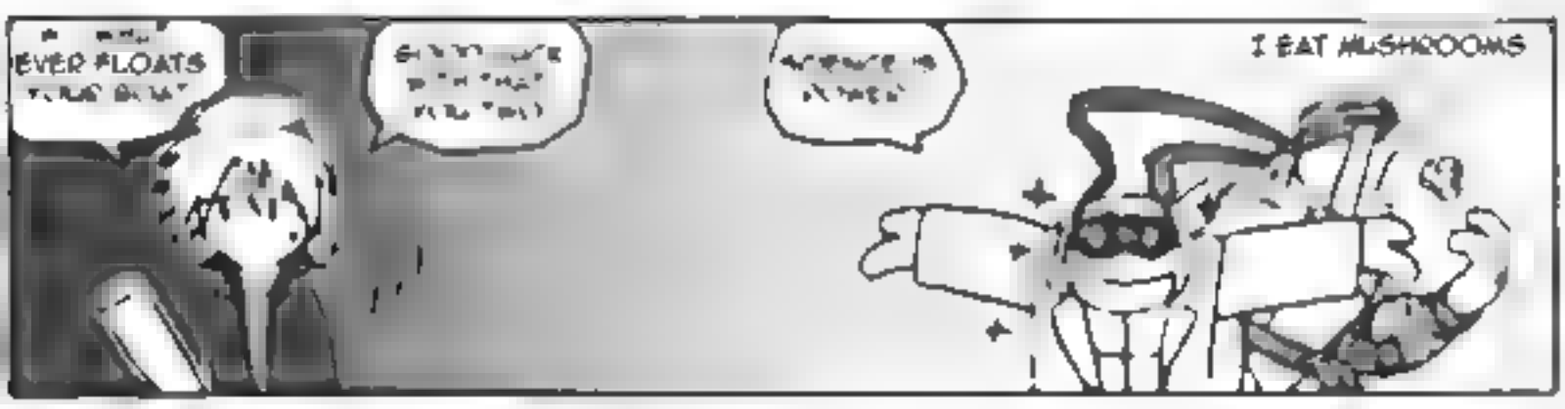

NO TRY


BETTER GO HOME
MUTANTS MADE YOU UNEASY

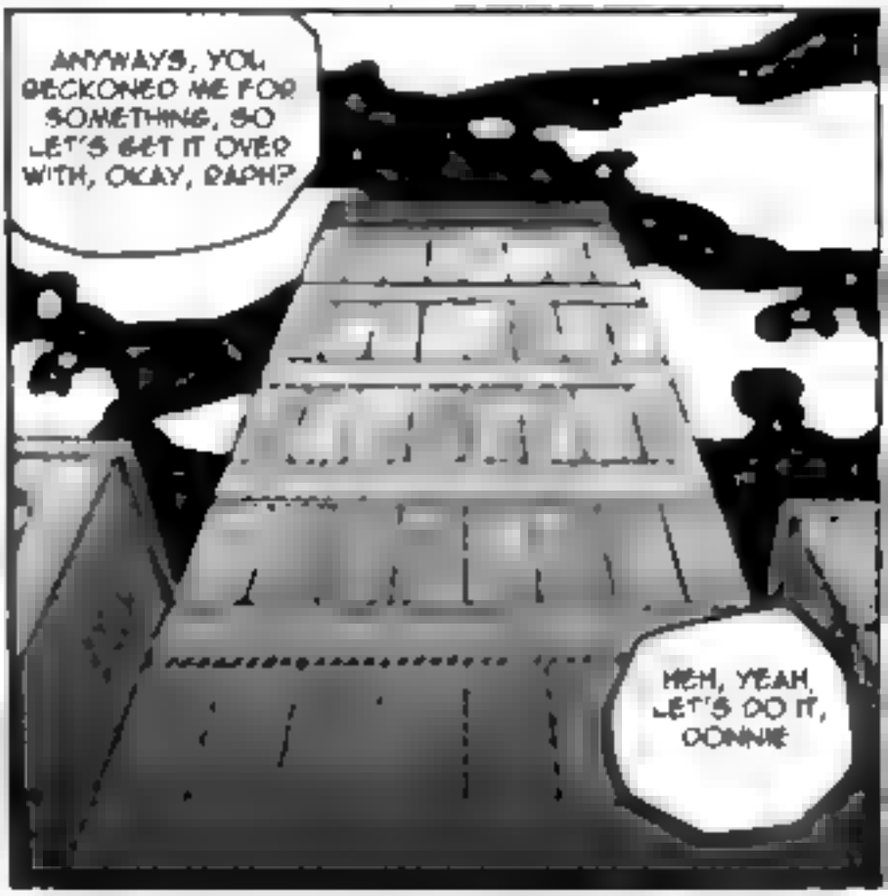

HE IS


GET ON WITH OUR
HUH

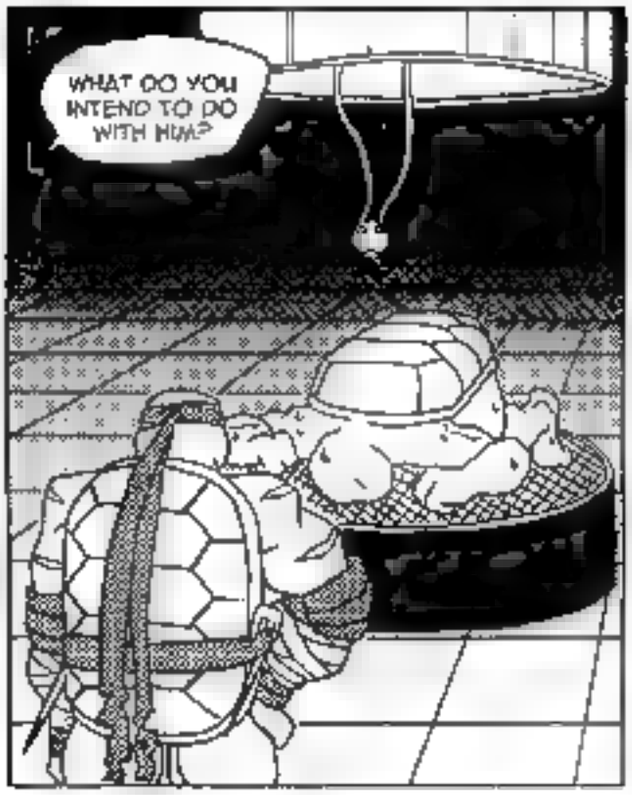

WAIT! YOUR PLAN
IT DOESN'T HAVE ANYTHING TO DO WITH THAT WILD MUTANT TURTLE RIGHT?
WHY, OF COURSE NOT! I WAS GOING TO COLLECT
AND FEED THEM TO RAPH TO ALTER HIS MUTATION!! ONE SMALL STOMACH ACHE FOR RAPH, A MILESTONE FOR SCIENCE!!

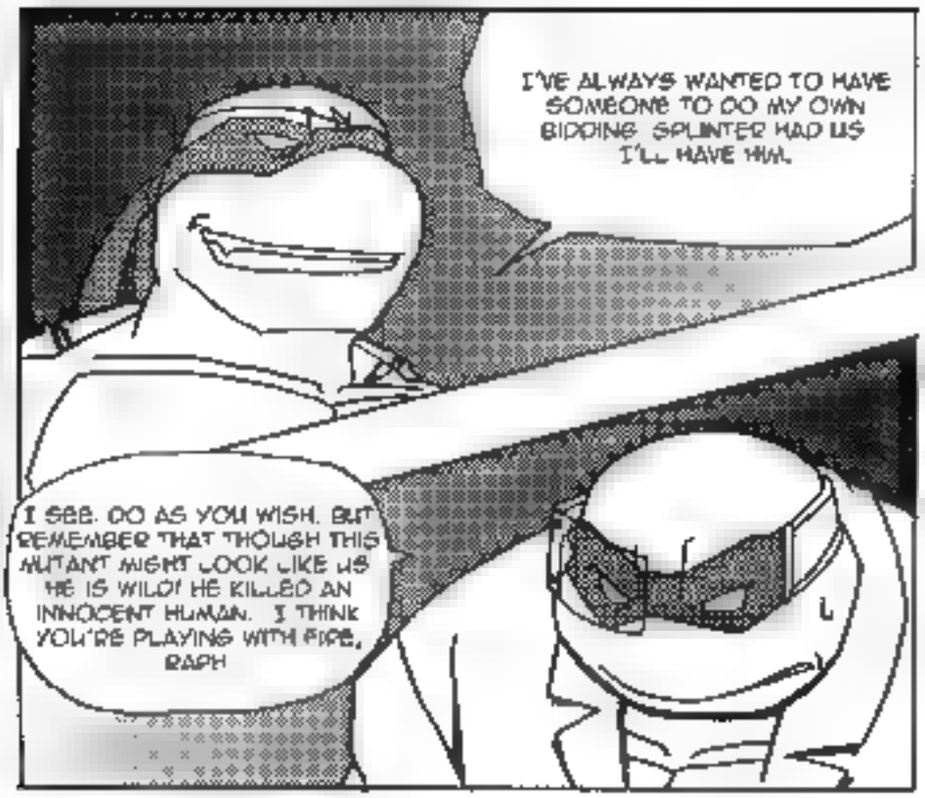

I EAT MUSHROOMS


YA KNOW, I DON'T GIVE A DAMN IF MIKEY FINDS OUT 'BOUT THIS. HE CAN BITCH 'BOUT IT FOR ALL I CARE
WELL I DO CARE ABOUT IT IF MIKEY FINDS OUT I HELPED YOU, HE'LL START BOTHERING ME... I DON'T WANT THAT

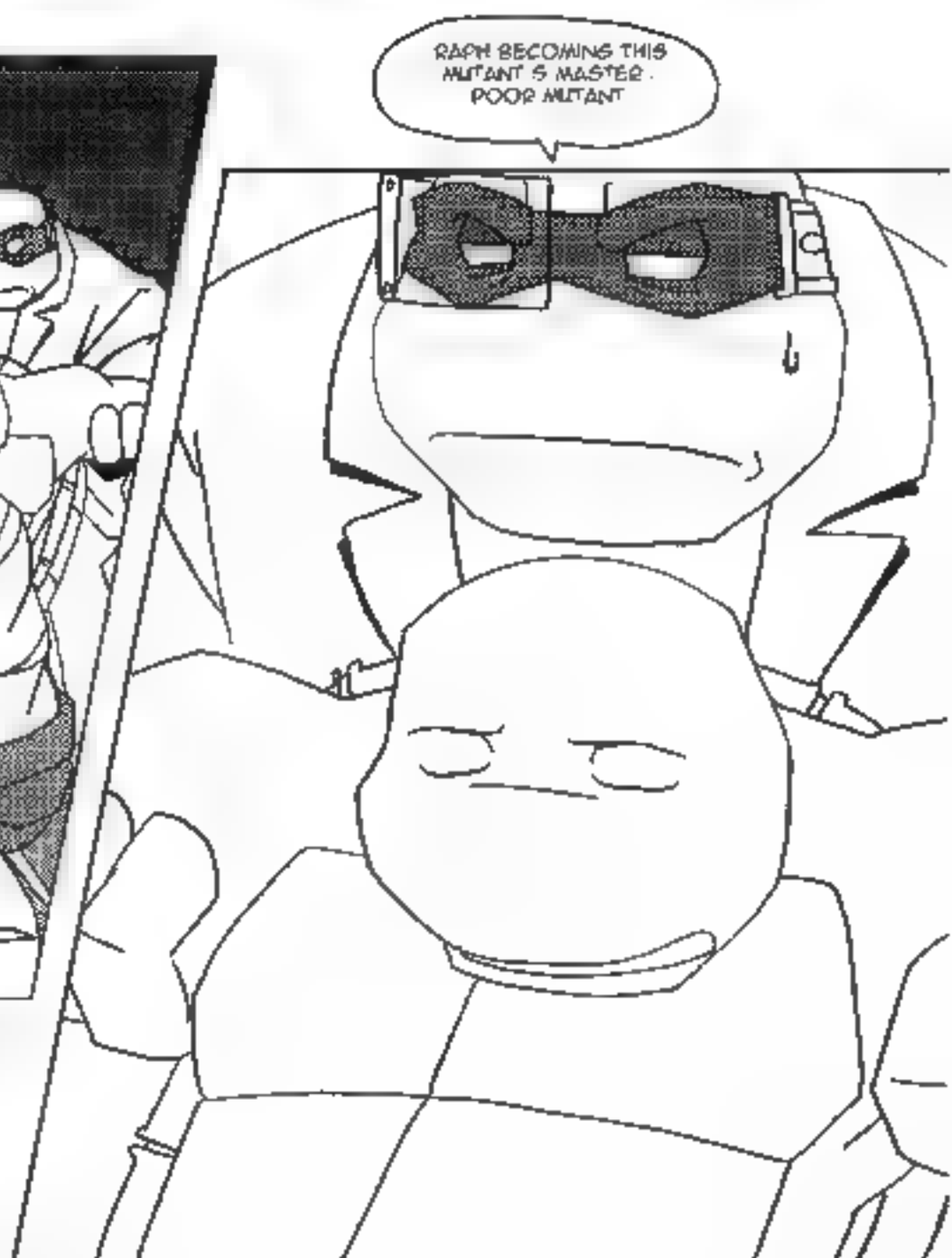

ANYWAYS, YOU BECKONED ME FOR SOMETHING, SO LET'S GET IT OVER WITH, OKAY, RAPH?
MEH, YEAH. LET'S DO IT, DONNIE

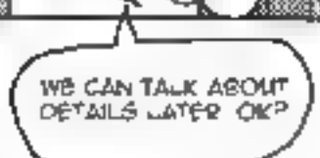

ACCESS GRANTED
YOU'LL NEVER CEASE TO IMPRESS ME BRO
I TOLD YOU, RAPH. I KNOW EVERYTHING I PLANNED EVERYTHING UP TO THE LAST KILOBYTE OF DATA OF THESE COMPUTERS
Input comma
>CELL 168:
>LIGHTION:
SO THAT'S THE WILD MUTANT TURTLE... HE LOOKS JUST LIKE US WHEN WE WERE TEENS, DON' CHA THINK?
WHATEVER I'M GOING TO DRAIN THIS CONTAINER NOW STEP BACK, WILL YOU?


WHAT DO YOU INTEND TO DO WITH HIM?


I'VE ALWAYS WANTED TO HAVE SOMEONE TO DO MY OWN BIDDING. SPLINTER HAD US I'LL HAVE HIM.
I SEE. DO AS YOU WISH. BUT REMEMBER THAT THOUGH THIS MUTANT MIGHT LOOK LIKE US HE IS WILD! HE KILLED AN INNOCENT HUMAN. I THINK YOU'RE PLAYING WITH FIRE, RAPH

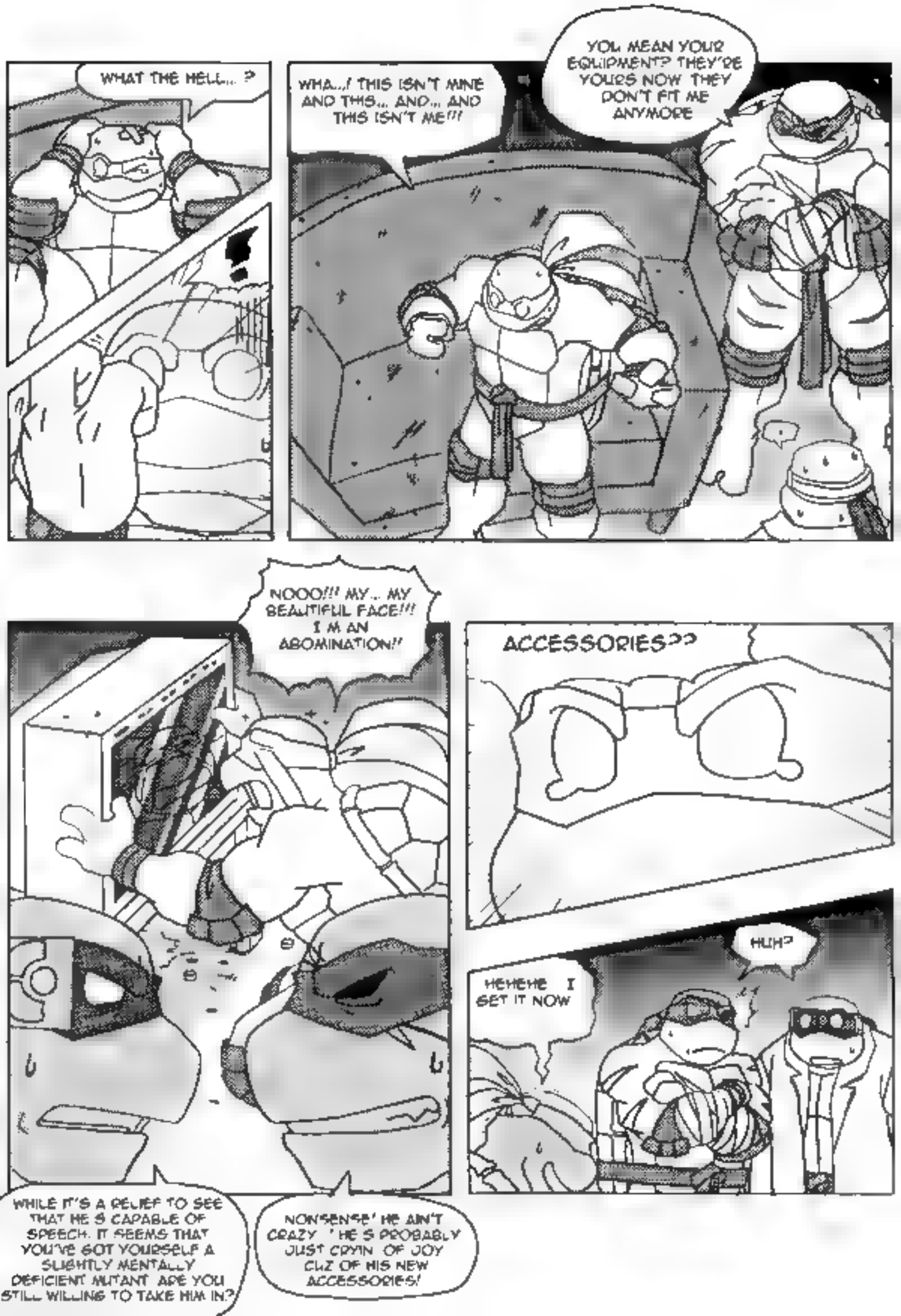

YEAH, YEAH. I KNOW. IF THINGS GET UGLY I'LL TAKE RESPONSIBILITY ANYWAYS. HELP ME CARRY HIM TO MY PLACE


RAPH BECOMING THIS MUTANT'S MASTER. POOR MUTANT


WE CAN TALK ABOUT DETAILS LATER OK?

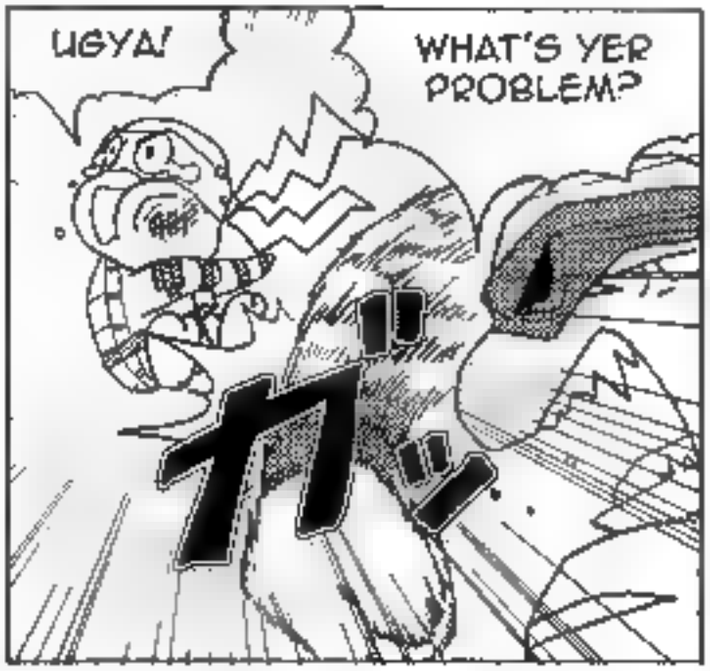

AH...! IT'S YOU?
OHHHHH! SHIT... SORRY ABOUT SAKURA! I HOPE YOU'RE NOT TOO MAD AT ME! MY FRIENDS AND I, WE... WELL... WE JUST WANTED TO... WELL...
NO... IT'S ALRIGHT I'LL GIVE MYSELF TO YOU I'M ALL YOURS
WHAT? OOOH... AT LAST! COME, FLY INTO MY ARMS, MY BEAR!
NOT SO FAST PERVERT! THIS IS A TWO FOR ONE OFFER YOU GET HER YOU GET ME TOO
W...WHAT? NO WAIT I DON'T WANT A TOMBOY! I JUST WANT SAKURA!
WHAT DID YOU CALL ME?? PREPARE YOURSELF TO FACE SHADOW JONES WRATH!"
GRRRRR! YOU'RE NOT IN THE...!
...AH?


HEY... HOW'S IT GOIN', KID?
...
...
SO NOW THE WILD KILLER MUTANT TURTLE REPULSIVELY CALLS US MUTANT TURTLES "MONSTERS".. RIGHT
GYAH!
M-M-M-MONSTERS!!
HEY! WATCH YOUR MOUTH, KID!
AWAH!!

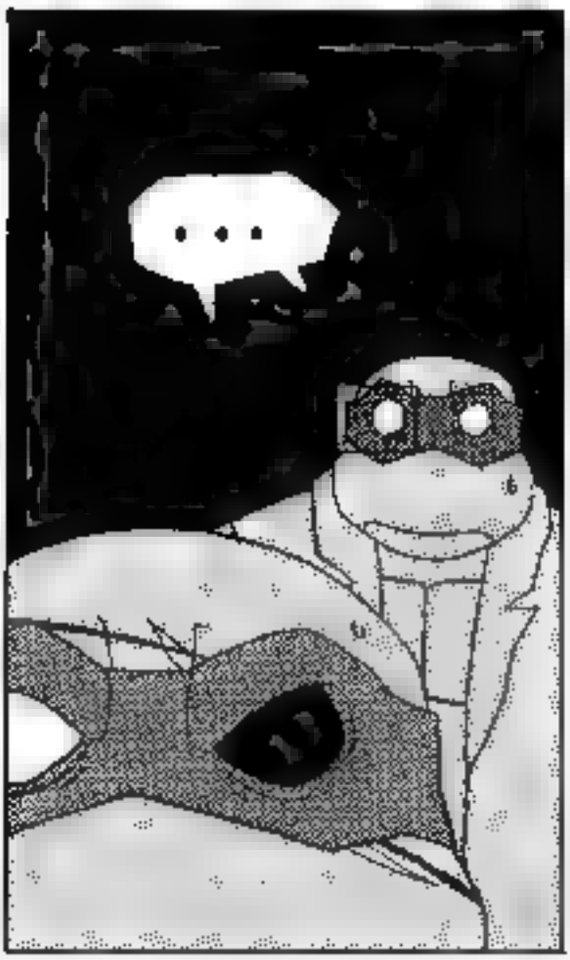

WHAT THE HELL... ?
WHA.../ THIS ISN'T MINE AND THIS... AND... AND THIS ISN'T ME!!!
YOU MEAN YOUR EQUIPMENT? THEY'RE YOURS NOW THEY DON'T FIT ME ANYMORE
NOOO!!! MY.. MY BEAUTIFUL FACE!!! I M AN ABOMINATION!!
ACCESSORIES??
HUH?
HEHEHE I SET IT NOW
WHILE IT'S A RELIEF TO SEE THAT HE S CAPABLE OF SPEECH. IT SEEMS THAT YOU'VE GOT YOURSELF A SLIGHTLY MENTALLY DEFICIENT MUTANT ARE YOU STILL WILLING TO TAKE HIM IN?
NONSENSE' HE AIN'T CRAZY ' HE S PROBABLY JUST CRYIN OF JOY CUZ OF HIS NEW ACCESSORIES!

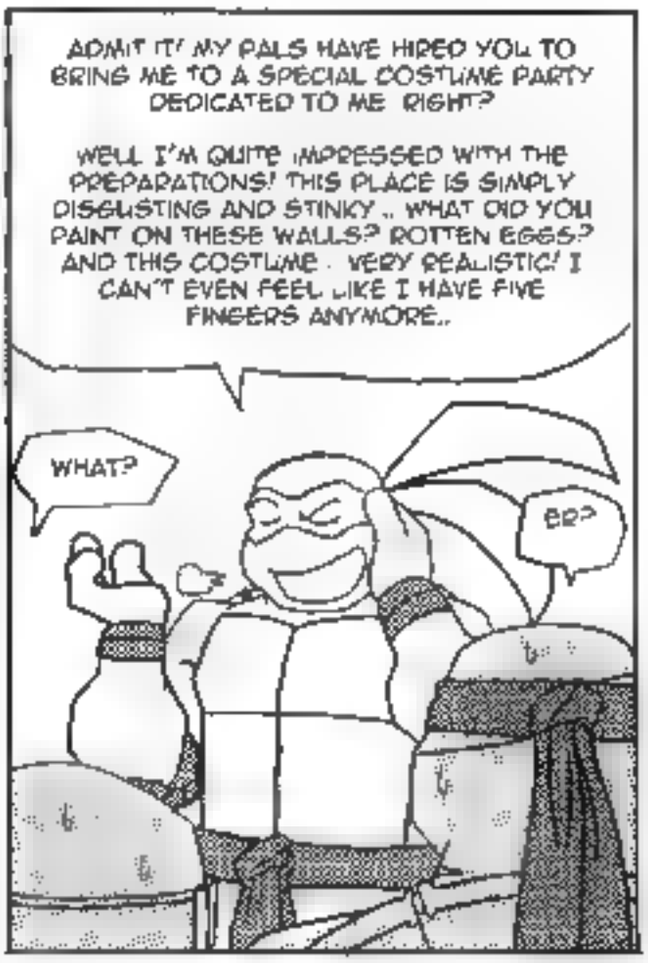

WAHAHAHA!
I...I GET IT!


WAAAHAHAHA!!!
I DON'T KNOW WHY BUT I FEEL LIKE WE'RE BEING MADE FUN OF
...

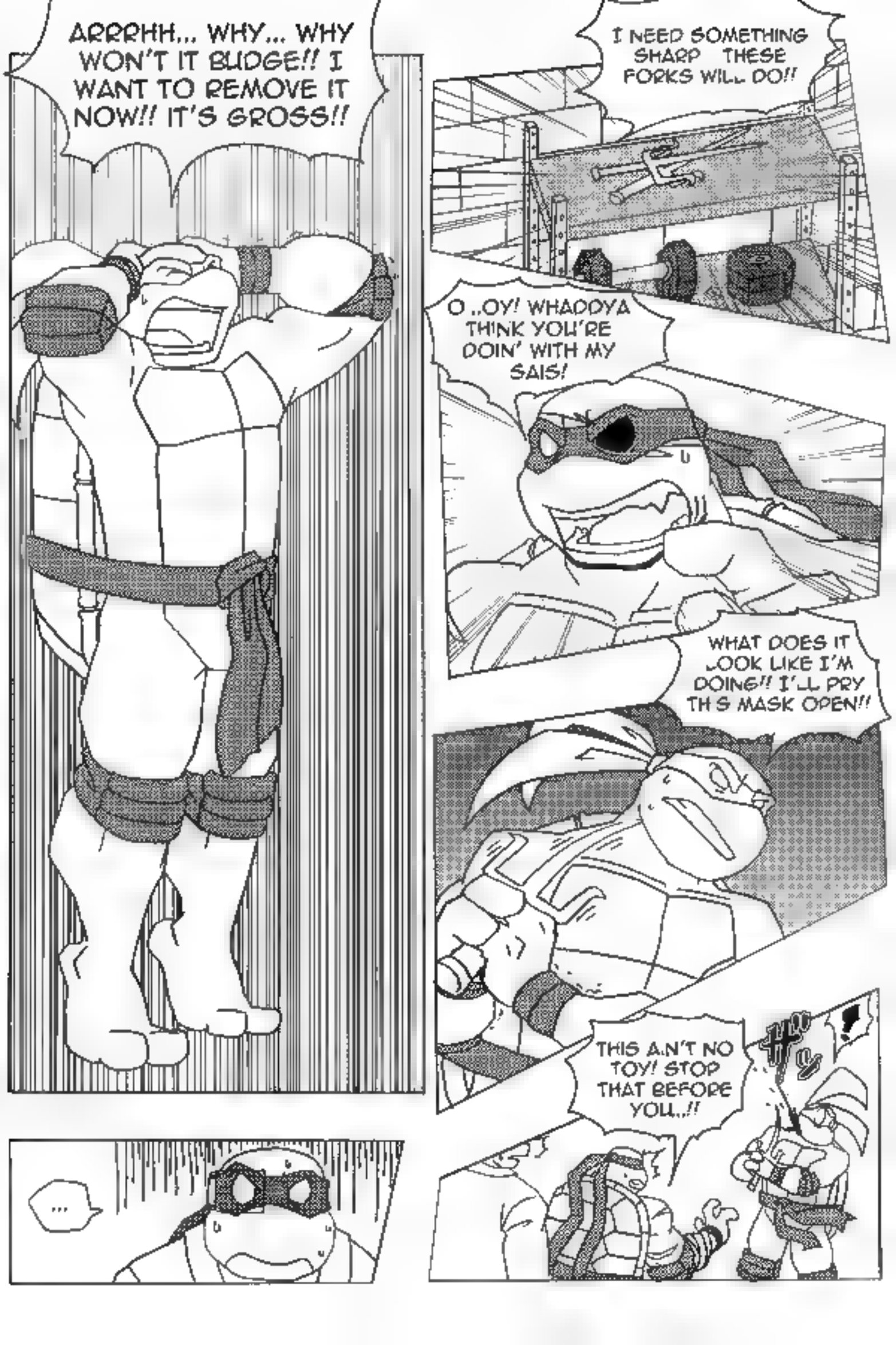

UGYA!
WHAT'S YER PROBLEM?


AHA..HAHA..IT'S IT'S A COSTUME PARTY ISN'T IT? COSPLAY?



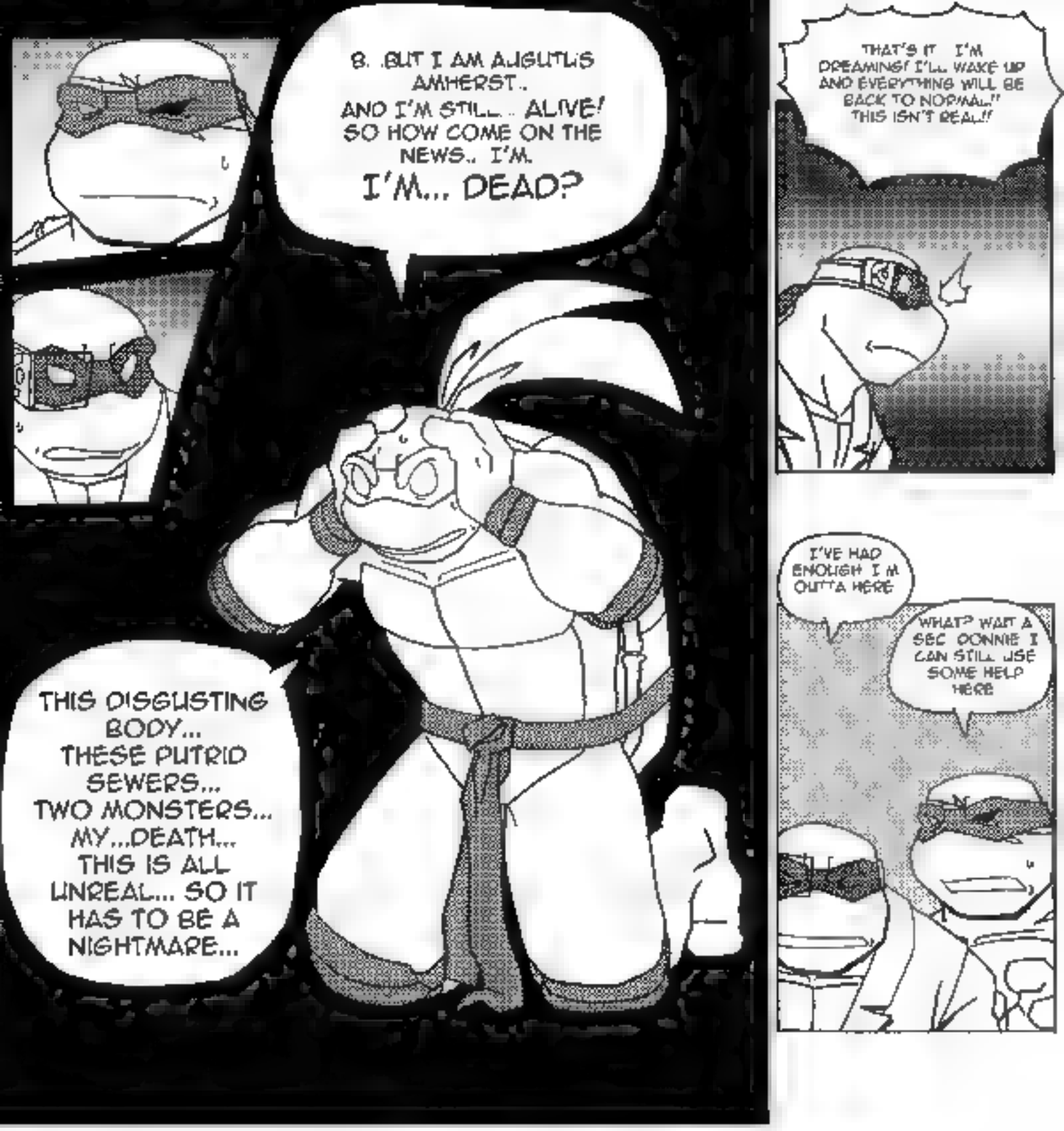

ADMIT IT! MY PALS HAVE HIRED YOU TO BRING ME TO A SPECIAL COSTUME PARTY DEDICATED TO ME RIGHT?
WELL I'M QUITE IMPRESSED WITH THE PREPARATIONS! THIS PLACE IS SIMPLY DISGUSTING AND STINKY.. WHAT DID YOU PAINT ON THESE WALLS? ROTTEN EGGS? AND THIS COSTUME.. VERY REALISTIC! I CAN'T EVEN FEEL LIKE I HAVE FIVE FINGERS ANYMORE..
WHAT?
ER?


UNFORTUNATELY I WILL NOT ATTEND TO THIS PARTY! I HAVE A TERRIBLE HEADACHE. SAY HOW DO I REMOVE THIS MASK? IT'S LIKE IT'S COMPLETELY STUCK ON MY FACE OR SOMETHING...


ARRRHH... WHY... WHY WON'T IT BUDGE!! I WANT TO REMOVE IT NOW!! IT'S GROSS!!
I NEED SOMETHING SHARP THESE FORKS WILL DO!!
O..OY! WHADDYA THINK YOU'RE DOIN' WITH MY SAIS!
WHAT DOES IT LOOK LIKE I'M DOING!! I'LL PRY TH S MASK OPEN!!
THIS A.N'T NO TOY! STOP THAT BEFORE YOU..!!
...


RAPH, STOP HIM SO I CAN PATCH HIM UP
AAAAH!! THE PAIN!! THE PAIN OF HURTING MY BEAUTIFUL FACE!! NOOOOO!
SHUT THE HELL UP OR ELSE I M REALLY GONNA GIVE YA SOMETHIN TO CRY BOUT!
URGH!
IT S JUST A CUT YOU'LL BE FINE LISTEN JUST BECAUSE YOU RE A MUTANT WITH SELF-REGENERATIVE POWERS DOESN'T MEAN YOU SHOULD MUTILATE YOURSELF FOR NO GOOD REASON.
O OW!! WATCH IT! JUST WHAT DO YOU MEAN? ME A MUTANT? SELF-REGENERATION? IS THIS SOME KIND OF JOKE? JUST LEMME OUTTA HERE I CAN SORT THIS OUT BY MYSELF OKAY?
YO DONNIE TURN ON THE NEWS SO HE CAN SEE WHAT KIND OF WARM RECEPTION AWAITS HIM ON THE SURFACE
SURFACE? YOU MEAN WE'RE UNDERGROUND?


THIS IS WHERE STUFF GOES WHEN YOU FLUSH...!
MY RIDDLE LIFE FROM NOW ON. IT'LL BE YOUR NEW "HOME SWEET HOME"
MMMMMM
GREEN WAIT, MY SKIN IS GREEN, THEN
THIS CREATURE IS CONSIDERED DANGEROUS. ANY SIGN OF IT SHOULD BE IMMEDIATELY REPORTED TO THE AUTHORITIES
NO, THIS IS... IMPOSSIBLE

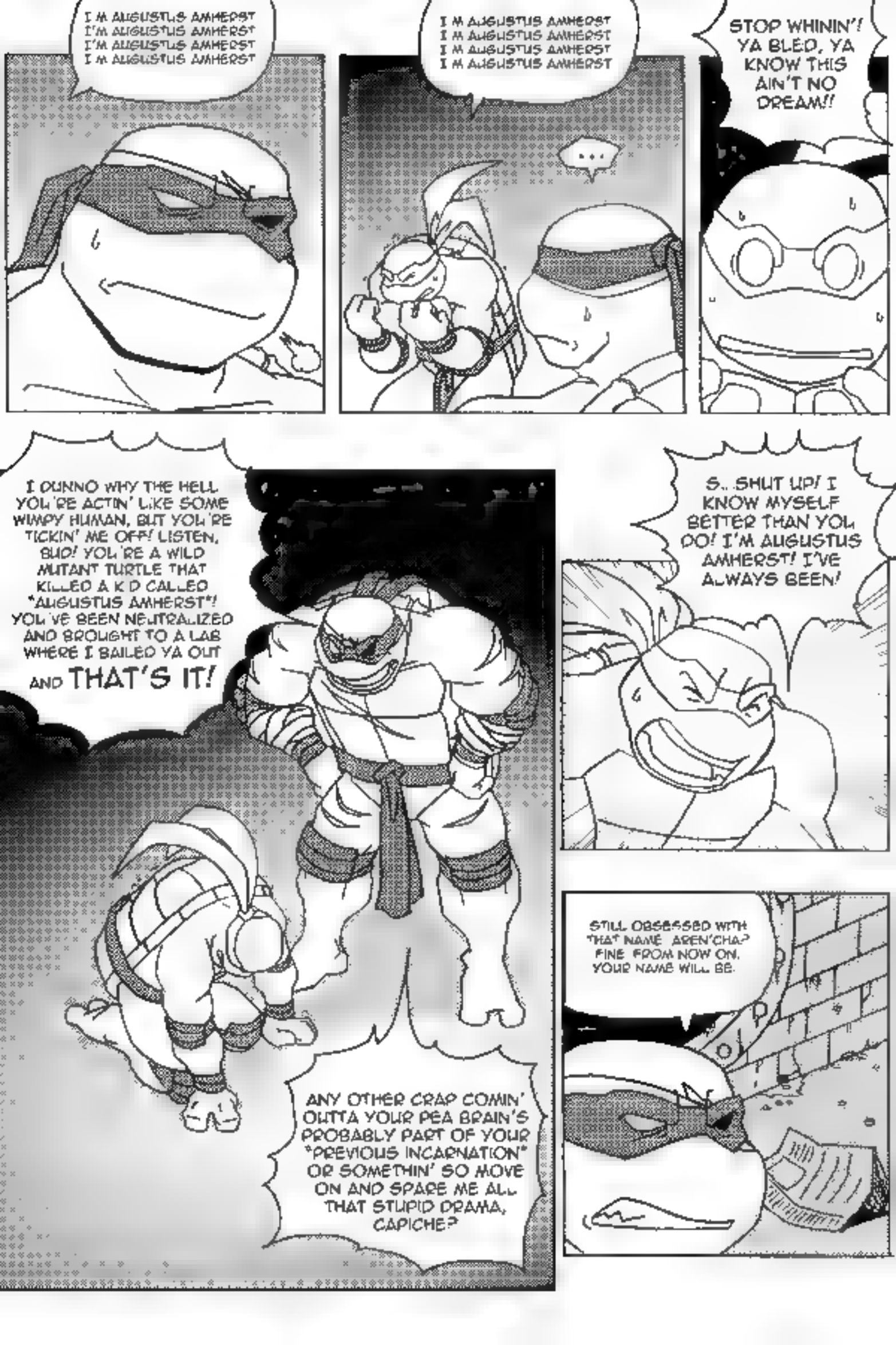

B. .BUT I AM AUGUTUS AMHERST..
AND I'M STILL.. ALIVE!
SO HOW COME ON THE NEWS.. I'M.
I'M... DEAD?
THIS DISGUSTING BODY...
THESE PUTRID SEWERS...
TWO MONSTERS...
MY...DEATH...
THIS IS ALL UNREAL... SO IT HAS TO BE A NIGHTMARE...

THAT'S IT I'M DREAMING! I'LL WAKE UP AND EVERYTHING WILL BE BACK TO NORMAL!! THIS ISN'T REAL!!

I'VE HAD ENOUGH I M OUTTA HERE
WHAT? WAIT A SEC DONNIE I CAN STILL USE SOME HELP HERE


FORGET IT RAPH. YOUR PATHETIC MUTANT S CONFUSION BRINGS BACK WAY TOO MANY PAINFUL MEMORIES FROM "BACK THEN" HE MAKES ME SICK


WE ALMOST NEVER MEET DURING THE YEAR AND NOW YOU'RE GONNA WALK OUT ON ME JUST CUZ SOME MEMORIES ARE SCARIN' YA?
YOU'RE ON YOUR OWN, RAPH.
HEH! WHO NEEDS YA ANYWAYS GET OUTTA MY LAIR


I M AUGUSTUS AMHERST
I'M AUGUSTUS AMHERST
I'M AUGUSTUS AMHERST
I M AUGUSTUS AMHERST
I M AUGUSTUS AMHERST
I M AUGUSTUS AMHERST
I M AUGUSTUS AMHERST
I M AUGUSTUS AMHERST
...
STOP WHININ'! YA BLED, YA KNOW THIS AIN'T NO DREAM!!
I DUNNO WHY THE HELL YOU'RE ACTIN' LIKE SOME WIMPY HUMAN, BUT YOU'RE TICKIN' ME OFF! LISTEN, BUD! YOU'RE A WILD MUTANT TURTLE THAT KILLED A K D CALLED "AUGUSTUS AMHERST"! YOU'VE BEEN NEUTRALIZED AND BROUGHT TO A LAB WHERE I BAILED YA OUT AND THAT'S IT!
S.. SHUT UP! I KNOW MYSELF BETTER THAN YOU DO! I'M AUGUSTUS AMHERST! I'VE ALWAYS BEEN!
ANY OTHER CRAP COMIN' OUTTA YOUR PEA BRAIN'S PROBABLY PART OF YOUR "PREVIOUS INCARNATION" OR SOMETHIN' SO MOVE ON AND SPARE ME ALL THAT STUPID DRAMA, CAPICHE?
STILL OBSESSED WITH THAT NAME AREN'CHA? FINE FROM NOW ON, YOUR NAME WILL BE.

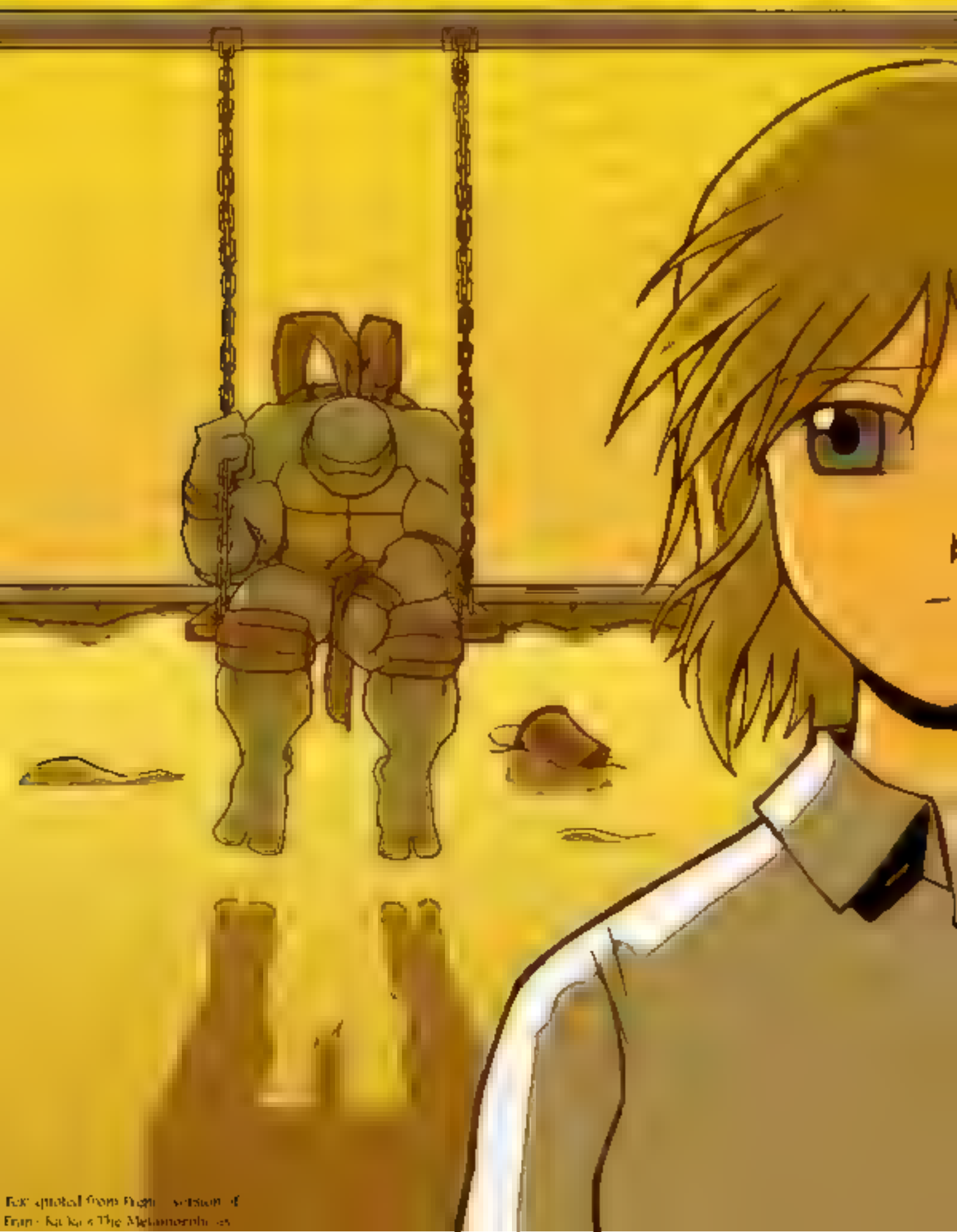

SINCE YA KILLED AN INNOCENT HUMAN I SHOULDA LEFT YA TO SUFFER IN THAT LAB AND PAY FOR YOUR SIN, BUT I THOUGHT THAT I COULD MAKE A WORTHY NINJA OUTTA YA
YA OWE ME YOUR LIFE. IN OTHER WORDS, YOU'D BETTER BE DAMN GRATEFUL TO ME
FROM NOW ON YOU'RE GONNA CALL ME "MASTER RAPHAEL" AND YOU'RE GONNA OBEY MY EVERY


I... I DON'T KNOW ANYMORE SO FOR NOW I'LL TAKE YOUR WORD
WHATEVER AS LONG AS YOU
BUT FIRST LET'S SEE WHAT
TOTAL SUBMISSI
I CAN'T HELP BUT CONNECT THE DOTS AND REALIZE THAT YOU ARE AN ANTI-SOCIAL AND TROUBLED OLD MAN WHO CLEARLY HAS ISSUES
YOU INSOLENT "NEW" SHOW SOME RESPECT OR ELSE THIS "OLD MAN WITH ISSUES" OF YOURS IS GONNA HAVE TO SHOW WHO'S BOSS 'ROUND HERE!!
ACK!! OOF!! ACK!! F... FORGIVE ME' M MASTER RAPHAEL" S...SORRY!!

MUTANT NINJA TURTLES GAIDEN

CHAPTER 2

REMINISCENCE - LIVING MEMORIES BEYOND DEATH'S ILLUSIONS



For updates from Right... version of
From: Kat Ka's The Metamorphosis


WAAH... I SLEPT WELL.
...
NOOO!!! I'M... I'M A MONSTER!!! IT WASN'T A DREAM!!!
DAMN KID SO EARLY IN THE EVENING
MY BEAUTIFUL FACE... IT'S STILL AN ABOMINATION! NO... NO!!!
TRAINING TIME.
AND STOP WHINING!


FIRST, I NEED TO CHECK HOW STRONG YOU ARE
PUNCH THOSE PADS HERE AS HARD AS YOU CAN
I CAN'T.. I DON'T REALLY FEEL LIKE IT
JUST... LET ME HAVE A FUNERAL IN MY HEAD FOR MY LOST HANDSOME APPEARANCE BOOHOO
I'M FED UP WIT' YER SELF-PITY! FOR GOD'S SAKE, I KNOW YA KILLED THAT HUMAN BOY, SO WHAT? NOTHIN' AIN'T GONNA BRING 'IM BACK SO GET OVER IT, RENOIR!
OW!
DAMMIT! YOU'RE A MUTANT TURTLE NOT A WIMP! GET UP, RENOIR!
STOP CALLING ME "RENOIR" YOU DON'T KNOW HOW IT FEELS TO SEE YOUR WORLD TURN UPSIDE DOWN OVERNIGHT
TCH! I'VE BEEN THROUGH MUCH WORSE THAN THAT RENOIR
AND LEMME TELL YA IN THIS KIND OF SITUATION, ALL YA NEED IS TO FACE REALITY AND ACCEPT IT
SINCE YOU'RE SO OBSESSED WIT THAT DEAD BOY, I'M BRINGIN' YA TO HIS FUNERALS TOMORROW EVENING THERE HAPPY?
ONCE THAT'S DONE I EXPECT YA TO RESUME YER TRAINING WITHOUT ASKING ANY QUESTIONS!


WHY DO YOU EVEN BOTHER LOOKING AFTER ME?
SUPPOSE I REALLY KILLED MYSELF. I MEAN, THAT STUDENT. WHY WOULD YOU HELP A MONSTER LIKE ME? WHAT'S IN IT FOR YOU?
REJECTED BY HUMANS ?
YOU MEAN... MY FAMILY MIGHT NOT ACCEPT ME THE WAY I
IF IT'S HUMANS YOU'RE TALKIN' 'BOUT
NINJA TURTLES.
LIVE TOGETHER, BUT HE BECAME MORE AND MORE CYNICAL OVER THE YEARS
FROM REALITY. I WAS SO FED UP WITH HIS ACT THAT I MOVED HERE, FAR AWAY FROM OUR OLD LAIR
SO YOU ARE RELATED. IT'S JUST ME, YOU AND
WITH THE LAB COAT FROM YESTERDAY? YOU'RE RELATED?


WAIT A SEC!
ALL THIS DRAMA AND TENSION BETWEEN BROTHERS . IT'S TOO CLICHÉ!
I KNEW IT! YOU'RE LYING!
YOU OBVIOUSLY TRIED TO MAKE ME PITY YOU TO BETTER MANIPULATE ME! ISN'T THAT RIGHT? HUH? HUH? YOU OLD MANIAC!!
ゴオオオオオ...
DIAL # AND ASK DONNIE I AIN'T GONNA BE TAKEN FOR A FOOL
I CAN'T GET HIM!


HELLO. DONNIE HERE WHAT DO YOU WANT RAPH, HUH? YOU'RE THE MUTANT FROM YESTERDAY
WHAT YOU WANT EXPLANATIONS? HMM.
HE'S RIGHT WE'RE THE ONLY MUTANT TURTLES IN NEW YORK WE USED TO BE FOUR BROTHERS.
BUT SOMETHING OCCURRED AND WE ALL SPLIT UP HOWEVER, IT'S ALSO TRUE THAT RAPH'S TRYING TO BRAINWASH YOU THOROUGHLY
SECOND PHASE
ARE YOU SERIOUS? TH.. THAT'S REALLY CREEPY.
YEAH, HE'S PUSHY A REAL DRAMA KING
YOU'RE NOT HELPIN'!!
MR DONATELLO! PLEASE, PLEASE BRING ME TO YOUR PLACE! I'M SCARED! YOU SOUND SO MUCH MORE SANE!!
SORRY KID I'M TOO BUSY TO COME OVER NOW


BY THE WAY HOW'S YOUR WOUND?
IT HEALED DURING THE NIGHT I THINK
OH WELL, GUESS I'M STUCK WITH THIS PSYCHOPATH, BOOHOO
IT HEALED OVERNIGHT?
"CLICK"
WAIT! WAIT!
HEY! ...DAMN IT!
GOOD NEWS AT LAST

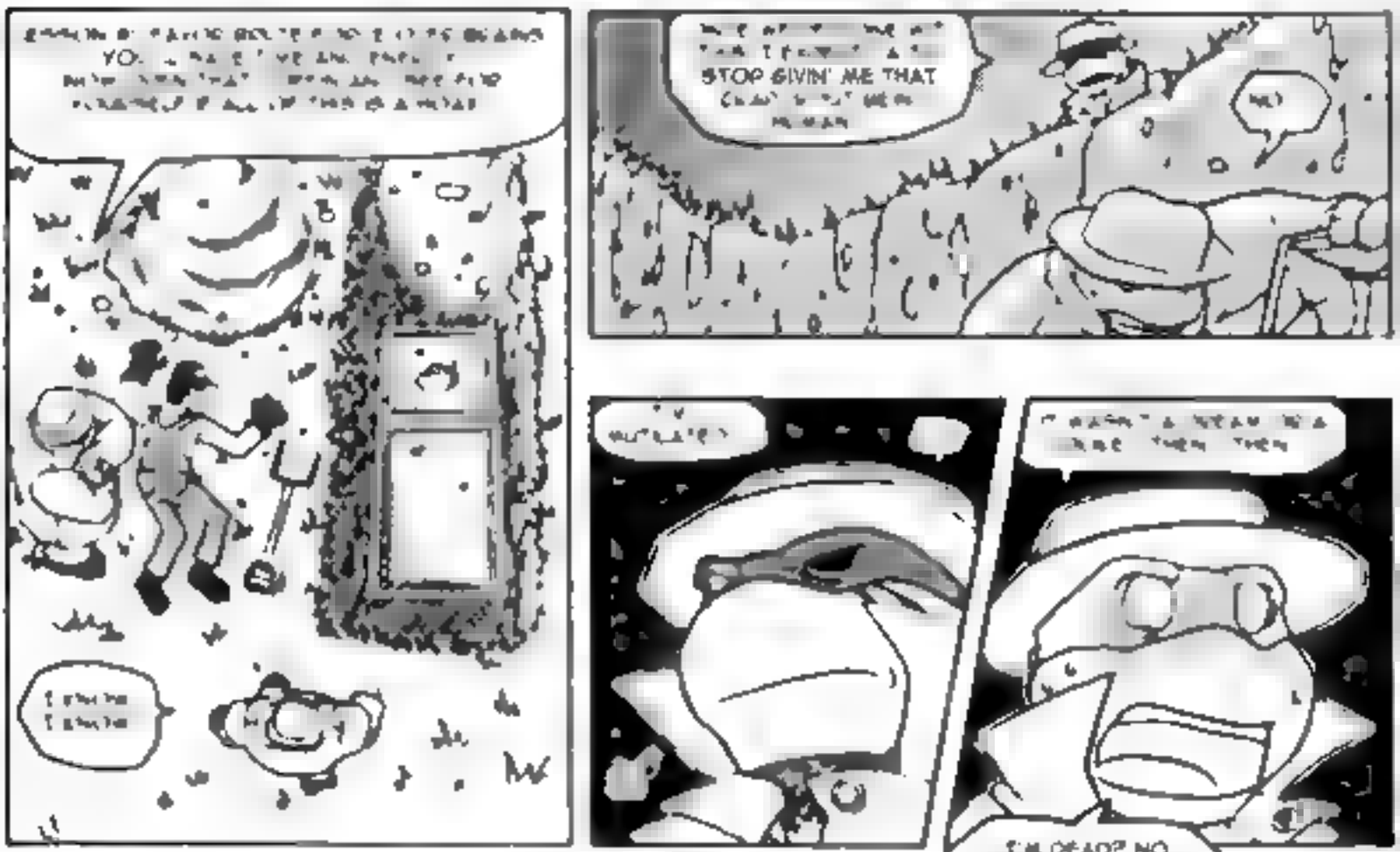

SHE MIGHT BE THE MOST BOYISH GIRL I KNOW BUT SHE ALSO MIGHT RECOGNIZE ME!
HUH.. ? SHADOW'S NUMBER IS LISTED HERE!
UNCLE RAPH!! YOU'RE SUCH A.. A HEARTLESS JERK!! LEAVE ME ALONE!!
HELLO?
SHADOW! SHADOW! IT'S ME AUGUSTUS!
BUT !
I KNOW IT'S YOU. YOUR I D IS DISPLAYED ON MY PHONE AND YOU DON'T SOUND LIKE MY LATE FRIEND.
GIMME THAT DAMN PHONE!!
SHADOW, I'M NOT DEAD!!
HAND IT OVER, YA LIL' SHIT!!
SHADOW, DON'T WORRY! THAT AUGUSTUS IS STILL DEAD! I
IF I SEE YOUR DAMN FACE WITHIN THE NEXT 24 HOURS I'LL REARRANGE IT WITH MY BARE HANDS!!
WHAT DID I DO?
BOY AM I GLAD TO HEAR YOUR VOICE FOR ONCE!
UNCLE RAPH. IF THIS IS SUPPOSED TO BE A JOKE I DON'T FIND T VERY AMUSING.


SORRY YOU HAD TO HEAR THAT, DAVIANNA THAT WAS MY WEIRD UNCLE
SHADOW I AM THE ONE WHO SHOULD BE APOLOGIZING
I BARGED IN YOUR APARTMENT ON SUCH SHORT NOTICE I'M REALLY SORRY BUT IT'S JUST THAT . YOU KNEW "HIM" FOR AS LONG AS I DID THAT'S WHY I NEEDED TO MEET YOU
WELL I SHOULD BE ON MY WAY HOME NOW THANK YOU VERY MUCH FOR THE TEA. SHADOW
AND THANK YOU FOR BEING WITH ME I'LL SEE YOU TOMORROW
ARE YOU REALLY OKAY? IF YOU WANT TO. YOU CAN STAY LONGER


YOUR FRIEND CRIED YOU KNOW?
バタン
UNCLE MIKEY YOU WERE LISTENING?
HOW COULD YOU TELL SHE
DO YOU THINK
AH... MAYBE YOU'RE RIGHT YOU'RE A WRITER AFTER ALL I GUESS YOU HAVE THE ABILITY TO UNDERSTAND AND PREDICT PEOPLE'S EMOTIONS BETTER THAN I DO
RAPHAEL IS BEYOND MY UNDERSTANDING
YOU MUST'VE OVERHEARD MY CONVERSATION WITH UNCLE RAPH HE MADE FUN OF MY FRIEND'S DEATH NOW WOULD YOU EXPLAIN
I WAS WONDERING IF MAYBE YOU COULD
COME TO YOUR FRIEND'S FUNERALS WITH YOU? SURE. I KNOW YOU'RE GOING THROUGH HARD


Cypress
3:00:04
THIS IS A DAY OF GRIEF FOR ALL OF US. AUGUST 15 AMHERST'S EARLY AND SUDDEN [illegible] TURE HAS CREATED A VOID IN OUR LIVES.
HOWEVER LIFE MUST GO ON. DURING OFF[illegible]
AFFECTED BY THIS [illegible]
LET US NOT FORGET THIS HEE[illegible]


HOW BAD THEY ARE!!
ABOUT YOU!


STOP GIVIN' ME THAT
I'M DEAD? NO NO!! WHAT AM I IF I'M DOWN HERE AND... AND


EEEH!!! UNCLE RAPH WHAT ARE YOU DOING HERE?
HUH?
SHADOW, WHAT 'CHA THINKIN' BEING IN A RANDOM KID IN FRONT OF ME LIKE THAT?
YOU KNOW MY LATE FRIEND, RIGHT? THE ONE YOU MADE FUN OF YESTERDAY WELL, I JUST BROUGHT HIS LITTLE SISTER HERE TO HELP HER SEARCH FOR A DOLL SHE DROPPED DURING THE FUNERAL, THINKING THAT YOU'D BE AT HOME MAKING CRUEL JOKES AT YOUR FRIENDS
LISTEN CAROLE, MY UNCLE RAPH HERE IS ACTUALLY AN ACTOR WHO DISGUISES AS AN ALIEN TO AVOID FANS SO LET'S KEEP THIS A SECRET BETWEEN YOU AND ME OKAY? NOW GO FIND YOUR DOLL.
YES SHADOW!
SHADOW WHO IS THAT BIG OLD GREEN MAN?
BEEZ, YOU'RE STILL MAD AT ME FOR THAT?
LOOK... I WAS DRUNK YESTERDAY AND KINDA BECAME ER SCHIZOPHRENIC OR SOMETHIN SORRY
SCHIZOPHRENIC? UNCLE RAPH?
WHERE IS IT? I'M SURE I DROPPED IT AROUND HERE
YOUR BROTHER BOUGHT YOU THIS FOR YOUR FIFTH BIRTHDAY REMEMBER?
HE WOULD'VE BEEN GLAD THAT YOU STILL CHERISH IT
MY DOLL! THANK YOU! HOW DO YOU KNOW ABOUT THAT? ARE YOU AN ACTOR TOO?


CAROLE!! IT'S ME!! YOUR BROTHER AUGUSTUS!! YOU RECOGNIZE ME, RIGHT? RIGHT?
AH!!
BUT... MOM TOLD ME AUGUSTUS WAS SLEEPING IN THE BIG BOX AND YOU DON'T LOOK OR SOUND LIKE HIM..
DON'T LOOK AT ME!! DON'T LISTEN TO MY VOICE!! I KNOW! I KNOW I'M IN THERE!!
BUT PLEASE TELL ME I STILL EXIST, CAROLE!! SAY IT!!
HUH? SOMEONE ELSE IS HERE!
ANOTHER MUTANT TURTLE! AND THAT SKIN TONE...!!
CAROLE! GET AWAY!
CRAP! I FORGOT 'BOUT HIM! SHADOW, ACTUALLY, THAT'S.
IT'S THE WILD MUTANT TURTLE!!
IT'S A MONSTER! IT'S GONNA EAT YOU UP!!

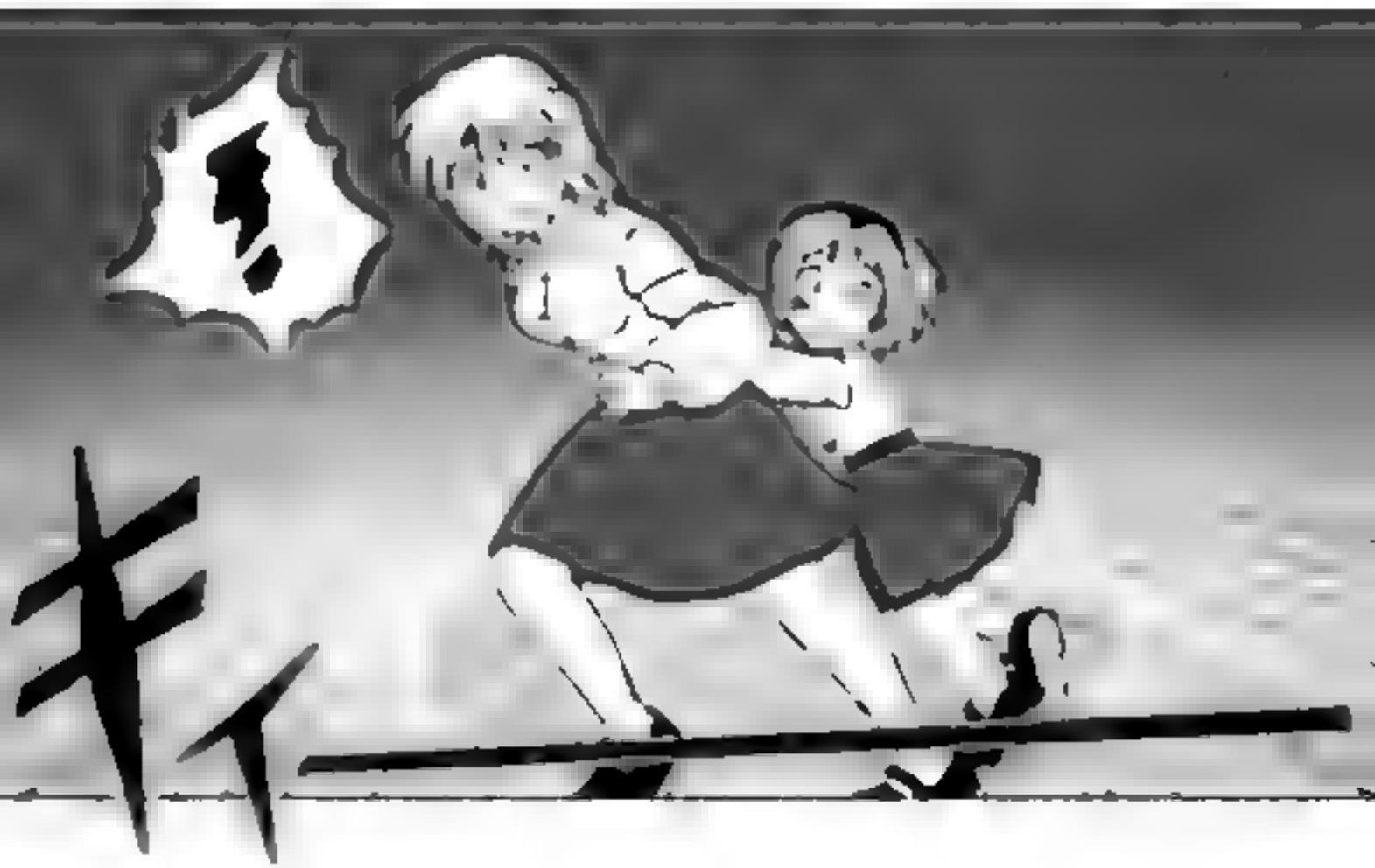

LET GO OF THE GIRL, YOU
ガバッ
CAROLE, ARE YOU OKAY! DID HE HURT YOU?
ドガッ
バン


THIS IS THE FIRST TIME WE'VE
ME? BY UNMASKING ME IN
PUBLIC? THINK ABOUT MY
OH, BOOHOO BIG TIME
GONNA GET SUED!
LISTEN BRO! LIVIN' IN CONSTANT FEAR IS WHAT CHA GET FOR CHOOSIN' TO LIVE A HUMAN LIFE, EVEN IF YOU AIN'T NO HUMAN! YA CAN'T DENY WHO YOU REALLY ARE. MIKEY!!
I KNOW THAT! BUT YOU'RE NOT HELPING AT ALL, RAPH!
IT WAS HARD ENOUGH GETTING THIS FAR IN MY CAREER WITHOUT PEOPLE KNOWING I'M A MUTANT TURTLE
MORE UNPOPULAR WITH HUMANS... SO "REVEALING" MYSELF IS THE LAST THING I NEED!!
AND I CAN PROVE IT TO


EH? RENOIR ?
CAROLE!! SHADOW!! WAIT UP!! IT'S ME, I TELL YOU! ME! AUGUSTUS!!
WHAT THE .? IT CAN'T BE.. YOU REALLY DID IT...?
RENOIR!!
WAAAAIT!!
YOU TOOK IN THE WILD MUTANT TURTLE AND LET HIM LOOSE AT THE FUNERALS OF ITS VICTIM? DOES IT HURT WHEN YOU THINK?
YEAH, BUT
RAPH... WHY YOU...! NOW, IT'S AFTER SHADOW.. AND OTHER HUMANS TOO!!
MAKING FUN OF DEAD PEOPLE WITH PRANK CALLS IS SOMETHING, BUT... BUT THIS IS UNFORGIVABLE!


UHGH.. WHA.. JUST HAPPENED..
HEHEHE DON'T PUSH THIS OLD CRANKY TURTLE TO HIS LIMITS
LIL' BRO.
KNOW YOUR PLACE, YA WEAKLING!!
HUMPF EVEN THOUGH YA THINK SHADOW MIGHT BE IN DANGER AS WE SPEAK
ACK!!
OOF!!
YA DECIDE TO WASTE YOUR TIME PICKIN' A FIGHT WIT' ME FOR YOUR IMAGE. HOW HEROIC
SH... SHUT UP, RAPH!
I CAN PROMISE YA ONE THING - RENOIR AIN'T NO WILD MUTANT AND NO ONE'S GONNA GET HURT HOWEVER KNOW THIS YOUR HUMAN WAYS HAVE SCREWED YA UP REAL BAD YA THINK SPLINTER'D BE PROUD OF YOU THE WAY YOU ARE?
DON'T MENTION SPLINTER'S NAME!! I REMIND YOU THAT BACK THEN IT WAS MOSTLY YOUR FAULT!!
T'WAS OURS, MIKEY! AND YOUR LIFE'S A RESULT OF WHAT HAPPENED:
RAPH.. YOU IDIOT I'D NEVER REJOICE AT THE THOUGHT OF HIS DEATH.
MASTER SPLINTER..


FRIEND FOR LUNCH, BUT
HONEY!
WHA WHA"!
CAMILLE!
THAT'S...
MONSTER!!!
SHADOW!!
CAMILLE!
LOOK OUT!!
WHA WHAAT?




SHADOW! SHADOW! ARE YOU OKAY?
URGH MY SHELL.. IT.. IT SAVED US..?
WHAT WHAT HAVE I DONE
DEAR! IT'S THE WILD MUTANT!!
SHADOW, CAROLE! ARE YOU OKAY? EH.. SOPT. WHAT THE..
HE'S... HE'S MOLESTING ME!!
PERVERT! PIG! LOWLIFE!
SORRY! SORRY! SORRY!
I KNEW IT YOU ARE AUGUSTUS! DOING DIRTY THINGS GETTING BEATEN UP BY A GIRL AND APOLOGIZING THAT'S SO MUCH LIKE YOU!
HUUUUURRRRFFF !
...AH...?


CAROLE!! ARE YOU OKAY? DID IT HURT YOU?
DADDY?
DAD.. MOM IT'S... IT'S YOU?
YOU FIEND.. YOU'VE CLAIMED BY SON'S LIFE BUT I WILL NOT ALLOW YOU TO LAY ANOTHER FINGER ON MY FAMILY!!
CAROLE!! OH CAROLE I WAS SO SCARED
PLEASE LISTEN TO ME! IT S ME AUGUSTUS! I KNOW IT S HARD TO BELIEVE BUT BUT
BUT DAD WAIT!
I... I SAVED MY SISTER AND MY FRIEND! YOU SAW ME, RIGHT? I CAN'T BE AN EVIL MUTANT, RIGHT?
ISN'T THAT ENOUGH TO PROVE YOU I'M YOUR SON?
EVERYBODY LOOK! IT'S THE MONSTER!
I CALLED THE POLICE!
EVERYONE, RUN WHILE IT'S STUNNED!!
I M NOT A MONSTER I M NOT A MONSTER!!
AAH! IT'S RUNNING AWAY!!
GO AWAY! GO AWAY!!
SOMEONE! DOES SOMEONE HAVE A FIREARM HERE? WE MUST KILL IT!!
IT S ATTACKING OUR LATE SON. THE MONSTER...!
AHAOOW DEAR! COME OVER HERE QUICK! IT WILL KILL YOU!


ATTENTION TO ALL CITIZENS THERE IS A WILD ANIMAL ON THE LOOSE
PLEASE REMAIN SAFELY INDOORS UNTIL FURTHER NOTICE
I REPEAT..
PLEASE REMAIN SAFELY INDOORS UNTIL FURTHER NOTICE.
HEY, AUGUSTUS-KUN, LET'S MAKE THIS PARK OUR MEETING POINT WE FIRST MET HERE REMEMBER? I COULDN'T EVEN SPEAK ENGLISH...
WHENEVER YOU FEEL SAD. LET ME KNOW AND MEET ME HERE OKAY? I'LL CHEER YOU UP JUST LIKE YOU ALWAYS DID FOR ME!
KNOWING THAT WE'LL ALWAYS BE THERE FOR EACH OTHER.. DOESN'T THIS MAKE YOU FEEL BETTER?
NO. NO. IT DOESN'T BECAUSE I NEED TO KNOW THAT NOW... AND I CAN'T BECAUSE
..EVEN IF I CALLED YOU. YOU WOULDN'T RECOGNIZE ME WOULD YOU, DAVIANNA..? BECAUSE I'VE BECOME A MONSTER
HUFF... HUFF.. SOMEHOW... I KNEW YOU'D BE HERE.
SO IT'S YOU. WHAT DO YOU WANT FROM A RABID MONSTER LIKE ME?


DON'T MAKE SAD PUPPY EYES! JUST 'CUZ I CAME HERE DOESN'T MEAN I'M GONNA GO EASY ON YOU IF YOU TRY ANYTHING WEIRD, OKAY? I WANT YOU TO STAY THERE AND ANSWER MY QUESTIONS!
WHAT? ARE YOU GOING TO ASK ME IF I ENJOY HUMAN FLESH WITH RED WINE?
SHUT UP! I ASK THE QUESTIONS HERE!
WHY DID YOU SAVE CAROLE AND I WHEN YOU COULD'VE LET THAT CAR TURN US INTO HUMAN PURÉE FOR YOU TO DEVOUR?
FOR ONE I DO NOT ENJOY SUPPING ON MY OWN LITTLE SISTER
BUT ALSO.
I OWE YOU. I'M ALWAYS INDEBTED TO YOU DO YOU REMEMBER WHY SHADOW?
INDEBTED TO ME YOU...?
SOMETIMES MY WOMANIZING PERSONALITY WOULD INFURIATE SOME GIRLS BOYFRIENDS THEY'D GANG UP ON ME AND BEAT ME UP
BUT I WAS NEVER SCARED. BECAUSE YOU WERE ALWAYS ONE STEP BEHIND ME - BEATING UP THE PERVERT THAT I AM.. BUT ALSO. PROTECTING ME FROM MY RIVALS.
DAVIANNA.. SHE WAS THERE FOR ME WHEN I WAS HURT EMOTIONALLY YOU WERE THERE FOR ME WHEN I WAS HURT PHYSICALLY I USED TO HAVE IT ALL.. I TOOK IT ALL FOR GRANTED


BUT NOW... I HAVE NOTHING... I LOST EVERYTHING
WHAT WAS OUT FAVORITE TOY WHEN WE WERE SIX?
SHADOW ..?
Y . YES! SHAKESPEARE THE MUTANT DOLPHIN-TURTLE NINJA!
KLUNK! IT WAS ORANGE!
COLOGNE CHANNELING #7
JUST ANSWER MY QUESTIONS
MY LATE CAT'S NAME?
THE GIFT YOU GAVE ME FOR MY 14TH BIRTHDAY?
MY SECRET PANTIES THAT YOU "ACCIDENTLY" SAW WHEN YOU BENT DOWN TO PICK UP A QUARTER DURING LAST YEAR'S VALENTINE'S DAY PARTY ?
P .PINK WITH GREEN SKULLS' AND IT WAS A THONG, NOT PANTIES!
WHAT !!
IMPOSSIBLE! NO ONE NOT EVEN MY PARENTS KNOW I HAVE THAT KIND OF LINGERIE EXCEPT AUGUSTUS THAT PERVERT NO... IT CAN'T BE!!
AUGUSTUS, IT'S YOU! BUT... WHY ARE YOU...
SHADOW.. I I NEED SOME EMOTIONAL RELIEF.. CAN... CAN I?
SURE WHATEVER


OOOOH!! SHADOW! THANK YOU! THANK YOU FOR BELIEVING ME!! I'M SO HAPPY!!
AAAAH!
AH SOFT AND WARM ? OH CRAP
YOU. !!
YOU HAVEN'T CHANGED GOOD GOOD
S SORRY SHADOW!
THIS MEANS. I WON'T FEEL BAD PUNISHING YOU!!
UGYA!
バキッ
YA LOUSY PERV!!
YOU'RE STILL THE DESPICABLE WORM I HAD TO ENDURE SINCE MY CHILDHOOD, YOU... YOU ARRGGH!!!
HEHE JUST LIKE CASEY LIKE FATHER, LIKE.. DAUGHTER I GUESS
ゴッ
ゴッ
ゴッ
ゴッ
OW! OW! OW! NOT THE FACE! SHADOW!! I'M SORRYYYYY!

Mutant Ninja Turtles Gaiden

Chapter 4
Broken Brotherhood - Burden From "Back Then"

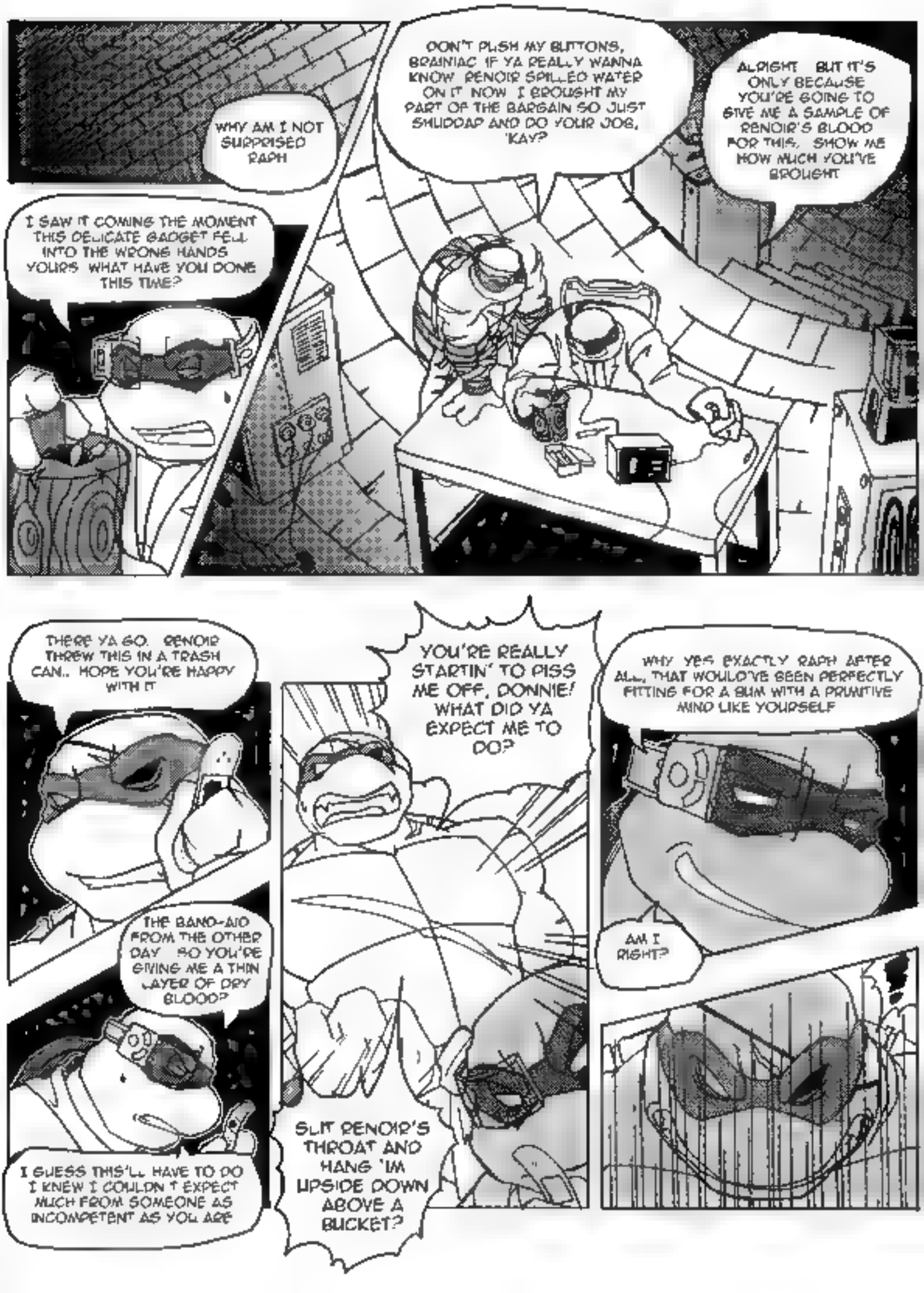



(COUGH)
MASTER RAPHAEL!
Y - YOU KNOW I HAVEN'T EATEN ANYTHING SINCE I STARTED LIVING HERE!!
SHUDDAP ON YOUR
I KNOW, I KNOW! THE SHARDS OF GLASS ON THE GROUND!! A... ARE YOU OUT OF YOUR MIND? WHY ARE YOU DOING THIS TO ME? I .. I CAN GET HURT, YOU KNOW?
STOP WHINING, YA WORM! AS A NINJA TURTLE, I WANT 'CHA TO LEARN TO BALANCE THE WEIGHT OF YOUR ENTIRE BODY INCLUDING YOUR SHELL AND YOUR STUPID HEAD FULL OF CRAP! NOW FOCUS!
AH..AH
ACHKK!!
WHOA!


HYAAA!
NOT MY BEAUTIFUL BUTT!!
MUST CONTROL URGE TO KILL..
AAH..? THE SHARDS OF GLASS ARE GONE .. HOW COME THERE IS SMOKE COMING OUT OF THE LOG I WAS USING?
THAT AIN'T JUST A NORMAL LOG, YA IDIOT! CAN'T 'CHA SEE? T'WAS MY BRO DONNIE'S HOLOGRAM GENERATOR.. SHAPED LIKE A LOG!!
AND FOR YOUR INFORMATION
..EEH?
I.. I DON'T FEEL ANY PAIN..
MACHINES DON'T NEED TO BE WATERED TO BE MAINTAINED!
HEY! HOW COULD I KNOW THAT? IT S NOT LIKE I SAW THE HOLOGRAMS APPEAR WHEN I CAME IN HERE ..
..AND YOU RE THE SADIST WHO FORCED ME TO CARRY BUCKETS OF WATER LIKE THAT!!
SHADDAP, YA INSOLENT SLACKER! ILLUSIONS WERE NECESSARY! WITHOUT PROPER MOTIVATION', I KNOW A MAGGOT LIKE YOU AIN'T GONNA TRAIN SERIOUSLY!!
DAMMIT IF I WANNA GET THIS THING FIXED AND RUNNIN' AGAIN I M GONNA HAVE TO GET ON MY KNEES AND BEG DONNIE FOR SOME TECH SUPPORT URGH..
I GIVE YOU AN OPPORTUNITY TO SOCIALIZE WITH YOUR BROTHER AND THIS IS THE THANKS I GET STARVATION FEEL LIKE I'M IN A BOOT CAMP
BE DAMN GRATEFUL I HAVEN'T KICKED YER ASS YET FOR PISSIN' ME OFF ALL THE TIME!
GOOPY!
IF YOU'RE SO HUNGRY, GET THE HELL OUTTA HERE AND GO LEECH ON SHADOW, YA DAMN KID!!


Brooklyn
09:00
PM
LOOK AT THAT WEIRDO!
DID I SEE GREEN SKIN?
I SAW THE MUTANT WANDERING AROUND HERE. OFFICER! IT'S PROBABLY BE STILL AROUND!
THANK YOU, MISS WE'LL SCOUT THIS AREA...
I KNEW IT JUST A TRENCHCOAT WASN'T ENOUGH TO BLEND IN THE CROWD HAVE I BECOME THAT MUCH OF AN EYESORE?
AND WE'LL CATCH THAT MUTANT REST ASSURED.
COULD IT BE THE DANGEROUS MAN-EATING MUTANT?
SHH DON'T STARTLE IT!
AT LEAST I REACHED SHADOW'S APARTMENT BUILDING. BUT I SUPPOSE IT'S NO LONGER SAFE FOR ME TO ENTER THROUGH THE FRONT DOOR
THERE HAS TO BE AN ALTERNATIVE ENTRANCE
LA-LALA-LA-LAAA
AH SHADOW!
HM..HMMM HM---HM.
YAAAAH!! A STALKER!!


SHADOW?
AAH!
EH?
GET OUT...
GET OUTTA HERE, THE BOTH OF YOU!!
GEEZ CAN'T A GIRL GET SOME PRIVACY AROUND HERE?
HUMILIATING ME YESTERDAY WAS NOT ENOUGH FOR RAPH SO HE SENT THE NOTORIOUS KILLER MUTANT TO MAKE MY LIFE MISERABLE, DION'T HE? I M GONNA MAKE YOU PAY FOR WHAT HE DID!
HEYHEYHEY! WAIT! JUST LEMME EXPLAIN!
HUH? YOU JUST CAME LOOKING FOR FOOD? OH, OKAY . COME HERE I'LL SEE WHAT'S LEFT IN THE FRIDGE
WHAT ARE YOU WAITING FOR...? HEY, STAY AWAY FROM THE BATHROOM!
SORRY I SHOWED UP SO LATE IN THE NIGHT SHADOW IT S
I KNOW THE NOCTURNAL LIFE OF A MUTANT TURTLE
YEAH I M STILL NOT USED TO IT THOUGH.
URGH. THAT RAPH HE NEVER HAD WHAT IT TAKES TO BE A LEADER, AND NOW HE WANTS TO BE A SENSEI! HE DOESN'T EVEN BOTHER TO GIVE FOOD TO HIS OWN DISCIPLE
ARE YOU OKAY WITH LEFTOVER PIZZA? UNCLE MIKEY CAN COOK YOU SOMETHING YOU KNOW
NO I M FINE THANKS! I M SO HUNGRY ANYTHING WOULD DO RIGHT NOW
SAY I HEARD THAT RAPHAEL THAT DONNIE GUY AND YOU, SIR MIKEY ARE RELATED, AREN'T YOU? ARE YOU BROTHERS?
PIZZA LIND PIZZA LIND
YEAH, BROTHERS. NOT BLOOD RELATED BUT BROTHERS NONETHELESS IT'S A LONG STORY


WHY AM I NOT SURPRISED RAPH
DON'T PUSH MY BUTTONS, BRAINIAC IF YA REALLY WANNA KNOW RENOIR SPILLED WATER ON IT NOW I BROUGHT MY PART OF THE BARGAIN SO JUST SHUDDAP AND DO YOUR JOB, 'KAY?
ALRIGHT BUT IT'S ONLY BECAUSE YOU'RE GOING TO GIVE ME A SAMPLE OF RENOIR'S BLOOD FOR THIS. SHOW ME HOW MUCH YOU'VE BROUGHT
I SAW IT COMING THE MOMENT THIS DELICATE GADGET FELL INTO THE WRONG HANDS YOURS WHAT HAVE YOU DONE THIS TIME?
THERE YA GO. RENOIR THREW THIS IN A TRASH CAN.. HOPE YOU'RE HAPPY WITH IT
YOU'RE REALLY STARTIN' TO PISS ME OFF, DONNIE! WHAT DID YA EXPECT ME TO DO?
WHY YES EXACTLY RAPH AFTER ALL, THAT WOULD'VE BEEN PERFECTLY FITTING FOR A BUM WITH A PRIMITIVE MIND LIKE YOURSELF
THE BAND-AID FROM THE OTHER DAY SO YOU'RE GIVING ME A THIN LAYER OF DRY BLOOD?
AM I RIGHT?
I GUESS THIS'LL HAVE TO DO I KNEW I COULDN'T EXPECT MUCH FROM SOMEONE AS INCOMPETENT AS YOU ARE
SLIT RENOIR'S THROAT AND HANG 'IM UPSIDE DOWN ABOVE A BUCKET?


SO . YOU GUYS WERE
"WE USED TO BE SO CLOSE, DESPITE OUR DIFFERENCES."
DON'T CHA FUCKIN' MESS WIT' ME, ASSHOLE!
"IT WAS THEN THAT I REALIZED HOW MUCH WE DEPENDED ON OUR
ARDO WASN'T ABLE TO KEEP EVERYONE UNITED."
"LEONARDO WENT TO JAPAN ON A QUEST FOR REDEMPTION
DONATELLO ISOLATED HIMSELF IN HIS LAB IN HIS OWN LITTLE WORLD
I DECIDED TO START MY LIFE OVER
RAPHAEL... HE WAS THE LAST ONE TO TRY TO KEEP EVERYONE UNITED... IN HIS OWN WAY


DAMMIT, LEO. EVEN WHEN YOU'RE NOT HERE... YOU MANAGE TO RESTRAIN ME
I HOPE YOU'RE SATISFIED.
NOW BEAT IT RAPH.
YOU'RE NO LONGER OF ANY USE TO ME NOW THAT I HAVE RENOIR'S BLOOD, YOU'RE BACK TO YOUR FORMER WORTHLESS STATE
SHIT. WHY HAS OUR FAMILY FALLEN THIS LOW?
EVEN THOUGH WE LIVE IN A "DOG-EAT-DOG" WORLD.. WE'VE ALWAYS BEEN THERE FOR EACH OTHER DONNIE WHY .?
I WAS BORN AFTER THAT INCIDENT SO I'VE NEVER HAD THE CHANCE TO MEET UNCLE LEONARDO OR TO SEE THE THREE OTHERS UNITED AS A NORMAL FAMILY
BUT THEY DO SEE EACH OTHER FROM TIME TO TIME DON'T THEY?
OUTSIDE OF UNCLE LEO. YEAH. EACH CHRISTMAS UNCLE RAPH AND UNCLE DONNIE COME OVER TO CELEBRATE WITH US
BUT THE TENSION IS ALWAYS PALPABLE WHENEVER THEY MEET SOMETIMES IT WOULD END UP IN A FIGHT
IT DOESN'T HELP THAT RAPHAEL ALWAYS HAD TROUBLE EXPRESSING HIMSELF HE ARGUES WITH RAGE AND FISTS... NOT WITH REASON

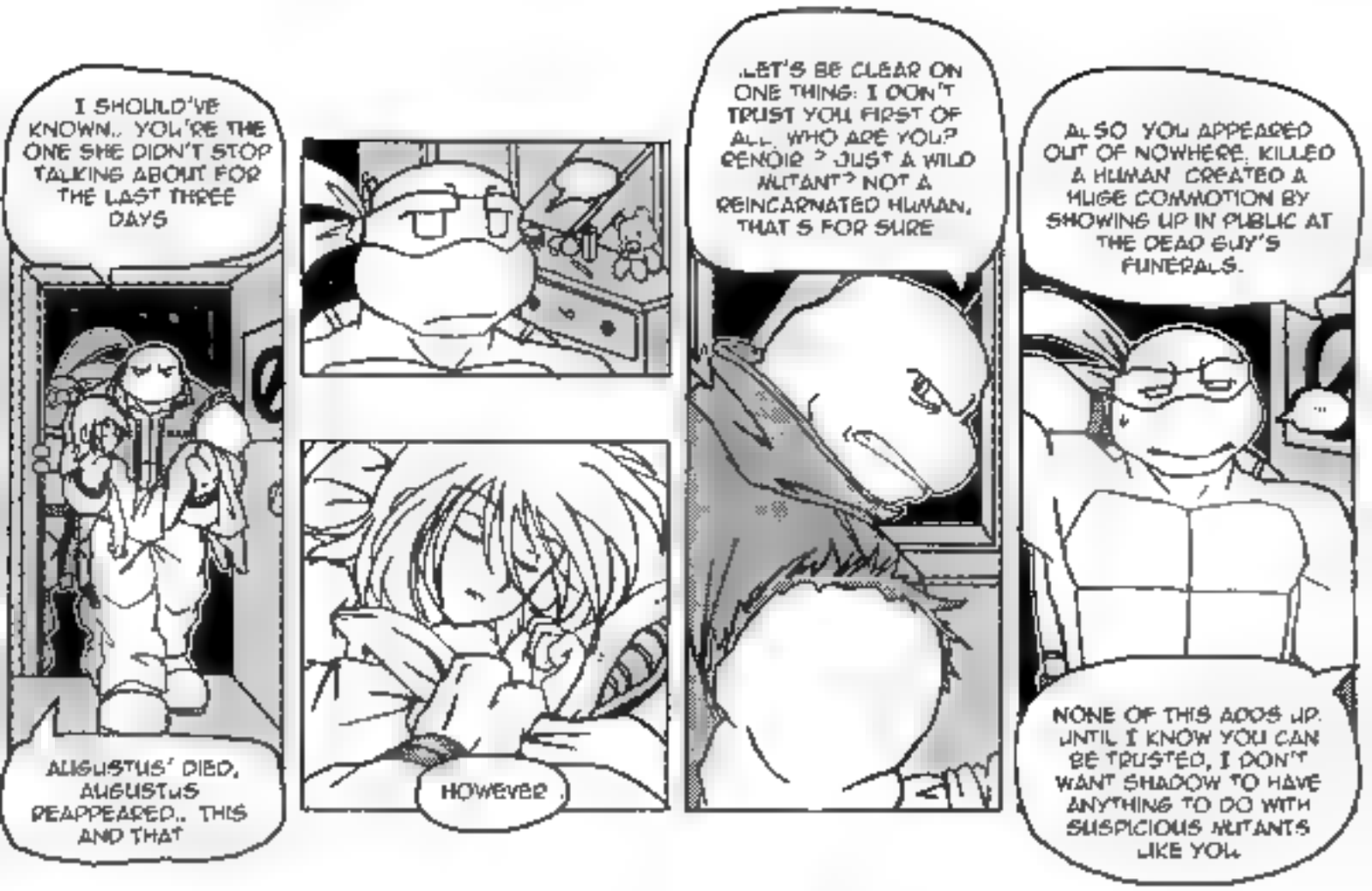

"A FEW DAYS AFTER OUR MASTER'S DEATH I WENT BACK TO OUR OLD LAIR TO PICK UP MY STUFF BECAUSE I WAS MOVING OUT"
WHEN I BROKE OUT THE NEWS TO RAPHAEL, I REALIZED THAT REASONING WITH HIM WAS A WASTE OF TIME."
OOF!
SO... YA CAME CRAWLIN' BACK HOME, TRAITOR!!
YA SOUGHT SHELTER IN THE HUMAN WORLD RUNNIN' AWAY FROM THE CONSEQUENCES OF OUR SIN, DIDN'T YA, MIKEY?
W WHAT SIN, RAPH? IT'S NOT LIKE I ..!
"DONNIE FOUND RAPH WOUNDED IN THE SEWERS AFTER THE INCIDENT AND TREATED HIS WOUNDS I THOUGHT THAT HE WAS MAD AT ME BECAUSE I WASN'T THERE FOR HIM, BUT THERE WAS MORE TO IT."
YA BET CHA DID!! WHOSE IDEA WAS IT TO SNEAK INTO SPLINTER'S ROOM TO CHECK OUT THAT PACKAGE HUH? TELL ME, SMARTASS!
I DON'T WANT YA DESERTIN' US AGAIN, YA HEAR? WE'RE BROTHERS. BOUND TO EACH OTHER TILL THE VERY END! AND IN THIS CASE BOUND BY OUR SIN!
NO NO YOU'RE WRONG!

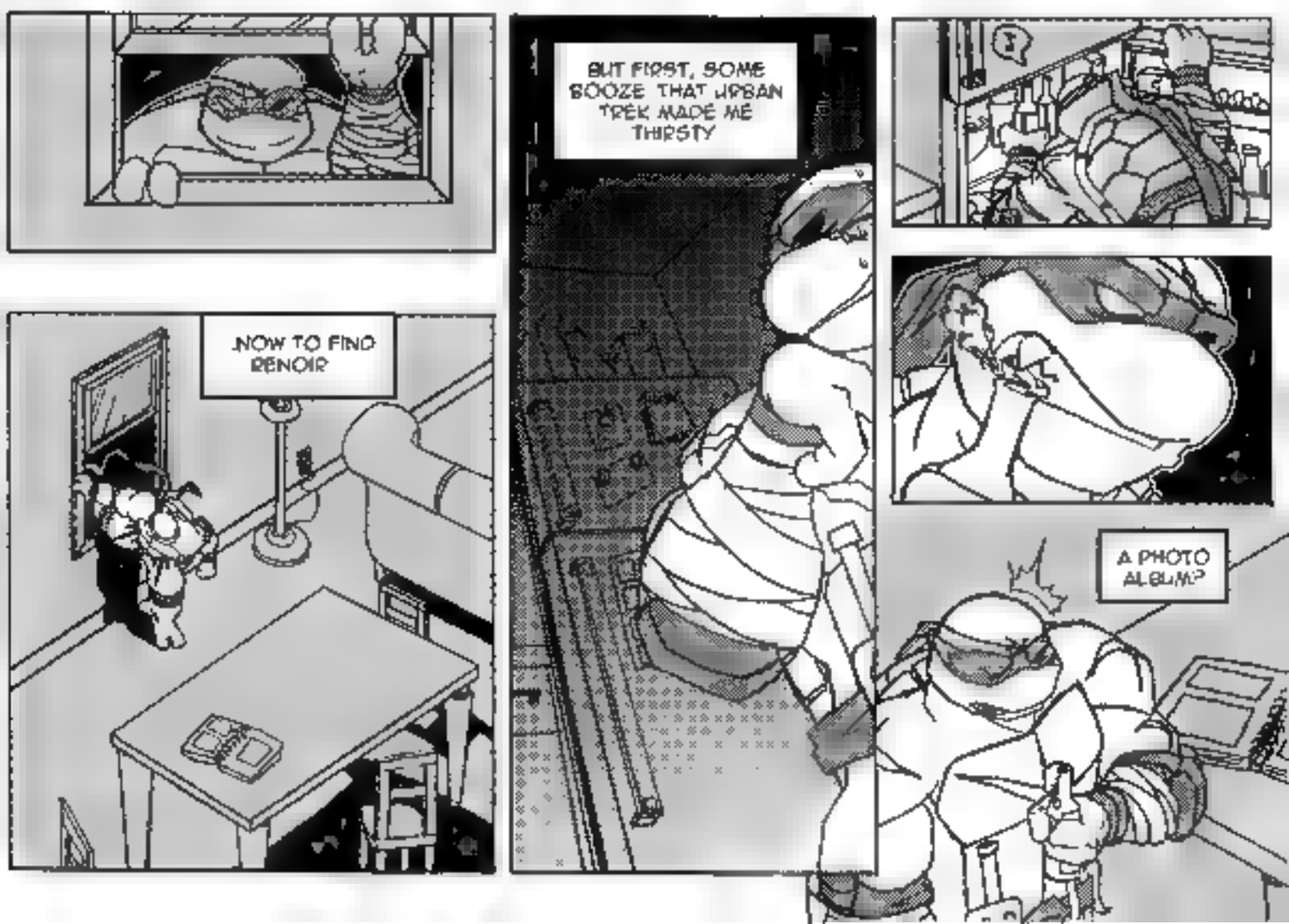

NO!! STOP BLAMING ME, RAPH!! I... I DIDN'T DO ANYTHING!!
W...WHAT DID YA SAY??
I JUST CAME BY TO PICK UP MY STUFF RAPH. I'M MOVING IN WITH APRIL TO RESTART MY LIFE FROM SCRATCH!
THAT BURDEN AND THAT BOND OF YOURS... I DON'T WANT 'EM!!
GOT IT RAPH?
GO AHEAD, RAPH! IT WON'T MAKE ME CHANGE MY MIND!
..SO STOP HANGING ON TO ME LIKE THAT! WE RE NOT 'BOUND' TO EACH OTHER ANYMORE!
Y.. YOU. TRAITOR
I'M NOT YOUR BRO!
...
ADMIT IT! YOU JUST DON'T HAVE THE GUTS TO CARRY YOUR OWN BURDEN ALONE! YOU ATTACK OTHER PEOPLE AND MAKE THEM VULNERABLE SO YOU CAN MAKE THEM SHARE YOUR PAIN! WELL THAT'S NOT GONNA WORK WITH ME!! NOT THIS TIME!
YOU TRAITOR! I'M GONNA KILL YA!!!
SHUDDAP! SHUT THE HELL UP!!


THOSE MARKS MADE BY LEO ON THE TABLE SEEM TO SOOTHE RAPH'S DERANGED MIND
HUH? NO.. I HAD TO OTHERWISE HE WOULDN'T GET THE MESSAGE
RAPH. YOU HAVE NEVER BEEN VERY BRIGHT WERE YOU? YOU'RE NOT THE KIND OF PERSON WHO WOULD UNDERSTAND ME
WATCHIN' YA WORKIN' ON MACHINES ALL DAY IS DEPRESSIN' WHY DON'T CHA GIVE IT A REST AND GET SOME FRESH AIR?
I MEAN, YA NO LONGER GIVE A DAMN 'BOUT AND YOUR HEALTH! YA NO LONGER TALK TO ANYONE HELL, I EVEN FEEL LIKE I'M TALKIN' TO A WALL RIGHT NOW!
HEY, ARE YOU HEP? YA DEAF OR SOMETHIN'?


ARE YA GIVIN' ME THE SILENT TREATMENT? EH?
...
OY!
KNOCK IT OFF, RAPH!
IF YOU'RE THAT DESPERATE FOR ATTENTION, THEN GO PAY CASEY A VISIT! I DON'T HAVE TIME TO WASTE!
INDEED. RAPH WOULDN'T UNDERSTAND ME HE WAS STILL HANGING ON TO HIS OWN VISION OF REALITY
THAT'S WHY WE EVENTUALLY SPLIT UP AND BECAME DISTANT IT WAS HIS DECISION AFTER ALL
DIDN'T YOU GET IT THE FIRST TIME I IGNORED YOU?
OR ARE YOU JUST TOO DUMB TO UNDERSTAND THAT I'M BUSY?
YOU KNOW I'M A WORKAHOLIC BY NATURE, SO LIVE WITH IT OR GO AWAY! I DON'T INTEND TO CHANGE MY LIFE-STYLE TO SATISFY YOUR SILLY WHIMS!


NO ONE IN SIGHT.. GOOD
I HOPE HE DIDN'T GET CAUGHT BY THE COPS OR SOMETHING I DON'T WANNA HAVE TO ASK DONNIE TO HELP ME GO FETCH HIM.
RENOIR SHOULD BE AT APRIL'S APARTMENT
THAT DONNIE... WHAT'S WRONG WITH HIM.
MR. MIKEY ARE YOU SURE IT'S OKAY FOR ME TO LOOK IN YOUR PHOTO ALBUM?
YEAH. I THINK YOU SHOULD I WANT YOU TO UNDERSTAND WHO WE NINJA TURTLES ARE
HUH I CAN HARDLY IMAGINE SOMEONE AS VIOLENT AND GRUMPY AS RAPHAEL BONDING WITH ANYBODY THESE PHOTOS ALMOST SEEM SURREAL TO ME WHAT DO YOU THINK, SHADOW?
HEY SHADOW?
ZZZ..
AH OH WELL HEY WAKEY-WAKEY SHADOW!
SSH!" LET HER SLEEP! I'LL CARRY HER TO HER ROOM.
BUT .
SHE DIDN'T SLEEP FOR THE LAST TWO DAYS WITNESSING A CHILDHOOD FRIEND'S DEATH AND REINCARNATION WOULD CAUSE ANYONE TO BE RESTLESS DON'T YOU THINK?
HUH? HOW DID YOU KNOW I WAS HER..


I SHOULD'VE KNOWN.. YOU'RE THE ONE SHE DIDN'T STOP TALKING ABOUT FOR THE LAST THREE DAYS
AUGUSTUS' DIED, AUGUSTUS REAPPEARED.. THIS AND THAT
HOWEVER
LET'S BE CLEAR ON ONE THING: I DON'T TRUST YOU. FIRST OF ALL, WHO ARE YOU? RENOIR ? JUST A WILD MUTANT? NOT A REINCARNATED HUMAN, THAT S FOR SURE
ALSO YOU APPEARED OUT OF NOWHERE, KILLED A HUMAN CREATED A HUGE COMMOTION BY SHOWING UP IN PUBLIC AT THE DEAD GUY'S FUNERALS.
NONE OF THIS ADDS UP. UNTIL I KNOW YOU CAN BE TRUSTED, I DON'T WANT SHADOW TO HAVE ANYTHING TO DO WITH SUSPICIOUS MUTANTS LIKE YOU.


NOW TO FIND RENOIR
BUT FIRST, SOME BOOZE THAT URBAN TREK MADE ME THIRSTY
?
A PHOTO ALBUM?


YOUR FAMILY TO SOMEONE YOU DON'T
INSISTING ON LETTING ME KNOW EVERYTHING ABOUT
THAT YOU ARE OVER-
JEO, DONNIE MIKEY SENSEI.. ME


NO! YOU'VE GOT IT ALL WRONG! MY BROTHERS! ESPECIALLY NOT RAPH!
OKAY I ADMIT IT. I DON'T KNOW HOW TO HELP RAPH. BUT HOW CAN I DO ANYTHING FOR HIM WHEN HE KEEPS REJECTING MY HELP?
THAT'S WHY I TOLD YOU EVERYTHING I WANT YOU TO UNDERSTAND HIM BETTER AND HOPEFULLY BE A BIGGER HELP TO HIM THAN I WAS ALL THIS TIME
YOU, ON THE OTHER HAND, ARE IN A PERFECT POSITION TO REACH HIM IN HIS CURRENT STATE
HIS CASE IS SO DESPERATE AT THIS POINT THAT I'D ENTRUST HIM TO ANYONE IF GIVEN THE CHANCE EVEN IF THAT PERSON IS AS SUSPICIOUS AS YOU ARE


IT CAME FROM
...LOOK AT THOSE PH PHOTOS... J ..(HIC) JUST LOOK AT HOW JOLLY YOU WERE .. ALL TH...THESE LAST SEVENTEEN Y ..YEARS.. WH... WHILE I WAS.. ALL ALOOOOONE .. (HIC)
A..A...AFTER WE KILLED OFF TH ..
ALL THESE EMPTY BOTTLES... DID HE REALLY ?


SH...SHUDDAP!! SHUDDAP!! Y... YA MAKE ME WANNA PUKE!!
WHOA.
W... WE'VE COMMITTED A SIN!! Y... YA HEAR? W... WE KILLED OUR FATHER!!
D..DON'T CHA HAVE A C... CONSCIENCE, DAMMIT!!
YA HAVEN'T D.. DONE A DAMN THING TO REDEEM YERSELF! Y.. YA JUST LIVED YER H...HAPPY LIFE!!
W WE DON'T DESERVE TO ENJOY LIFE!! HELL, WE D. DON'T EVEN DESERVE TO LIVE!! WE'RE P PARASITES, YA HEAR ME? PARAS TES THAT K . KILL THEIR F. FATHERS!!
WE'RE KILLERS, MIKEY! S...SINNERS! W... WE'RE NOT WORTHY OF ANYTHING!!


UM.. MASTER RAPHAEL
WHAT? W...WHAT THE FUCK DO YA WANT, R...RENOIR?
M-M-M-M-MASTER! I I.. D.. DONATELLO!! YEAH, DONATELLO!
D .DID DONATELLO FIX THE MACHINE? I HOPE HE WASN'T UPSET OR ANYTHING
D DONATELLO?
DON .NIE.


MY. MY OWN BRO. HE. HE S NOT THE SAME ANYMORE S.. SINCE SPLINTER DIED.. H. HE ALWAYS LOOKS D DOWN ON ME A AND.. AND
I I DON'T CARE IF I G... GET HATED.. BUT NOT FAMILY.. NOT BY FAMILY!!
NOT BY DONNIE... OF ALL P PEOPLE .. WHY HIM..? WHY..?


I.. I..
R...RAPH! YOU OKAY?
...URP! URGH... UUURFFF!!
...
URGHHHH!!
WHY ARE YOU SO NOISY??


....?
BWAAARGGGHH!!
IT'S ALRIGHT, RAPH. LET IT ALL OUT. IT'LL MAKE YOU FEEL BETTER
YOMIT


"I'M HERE FOR YOU, BRO... JUST RELAX FOR NOW."


MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
GAIDEN
CHAPTER 4:
WATCH OUT!
BUSINESS WITH
THE PURPLE
DRAGONS!


THAT S IT FOR TODAY CLASS. NOW BEFORE YOU LEAVE, I MUST TAKE ATTENDANCE
MATTHEW HARDING.
HERE
DAVIANNA WALLACE
HERE
SHADOW JONES
WAKE UP, MS. JONES!
YES MA'AM!!
THIS ISN'T YOUR FIRST OFFENSE IN MY CLASS!!
PSST
SHADOW JONES
ZZZ
THANKS TO JING RAPH I DIDN'T GET ANY DECENT SHUT EYE LAST NIGHT.
WHAT AM I TO DO WITH YOU?
ANDREW LAVERNE
HERE


THEY WERE ALWAYS KINDA CLOSE.
. AND NOW, HE'S OUT OF HER LIFE POOR DAVIANNA
HEY, ARE YOU ALRIGHT DAVIANNA?
OH, I M FINE CYNTHIA! JUST DAYDREAMING!
WELL SNAP OUT OF IT CUZ THE BOYS HAVE CHALLENGED OUR TEAM TO A SOCCER GAME!
TEEHEE! OKAY! LET S SHOW THEM GIRL POWER!
MAYBE I SHOULD BRING HIM BACK HIS STUFF
STOLEN LINGERIE AND PHOTOS OF GIRLS CHANGING IN THE LOCKER ROOM.
THAT CREEP IF HE GOES THROUGH MY STUFF AT HOME... I'LL KILL HIM!!


HEHEHE
HANDS OFF THOSE PANTIES!
UGYA!
LUCKY FOR YOU HER PARENTS ARE AWAY ON A SECOND HONEYMOON.
CASEY WOULD'VE KICKED YOUR ASS.
EVEN THOUGH SHE'S A VIOLENT TOMBOY HER CATALOGUE OF LINGERIE IS SURPRISINGLY GIRLISH!
YOU SICKO! GIMME THAT!
NO! GET YOUR OWN!!


GOT IT!
AIRHEADS ALWAYS AMUSING TO WATCH.
IT'S A GOOD THING THEY'RE AIRHEADS, TOO
I'M KINDA LOW ON CASH. SO LET'S SELL SOME FRESH VIRGIN MEAT WHO'S GONNA BE THE LUCKY ONE TODAY?
I SAY WE DRUM UP BUSINESS AND SERVE THEM THE ASIAN ONE I HEARD SHE'S STILL IN SHOCK ABOUT THAT PERVERT'S DEATH. SHE'LL BE AN EASY TARGET
THEN IT'S DECIDED I'LL CALL OUR USUAL CUSTOMERS
PURPLE DRAGONS. HUH?
HEY, GUYS I HAVE A GREAT DEAL FOR YOU TODAY.. HUNGRY FOR SOME ASIAN?
YEAH.. WE'LL MEET AT THE USUAL PLACE IT'S
..


WE SURE SHOWED THOSE CHAUVINIST BOZOS!
MARION YOU KNOW YOU DION'T HAVE TO BUMP INTO EVERY GUY IN THE OTHER TEAM. NOW THEY'LL ALL THINK YOU'RE PLAYING FOR THE WRONG REASONS..


DAVIANNA?


AH, MARCELLA! WHAT'S UP?


HAVE YOU GOTTEN USED TO OUR SCHOOL, YET?
OH. YES THANKS FOR WARNING ME ABOUT THE CAFETERIA'S MEATLOAF I NO LONGER GET INDIGESTIONS ON WEDNESDAYS
YOU'RE SUCH A WHORE!


SO WHAT CAN I DO FOR YOU?
IF IT'S ABOUT BIOLOGY CLASS NOTES I CAN LEND YOU MINE I KNOW SHADOW STILL HAS YOURS

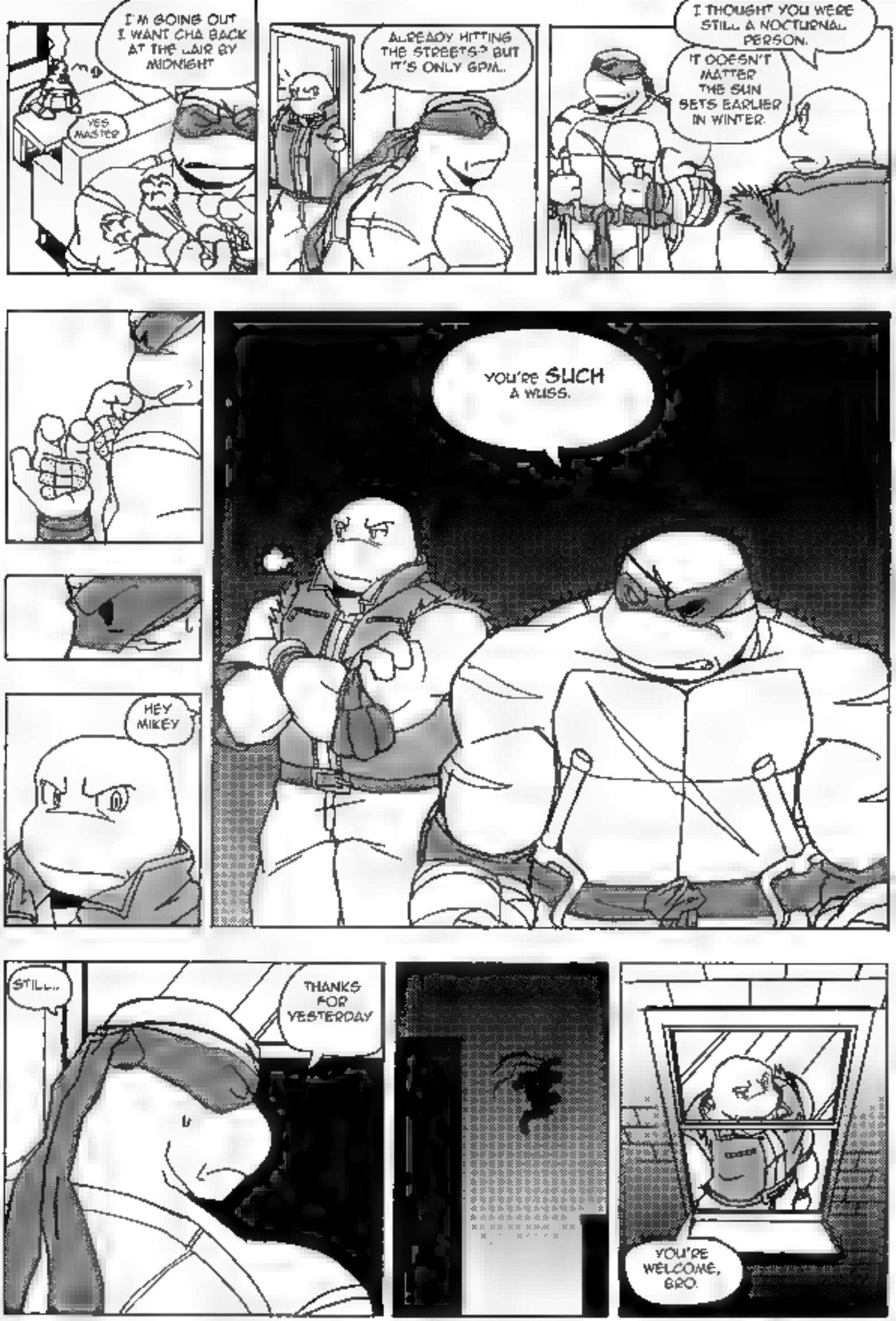

I DON'T WANT HER TO PANIC WHEN SCHOOL IS STILL IN SESSION.
FOR NOW I'LL JUST MAKE SURE SHE DOESN'T MEET THAT GIRL I CAN TELL HER LATER

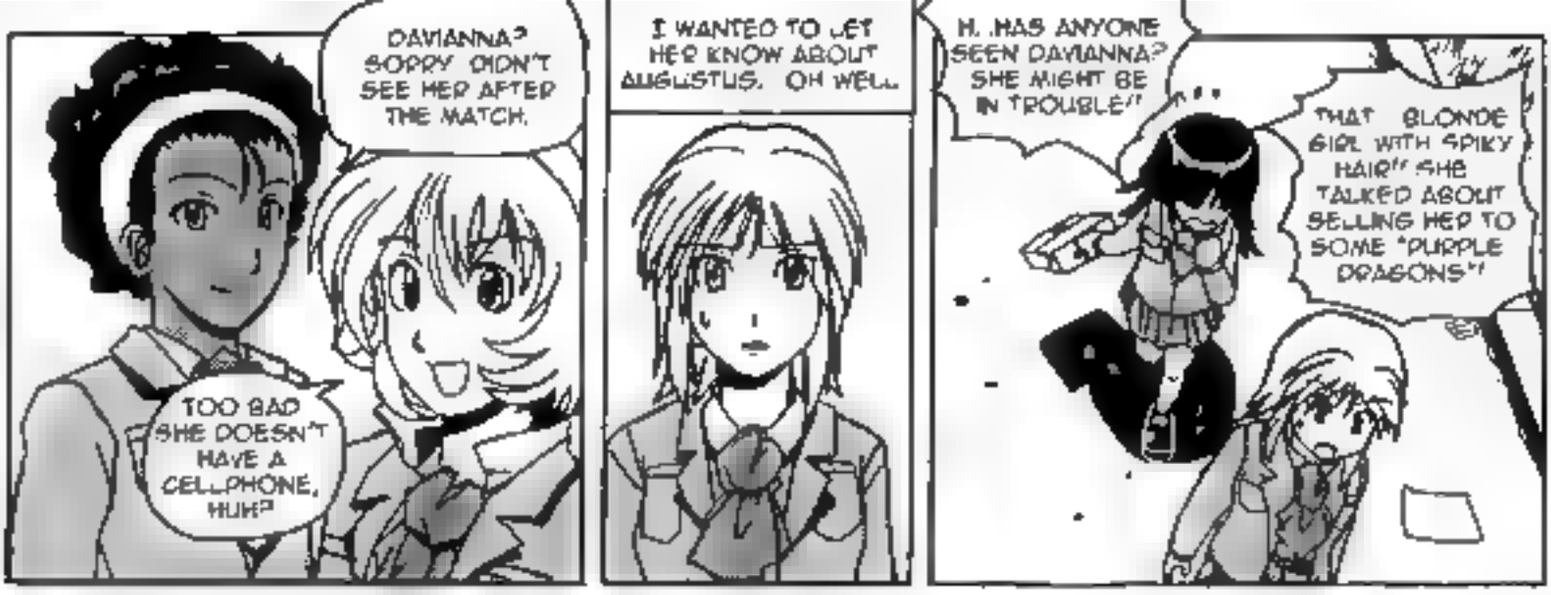

UM.
LET'S TAKE THE SUBWAY TOGETHER AFTER SCHOOL OKAY?

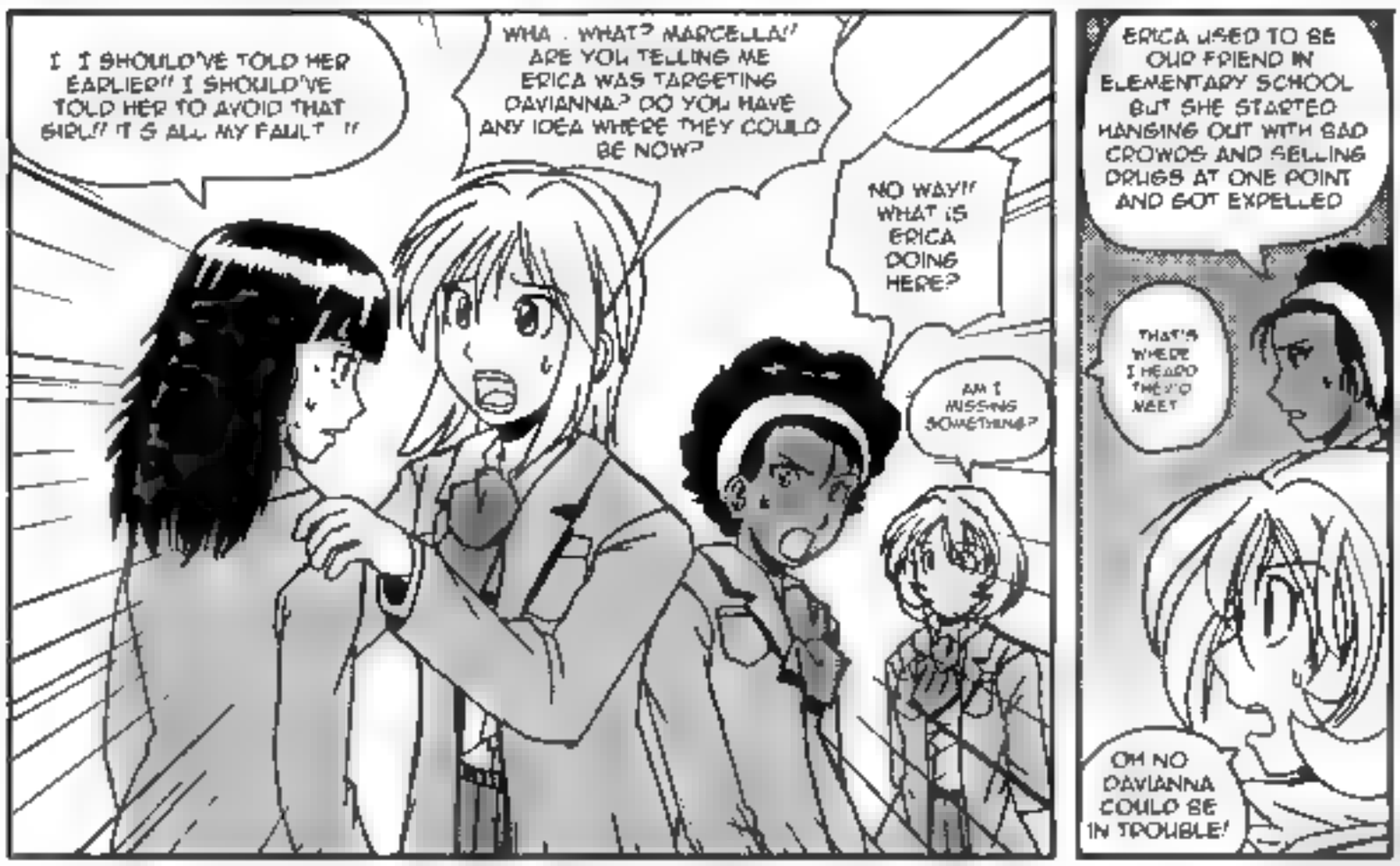

AH, THAT'S IT? WELL, OKAY! WHERE DO WE MEET?
AT THE SCHOOL'S REAR EXIT NEAR THE TRASH CAN!


YOU'RE DAYANNA'S FRIEND? MARCELLA WANTED ME TO TELL YOU THAT SHE CAN'T MAKE IT SOME MEETING WITH A COUNSELOR SHE SAID
OH BY THE WAY I'M A TRANSFER STUDENT THE NAME'S EDNA NICE TO MEET YOU!
WOULD YOU MIND WALKING HOME WITH ME?
MY HOME'S THE OTHER WAY THOUGH
HEY IVY WAIT UP!
HEY YOU! YES YOU!
WE CAN CHIT CHAT ABOUT AUGUSTUS ALONG THE WAY!
HE WAS MY FRIEND
OH WE'LL OKAY
MAKE SURE TAKES HER TIME
I'M SURE HE'S WATCHING THAT IN HEAVEN. RIGHT NOW
HOW DID YOU KNOW AUGUSTUS?
WE WERE CHILDHOOD FRIENDS WE'D WATCH "SHAKESPEARE THE MUTANT NINJA DRAGON TURTLE" TOGETHER ON TV


I'M SHAKESPEARE! THE MUTANT NINJA DOLPHIN-TURTLE! EN GARDE!!
UGYA!
TURN OFF THE DAMN TV! I'M TRYIN' TO GET SOME SLEEP HERE!
TV GUIDE
FOR CRYING OUT LOUD, I'M TRYING TO ENJOY MY FIRST "NORMAL" DAY SINCE I TURNED INTO A FREAK LIKE YOU, SO LOOSEN UP, OLD TIMER!!
O...
OLD TIMER?
THAT'S EXACTLY WHAT I SEE IN YOU AND YOU CAN'T DO ANYTHING ABOUT IT
MY POOR SISSY OF A MASTER SEE HOW ALCOHOL IS BAD FOR YOU? YOU'RE STUCK IN BED, RECOVERING
WHO SAID I WAS STILL RECOVERING?
MY, MY HONOURABLE MASTER


I'M GOING OUT I WANT CHA BACK AT THE LAIR BY MIDNIGHT
YES MASTER
ALREADY HITTING THE STREETS? BUT IT'S ONLY 6PM..
I THOUGHT YOU WERE STILL A NOCTURNAL PERSON.
IT DOESN'T MATTER THE SUN SETS EARLIER IN WINTER.
YOU'RE SUCH A WUSS.
HEY MIKEY
STILL...
THANKS FOR YESTERDAY
YOU'RE WELCOME, BRO.

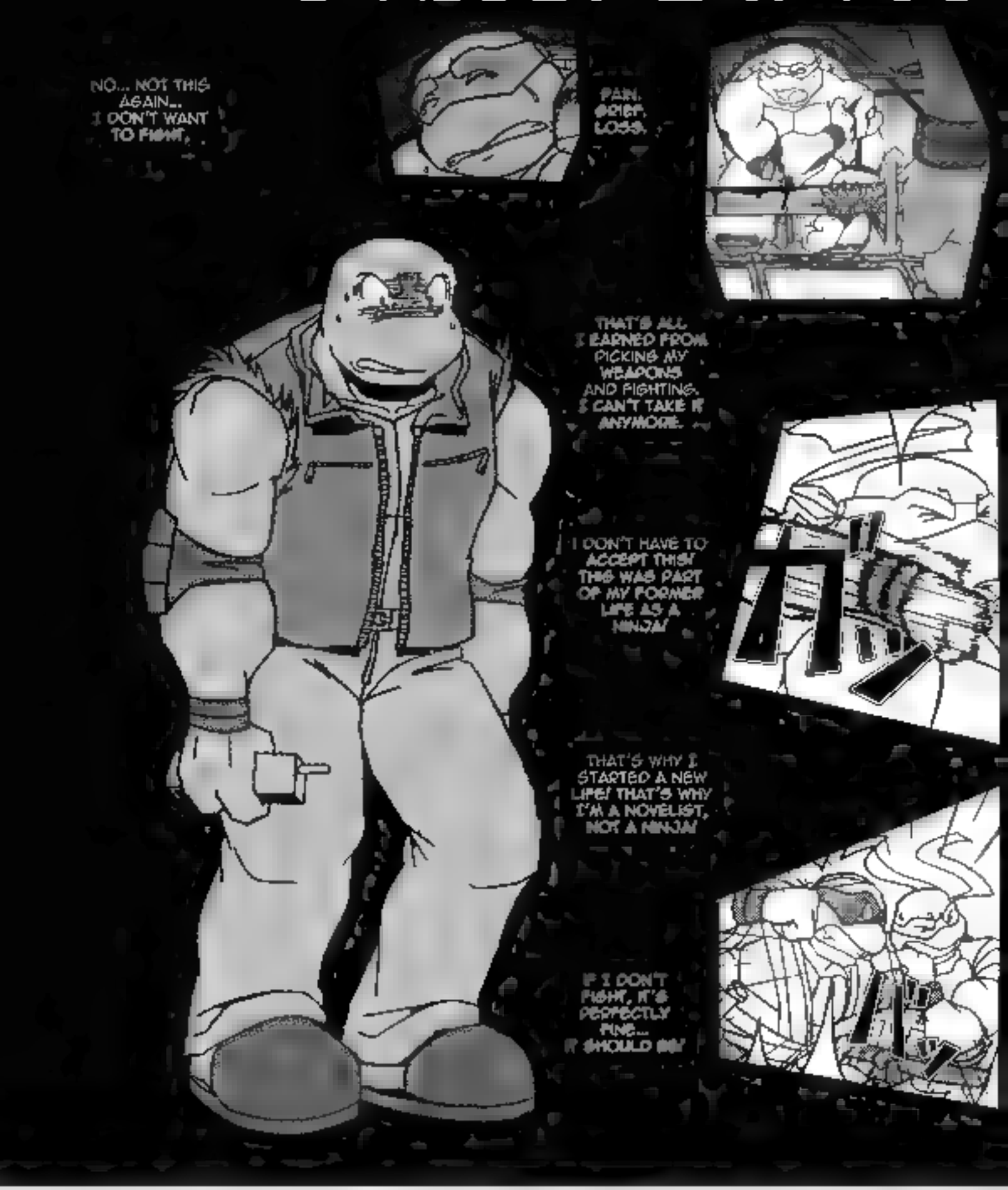

DAVIANNA? SORRY DIDN'T SEE HER AFTER THE MATCH.
TOO BAD SHE DOESN'T HAVE A CELLPHONE, HUH?
I WANTED TO LET HER KNOW ABOUT AUGUSTUS. OH WELL.
H. HAS ANYONE SEEN DAVIANNA? SHE MIGHT BE IN TROUBLE!!
THAT BLONDE GIRL WITH SPIKY HAIR!! SHE TALKED ABOUT SELLING HER TO SOME "PURPLE DRAGONS"!

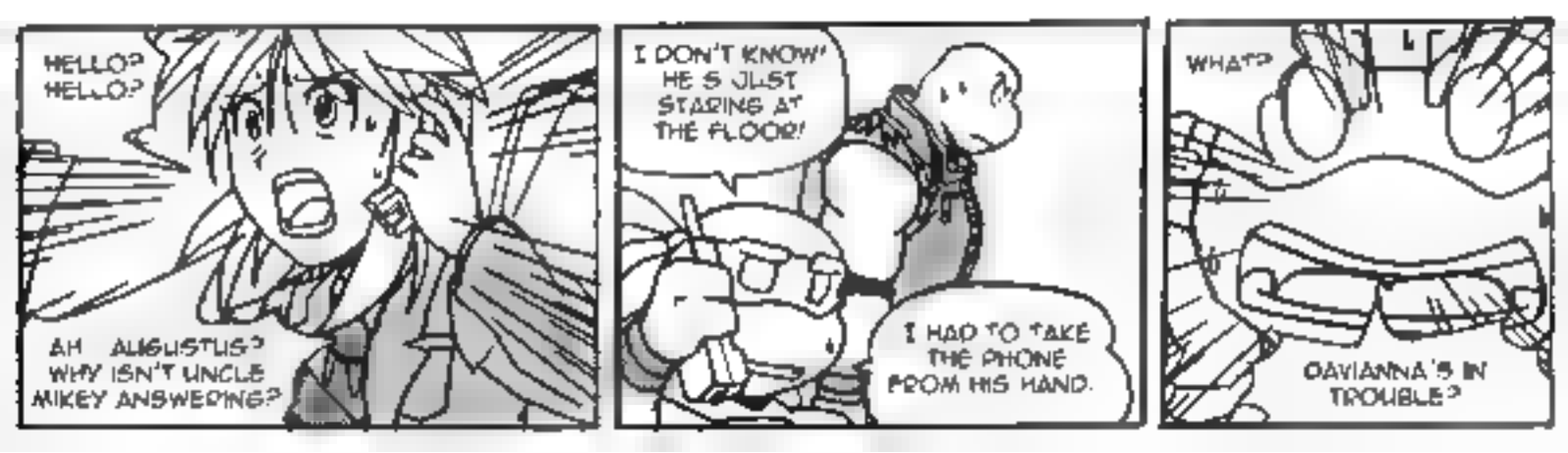

I I SHOULD'VE TOLD HER EARLIER!! I SHOULD'VE TOLD HER TO AVOID THAT GIRL!! IT S ALL MY FAULT !!
WHA . WHAT? MARCELLA!! ARE YOU TELLING ME ERICA WAS TARGETING DAVIANNA? DO YOU HAVE ANY IDEA WHERE THEY COULD BE NOW?
NO WAY!! WHAT IS ERICA DOING HERE?
AM I MISSING SOMETHING?
ERICA USED TO BE OUR FRIEND IN ELEMENTARY SCHOOL BUT SHE STARTED HANGING OUT WITH BAD CROWDS AND SELLING DRUGS AT ONE POINT AND GOT EXPELLED
THAT'S WHERE I HEARD THEY'D MEET
OH NO DAVIANNA COULD BE IN TROUBLE!


MARION! GIMME YOUR SPORTS MEMBERSHIP CARD NOW!
OK BUT WHERE S YOURS?
REVOKED! DON'T ASK WHY!
I M JUST GONNA BORROW SOME "TOOLS" AT THE GYM!
AS LONG AS I HAVE THIS CARD, THEY'RE GONNA HAVE TO LEND ME STUFF!
AND DON'T CALL THE COPS!! I'LL DO THAT MYSELF!!
WHY DOES SHE NEED TOOLS TO CALL THE POLICE?
AM I GONNA SEE MY CARD AGAIN?
I DON'T THINK SO


HM.. YEAH. WELL, WE ALWAYS WERE IN DIFFERENT SCHOOLS. BUT WE STILL KEPT IN TOUCH.. WHAT S HE TO YOU, DAVIANNA?
WE MET IN KINDERGARTEN I OWE HIM A LOT - HE LOOKED AFTER ME WHEN I FIRST CAME HERE FROM JAPAN WITHOUT KNOWING A LICK OF ENGLISH.
ALONG THE WAY HE MADE YOU LICK SOMETHING ELSE HUH?
ACTUALLY, NO HE WAS A PERFECT GENTLEMAN WITH ME IN FACT HE EVEN SWORE HE'D HOLD BACK UNTIL
GOTCHA!!
AAAH!!
YOU'RE GONNA SPREAD YOUR LEGS FOR ME TONIGHT BITCH!
HELP! DAVIANNA! HEEELP!
ERICA!!
SIR! PLEASE DIAL 911!
OH. IT S JUST SOME CRAZY CHICK
MISS YOU SAW THIS, RIGHT? PLEASE
NO, I DIDN'T BACK OFF
WHAT SHOULD I DO? ERICA'S IN DANGER!
I CAN'T JUST STAND HERE!
H..HOLD ON RIGHT THEEERE!!
LET GO OF ERICA!


HELLO, UNCLE MIKEY? I NEED YOUR HELP!
UGH... YOU, GET OFF THE PHONE AND PASS ME UNCLE MIKEY!
NO, AUGUSTUS! I DON'T HAVE A LEAK AND I DON'T NEED A TAMPON! NOW PASS ME UNCLE MIKEY!
YEAH, WHAT'S THE PROBLEM? IF IT'S YOUR GUEST I M KEEPING AN EYE ON HIM.
SORRY
WHAT?
ME? GO KICK SOME SHELL?
I KNOW NORMALLY I CAN HANDLE PURPLE DRAGONS ON MY OWN, BUT THIS TIME IT S TOO RISKY!
MY FRIEND DAVIANNA'S INVOLVED AND I NEED AS MUCH HELP AS I CAN GET!!
WHAT DID YOUR FRIEND DO TO END UP IN THAT SITUATION..?
LOOK, CALL THE COPS AND LEAVE IT TO THEM AS IT SHOULD BE YOU'RE NOT THE ONLY DEFENDER OF JUSTICE IN THE CITY JUST COME HOME
NO WAY! DAD TOLD ME PURPLE DRAGONS HAVE CONNECTIONS WITHIN THE POLICE FORCE! WE CAN'T TRUST THEM!
COME ON!! YOU GUYS WERE EVEN LESS "DEFENDERS OF JUSTICE" BACK THEN. BUT YOU STILL PROTECTED INNOCENTS IN THE STREETS OF MANHATTAN, RIGHT?
SIR IS EVERYTHING ALRIGHT?


NO... NOT THIS AGAIN... I DON'T WANT TO FIGHT...
PAIN. GRIEF. LOSS.
THAT'S ALL I EARNED FROM PICKING MY WEAPONS AND FIGHTING. I CAN'T TAKE IT ANYMORE.
I DON'T HAVE TO ACCEPT THIS! THIS WAS PART OF MY FORMER LIFE AS A NINJA!
THAT'S WHY I STARTED A NEW LIFE! THAT'S WHY I'M A NOVELIST, NOT A NINJA!
IF I DON'T FIGHT, IT'S PERFECTLY FINE... IT SHOULD BE!


HELLO? HELLO?
AH AUGUSTUS? WHY ISN'T UNCLE MIKEY ANSWERING?
I DON'T KNOW! HE'S JUST STARING AT THE FLOOR!
I HAD TO TAKE THE PHONE FROM HIS HAND.
WHAT?
GAVIANNA'S IN TROUBLE?


RAPHAEL? HE S GONE. BUT. YES.. GOT IT I'LL TELL HIM THE LOCATION...
SIR! SHADOW TOLD ME WHERE THE PURPLE DRAGONS ARE! SHE NEEDS YOUR HELP!
SIR? ARE YOU GOING?
SIR. PLEASE! BEFORE SOMEONE GETS HARMED!!
SHUT UP! I'M NOT GOING ANYWHERE AND THAT'S THAT! I'M FED UP WITH THIS CODE OF JUSTICE- BUSHIDO OR WHATEVER THAT'S CALLED!
YOU KNOW WHY I STARTED A NEW LIFE, RENOIR? IT'S BECAUSE AT LEAST NOW I'M FREE TO CHOOSE MY FIGHTS AND REJECT ANY BURDEN THAT IS NOT MINE! I'M NOT A SLAVE OF JUSTICE, SO COUNT ME OUT!!
HAAH HAAH YOU UNDERSTAND... DON'T YOU.
WHAT SHOULD WE DO NOW?
DO ME A FAVOR AND TELL HER TO COME HOME
OKKKAY TURN ON SPEAKERPHONE AND


UNCLE MIKEY, YOU'RE JUST A GUTLESS COWARD! EVEN WHEN A LIFE IS AT STAKE. EVEN WHEN I NEED YOU THE MOST... YOU DON'T GIVE A RAT'S ASS!!


NO WONDER UNCLE RAPH AND UNCLE DONNIE DON'T LIKE YOU! NO WONDER THEY SEE YOU AS A TRAITOR!! YOU FAKER! YOU WIMP! YOU ..




Y YOU'RE GOING. RIGHT?






AH... WHO THE HELL ARE YOU??
WAIT SHADOW! IT'S ME, RENOIR! AUGUSTUS!
WHO TOLD YOU TO COME? THIS IS NOT A GAME!
WE'RE MESSING WITH REAL CRIMINALS. THEY'RE GONNA BE ARMED AND YOU, YOU DON'T EVEN KNOW HOW TO FIGHT!!
I KNOW! I CAN'T FIGHT AND I NEVER DID. BUT
A FEW DAYS AGO, WHEN I WOKE UP LIKE THIS, I THOUGHT I LOST EVERYTHING
MY FAMILY MY FRIENDS MY RAISON-D'ÊTRE
BUT YOU, SHADOW YOU CHOSE TO BELIEVE IN ME YOU LOOKED BEYOND MY APPEARANCE AND RECOGNIZED ME!
WHEN NO ONE TRUSTED ME, YOU DID. NOW IT'S MY TURN TO RETURN THE FAVOR! BESIDES DAVIANNA'S OUR CHILDHOOD PAL... MAYBE SHE'LL RECOGNIZE ME TOO.
I STILL THINK THERE IS HOPE FOR ME. HOPE TO RECLAIM EVERYTHING I LOST. I KNOW IT! I JUST HAVE TO TRY HARD... EVEN IF IT MEANS RISKING MY LIFE!
TRY HARDER...?
UNC' MIKEY WHY CAN'T YOU...?
THE HELL?
NOW'S NOT THE TIME TO GET ALL MUSHY BOZO!
GET IN THE RIGHT MINDSET TO KICK ASS! IMAGINE THOSE PURPLE DRAGON SCUM FONDLING DAVIANNA!! WOULD YOU LET THEM HAVE IT THEIR WAY? HUH? HUH? FEEL THE FURYYYY!!
WHAT A FEARSOME GIRL!


ERICA? ARE YOU OKAY?
ERICA?




HUUUH HUUUM..
WHAT?

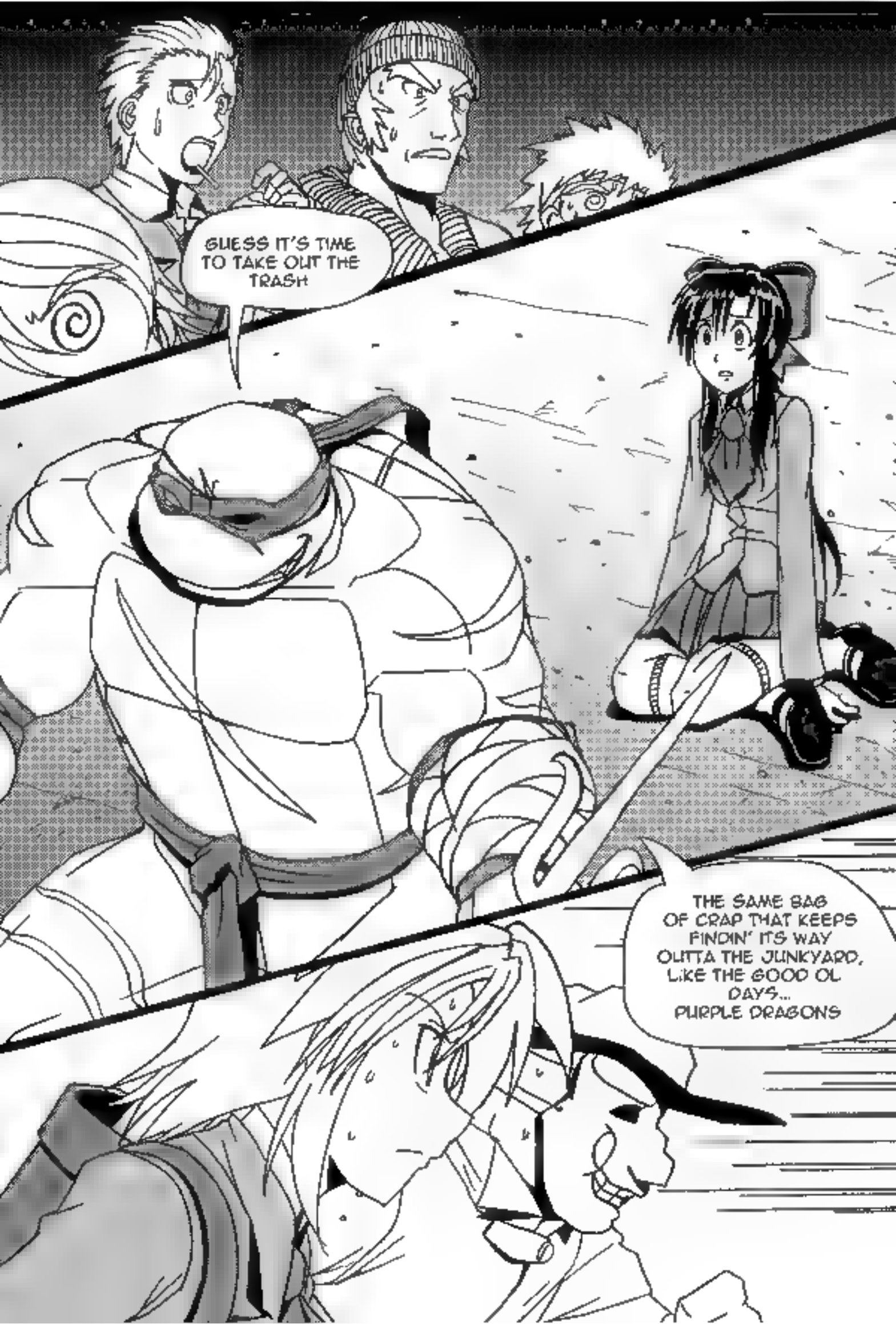

OOH, SHE LOOKS PLUMP ALRIGHT
EEEK!!


HEY HEY HEY TIME OUT THE FIRST THING I WANNA SEE COME OUT OF YOUR PANTS ARE MONEY BILLS
GEEZ YOU GUYS ARE SO HORNY YOU FORGOT THAT MY PAYMENT IS DUE BEFORE THE FUN BEGINS..


ERICA'S RIGHT, GUYS. THIS IS BUSINESS. HOLD YOUR "HORSES"!
DON'T WORRY HONEY I'M SURE YOU'LL END UP ENJOYING THIS
WHAT'S THE MEANING OF THIS? ERICA!!
YOU'RE 50$ SHORT. SHE'S A VIRGIN, YOU KNOW? I CHARGE MORE FOR THIS.
RIIIIGHT
YOU.. YOU SOLD MY BODY?
OOPS. I GUESS SHE FINALLY CAUGHT ON.. HEEHEE!
LOOK. I'VE EARNED 500$ THANKS TO YOU! AREN'T YOU GLAD? I'LL GIVE YOU HALF.
NO!!
I DON'T WANT YOUR MONEY! JUST LET ME GO! HEEEELP!


DON'T WASTE YOUR BREATH, HONEY I LURED YOU TO A DEAD END WE'RE SURROUNDED BY DESERTED BUILDINGS
BUUUUT IF YOU THINK SCREAMING DURING THE ACT IS MORE YOUR STYLE THEN BE MY GUEST
LOOK GIRLIE WE ERR.. JUST NEED A BREAK FROM WORK RELAX, YA KNOW?
OOH. LOOK AT HER PALE FACE C'MON. DON'T ACT SO TAME! WILD GIRLS TURN ME ON..
HELP.
HELP!!


WHAT THE HELL?
HUH??
AAAH!!
GULP!
UH OH
GWAAARRHH!
ACK!
HI
AH. H. HI.


GUESS IT'S TIME TO TAKE OUT THE TRASH
THE SAME BAG OF CRAP THAT KEEPS FINDIN' ITS WAY OUTTA THE JUNKYARD, LIKE THE GOOD OL DAYS... PURPLE DRAGONS


TURTLES
CHAPTER 5:
RAPH STRIKES-
HOW TO END
A CONFLICT AND
START A NEW ONE

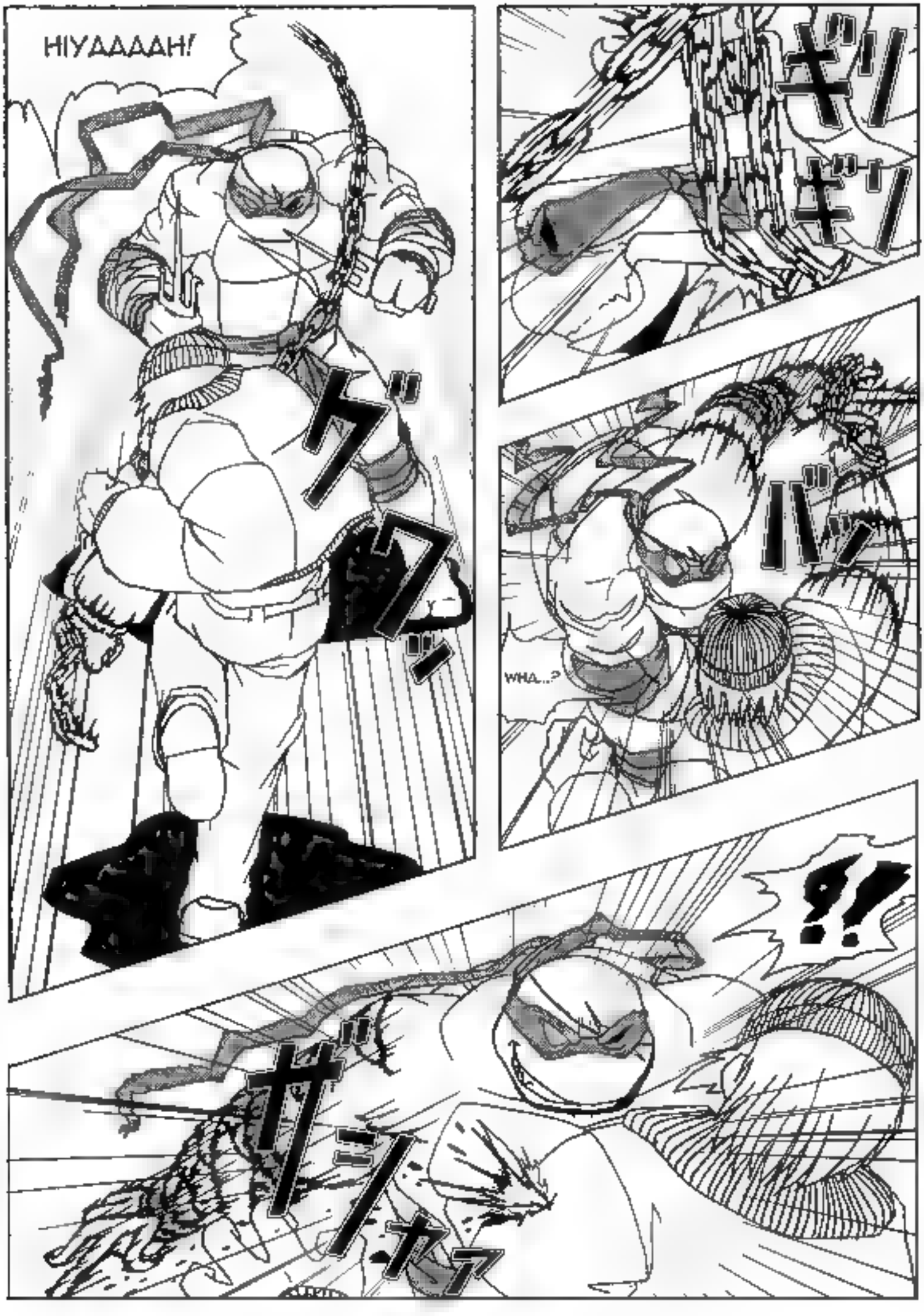

ARE YOU SURE THIS IS THE RIGHT WAY?
DIDN'T WE HAVE TO TURN ON THE OTHER STREET?
SAY YOUR PRAYERS, SCUMBAGS!!
DAVIANNA! WE'RE HERE!
GOING IN A STRAIGHT LINE OR IN ZIGZAGS, WHICH ONE'S FASTER?
TRUST ME ON THIS ONE!
HUH?
AH?
NO ONE'S HERE... BUT WE'RE AT THE CORRECT LOCATION!
CRAP! HAVE THEY ALREADY LEFT?
HELP!
THAT WAS A STRAIGHT LINE TO FAILURE, YOU IDIOT! WE'RE ON THE WRONG SIDE OF THE ALLEY!!


H..EEE HEEEEEE
MU... MUTANT


I DON'T WANNA DIEEEEEE!
SHUT UP! IT'S JUST ONE OF THOSE UGLY GREEN FREAKS I KEEP HEARIN' ABOUT!
OW

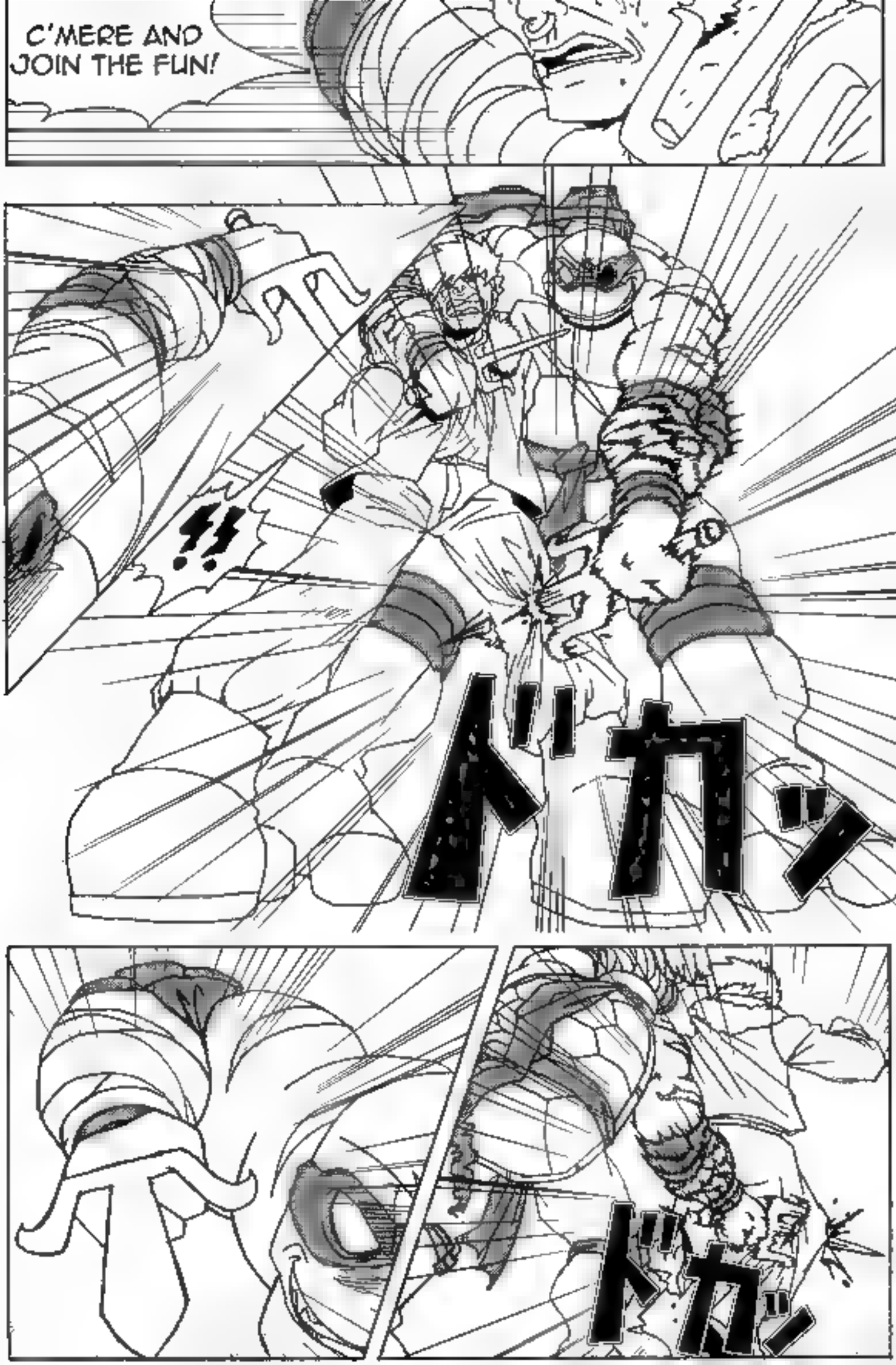

LOOK WHO'S TALKIN' YA KNOW IF YA GOT A BUCK FOR EVERY TIME SOMEONE THREW UP IN THE MOUTH JUST BY LOOKIN AT YER FACE
YOU'D BE A MILLIONAIRE BY NOW. SO CHEER UP, HANDSOME!


I'LL TEACH YA TO MESS WITH A PURPLE DRAGON!!
HOHOHO..


HIYAAAAH!
WHA...?


ドサッ
GAAAH!! MY AAAAAAARM!!!
HEHE
HEHEHEHE HEHEHEHE
ARGH!
ゴゴゴ
GWAHAHAHA HAHAHAHAHA!
ゴゴゴ
ゴゴゴ


ドサッ
OOOOOH WANNA PLAY TOO?
AAAH.. ERRR.


C'MERE AND JOIN THE FUN!
!!
ドガ
ドカ


GWAAAH!! C CAN'T FEEL MY KNEECAPS NO MORE!!!
D...DAMN YOU... FREAK! URGHHHH .
HEY YOU OKAY?
AH! ERR YES..
P-P-P-PLEASE SPARE ME! IT'S MY FIRST DAY AS A PURPLE DRAGON! I WAS ONLY TESTING THE WATERS! I WASN'T GONNA DO ANYTHING BAD! I SWEAR!
PLEASE DON'T EAT MEEEEEE!
I M FULL OF BAD KARMA AND STD S!
OOOOOH I CRAVE.
MEAT
AAAAH!


DO YOU OFTEN DO STUFF LIKE THIS SHADOW?
SO USUALLY YOU RUN AROUND IN YOUR SCHOOL UNIFORM CONCEALING YOUR IDENTITY WITH NOTHING MORE THAN A MASK??
OF COURSE NOT! I M NOT THAT STUPID! JUST THIS ONCE I WAS IN A RUSH!! DAVIANNA'S IN TROUBLE, YOU KNOW?
THANKS FOR THE LIFT NOW GIMME YOUR HAND!
OK!
HUM.. I GUESS YOU SHOULD KNOW SINCE YOU'RE A MUTANT MY DAD'S A VIGILANTE AND I WANT TO FOLLOW IN HIS FOOTSTEPS!
WHA. YOU PERV! DON'T LOOK UP!!
YOU'RE HEAVY
YANK TO THE COUNT OF 3!
ONE TWO
THREE!
UH OH.
OW
EEYAAAHHH


HUH?
AAH.
AAAAAH!
YOU! OKAY?
OOOH! YES YES!
GOTCHA!
IT'S GONNA EAT MEEE!
MOVE IT!
RENOIR WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU DOING ?


11
OOOUCH!
HOLY SH---- T HURTS!
DON'T WORRY! YOU'RE A MUTANT!
IT'LL HEAL WITH TIME!!
...IT'S BASEBALL LESSON TIME FOR THIS NAUGHTY STUDENT HERE!
TH THE VIGILANTE GIRL?
IN ANY CASE.
TODAY'S SUBJECT IS PENALITY!!


PREPARE TO GET BENCHED, BUDDY!
YAAH!
TSK TSK
GWA


AND WHERE DO YOU THINK YOU'RE GOING, MISS?
I I JUST REMEMBERED! I HAVE TO GO HOME AND DO MY HOMEWORK
AND MISS OUT ON ALL THE FUN?


LEMME TAKE YA FOR A RIDE
HYA.
UP AND DOWN AND UP AND DOWN. C MON, I WANNA HEAR YOU ENJOY YOURSELF!
HEEE.
HOLD STILL
THERE! IT S OUT! SEE? IT WASN'T SO BAD!
OUCH!
HYAAAAAH!
DON'T FEEL SORRY FOR HER LOOK! SHE S HAVING THE TIME OF HER LIFE!
OK
HERE GO BUY YERSELF AN EVEN BIGGER BOWTIE OR SOMETHIN'
AH! ERR THANK YOU.
AS FOR YOU.
NEXT TIME I CATCH YA PULLIN' A STUNT LIKE THIS, I WON'T BE AS NICE
I'LL BAT CHA UP


MY LEGS
HANG ON MAN! WE'RE GONNA GET CHA TO A HOSPITAL!
WAIT FOR ME!!!
MISS, YOU'VE BEEN A WITNESS OF THE POWER OF RAW JUSTICE! WE ARE THE TRUE PROTECTORS OF NEW YORK WE ARE VIGILANTES!
HEY YOU TALK TOO MUCH..
CRIMINALS.. BEWARE
WAIT.. I RECOGNIZE THAT VOICE! SHADOW! YOU'RE A VIGILANTE??
WHOOPS I BLEW MY COVER
YOU STILL HAVE A LONG WAY TO GO.
SHADOW! HOW CAN YOU HANG OUT WITH THOSE MUTANTS AUGUSTUS WAS KILLED BY ONE OF THEM!
THEY'RE NOT ALL BAD! AFTER ALL... DION'T THE BIG ONE SAVE YOU?
RIGHT YEAH
OH, YEAH! BY THE WAY
H. HELLO!!
I HAVE GREAT NEWS DAVIANNA!
LISTEN WELL
WE'RE GOIN' HOME MOVE IT
WHAT?
GOING BACK TO THAT DUMP? FORGET IT!
I'M GONNA STAY AT SHADOW'S PLACE FROM NOW ON! AT LEAST SHE TREATS ME RIGHT! LOOK!

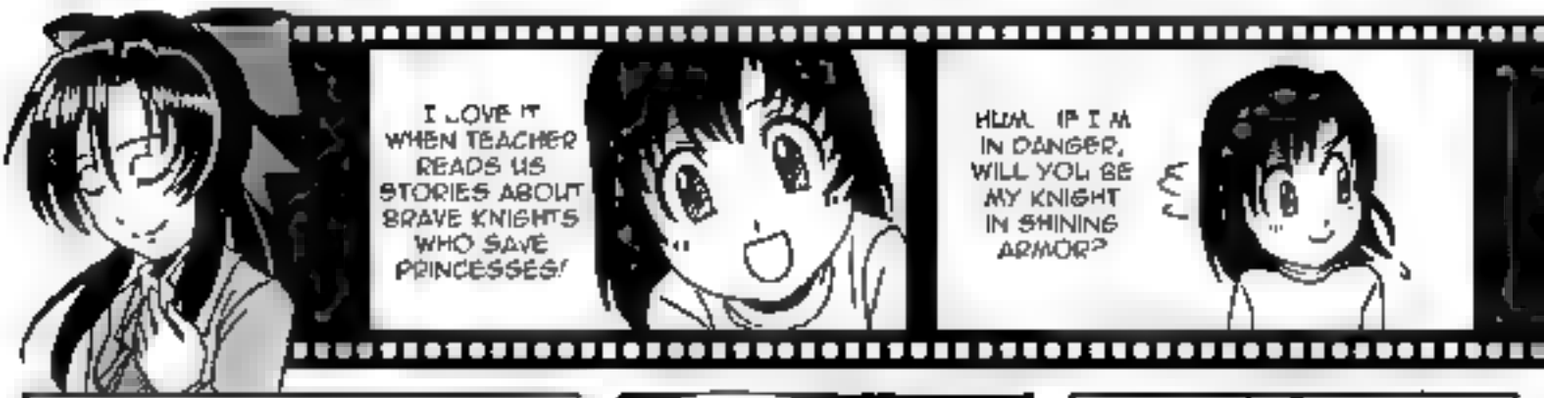

OUR CHILDHOOD PAL, AUGUSTUS AMHERST
...IS ALIVE.
THAT'S RIGHT TELL HER SHADOW!
I KNOW IT'S HARD TO BELIEVE
.BUT HE S TURNED INTO A MUTANT TURTLE HE'S RIGHT HERE!
HE S.. NOT DEAD?
HE'S RIGHT HERE?
SOMEHOW.. I FELT IT TOO. THE MOMENT HE SAVED ME THE MOMENT HE SPOKE TO ME
.I KNEW IT WAS HIM.


OH, AUGUSTUS! I'M SO HAPPY TO SEE YOU!


B-B-B-BUT !!
I.. I...!


DAVIANNA, I MISSED YA TOO TOOTS! AS YA CAN SEE I CAME BACK TO SAVE YA!
I M SO GLAD YOU REMEMBERED THE OATH WE MADE TO EACH OTHER WHEN WE WERE KIDS!
YOU CAN BE SO RELIABLE WHEN YOU'RE NOT ACTING LIKE A PERVY CREEP!
I SHOULD BE HUGGING HER!!


OHOOOO. ?


I LOVE IT WHEN TEACHER READS US STORIES ABOUT BRAVE KNIGHTS WHO SAVE PRINCESSES!
HUM. IF I M IN DANGER, WILL YOU BE MY KNIGHT IN SHINING ARMOR?


YAAY! THEN.. THEN ME TOO! IF YOU'RE IN DANGER I'LL BE. HUM. YOUR SUPER COOL PRINCESS AND I'LL SAVE YOU!
IT'S A PROMISE! OKAY?


OUR PROMISE..


SHADOW! C MON, SAY SOMETHING!
WHY DON'T YOU.. URGH... YOU'RE SUCH A WIMP!


ABOUT AUGUSTUS
THIS MUTANT HERE, HE...


OH! RIGHT!


YOU'RE RENOIR RIGHT? THAT'S WHAT AUGUSTUS CALLED YOU. I'M DAVIANNA! NICE TO MEET YOU!
YEAH, BUT I
ENOUGH SCREWIN' 'ROUND RENOIR! DAVIANNA AND SHADOW ARE TIRED, SO LET'S GO HOME AND LET THEM REST!
OOF!!
CIAO!
WAIT, AUGUSTUS! WHERE ARE YOU GOING?
WHY DID UNCLE RAPH DECIDE TO LIE TO DAVIANNA ABOUT "RENOIR" S TRUE IDENTITY? HUM.. GUESS I'LL PLAY ALONG FOR NOW.
HE MUST HAVE A GOOD REASON TO KEEP THE TRUTH FROM HER AFTER ALL..AS LONG AS SHE KNOWS THAT "AUGUSTUS" IS ALIVE THAT SHOULD BE ENOUGH TO LIFT HER SPIRITS.
HEY WHAT'S WITH THE LONG FACE? HE'S ALIVE! AREN'T YOU HAPPY?
I AM BUT HE LEFT SO QUICKLY THERE WAS SO MUCH I WANTED TO TELL HIM...
HE'S HERE TO STAY DAVIANNA.
YOU'LL GET TO TALK TO HIM SOON ENOUGH.
YOU'RE RIGHT...
BY THE WAY EVERYTHING THAT HAPPENED TONIGHT
DON'T WORRY I KNOW BETTER. MY LIPS ARE SEALED
HEEHEE, THEY'D BETTER BE OR I'LL TELL EVERYONE ABOUT THAT OTHER SILLY PROMISE YOU DID WITH AUGUSTUS
.WHAT? HOW COME YOU KNOW ABOUT IT?


WHAT??
YOU LIED TO HER SO YOU CAN KEEP ME FROM DESERTING YOU?? THAT DOESN'T MAKE ANY SENSE!!
I'LL SHOW YOU DESERTING!
I'M GOING BACK TO SHADOW'S PLACE!
ARE YOU SURE YOU WANNA DO THAT? SHE AIN'T GONNA LISTEN TO A WORD YOU SAY YA KNOW?
BULLSHIT
I CAN CONVINCE HER.. I KNOW THINGS YOU DON'T!
TELL ME
DID YA HAVE A GOOD LOOK AT HER WHEN SHADOW TOLD HER THE "GOOD NEWS"?
AND I'LL MEET UP WITH CAVIANNA AND TELL HER THE TRUTH!!
AND I'LL BE HAPPY FAR FAR AWAY FROM YOU!!
HER MIND IS IN A VERY FRAGILE STATE IT'S LIKE THE "NEWS" SHE HEARD WAS ABSURD YET SO MUCH BETTER THAN REALITY THAT SHE DECIDED THAT SHE'S GONNA BELIEVE IN IT
FACE IT WOULD REINCARNATIN' IN A MUTANT'S BODY MAKE ANY SENSE TO A NORMAL PERSON?
WHEN SOMEONE PINS ALL HIS HOPES ON A DISTORTED VISION OF REALITY
. THAT PERSON'S GONNA REFUSE TO ACKNOWLEDGE ANY OTHER "TRUTH" UNLESS SOMEONE SIGNIFICANT IN THEIR IDEAL REALITY DOES SOMETHIN' 'BOUT IT IN THIS CASE THAT WOULD BE ME: HER "AUGUSTUS"
PLEASE . I TAKE BACK WHAT I SAID.. SO PLEASE MASTER TELL HER THE TRUTH..
PUT ON YER BOXING GLOVES RENOIR WE'RE GONNA SPAR A LITTLE BIT.. IT'S GONNA GET YOUR MIND OFF THINGS
YOU BASTARD..
YOU DIRTY SON OF A BITCH!!


I'M HOME
UNCLE MIKEY
I'M SORRY
I'M SORRY

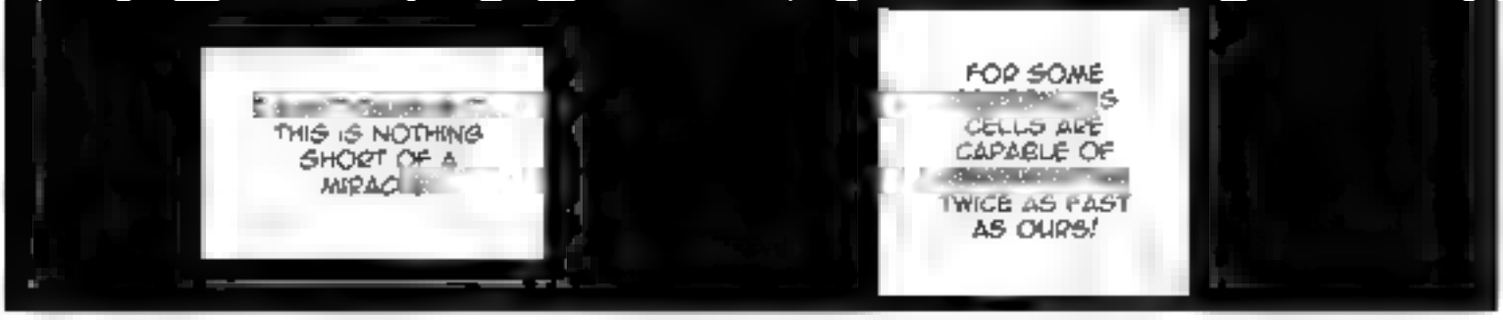
MUTANT NINJA TURTLES GAIDEN

CHAPTER 6: THE ACTOR WHO HAS NEVER PERFORMED BEFORE

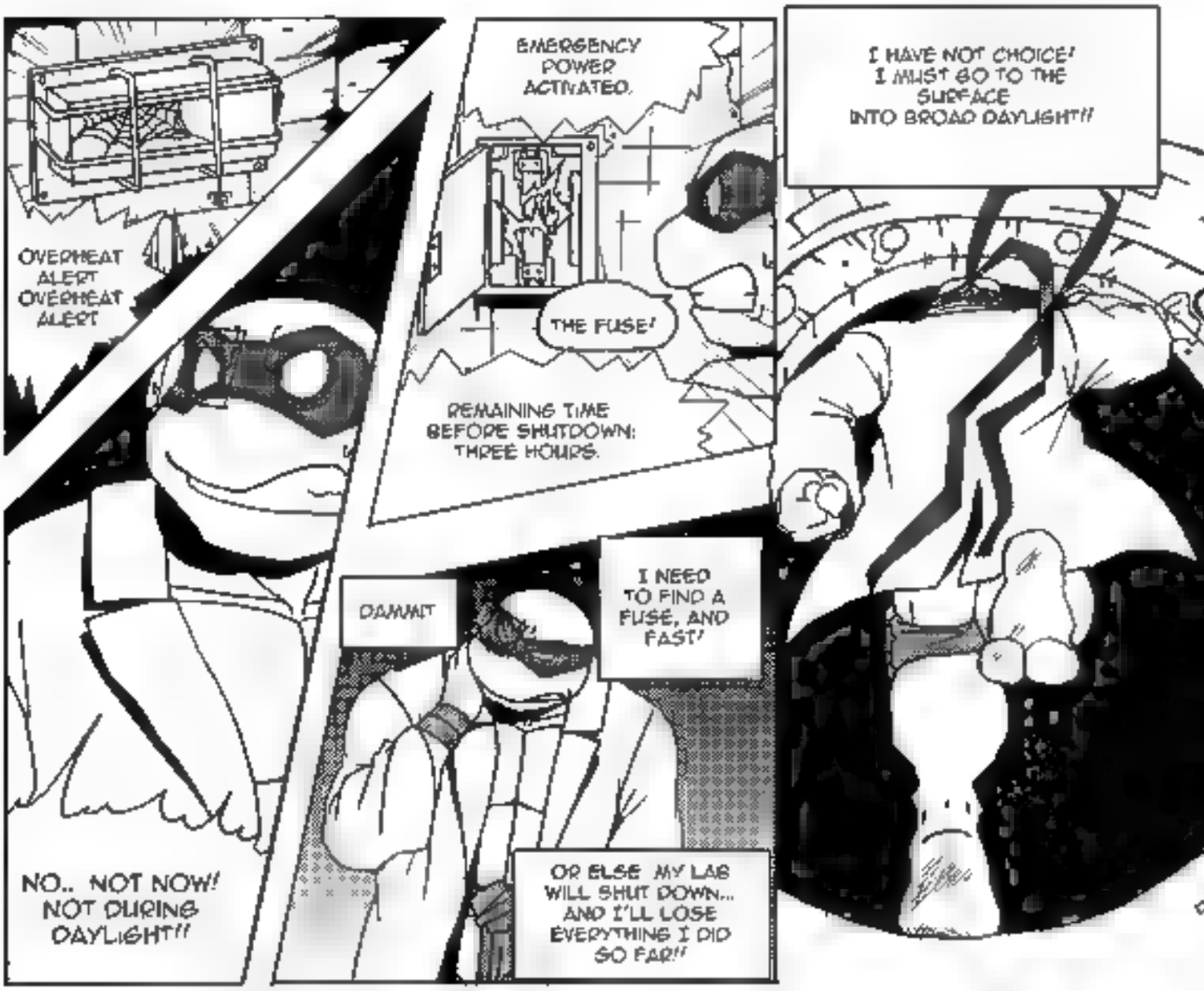



CLARA, WHERE IS CAROLE? SHE'LL MISS
I THINK YOU'RE
HER HAIR IN A BUN WHEN SHE TEACHES
CAN I TELL
YES, DEAD?
NOW NOW
HOLIDAY IN "HEAVEN" LIKE YOU
HE BECAME AN "ACTOR" AND
IF I SEE
AGAIN..
I'LL TELL HIM
THAT POOR CHILD
SHE MISSES HER BROTHER SO MUCH
TO PRETEND HE'S STILL WITH US
I WISH I COULD


HEY, HEY!! BE CAREFUL!
SORRY!
EVA.. DO YOU REALLY NEED TO BE JUMPY ALL THE TIME?
IF THIS IS HOW YOU REACT TO AN INNOCENT CHILD I SHUDDER TO THINK HOW YOU'LL FARE WHEN CONFRONTED TO OUR TARGET
JUST. STAY COOL OKAY?
EASIER SAID THAN DONE TONY... WE'RE ON THE LOOKOUT FOR ONE OF THOSE MONSTERS YOU KNOW, ONE OF THEM ATE MY SISTER'S CLASSMATE!
I SEE. IN A SENSE IT HIT A BIT TOO CLOSE TO HOME RIGHT?
OF COURSE! JUST THINKING ABOUT THOSE VILE THINGS FEASTING ON HUMAN FLESH AND BONES SENDS A CHILL DOWN MY SPINE!
LOOK WHEN THE TIME COMES USE YOUR GUN SIMPLE AS THAT
YES I KNOW
I JUST HOPE I WON'T HAVE TO USE IT.
WHY? YOU HAVEN'T BEEN GOING TO THE GUN RANGE IN A WHILE?
I HAVE! BUT I PRACTICED ON TARGETS THAT LOOKED LIKE HUMANS. NOT REPTILIAN HUNCHBACKS!


THIS IS NOTHING SHORT OF A MIRAC
FOR SOME S CELLS ARE CAPABLE OF TWICE AS FAST AS OURS!


YET HE SEEMS TO BE A MUTANT JUST LIKE US THEN WHY ARE HIS CELLS SO POTENT?
I'LL NEED TO GET MORE BLOOD SAMPLES FROM HIM..
RENOIR


OVERHEAT ALERT OVERHEAT ALERT
EMERGENCY POWER ACTIVATED.
THE FUSE!
REMAINING TIME BEFORE SHUTDOWN: THREE HOURS.
I HAVE NOT CHOICE! I MUST GO TO THE SURFACE INTO BROAD DAYLIGHT!!
DAMMIT
I NEED TO FIND A FUSE, AND FAST!
OR ELSE MY LAB WILL SHUT DOWN... AND I'LL LOSE EVERYTHING I DID SO FAR!!
NO.. NOT NOW! NOT DURING DAYLIGHT!!


I HATE THE OUTSIDE WORLD.
I HATE DAYLIGHT
AND ABOVE ALL I HATE HUMANS
ESPECIALLY COPS
I KNEW IT! I KNEW THOSE DANGEROUS FREAKS WOULD ROAM AROUND MESSY PLACES LIKE THIS JUNKYARD!!
SHUT YOUR PIE HOLE AND BRING IT DOWN, DOOFUS!


I JUST NEED TO HIDE IN THE SEWERS AND LOOSE THEM!
OH NO. YOU DON'T!
THIS ISN'T GOOD!
CALLING ALL UNITS! WE FOUND THE MONSTER IN A JUNK YARD IN BROOKLYN! COMMENCE OPERATION "TURTLE SOUP" WITHIN A FIVE MILE RADIUS!

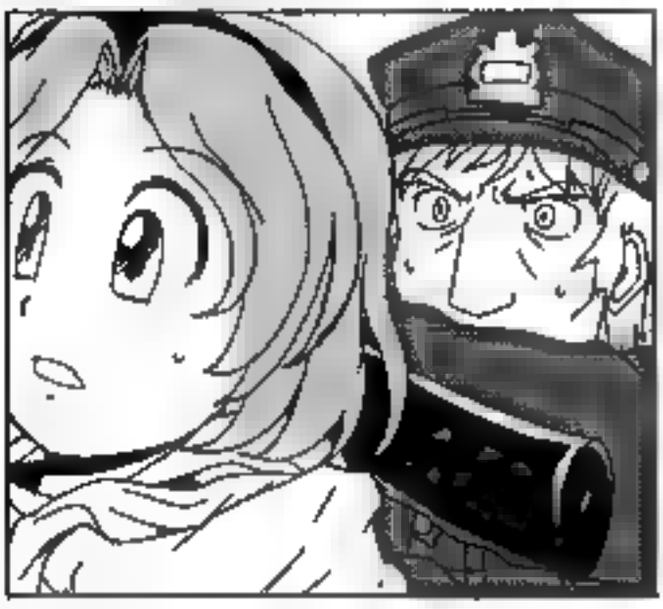

GAS THAT MONSTER!
DON'T FORGET TO COVER THE MANHOLES!
EITHER IT'LL SUFFOCATE TO DEATH, OR IT'LL POP OUT, AND WE'LL KILL IT!
THOSE BASTARDS. I WON'T LET THEM KILL ME I MUST RETURN TO MY LAB NO MATTER WHAT!
I CAN'T DIE HERE!!
I KNOW THEY EXPECT ME TO GO BACK UP BUT.
I NEED AIR..
THERE'S A REASON I HATE LEAVING MY LAIR AND TODAY'S INCIDENT FURTHER CONFIRMS THE NECESSITY OF LIVING A RECLUSED LIFE
LIFE OUTSIDE MY LAB IS A WASTE OF MY TIME IT ONLY KEEPS ME FROM FULFILLING MY AGENDA! THAT BRAINLESS RAPH, THOSE PARANOID HUMANS. THEY'RE PATHETIC ALL OF THEM! I DON'T NEED TO SEE THEM!
SPEAKING OF SIGHT I NEED TO RINSE MY EYES..
THIS DRINKING FOUNTAIN WILL DO
OOH! AN ACTOR!!
?
MY BROTHER'S AN ACTOR LIKE YOU TOO YOU KNOW?


OUR TEACHER TOLD US THAT THE WATER FOUNTAINS ON THE PLAYGROUND DON'T WORK YOU SHOULD GO TO THE CAFETERIA IF YOU'RE THIRSTY!


MRS SMITH? ARE YOU OKAY?
AAH!?
ガバッ




AAAH!!!
CAROLE!
LET HER GO!!




GOOD. THIS GIRL WILL DO
I'VE FOUND MY TICKET HOME

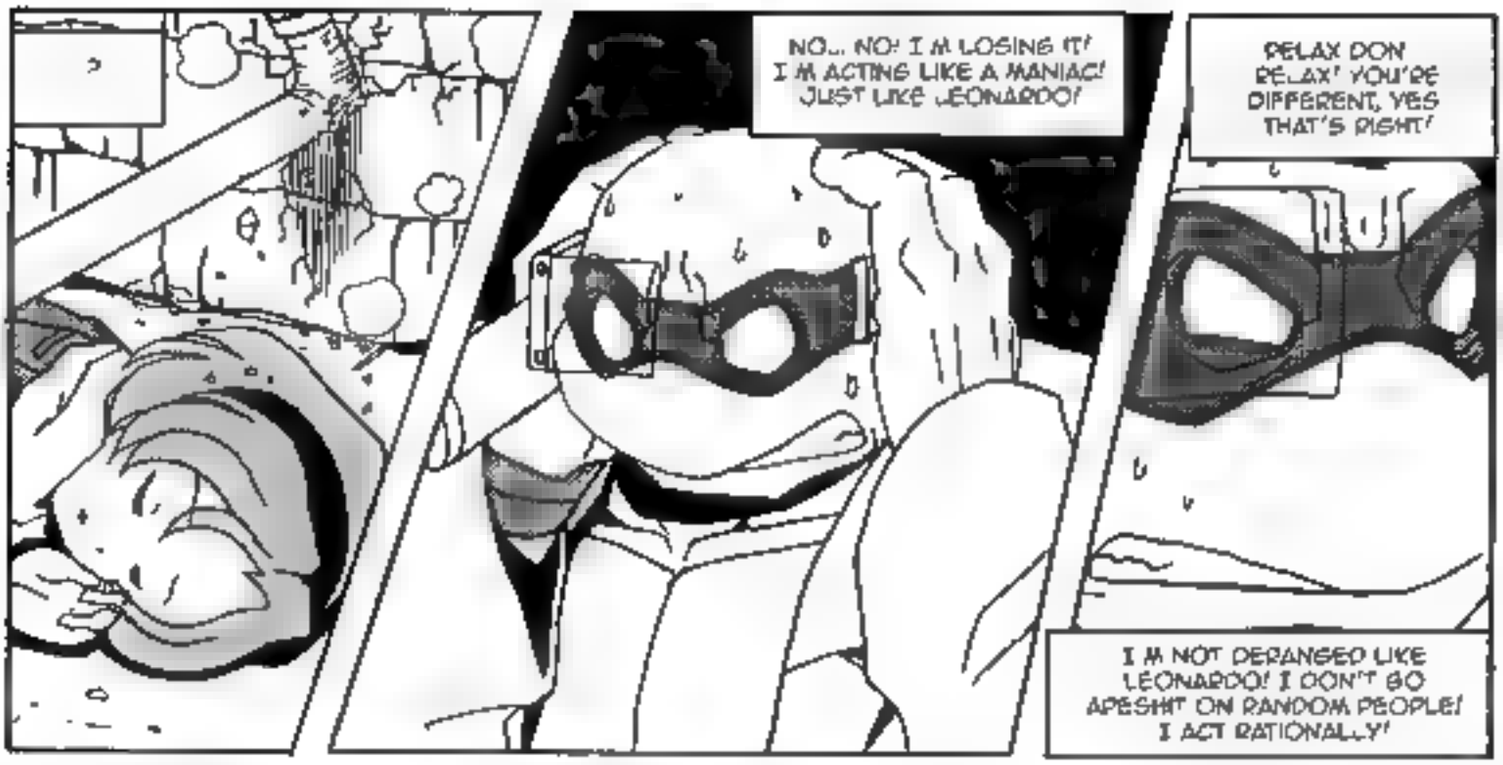

HERE'S TO HOPING EVERYTHING WILL GO ACCORDING TO PLAN.
WE HAVE TO GET HER AWAY FROM IT!
I'M ON IT!
NOT BACKING OFF I SEE! HOW ABOUT THIS..?
THAT MONSTER WON'T HAVE IT'S WAY.
OW, OW!! MR ACTOR! IT HURTS!
NOT WHILE I'M HERE!!
THAT'S FAR ENOUGH, FREAK!! LET HER GO OR I'LL SHOOT!
WHAT?
NO SHE'S NOT GOING TO. !!
EVA. !
IT'S OK..
IT'S JUST LIKE A HUMAN TARGET


AAAH!! BLOOD!
NO THE GIRL!
YOU DID IT! IT'S STUNNED! NOW'S OUR CHANCE!!
I'LL GRAB THAT GIRL!!
ガバッ


I CAN'T SEE!!
I M SCARED!
MOMMY!
THE MANHOLE!! IT WAS OPEN ALL THIS TIME!
BRING THE KIDS TO SAFETY!!


JUST AS I THOUGHT. MOST OF THIS TOXIC GAS AROUND HERE HAS BEEN EVACUATED WHILE I WAS UP THERE "NEGOCIATING" WITH THE POLICE
I GUESS I M SAFE NOW.
HOWEVER DID I REALLY TAKE A BULLET FOR THIS MEANINGLESS GIRL?
AND WHY DID I BRING HER THIS FAR WITH ME?
SHE IS STILL ALIVE EVEN AFTER INHALING SO MUCH TOXIC GAS
WHAT SHOULD I DO WITH HER? I DON'T NEED A HUMAN SHIELD ANYMORE.
COME TO THINK OF SHE WASN T EVEN USEFUL AS A HOSTAGE. I UNNECESSARILY RISKED MY LIFE FOR HER! MAYBE IT'S THAT ANNOYING "PROTECTIVE INSTINCT" FROM "BACK THEN"..
I MUST NOT TAKE ANY MORE CHANCES

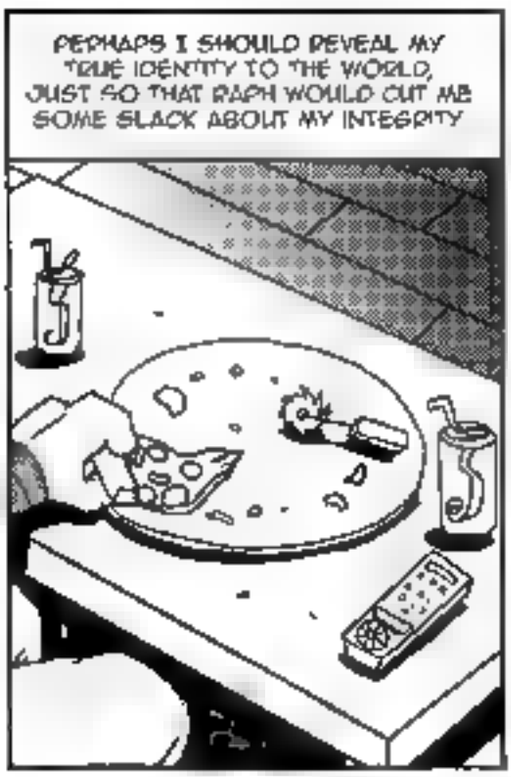

TODAY IT WAS MY ARM
IF I DIE, EVERYTHING I DID TILL THIS DAY WILL GO TO WASTE
TOMORROW... IT COULD BE MY VERY LIFE.
I MUST SURVIVE AT ALL COSTS
YES.. TO SURVIVE SHE MUST DIE!
HWA BRO.. I MISS YOU..


NO.. NO! I M LOSING IT! I M ACTING LIKE A MANIAC! JUST LIKE LEONARDO!
RELAX DON RELAX! YOU'RE DIFFERENT, YES THAT'S RIGHT!
I M NOT DERANGED LIKE LEONARDO! I DON'T GO APESHIT ON RANDOM PEOPLE! I ACT RATIONALLY!


THIS GIRL REPRESENT'S NO THREAT TO ME RIGHT NOW, BUT I MUST STILL DISPOSE OF HER I MUST PROTECT MY LAB!
I KNOW.. I'LL JUST DUMP HER SOMEWHERE ON THE SURFACE THOSE HUMANS CAN TAKE CARE OF THE REST!


THE FURTHER AWAY FROM MY LAB I DROP HER. THE BETTER
I MUST GO BACK INTO THIS TOXIC GAS. I MUST DO IT OR ELSE..


BURP!
RIGHT. GESUNDHEIT

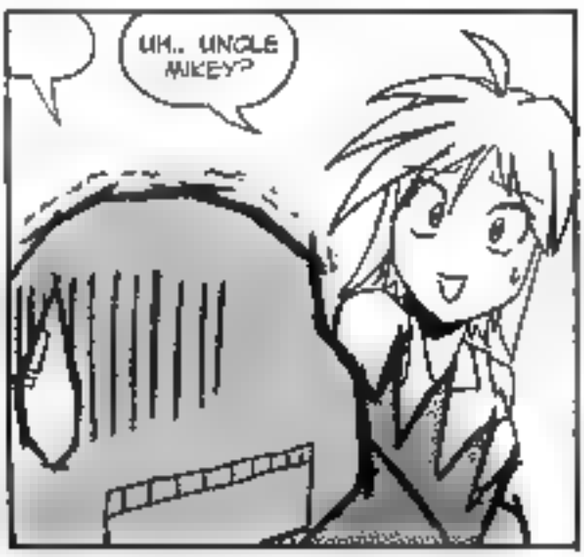

PERHAPS I SHOULD REVEAL MY TRUE IDENTITY TO THE WORLD, JUST SO THAT RAPH WOULD CUT ME SOME SLACK ABOUT MY INTEGRITY

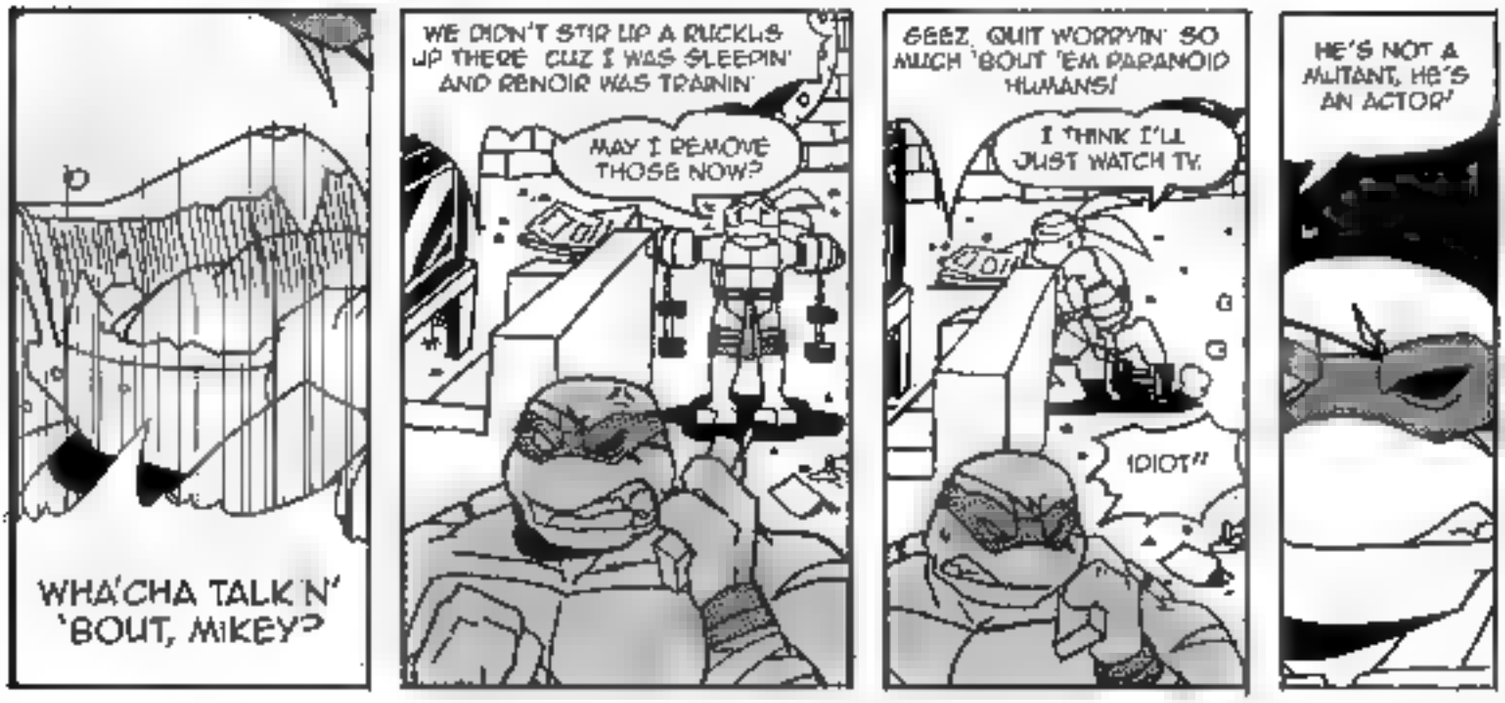

AND WHO KNOWS? MAYBE MY AUDIENCE WILL THINK THAT A MUTANT WRITING NOVELS IS UNIQUE. MAYBE THAT WILL BOOST THE SALES OF MY BOOKS.


ALRIGHT I'LL PREPARE A STATEMENT TONIGHT AND MAKE A PUBLIC ANNOUNCEMENT TOMORROW.
HEY SHADOW.
HUH?


MR. AND MRS. AMHERST?
FIRST THOSE MONSTROSITIES TAKE OUR SON AWAY FROM US AND NOW THEY ABDUCT MY DAUGHTER, TAKE HER FOR A DIP IN THE SEWERS AND DUMP HER IN A JUNKYARD! THEY CAME BACK FOR SECONDS. THEY WANTED TO TORMENT US!!

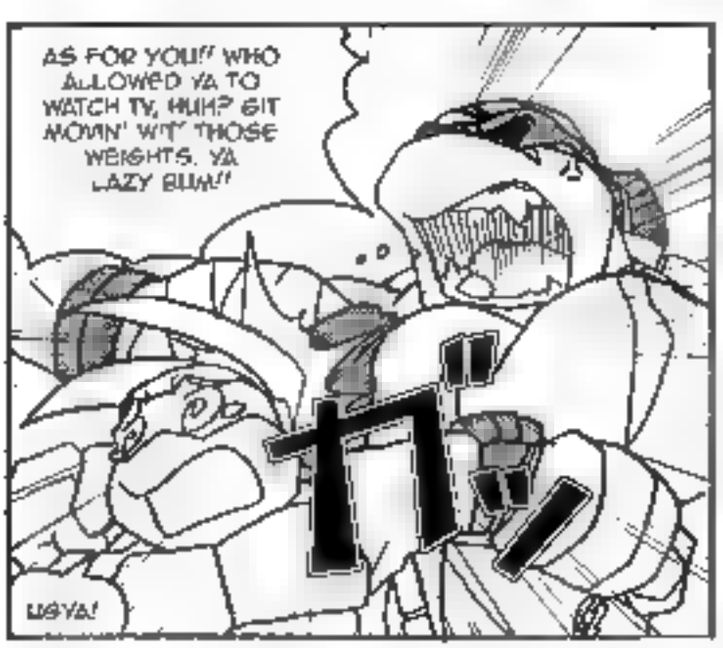

WHY CAN'T THE POLICE HANDLE THEM?
OUR VIEWERS THINK THEY SHOULD BE HUNTED DOWN! YOUR OPINION?


UH.. UNCLE MIKEY?


WHA'CHA TALK'N' 'BOUT, MIKEY?
WE DIDN'T STIR UP A RUCKUS UP THERE CUZ I WAS SLEEPIN' AND RENOIR WAS TRAININ'
MAY I REMOVE THOSE NOW?
GEEZ, QUIT WORRYIN' SO MUCH 'BOUT 'EM PARANOID HUMANS!
I THINK I'LL JUST WATCH TV.
IDIOT!!
HE'S NOT A MUTANT, HE'S AN ACTOR!


IT WAS SUPPOSED TO BE A SECRET, BUT SINCE EVERYONE IS WRONG. WELL I WANT TO SAY IT!
Carole Amherst, victim
HE LOOKED JUST LIKE MY BROTHER EXCEPT THAT HE HAD A BROWNER SKIN A PURPLE MASK AND A MONOCLE! WE DID A SCENE WHERE HE PROTECTED ME FROM A BULLET AND HIS BLOOD LOOKED SO REAL TOO! AND, AND I WANT TO SEE HIM AGAIN ONE DAY!
CAROLE?


HEARD THAT? TURNED OUT TO BE DONNIE
YEAH. SURE NO HARD FEELINGS JUST SEE WASSUP WITH HIM FOR ME CIAO


AS FOR YOU!! WHO ALLOWED YA TO WATCH TV, HUH? GIT MOVIN' WIT' THOSE WEIGHTS, YA LAZY BUM!!
UGH!

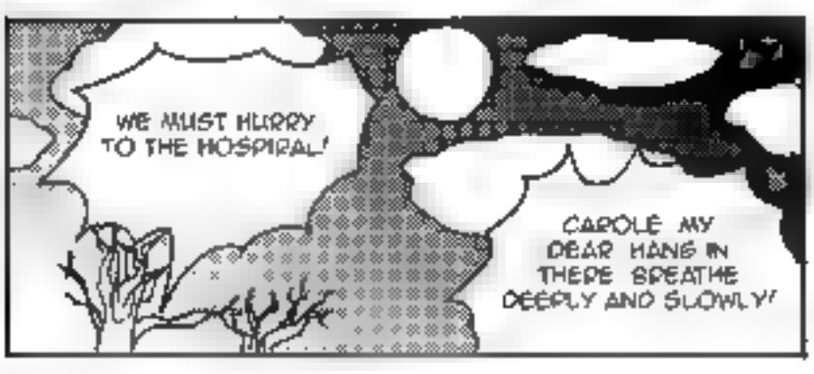

MOMMY. SORRY IF I M ALL STINKY.. I'VE BEEN TO THIS DARK PLACE. AND..
SHH. IT'S ALRIGHT. YOUNG LADY. I KNOW YOU ARE JUST DYING TO TELL US YOUR STORY BUT RIGHT NOW, MOMMY'S A BIT. TIRED.
WE'RE JUST GLAD YOU RE SAFE

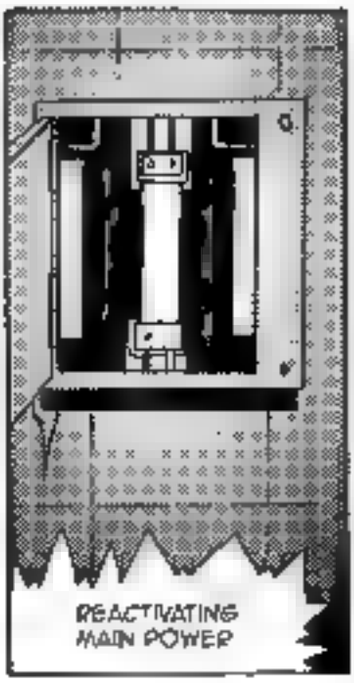

THEN YOU'LL LISTEN TO ME LATER. OK? I'LL TELL YOU ABOUT AUGUSTUS TOO!
ALRIGHT, ALRIGHT WE'LL HEAR YOU OUT.



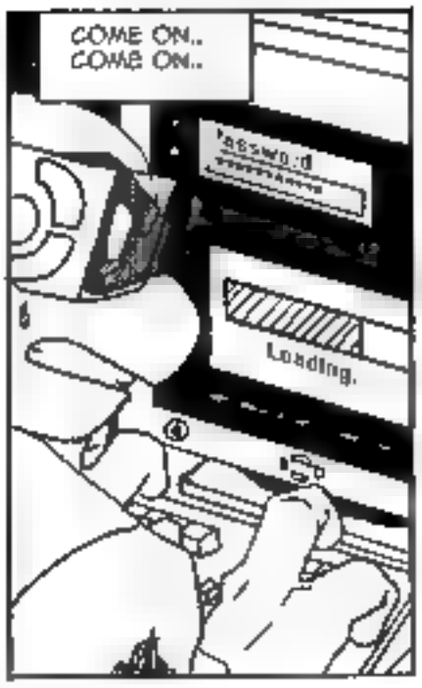


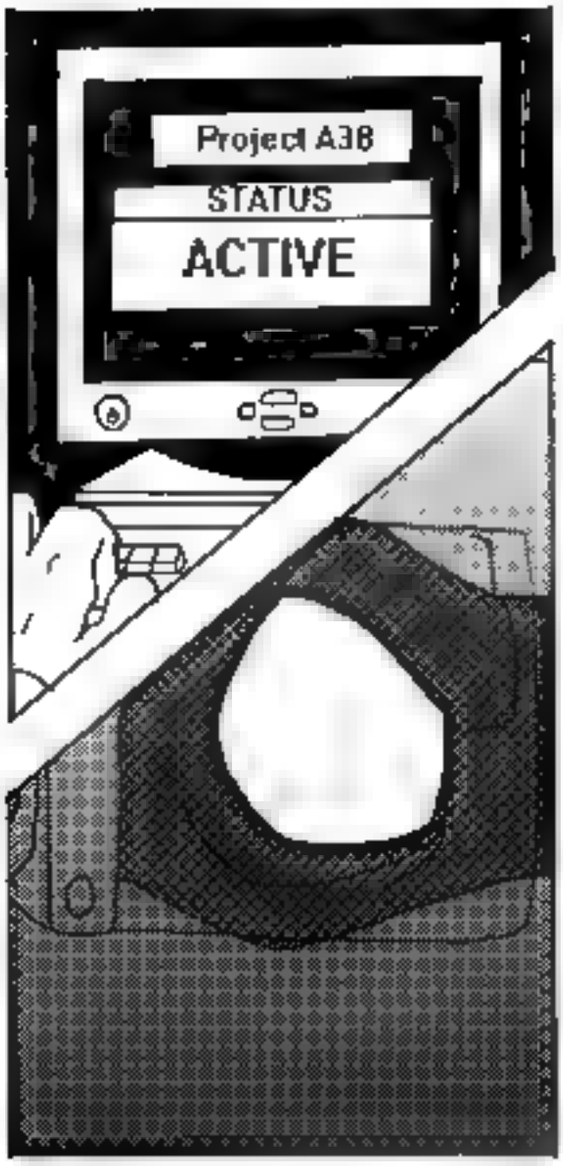

CLARA! WHAT'S WRONG?
CAROLE IS HAVING SPASMS!!


WE MUST HURRY TO THE HOSPITAL!
CAROLE MY DEAR HANG IN THERE BREATHE DEEPLY AND SLOWLY!

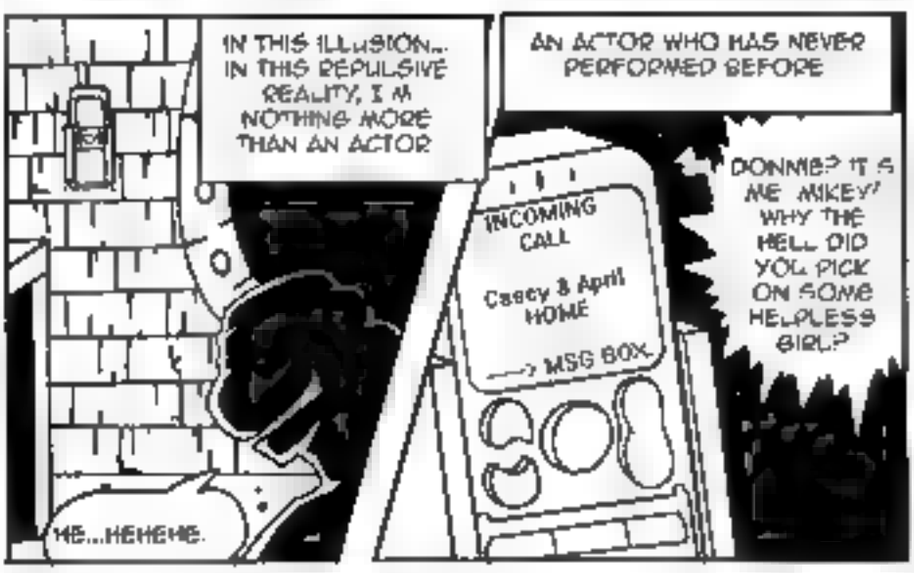

REACTIVATING MAIN POWER

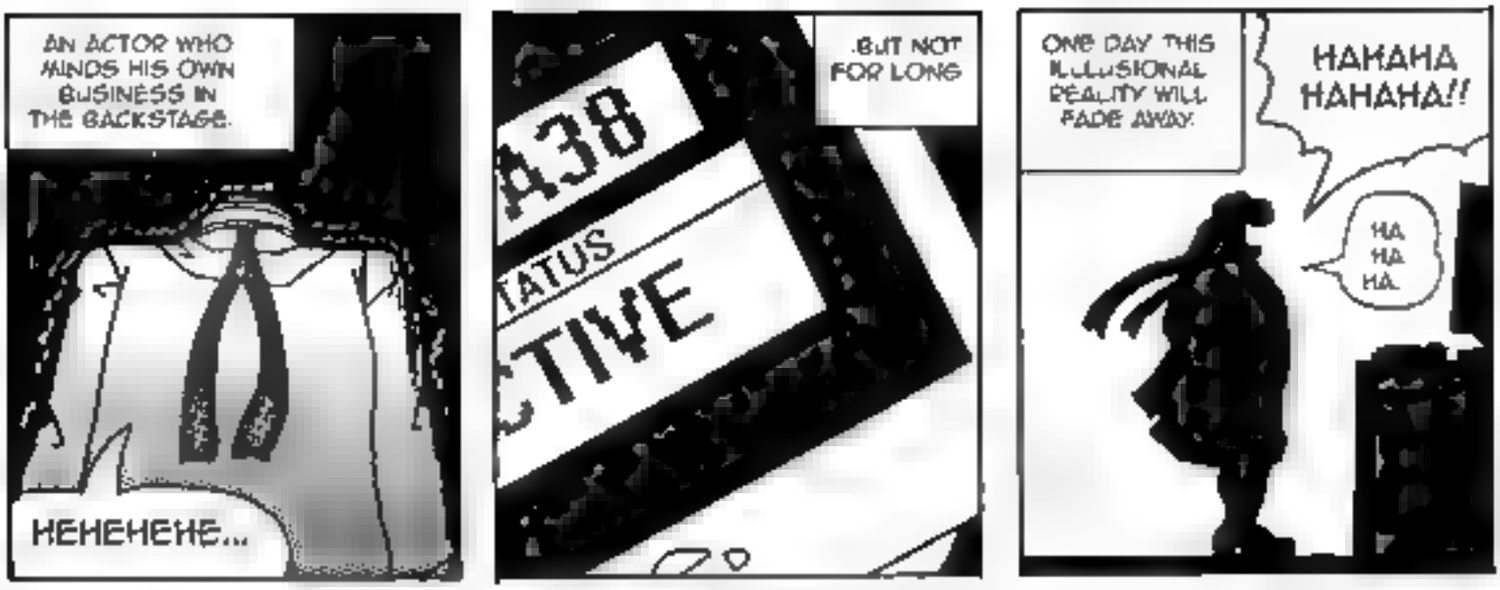

NORMAL VOLTAGE WILL NOW BE RESTORED


COME ON.. COME ON..
Password:
Loading.


Project A38
STATUS
ACTIVE


HE'S NOT A MUTANT, HE'S AN ACTOR!
SHE'S RIGHT..


IN THIS ILLUSION.. IN THIS REPULSIVE REALITY, I'M NOTHING MORE THAN AN ACTOR
HE...HEHEHE.
AN ACTOR WHO HAS NEVER PERFORMED BEFORE
INCOMING CALL
Casey & April HOME
MSG BOX
DONNIE? IT'S ME MIKEY! WHY THE HELL DID YOU PICK ON SOME HELPLESS GIRL?

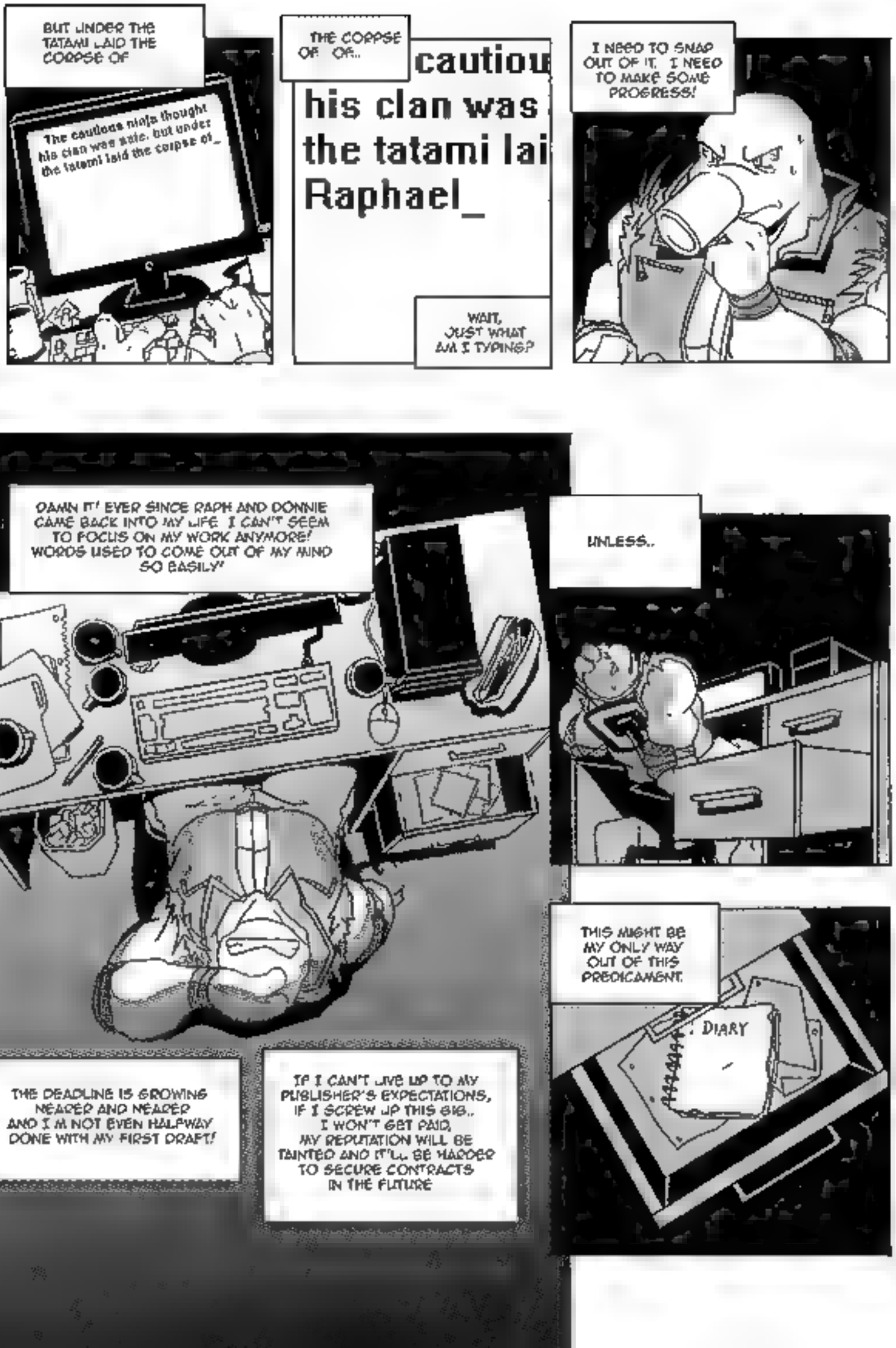

AN ACTOR WHO MINDS HIS OWN BUSINESS IN THE BACKSTAGE.
HEHEHEHE...
438
TIVE
BUT NOT FOR LONG
ONE DAY THIS ILLUSIONAL REALITY WILL FADE AWAY.
HAHAHA HAHAHA!!
HA HA HA.


ONE DAY I'LL RECLAIM THE REALITY FROM "BACK THEN"
THE REALITY THAT WAS TAKEN AWAY FROM ME BY LEONARDO

MUTANT NINJA TURTLES GAIDEN

CHAPTER 7: THE UNTIMELY CLASH - RAPHAEL VS MICHELANGELO

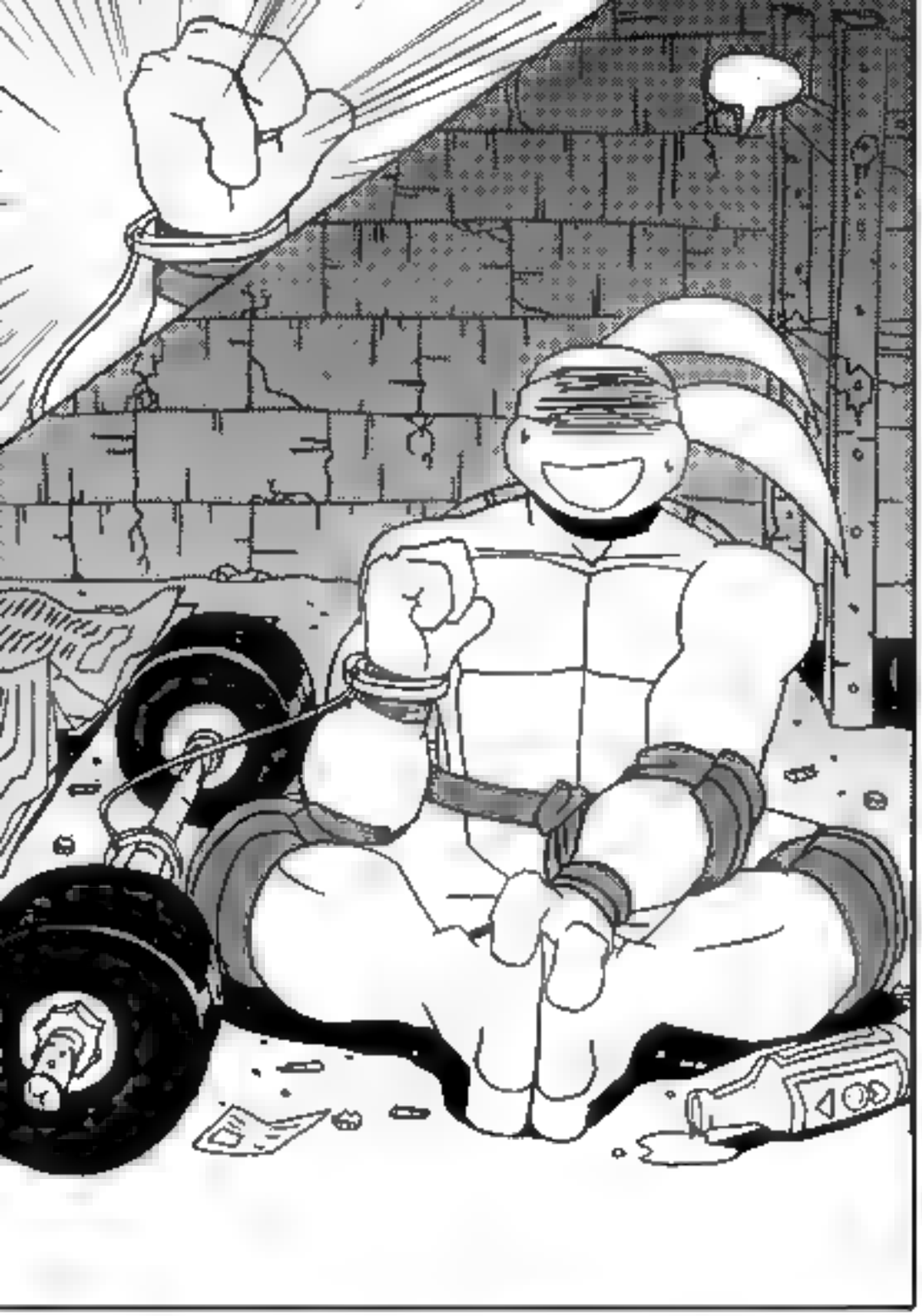



BUT UNDER THE TATAMI LAID THE CORPSE OF
The cautious ninja thought his clan was safe, but under the tatami laid the corpse of_
THE CORPSE OF OF...
cautiou
his clan was
the tatami lai
Raphael_
WAIT, JUST WHAT AM I TYPING?
I NEED TO SNAP OUT OF IT. I NEED TO MAKE SOME PROGRESS!
DAMN IT! EVER SINCE RAPH AND DONNIE CAME BACK INTO MY LIFE. I CAN'T SEEM TO FOCUS ON MY WORK ANYMORE! WORDS USED TO COME OUT OF MY MIND SO EASILY!
UNLESS..
THIS MIGHT BE MY ONLY WAY OUT OF THIS PREDICAMENT.
DIARY
THE DEADLINE IS GROWING NEARER AND NEARER AND I'M NOT EVEN HALFWAY DONE WITH MY FIRST DRAFT!
IF I CAN'T LIVE UP TO MY PUBLISHER'S EXPECTATIONS, IF I SCREW UP THIS BIG.. I WON'T GET PAID, MY REPUTATION WILL BE TAINTED AND IT'LL BE HARDER TO SECURE CONTRACTS IN THE FUTURE

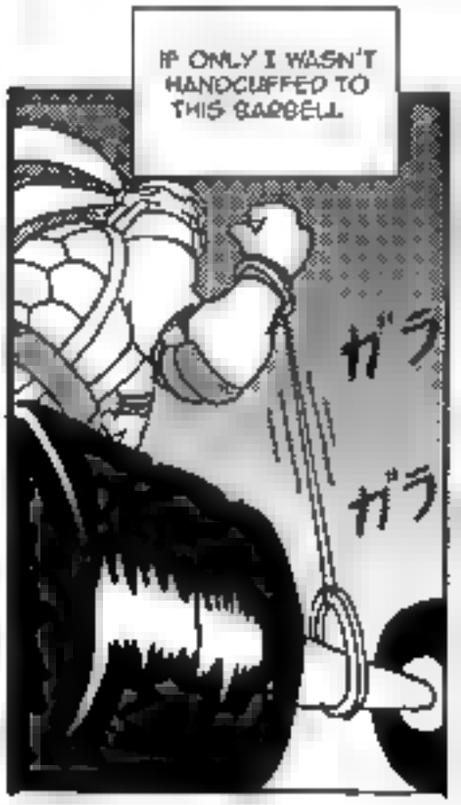

HUH... WHO'S CALLING AT THIS TIME...
NO RENOIR! DON'CHA EVEN THINK 'BOUT PUTTIN' THAT DOWN! KEEP PUMPIN' IRON!
YO, YOU'VE REACHED "SUICIDAL ALCOHOLICS ANONYMOUS" NOW HANG UP BEFORE WE TRACK YA DOWN AND HAVE YOU JOIN US
HELP!
YOU? HOW'D 'CHA GET MY NUMBER?
I ASKED SHADOW FOR IT. BUT WHY DO YOU SOUND SO SURPRISED?
I KNOW WE GREW APART A BIT SINCE HIGH SCHOOL, WITH YOU BEING SUCH A SWEET-TALKER AND STUFF. BUT WITH EVERYTHING THAT HAPPENED, I FEEL LIKE WE SHOULD RECONNECT, DON'T YOU THINK?
REDECORATING?
ENJOY LIFE?
WEIRD. YOU ONCE TOLD ME THAT ONLY OLD PEOPLE USE THIS KIND OF LANGUAGE
HUH? WHAT WAS THAT NOISE? AUGUSTUS?
WHAT DID I DO...?
AAW, NOTHIN' BABY!
YOU KNOW, YOU LEFT SO SUDDENLY THE OTHER NIGHT. DIDN'T YOU THINK I'D WANT TO ASK YOU SOME QUESTIONS AT LEAST? I'D LIKE TO SEE YOU AGAIN. TO TALK
CAN YOU MEET ME AT OUR USUAL PLACE FROM THE GOOD OLD DAYS, TOMORROW EVENING?
GAAH. SURE THING TOOTS! SORRY I DIDN'T GIVE YA A HOLLER! I WAS KINDA BUSY THESE LAST FEW DAYS ER BEATIN' UP THUGS TRAININ'... ERRRR.. I MEAN READIN' BOOKS FOR TEENS. REDECORATIN' MY HOME, ENJOYIN' MY NEW LIFE...
GAHAHAHA!


OH LOOK AT THE TIME I'D BETTER GO TO SLEEP. YOU'RE NOCTURNAL NOW, THOUGH, RIGHT?
THAT'S WHAT SHADOW SAID, SO.
...SEE YOU TOMORROW AT OUR "USUAL PLACE" TAKE CARE AUGUSTUS!
HEY YA RUNT!
I NAILED SOME KIND OF A DATE WITH THAT ASIAN GIRL YER SO OBSESSED WITH! SHE WANTS TO SEE ME AT SOME "USUAL PLACE"! WHERE'S THAT?
'AIGHT. SO T'WAS THAT PARK WHERE YA RAN AWAY TO AND ACTED LIKE A DAMN DRAMA QUEEN IN FRONT OF SHADOW I'M JUST GONNA TELL THAT DAVIANNA THAT I, "AUGUSTUS" AM STILL ALIVE AND KICKIN NOTHIN' MORE
"COUGH" "COUGH" PLEASE OH PLEASE! LET ME TAG ALONG! PLEASE MASTER!
YA KIDDIN' ME? DID JA THINK FOR A SECOND I'D DRAG YER WHINY ASS WITH ME AND SPARE YA OF YER MUCH NEEDED TRAINING? HELL NO!
TRYIN' TO SLACK OFF AGAIN, EH? WELL, I AIN'T THAT STUPID, RENOIR! YER STAYIN' HERE!
B BUT!
AAAW, SHUCKS.. SHE FELL FOR IT ONCE, SO SHE PROBABLY WILL THIS TIME TOO..
ギリ ギリ
NO...
BESIDES. IF SHE THOUGHT I WAS "AUGUSTUS", THAT MEANS I HAVE A LOT IN COMMON WITH HER DEAD FRIEND, Y'KNOW..

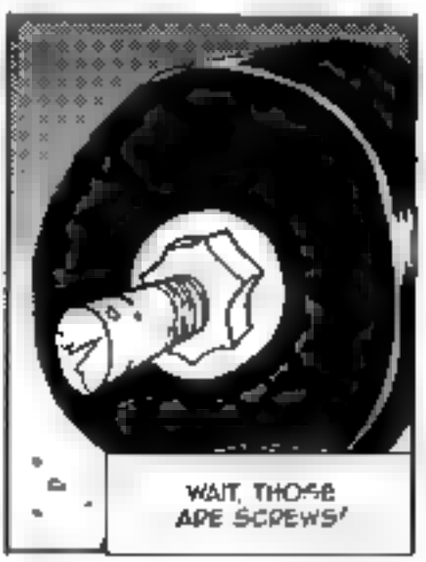

IT'S BEEN A WHILE WE DIDN'T MEET UP HERE
I WONDER IF HE KNEW WHAT I WAS TALKING ABOUT
FROM TIME TO TIME WE'D TALK ABOUT THE GOOD OLD DAYS WHEN WE WERE KIDS WHEN WE FIRST MET
I'D ALWAYS TELL HIM THAT THIS IS "OUR" PLACE
I KNEW IT HE REMEMBERS HE REALLY IS THE AUGUSTUS I KNOW.




"PREVENTIVE MEASURE", THAT MANIAC SAID!! THE HELL WITH IT!!! I NEED TO SEE DAYANNA TOO!


IF ONLY I WASN'T HANDCUFFED TO THIS BARBELL
ガラ
ガラ




WAIT, THOSE ARE SCREWS!


I'M SUCH A GENIUS! I'LL JUST UNSCREW THOSE WEIGHTS AND I'LL BE BY DAYANNA'S SIDE IN A JIFFY!!
"SCREW" YOU, RAPHAEL. HAHA! THAT'S A GOOD ONE

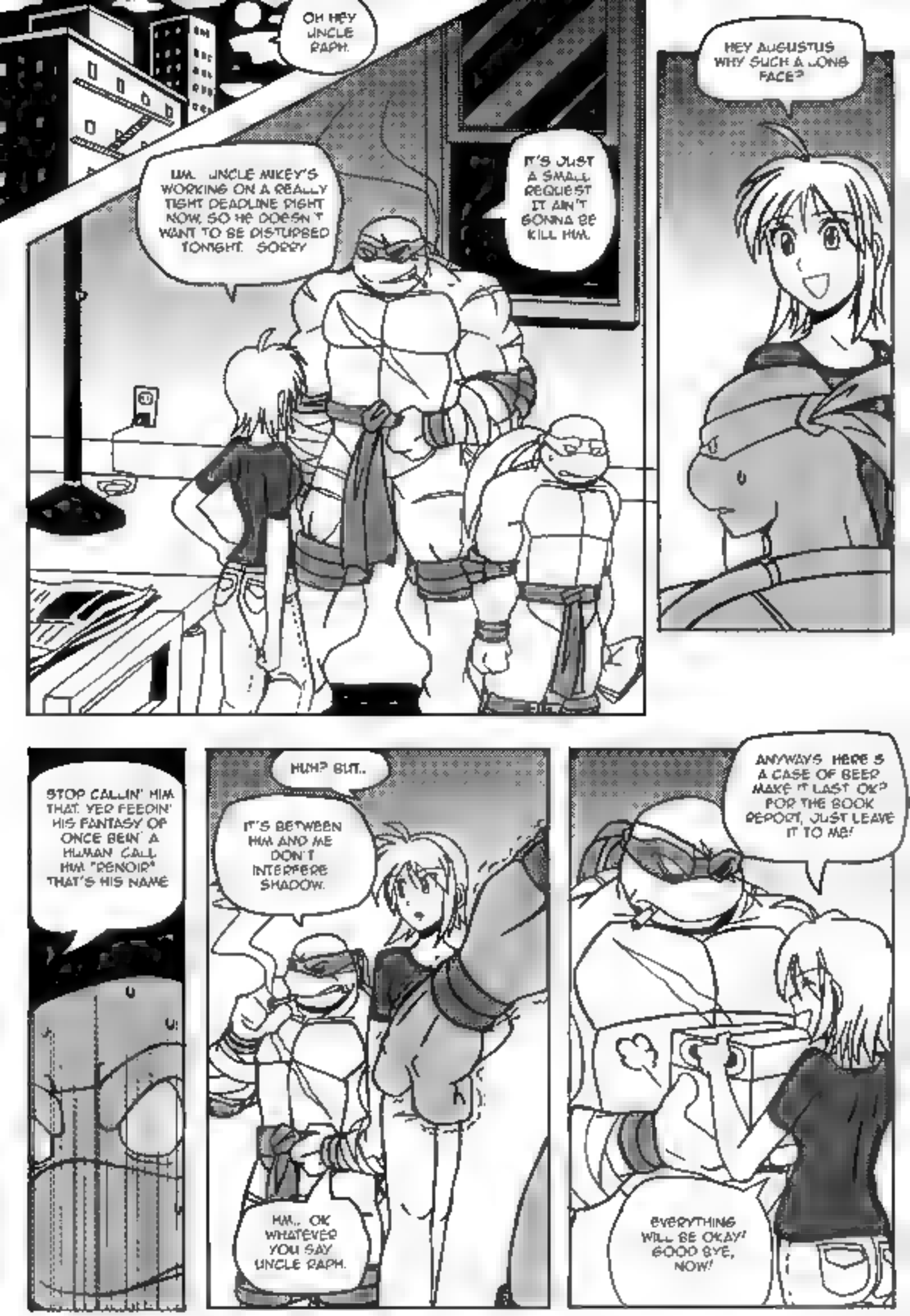

HEY THERE
HEYA
AAAH!
!
ドサッ
OH NO! ARE YOU OKAY?
I M OK! I M OK! DON'CHA WORRY 'BOUT ME!!
WEIRD NORMALLY HE'D SAY SOMETHING OUT OF PLACE LIKE HIS DELICATE BUTT BEING DAMAGED OR SOMETHING
STUPID SWING
IT'S SO WINDY TODAY
ヒュウウウ...
ヒュウウウウウウ

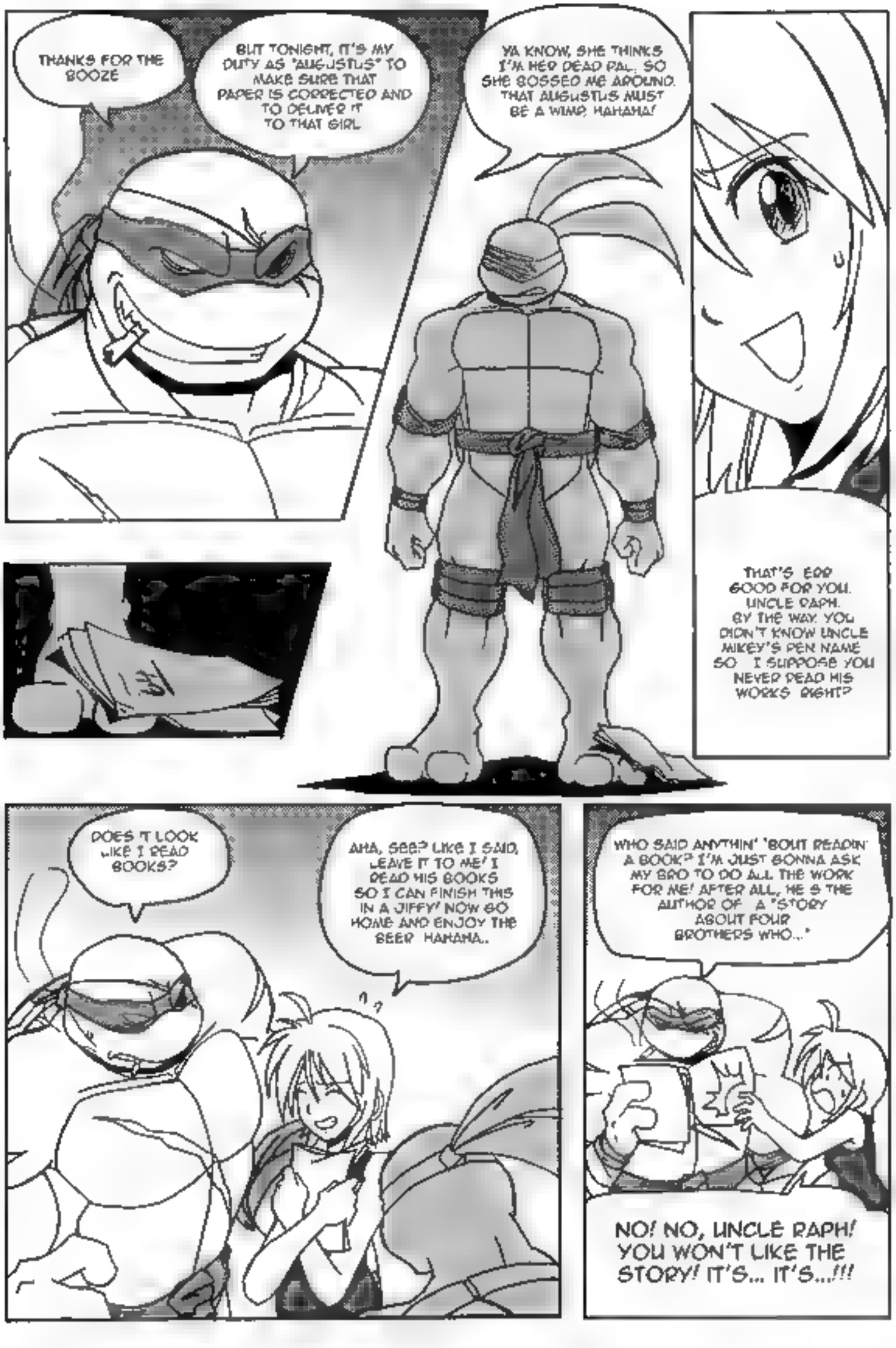

DON'T LOOK THERE, YOU PERVERT!!
WHORGH!
WELL, AT LEAST THAT CONFIRMS THAT HE'S STILL HIMSELF
I DON'T THINK YA MADE ME COME ALL THE WAY HERE JUST TO HELP YA PRACTICE YER GIRLY SELF-DEFENSE SKILLS!
OH. SORRY!
ACTUALLY, I WAS JUST THINKING.
YOU WERE BURIED IN A COFFIN A FEW WEEKS AGO. HOW DID YOU MANAGE TO MAKE IT BACK HERE LOOKING LIKE THIS?
DO YA BELIEVE IN REINCARNATION? IF NOT, START BELIEVIN', CUZ THAT'S HOW I CAME BACK
NOW I WONDER HOW YOU GOT SO MANY SCARS AND BECAME SO BIG AND FAT WITHIN THE FEW WEEKS THAT FOLLOWED YOUR "REBIRTH"
SUCH A HEAVY BROOKLYN ACCENT. HMMM.
ME? FAT???
AH, DON'T WORRY. NO MATTER WHAT THE EXPLANATION IS I WON'T PRY. IT'S NOT LIKE THE IDEA OF A "REBIRTH" IS RATIONAL ANYWAYS SO WHY BOTHER WITH DETAILS, RIGHT?
ANYWAYS, MY NEXT POINT IS..


LOOK AT THIS
"64" EEH YEAH SO WHAT? THAT'S A BAD NUMBER ACCODDING TO YER HOROSCOPE OR SOMETHIN'?
THAT NUMBER IS THE FRUIT OF YOUR LABOR. OR LACK THEREOF
64
NO. THAT'S THE GRADE I GOT FOR THE BOOK REPORT I DID WITH YOU A FEW MONTHS BACK. READ THE COMMENTS, IT GETS BETTER
I'M SO LUCKY TO HAVE YOU BACK! PLEASE DROP IT IN MY MAILBOX WHEN YOU'RE DONE!
THANK YOU, AUGUSTUS!
64
"NEXT TIME, DO YOUR RESEARCH INSTEAD OF MAKING UP THINGS ABOUT THE AUTHOR."
THE LINKS BETWEEN THE AUTHOR'S LIFE AND HIS WORK WAS YOUR PART, REMEMBER?
THE TEACHER GAVE EACH TEAM AN OPPORTUNITY TO BOOST THEIR GRADE BY HANDING IN A REWORKED COPY. I THOUGHT I'D HAVE TO DO IT ON MY OWN BUT SINCE YOU'RE BACK AND YOU PROBABLY HAVE A LOT OF FREE TIME I'M COUNTING ON YOU!
WHAT'S THIS SHIT.?

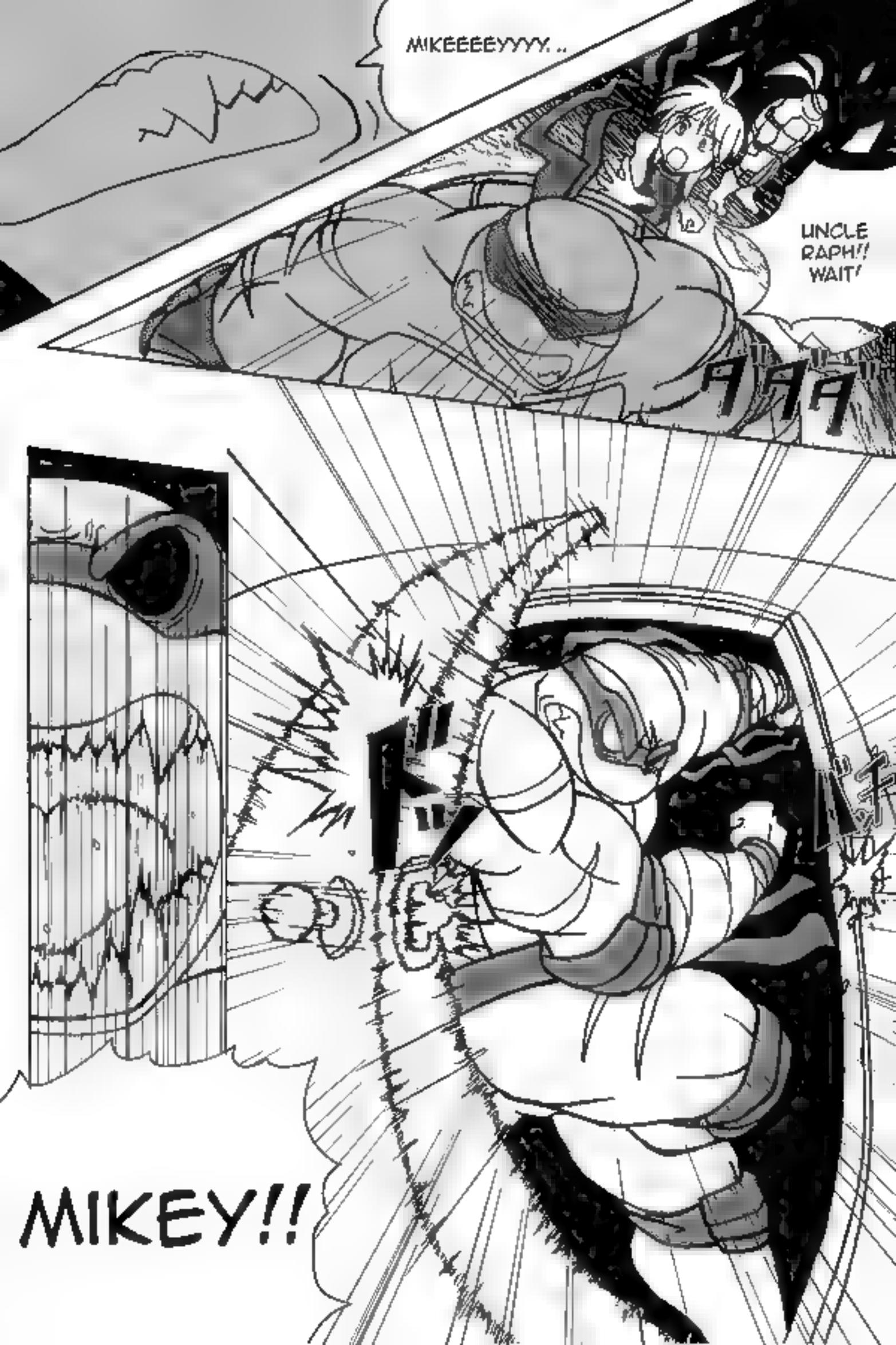

UNCLE RAPH? WHAT? DAVIANNA'S BOOK REPORT? I DUNNO TRY ASKING RENOIR
NO IF RENOIR'S THAT CONVINCED THAT HE'S THAT "AUGUSTUS" GUY, HE PROBABLY SUCKS AT SCHOOL STUFF LIKE HIM TOO.
THE TITLE?
LET'S SEE HERE "DISHONOR, DESPAIR, SORROW AND ILLUSIONS BY "MIKAEL BUONAROTTI"
AAAH!' THAT'S UNCLE MIKEY'S PEN NAME! I DIDN'T KNOW DAVIANNA AND AUGUSTUS CHOSE TO DO THEIR BOOK REPORT ON HIS FIRST NOVEL!
HEHE, IT'S A SMALL WORLD AFTER ALL EH? WELL I S POSE HE AIN'T GONNA MIND IF I DROPPED BY HIS PLACE! IT S A GREAT TIMING TOO. I M OUTTA BOOZE CATCH YA LATER KIDDO
WAIT, UNCLE RAPH! HE "CLICK"
DAVIANNA!! I'M HERE AT LAST! I LL SAVE YOU FROM THAT FAT LUMBERING FAKER!!
COME, FLY INTO MY ARMS!'
EH?
MASTER!! I'M SORRYYYYY!!
SHADOAP, RENOIR!!


OH, SO SHE CALLED FOR THE BOOK REPORT?
TOO BAD I CAN'T HELP YOU WITH IT. I DIDN'T ACTUALLY READ THAT BOOK, HAHAHA.
ERR THANKS FOR THE RIDE BY THE WAY
RENOIR WHY WON'CHA JUST STOP PRETENDIN'?
I KNOW YOU'RE OBSESSED WIT' THAT CHICK BUT YA SHOULD CALM DOWN. YER JUST GONNA MESS UP HER MIND MORE Y'KNOW, I PUT UP A HORRIBLE ACT PRETENDIN' TO BE HER DEAD PAL.. AND SHE STILL BOUGHT IT GOES TO SHOW HOW FRAGILE THE STATE OF HER MIND IS RIGHT NOW.
I DUNNO HOW YA KNOW SO MUCH BOUT HER PAL, BUT I DON'T EVER WANNA SEE YA POP UP AND TRY TO SLAP YOUR "HUMAN LIFE" FANTASY ON HER FACE AGAIN.
SHE'S NOT THE ONLY ONE TRYING TO MAKE SENSE OUT OF ABSURD THINGS YOU KNOW. EVER SINCE I WOKE UP LOOKING LIKE THIS I HAVE A HARD TIME ACCEPTING THAT THIS IS "REALITY"
THAT'S WHY I WANT TO RECLAIM EVERYTHING THAT USED TO BE IMPORTANT TO ME.. TO FEEL MORE "REAL"
BECAUSE RIGHT NOW, IT'S LIKE I'M LIVING A NIGHTMARE! I AM NOT "RENOIR"!
MY REAL NAME AS A HUMAN, IS ..
CAN'T 'CHA SEE I DON'T GIVE DAMN?
YOU'RE ALWAYS WHININ' 'BOUT YER DAMN IMAGINARY HUMAN IDENTITY!! WELL I'M FED UP WIT YER CRAP!! YOU'RE A MUTANT TURTLE LIKE ME DONNIE AND MIKEY! SO BEAR WIT' IT AND QUIT PISSIN' ME OFF ALREADY!!
YOU'RE BORN A MUTANT AND YOU'LL DIE AS ONE!!
NO!! I
I HAVE MEMORIES. I ..!!
WHA'CHA SAYIN'? AAAH?
CAT GOT YER TONGUE, RENOIR?
I WONDER WHY I PUT UP WITH A COLOSSAL JERK LIKE RAPHAEL FOR SO LONG..


OH HEY UNCLE RAPH.
UM. UNCLE MIKEY'S WORKING ON A REALLY TIGHT DEADLINE RIGHT NOW, SO HE DOESN'T WANT TO BE DISTURBED TONIGHT. SORRY
IT'S JUST A SMALL REQUEST IT AIN'T GONNA BE KILL HIM.
HEY AUGUSTUS WHY SUCH A LONG FACE?
STOP CALLIN' HIM THAT. YER FEEDIN' HIS FANTASY OF ONCE BEIN' A HUMAN CALL HIM "RENOIR" THAT'S HIS NAME
HUH? BUT..
IT'S BETWEEN HIM AND ME DON'T INTERFERE SHADOW.
HM.. OK WHATEVER YOU SAY UNCLE RAPH.
ANYWAYS HERE'S A CASE OF BEER MAKE IT LAST OK? FOR THE BOOK REPORT, JUST LEAVE IT TO ME!
EVERYTHING WILL BE OKAY! GOOD BYE, NOW!


THANKS FOR THE BOOZE
BUT TONIGHT, IT'S MY DUTY AS "AUGUSTUS" TO MAKE SURE THAT PAPER IS CORRECTED AND TO DELIVER IT TO THAT GIRL
YA KNOW, SHE THINKS I'M HER DEAD PAL. SO SHE BOSSED ME AROUND. THAT AUGUSTUS MUST BE A WIMP. HAHAHA!
THAT'S EGG GOOD FOR YOU, UNCLE RAPH. BY THE WAY, YOU DIDN'T KNOW UNCLE MIKEY'S PEN NAME SO I SUPPOSE YOU NEVER READ HIS WORKS RIGHT?
DOES IT LOOK LIKE I READ BOOKS?
AHA, SEE? LIKE I SAID, LEAVE IT TO ME! I READ HIS BOOKS SO I CAN FINISH THIS IN A JIFFY! NOW GO HOME AND ENJOY THE BEER HAHAHA..
WHO SAID ANYTHIN' 'BOUT READIN' A BOOK? I'M JUST GONNA ASK MY BRO TO DO ALL THE WORK FOR ME! AFTER ALL, HE'S THE AUTHOR OF A "STORY ABOUT FOUR BROTHERS WHO..."
NO! NO, UNCLE RAPH! YOU WON'T LIKE THE STORY! IT'S... IT'S...!!!


FOUR BROTHERS
* WHO LOST ALL TRUST IN EACH OTHER AND CAUSED THE DEATH OF THEIR SENSEI *


MIKEEEEEYYYY...
UNCLE RAPH!! WAIT!
AAA
MIKEY!!


WHAT THE...
RAPH? WHAT WAS THAT ALL ABOUT? LOOK I'M BUSY RIGHT NOW, SO.
TOO BAD.. CUZ I CAME TO GIVE YA SOMETHIN' ELSE TO BE BUSY WITH...!!
DARY
RAPH?


A!!
YOU..
...YOU GREEDY BASTARD!


GET UP.
I TOLD YA TO GET UP!!
RAPH!! H.. HAVE YOU GONE MAD?
YA "HUMAN" SCUM! YA REALLY OUTDID YERSELF, HAVEN'T YA!! YOU'RE THE LOWEST OF THE LOW!


UNCLE RAPH!! WHAT'S WRONG WITH YOU?? UNCLE MIKEY... HE'S... HE'S BLEEDING!!!
YOU! STAY OUTTA THIS! IT'S JUST BETWEEN ME AND THIS PIECE OF SHIT HERE!
UNCLE RAPH!! CALM DOWN!!
PLEASE! LET GO OF HIM!!
RENOIR!! HE'S YOUR MASTER!! YOU KNOW HIM BETTER THAN ME! STOP HIM!!
I M.. I M AUGUSTUS
RENOIR!!


LET'S SETTLE THIS SCORE, YA LOWLIFE. RIGHT HERE, RIGHT NOW.


MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
MNT
外伝
GAIDEN
CHAPTER 8: THE COWARDS


IT TOOK ME A WHILE TO RECOVER FROM THE TRAUMA CAUSED BY SPLINTER'S DEATH.
MY FIRST STEP TOWARDS THIS RECOVERY WAS ADDING A DETAILED ENTRY IN MY DIARY ABOUT THE EVENT THAT TORE OUR FAMILY APART
STORING MY PAST IN A DIARY MADE ME FEEL LESS GUILTY ABOUT FORGETTING IT
THE NEXT THING I KNEW, I WAS STRUGGLING TO FIGURE OUT WHAT COULD MAKE MY PITIFULLY BORING NOVEL MORE ENGAGING AND 'READABLE'
I SWORE NEVER TO LOOK BACK INTO MY HORRIBLE PAST, BUT AT THAT TIME, I NEEDED TO CONSULT MY OLD SELF.
I CONSULTED HIM. AND I ENDED UP DOING MUCH MORE THAN JUST GETTING INSPIRED
UNFORTUNATELY, IT SEEMED THAT MY INSPIRATION WAS BOUND TO MY LOST MEMORIES. MY STATE OF MIND WAS DIFFERENT BACK THEN. I WAS HAPPY AND LIGHT HEARTED. I WAS ABLE TO USE MY IMAGINATION. BUT TIME CHANGES PEOPLE. I CHANGED. MY IMAGINATION WAS GONE.
NO MATTER WHAT I DO MY PAST ALWAYS ENDS UP CATCHING UP WITH ME, WHETHER I LIKE IT OR NOT..




YA DENY YOUR NINJA PAST TO LIVE LIKE A HUMAN..
AND YET YA KEEP YOUR WORST MEMORIES TO TURN 'EM INTO CASH AND FAME!
OUR MEMORIES! OUR PAST! OUR SENSEI!
UNCLE MIKEY!
THUD


REN. NO! I MEAN, AUGUSTUS! SNAP OUT OF IT!
THERE! I CALLED YOU BY YOUR REAL NAME, OKAY? NOW PLEASE, I BEG YOU, DO SOMETHING ABOUT YOUR MASTER!!!
UNCLE RAPH WON'T LISTEN TO ME, BUT IF YOU TALK TO HIM, PERHAPS..
T.. THIS IS NOT MY PROBLEM. I I'M AUGUSTUS, RIGHT? NOT... NOT RENOIR'..? I'M NOT THAT OBNOXIOUS ALCOHOLIC'S DISCIPLE !
AND I DON'T KNOW THAT GUY YOU CALL 'MIKEY'. I'M NOT RELATED TO THEM, CAN'T YOU SEE, SHADOW? I'M HUMAN! WHY SHOULD I CARE?

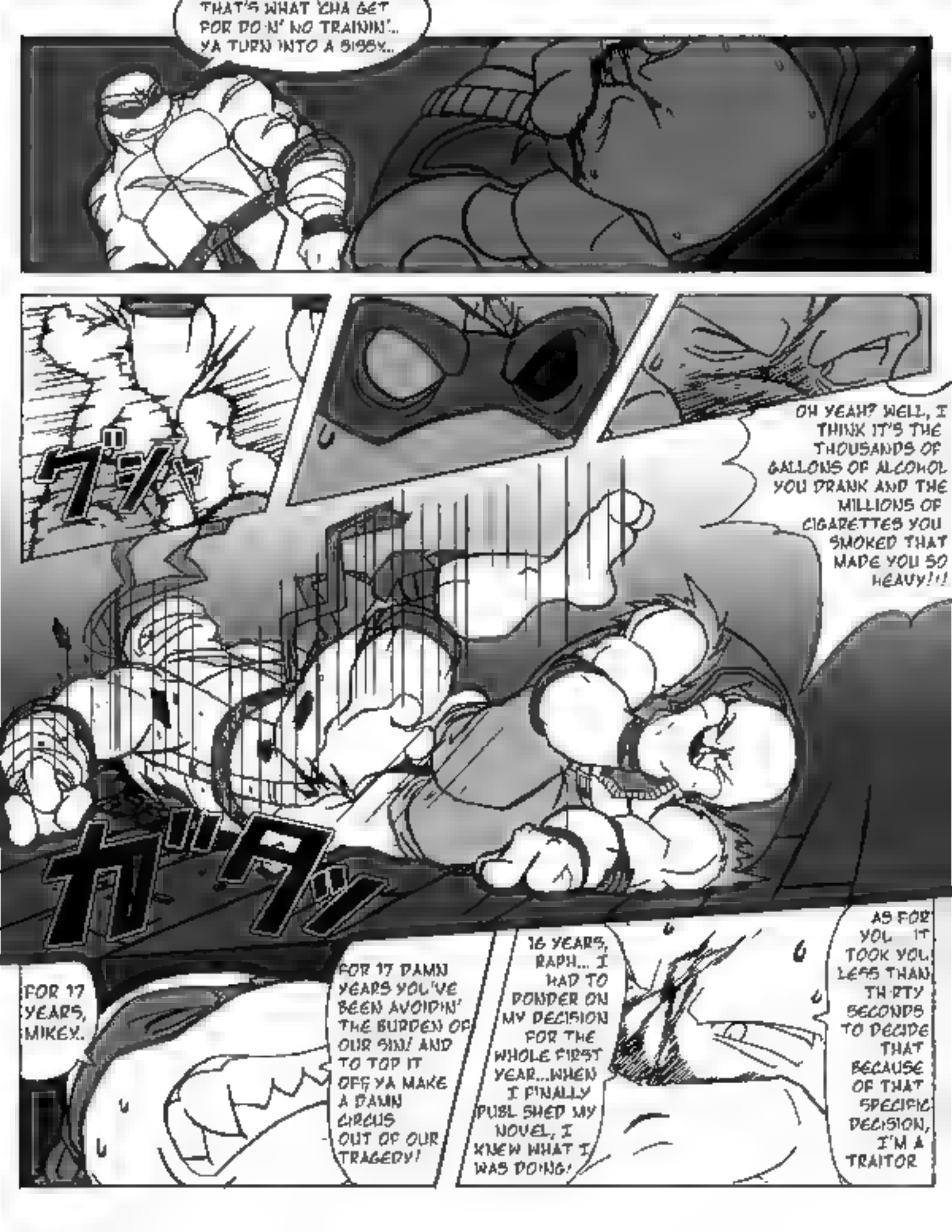

IN FACT... JUST LEAVE ME ALONE...
YOU... YOU JERK!!!


TELL ME, DEAR BROTHER..
HOW DOES IT FEEL TO MAKE CASH OFF YOUR OWN DEAD FATHER
..THE ONE THAT WE BOTH KILLED.!
I D'DN'T KILL MASTER SPLINTER!!!
DENY, DENY, DENY ..
WHEN WILL YA EVER STOP DENYING REALITY, DAMMIT!!!


S...SO WHAT?
SURE, I DENY MY PAST LIFE, BUT AT LEAST THE PRESENT AND THE FUTURE DON'T SCARE ME AT ALL... YOU ARE THE ONE WHO IS RUNNING AWAY FROM EVERYTHING!
A FEW YEARS AGO, DONNIE TOLD ME THAT YOU'VE STOPPED LOOKING AT YOURSELF IN A MIRROR BECAUSE YOU HATED WHAT YOU'VE BECOME... YOU'RE RUNNING AWAY FROM THE PRESENT AND THE FUTURE, AREN'T YOU, RAPHAEL...
WHO ISOLATED HIMSELF FROM THE WHOLE WORLD WHEN NO ONE ACTUALLY FORCED HIM TO? WHO DECIDED TO LIVE HIS LIFE MISERABLY ALL ALONE?
RRR...RRRRHH...
AND THAT'S WHY YOU TOOK RENOIR IN, DIDN'T YOU!
WHO STARTED DRINKING AND SMOKING DAILY TO FORGET ABOUT THE PAST?
SO YOU CAN USE HIM AS A REFLECTION OF YOUR OLD SELF AND PRETEND TO LOOK AT YOUR ACTUAL SELF! ARE YOU THAT DESPERATE TO LIE TO YOURSELF?


LIES!!!
WHY DO YOU JUDGE THINGS YOU DON'T EVEN UNDERSTAND?
WHY CAN'T YOU TRY TO SEE THINGS MY WAY?
OH I UNDERSTAND.. YA SOLD US TO HUMANS!


STOP... BLAMING ME!!!
WHAT 'CHA WAITIN' FOR... C'MON, LIFT ME UP.
ガバッ
OR MAYBE YOU FELT THE WEIGHT OF OUR SIN... THE ONE THAT I'VE BEEN CARRYING ON MY OWN UP UNTIL NOW!!
ガッ!!


THAT'S WHAT 'CHA GET FOR DO-N' NO TRAININ'.. YA TURN INTO A SISSY..
OH YEAH? WELL, I THINK IT'S THE THOUSANDS OF GALLONS OF ALCOHOL YOU DRANK AND THE MILLIONS OF CIGARETTES YOU SMOKED THAT MADE YOU SO HEAVY!!
FOR 17 YEARS, MIKEY..
FOR 17 DAMN YEARS YOU'VE BEEN AVOIDIN' THE BURDEN OF OUR SIN! AND TO TOP IT OFF YA MAKE A DAMN CIRCUS OUT OF OUR TRAGEDY!
16 YEARS, RAPH... I HAD TO PONDER ON MY DECISION FOR THE WHOLE FIRST YEAR...WHEN I FINALLY PUBLISHED MY NOVEL, I KNEW WHAT I WAS DOING!
AS FOR YOU, IT TOOK YOU LESS THAN THIRTY SECONDS TO DECIDE THAT BECAUSE OF THAT SPECIFIC DECISION, I'M A TRAITOR


17 YEARS... OUR SIN... MINE. AND YOURS!!!
MY 365 DAYS OF MEDITATION... AND YOUR 30 SECONDS!!!
YOU PIECE OF CRAP!!!
TAKE THAT BACK, YOU MANIC-DEPRESSIVE SICKO!!
ドバン


DO YA SERIOUSLY THINK YOU CAN WIN 'GAINST ME, HUH? DO YA? YA WEAKLING!
MY BODY MIGHT BE WEAK BUT MY MIND IS STRONG.
STRONG ENOUGH TO SHRUG OFF YOUR INVITATION TO A COLLECTIVE POINTLESS GUILTY TRIP, NO MATTER HOW MUCH YOU BEAT ME UP!!!
GAAAAH!! YOU... YOU CRAZY...!
WHAT'S A NOVELIST'S WORTH IF HE CAN'T WRITE, TELL ME...
NOTHIN' YA HEAR? AND THAT'S HOW LEO FELT AS A LEADER WHEN HE ABSORBED THE RESPONSIBILTY OF OUR SIN FOR US... FOR YOU!

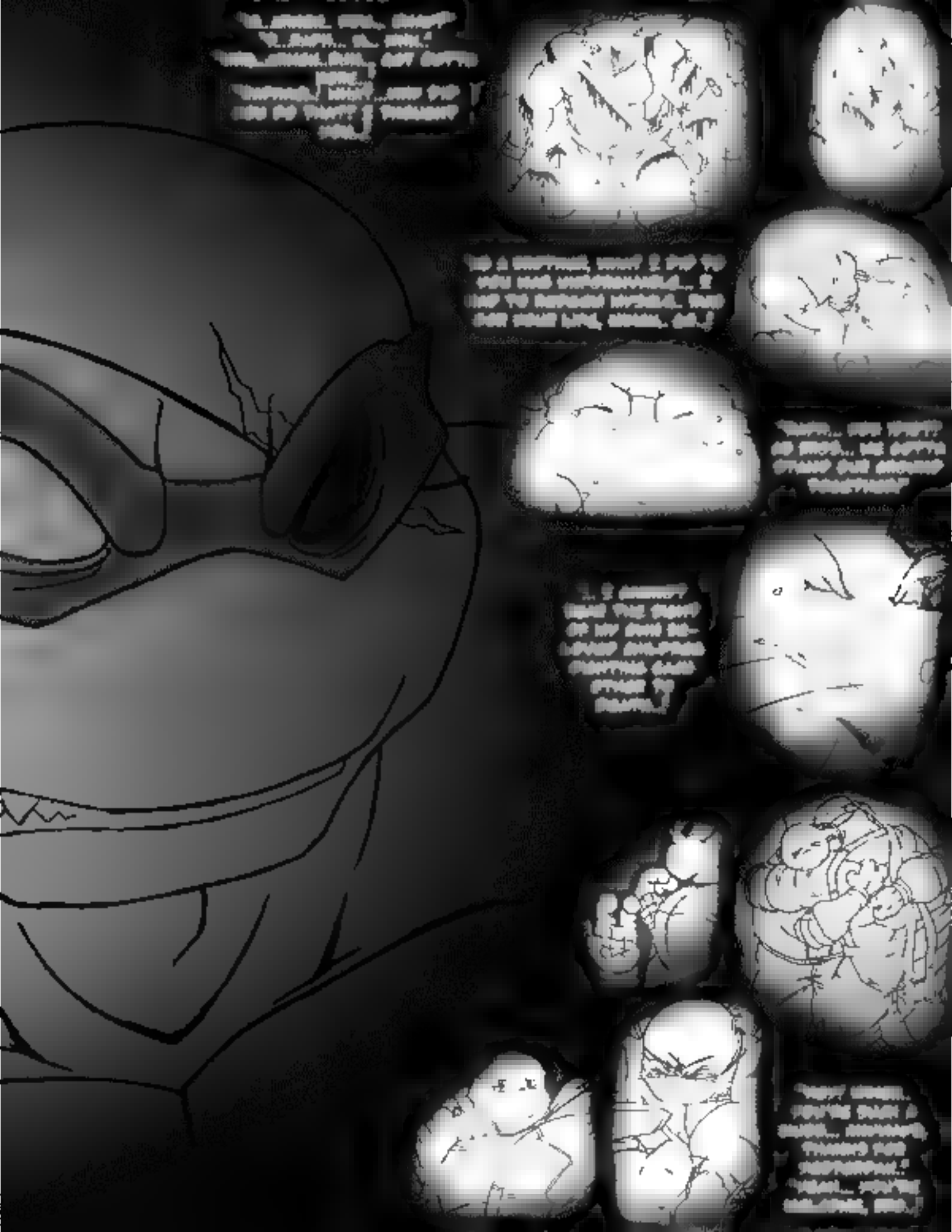

YOU IGNORANT HERMIT... I CAN STILL TYPE ON A KEYBOARD WITH MY OTHER HAND!
I'LL FIX THAT
TOO BAD YOUR GENES WILL HEAL YOU. ICH
GWAAAH!!
GGHRRRRHHH.
Y YOU KNOW THIS SATISFACTION OF KICKING MY ASS IS JUST EPHEMERAL, DON'T YOU ..
YOU BROKE MY HANDS, YOU DISFIGURED ME. YOU'RE NOW HAPPY... AND THEN WHAT? DO YOU EXPECT SPLINTER COME BACK IF YOU MAKE ME SUFFER ENOUGH?
TIME MAKES EVERYTHING EPHEMERAL, RAPH...OUR FEELINGS, OUR PA N,.. EVEN MASTER SPLINTER'S DEATH! WHY CAN'T YOU JUST LEAVE THE PAST BEHIND AND MOVE ON TO SOMETHING ELSE?
IT'S ONLY BECAUSE YOU'VE DECIDED TO LINGER ENDLESSLY IN OUR TRAGIC PAST THAT YOU'RE CONSUMED BY GUILT! EVERYTHING COMES AND GOES, NOTHING IS STATIC EXCEPT YOU, RAPH! YOU'VE NEVER DONE ANYTHING FOR YOURSELF! SO STOP BLAMING ME FOR YOUR OWN MASOCHISTIC DECISIONS!!!


SHUDDAP!
MASTER SPLINTER'S DEATH...
.WAS ANYTHING BUT EPHEMERAL!!!
YA ONLY THINK SO 'CUZ YA PRETEND TO BE CLEAN!!!
IT WAS OUR SIN! AND YOU'RE THE ONE WHO STARTED IT!!!
YA DIRTY, SELFISH COWARD!!!
I .I'LL MAKE SURE YOU'LL NEVER WRITE AGAIN!!!
MIKEEEEEEEY!!!


ドオン
ガバッ


SHADOW! NO!
SHE HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH THIS, RAPH!
LET HER GO! LET HER GO!!!
RRHH... RRRGHHH...


RRRHH... GGHH!!!
S..SSHHH...SHADOW...?
C'MON... SNAP OUT OF IT, RAPH!
SORRY, UNCLE RAPH. I... I JUST DIDN'T KNOW WHAT TO DO. I HOPE I DIDN'T HIT YOU TOO HARD.
YOU'RE GOING TO GET ALONG WITH UNCLE MIKEY ONCE AGAIN. RIGHT? YOU CAN HATE ME INSTEAD, I... I DON'T CARE WHAT YOU THINK ABOUT ME, JUST... JUST STOP FIGHTING. I CAN'T STAND THE SIGHT OF YOU GUYS TEARING EACH OTHER APART... BECAUSE YOU'RE FAMILY.. YOU'RE BROTHERS..!
BUT AT LEAST...
...AT LEAST, I'VE STOPPED YOU FROM HITTING UNCLE MIKEY. EVERYTHING'S GOING TO BE OKAY NOW... RIGHT?

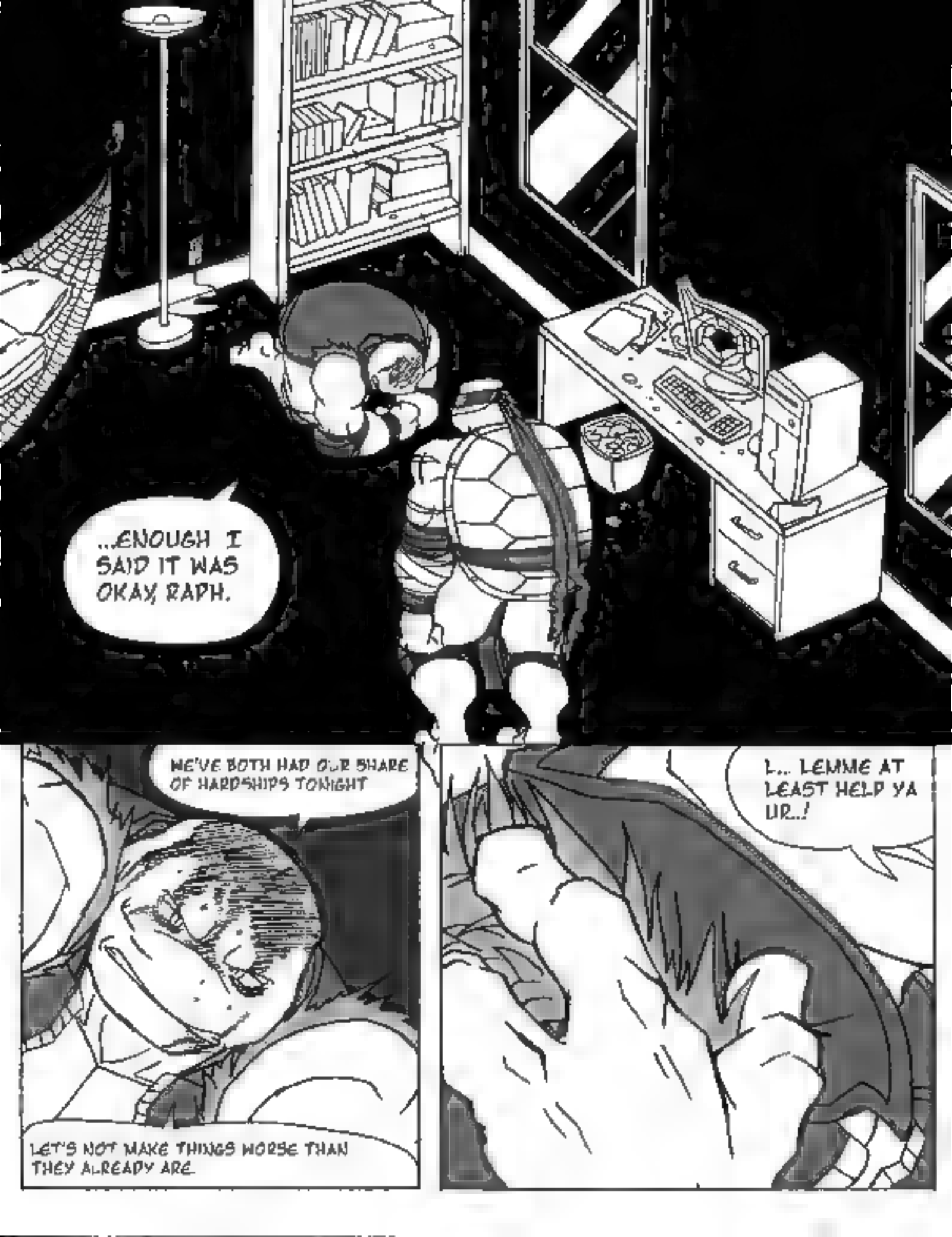



OH NO I.. I..
D.. DON'T TELL ME I REALLY..
MIKEY!!!
OH.. CRAP.


Y.. YOU OKAY, MIKEY ?


MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
MNTG
GAIDEN
CHAPTER 2: DEEPER IN THE ABYSS


MIKEY LISTEN I
RAPH.
IT'S OKAY. RAPH.
NO! IT AIN'T "OKAY"!!! I ALMOST KILLED YA! I... I...!
I... I KNOW! HIT ME, MIKEY!
OR SLASH ME WITH SOMETHING SHARP! WE'LL BE EVEN AND
ENOUGH!


...ENOUGH I SAID IT WAS OKAY, RAPH.
WE'VE BOTH HAD OUR SHARE OF HARDSHIPS TONIGHT
LET'S NOT MAKE THINGS WORSE THAN THEY ALREADY ARE.
L... LEMME AT LEAST HELP YA LIR..!


DON'T TOUCH ME.
パッチ
JUST .. RETURN TO YOUR LAIR...
パッチ
KNOCK IT OFF!


...
RENOIR, MOVE YER LAZY ASS. WE'RE GOIN' HOME.
STOP CALLING ME "RENOIR" ..
GO AHEAD! HIT ME LIKE YOU ALWAYS DO! I DON'T CARE!
IN FACT, I DON'T CARE ABOUT YOU ALTOGETHER! GO AWAY!
I...


...I HATE Y
I KNOW... YOU HATE ME... SO WHAT...?
I'VE STOPPED EXPECTIN' THE WORLD TO THINK OTHERWISE 'BOUT ME 17 YEARS AGO... RENOIR.


WHAT THE HELL'S YOUR DAMN PROBLEM?!
YOU SELFISH JERK!!!
NOW YOU LISTEN TO ME, SHADOW!
RAPH .. NO, "THAT SADISTIC MANIAC"! ALL HE DID UNTIL NOW WAS TO MAKE ME SUFFER FOR HIS OWN PLEASURE! I'VE HAD ENOUGH!!!
ARE YOU RETARDED OR JUST HEARTLESS? CAN'T YOU SEE THAT BEING PUT DOWN BY YOUR SNOTTY ATTITUDE IS THE LAST THING HE NEEDED?
WHAT ABOUT ME, SHADOW? MY IDENTITY! HE BLACKMAILS ME WITH IT TO CONTROL ME LIKE A PUPPET! HE CAN GO ROT IN HIS LITTLE SEWER HOLE ALONE. I DON'T CARE!


YOU, SELFISH JERK .. ALL YOU CAN DO IS WHINE!
WHY CAN'T YOU DO SOMETHING USEFUL FOR A CHANGE ?
CAN'T YOU SEE
CAN'T YOU SEE HE COUNTED ON YOU TO EASE HIS PAIN? DON'T YOU FEEL SORRY FOR HIM?
NO! NOT ONE BIT! SERVES HIM RIGHT
HE WAS HANGING ON TO THE EDGE OF AN ABYSS WITHIN HIS CONSCIENCE! HE EXPECTED YOU TO HAUL H.M UP!!!
THEN HE'LL HAVE TO DEAL WITH THAT "ABYSS" ON HIS OWN!
BUZ I'M NEVER. EVER GOING BACK TO THAT CRAPPY SO-CALLED "LAIR" OF HIS! NEVER!!!
US MUTANTS ARE BEING HUNTED EVERYWHERE ON THE SURFACE. YOU WON'T LAST VERY LONG ON YOUR OWN. EVEN A TRENCHCOAT AND A HAT WON'T CUT IT THESE DAYS.
NOT A CHANCE. RENOIR NOT A CHANCE...
BUT I
FINE SO WHERE DO YOU PLAN TO LIVE FROM NOW ON?
OR DID YOU PLAN TO CRASH IN OUR APARTMENT?
I WANT YOU DOWN THERE, KID. IN THE SEWERS RAPH IS WAITING FOR YOU... HE NEEDS YOU


BUT...
SIR..
I . I .


...


AND I THOUGHT YOU UNDERSTOOD ME. SHADOW.


I'M COUNTING ON YOU. PLEASE. JUST... BE AT HIS SIDE.


..
ﾌﾂ


POLICE! WE'VE RECEIVED PHONE CALLS ABOUT STANGE NOISE COMING FROM YOUR APARTMENT OPEN UP RIGHT NOW!
ﾌﾟﾙﾌﾟﾙ
THE COPS...!!
EEEH?

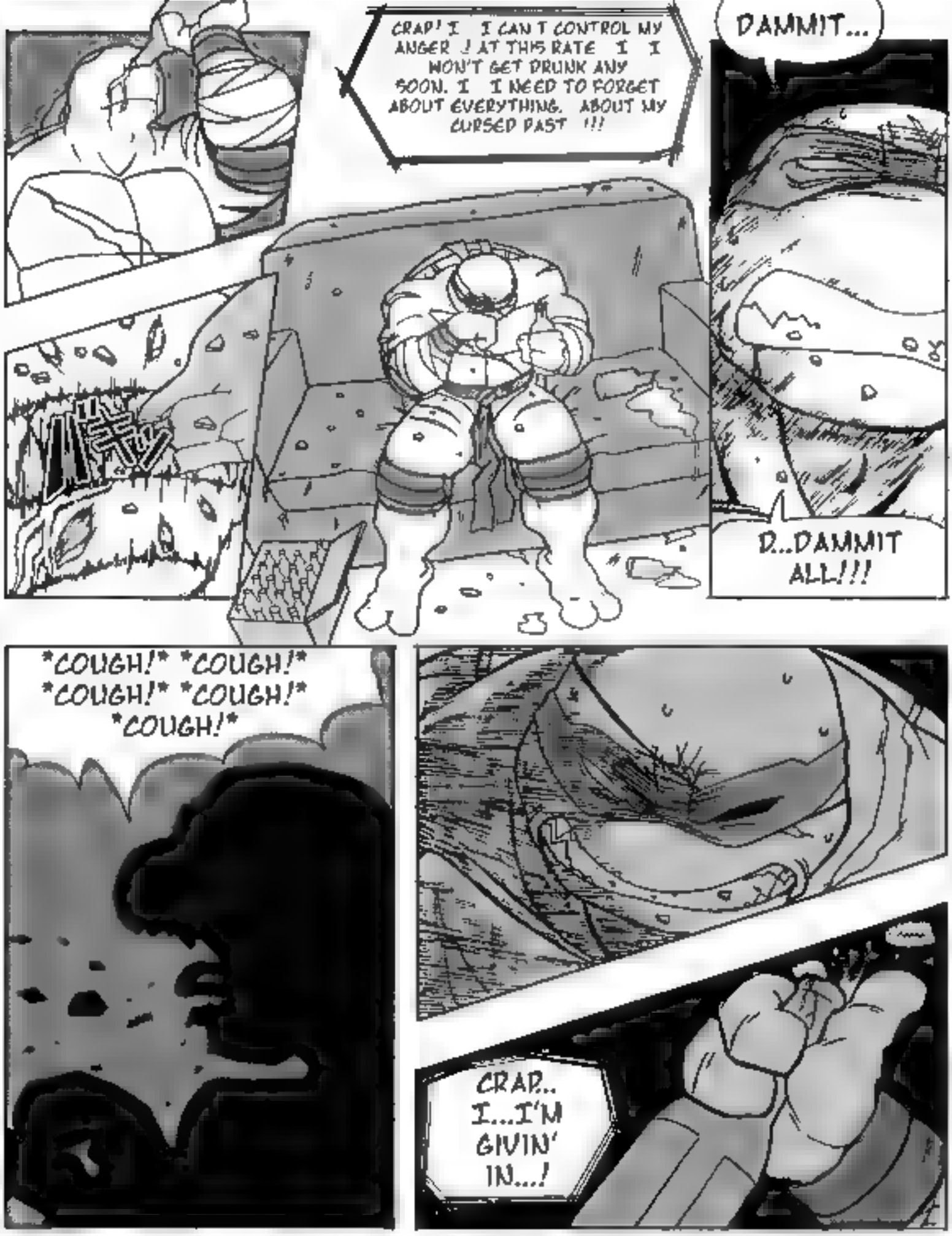

QUICK, UNCLE MIKEY, WE GOTTA HIDE YOU OR...!
BUT ..! IF THEY SEE ALL THE DAMAGE RAPH AND I D'D..
.. YOU'RE GONNA BE IN TROUBLE, SHADOW! I PROMISED CASEY AND APRIL I'D WATCH OVER YOU! IF REVEALING MYSELF CAN HELP, THEN I'LL...


HUH? WHO ARE YOU? DO YOU LIVE HERE?
WE'RE THE OWNERS OF THIS APARTMENT BUILD NG. PLEASE LET US THROUGH. WE CAN TAKE CARE OF THIS ON OUR OWN


JUST AT THE NICK OF TIME, EH?
DAD .MOM?


THIS IS SIMPLY ASTOUNDING... THOSE CELLS.
THAT VOICE .. IT'S YOU RENOIR AND.. YOU'RE ALL ALONE TODAY WHAT A PLEASANT SURPRISE
EXCUSE ME, MR.DONATELLO .
YOU PROBABLY GOT FED UP WITH RAPH TOO, DIDN'T YOU? I KIND OF SAW THAT COMING.
IF YOU PLAN TO MOVE IN, I HAVE A FEW VACANT SPOTS IN MY LAB, YOU KNOW? JUST MAKE YOURSELF AT HOME, RENOIR.
BUT FIRST, IT SEEMS TO ME YOU'VE GOT SOMETHING ON YOUR MIND YOU NEED TO RELIEVE YOURSELF FROM. I CAN READ IT ALL OVER YOUR FACE.
ACTUALLY, YES. IT'S A RATHER LONG STORY, BUT PLEASE LISTEN TO IT...

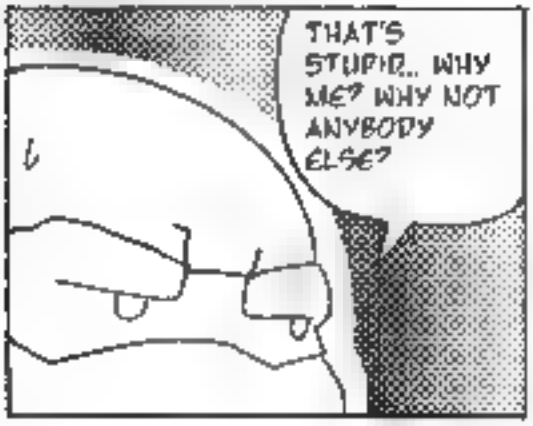

SEEMS HE'S IN HIS RAGE FIT AGAIN...
"RAGE FIT"? WHAT DO YOU MEAN BY THAT?
I SEE..
SELF-HATRED. REMORSE. DESPAIR ANY POSSIBLE NEGATIVE EMOTIONS.
THAT'S WHAT HE GETS FOR CONSTANTLY "CRY"NG OVER SPILT MILK" FOR NOTH'NG... THOSE THOUGHTS ARE ENGRAVED WITHIN RAPH EVER SINCE OUR FATHER'S DEATH BUT HE TRIES TO OVERCOME THEM. AFTER A CERTAIN PERIOD OF SELF-CONTROL, HE'LL GRADUALLY LOSE IT AT THAT POINT, IT TAKES VERY LITTLE TO AWAKEN HIS BITTER MEMORIES. AND WHEN THAT HAPPENS... HE GOES BERSERK
THEN, HE LASHES OUT AT ANYONE AROUND HIM UNTIL HIS RESTLESS GUILT DIES DOWN AGAIN.
THAT IS, OF COURSE IF THERE ARE PEOPLE AROUND HIM. OTHER WISE, HE'LL TURN HIS RAGE AGAINST HIMSELF


CRAP! I I CAN'T CONTROL MY ANGER ! AT THIS RATE I I WON'T GET DRUNK ANY SOON. I I NEED TO FORGET ABOUT EVERYTHING. ABOUT MY CURSED PAST !!!
DAMMIT...
D...DAMMIT ALL!!!
COUGH! *COUGH!* *COUGH!* *COUGH!* *COUGH!*
CRAP.. I...I'M GIVIN' IN...!


HAS HE ALWAYS BEEN LIKE THIS?
YEAH. EVER SINCE OUR FATHER DIED AND IT WORSE DAY AFTER DAY.
MAKES ME WONDER..
YOU'VE BEEN LIVING WITH HIM FOR THE LAST FEW MONTHS... AND YOU'VE NEVER SEEN HIM GET INTO THIS STATE BY HIMSELF..
I I DON'T KNOW WHY.. SO FAR, THE ONLY TIME HE GOT ALL WORKED UP WAS WHEN HIS OTHER BROTHER WAS WITH HIM.
I SEE.. NOW I GET IT
YOU SEE. RENOIR
HE NEEDED A REASON TO LIVE SOMETHING TO KEEP HIS MIND AWAY FROM HIS PAST
EVEN IF HE STAYS AWAY FROM US, HE CAN'T HELP BUT THINK ABOUT IT WHEN HE'S ALONE
THAT'S WHY HE NEEDED YOU TO BE THERE FOR HIM


SO THAT'S WHY RAPHAEL WAS OBSESSED WITH TURNING ME INTO A NINJA.
THAT'S ALL HE CAN THINK ABOUT THAT DOESN'T REMIND HIM OF HIS SIN... THAT'S ALL HE CAN DO TO EVADE HIS GRIEF..
WHICH MEANS THAT... HE DEPENDS ON ME...?


NO! NO! NO! THIS IS NONE OF MY BUSINESS! HE MADE ME SUFFER FOR HIS OWN PLEASURE! HE DESERVES TO BE ON HIS OWN!

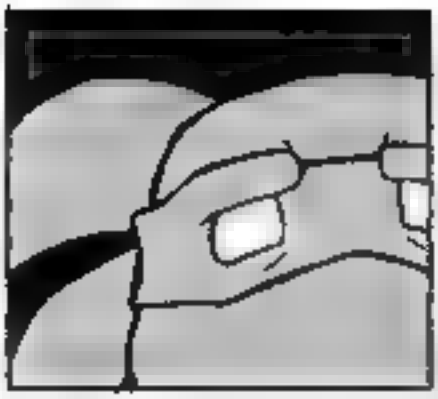

THAT'S STUPID.. WHY ME? WHY NOT ANYBODY ELSE?

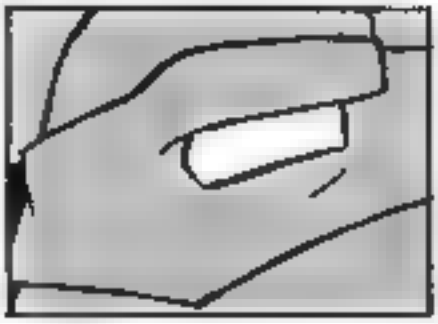

I SUPPOSE HE NEEDED SOMEONE WHO CAN BE WITH H'M ALL THE TIME... MIKEY AND I BOTH HAVE OUR OWN BUSINESSES TO TAKE CARE OF AND ALL HIS OTHER FRIENDS ARE ON THE SURFACE.
THEN YOU CAME... A MUTANT TURTLE, JUST LIKE HIM. WHO DIDN'T HAVE ANY OBLIGATIONS IN LIFE


AND I HAVE TO ADMIT... YOU CHANGED HIM A LOT BEFORE YOU CAME, WHENEVER RAPH WAS NOT PICKING FIGHTS WITH PUNKS ON THE SURFACE, HE WOULD SIMPLY ISOLATE HIMSELF IN HIS LAIR
AND NOW, HE ACUTALLY TALKS TO MIKEY AGAIN. IT'S AS IF YOU HAD A POSITIVE EFFECT ON HIM.

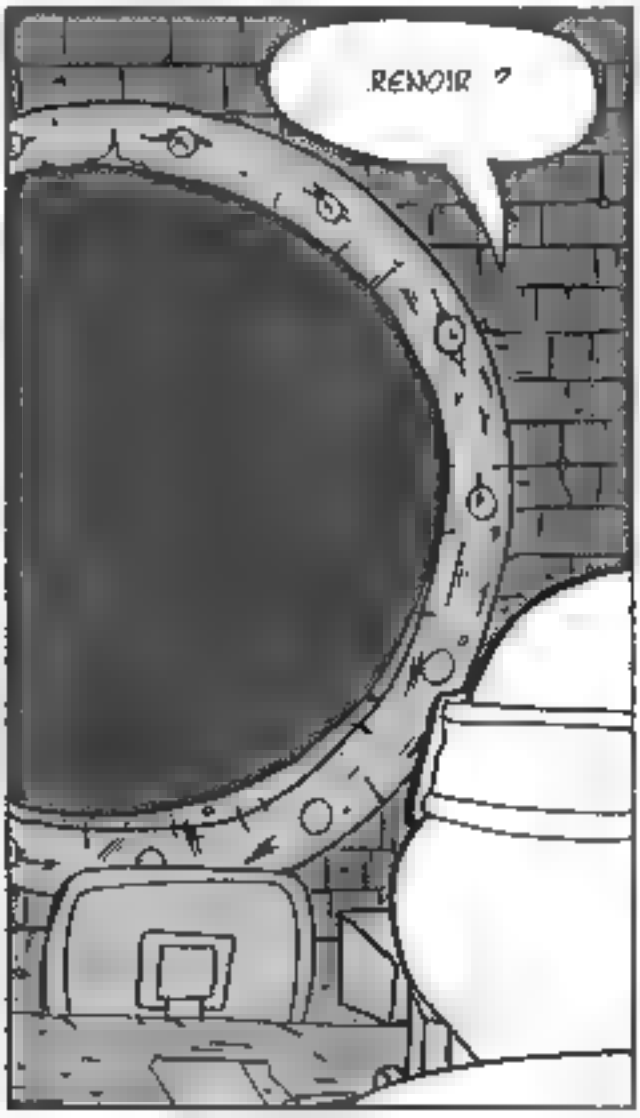

BUT NOW, YOU'RE HERE... AND IT'S BETTER THIS WAY.


THINK ABOUT IT... YOU WON'T HAVE TO STAND RAPH ANYMORE. HE CAN DEAL WITH HIS RAGE ALONE. HE'LL JUST HAVE TO BREAK THINGS IN HIS LAIR OR CARVE A LITTLE DEEPER INTO HIS SCARS..






NOW, RENOIR, BEFORE I FORGET, PLEASE COME OVER HERE FOR A SEC.


RENOIR ?


HUMPF. I TALKED TOO MUCH. BUT THERE WILL ALWAYS BE A NEXT TIME..

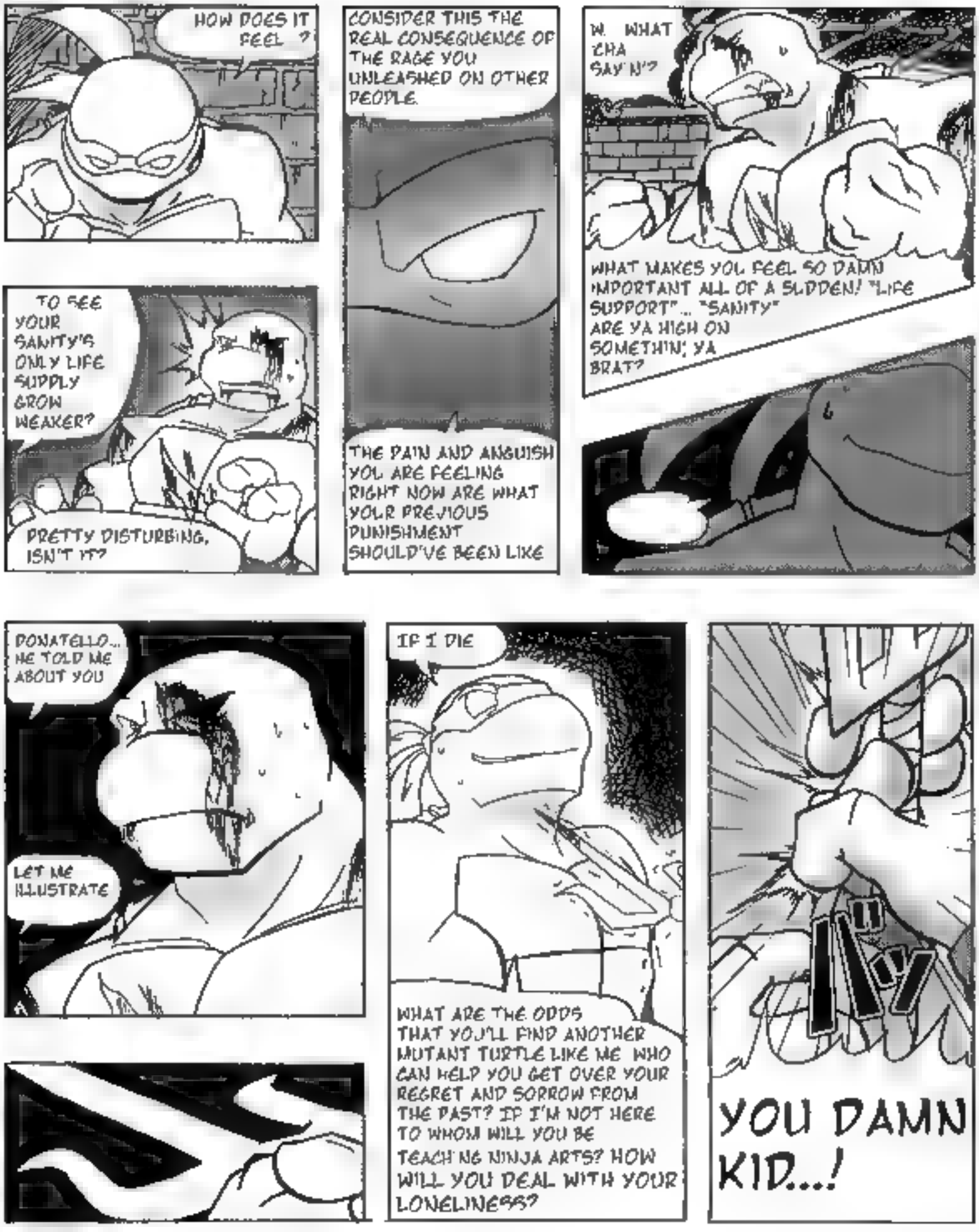

CRAP I OVERDID IT .. MAYBE I'M DEAD.
I CAN FEEL SOMEONE SHAKIN' ME BY THE SHOULDER HEH HELL'S WELCOMING COMMITEE?
WHAT THE.. THAT'S... THAT'S ME....!
I.. I HATE THAT FACE . I HATE IT !
I... I HAVE TO GET RID OF IT...!


L..LET GO.
RENOIR???


NO NOT AGAIN... NOT AGAIN!
R...RENOIR?
H HOW LONG WILL THIS GO ON !
H HOW MUCH LONGER DO I HAVE TO LIVE WHILE HURTIN' THOSE DEAR TO ME ? SPLINTER LEO DONNIE MIKEY SHADOW... AND NOW YOU !
N... NO MATTER HOW MANY T MES I REOPEN MY WOUNDS I I STIL CAN'T STOP MYSELF FROM SCREWIN UR !
L LISTEN TO ME RENOIR..
THOSE DEAR TO H M ME ?
THIS IS THE YOUR MASTER'S LAST REQUEST!!!
PLEASE...! KILL ME!!! KILL ME BEFORE I END UP KILLING SOMEONE ELSE...!!!


SELF-INJURY TO CHANGE YOUR BEHAVIOUR DID YOUR REALLY THINK THAT METHOD WOULD'VE BEEN EFFECTIVE IN YOUR CASE?
DID YOU REALLY THINK YOUR BRAIN WOULD RECOGNIZE IT AS A PUNISHMENT FOR YOUR ACTS..
..WHEN YOU DON'T REALLY CARE ABOUT YOURSELF IN THE FIRST PLACE?
HOW CAN YOU FEEL ANY PAIN FROM INJURING YOURSELF
..WHEN YOU HATE YOURSELF SO MUCH IN THE FIRST PLACE. ?
THAT'S WHY NO MATTER HOW MUCH YOU TRY
..YOU'VE NEVER EVEN REMOTELY HAD THE FEELING THAT YOU'VE PUNISHED YOURSELF ENOUGH FOR HURTING OTHER PEOPLE AND DONE JUSTICE TO THEM
AND NOW, IF I WAS TO "KILL" YOU, EVERYTHING WOULD BE JUST PERFECT FOR YOU RIGHT? YOU'D BE ABLE TO FINALLY TERMINATE YOUR LIFE, WHICH YOU HATE SO MUCH ..
..AND YOU WON'T BE CARRYING THE BURDEN ALONE IN THE AFTER-LIFE SINCE I'M THE ONE WHO DID IT, RIGHT? I I'D GET MY HANDS DIRTY FOR YOU AND SHARE THE BURDEN.. ?
I WON'T DO IT I WON'T, SIMPLY BECAUSE I WANT TO SHOW YOU THIS


LOOK...
I JUST SLASHED MYSELF. BECAUSE YOU ATTACKED SHADOW.
AND LOOK
I JUST DID IT AGAIN BECAUSE YOU ALMOST KILLED YOUR BROTHER
IDIOT! WHAT 'CHA DOIN'?


HOW DOES IT FEEL ?
CONSIDER THIS THE REAL CONSEQUENCE OF THE RAGE YOU UNLEASHED ON OTHER PEOPLE.
W. WHAT CHA SAY'N'?
WHAT MAKES YOU FEEL SO DAMN IMPORTANT ALL OF A SUDDEN! "LIFE SUPPORT"... "SANITY" ARE YA HIGH ON SOMETHIN', YA BRAT?
TO SEE YOUR SANITY'S ONLY LIFE SUPPLY GROW WEAKER?
PRETTY DISTURBING, ISN'T IT?
THE PAIN AND ANGUISH YOU ARE FEELING RIGHT NOW ARE WHAT YOUR PREVIOUS PUNISHMENT SHOULD'VE BEEN LIKE
DONATELLO... HE TOLD ME ABOUT YOU
LET ME ILLUSTRATE
IF I DIE
WHAT ARE THE ODDS THAT YOU'LL FIND ANOTHER MUTANT TURTLE LIKE ME WHO CAN HELP YOU GET OVER YOUR REGRET AND SORROW FROM THE PAST? IF I'M NOT HERE TO WHOM WILL YOU BE TEACHING NINJA ARTS? HOW WILL YOU DEAL WITH YOUR LONELINESS?
YOU DAMN KID...!


I GOT IT, YA HEAR? I GOT IT! NOW STOP SCREWIN' 'ROUND WITH MY SAI!!!

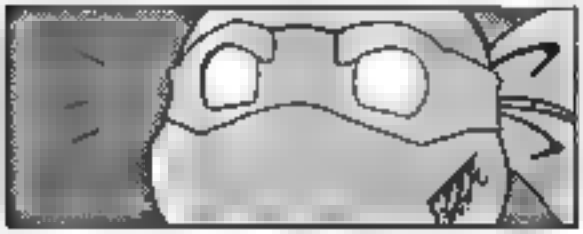

I DON'T KNOW WHAT DONNIE TOLD YA...
...BUT HE'S WRONG.
I... I DON'T NEED YA...

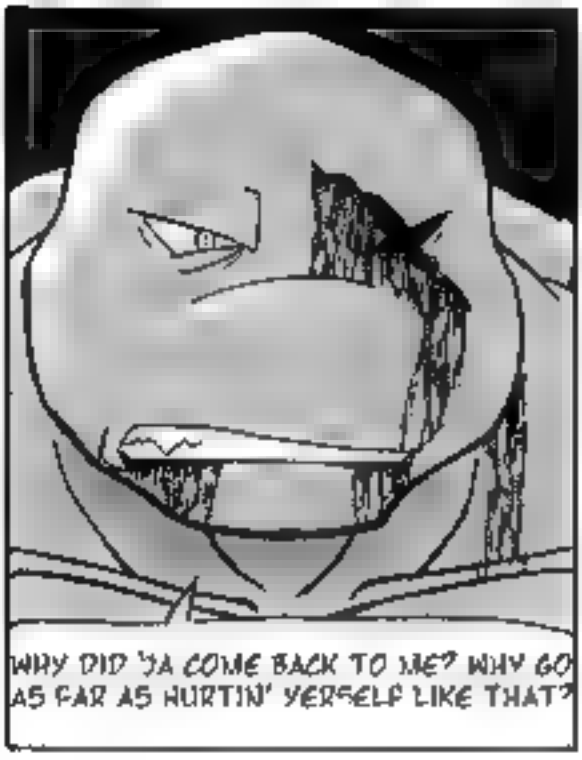

WHATEVER PATH I CHOSE TO WALK, I GOTTA DO IT ALONE.. NO MATTER WHAT HARDSHIP COMES TO ME, I GOTTA COPE WIT' IT ALONE. AND I'M PERFECTLY CONTENT WIT' IT. I CAN'T FORCE IT UPON ANYONE ELSE
...
YOU'RE FREE LIKE THE WIND, RENOIR. YOU ALWAYS WERE. I SHOULDN'T HAVE FORCED YA TO REMAIN WIT' ME. YOU'RE STILL YOUNG AND INNOCENT. YOU DON'T NEED TO KEEP COMPANY TO AN OLD HERMIT LIKE ME .. 'KAY?


...


HAHA. AHAHAHAHA!


AHAHA... OH GOD.. I NEVER EXPECTED YOU TO REACT LIKE THIS. I MEAN, YOU SHOULD'VE SEEN YOUR FACE... I DIDN'T RECOGNIZE YOU!!!
AND YOU CALLED YOURSELF "OLD"...! OH, THIS IS JUST PRICELESS...!
AH. ! DON'T HIT ME TOO HARD, OKAY?
RENOIR




WHY DID 'JA COME BACK TO ME? WHY GO AS FAR AS HURTIN' YERSELF LIKE THAT?


WELL... WHEN YOU FIND OUT THAT YOU ARE A FUNCTIONAL PART OF SOMEONE'S LIFE.. DON'T YOU FEEL SOME KIND OF PRESSURE? CAN YOU REALLY SIT BACK IDLY AND NEGLECT YOUR DUTIES WHEN SOMEONE DEPENDS ON YOU?
I HAVE A CONSCIENCE. JUST LIKE EVERYONE JUST LIKE YOU.
IF ANYTHING WAS TO HAPPEN TO YOU.. IF YOU WERE TO LOSE YOUR MIND OVER YOUR PAST . I'D FEEL ENTIRELY RESPONSIBLE...
..RENOIR... ...YOU..


R.. DON'T GET THE WRONG IDEA, THOUGH! YOU'RE JUST A BURDEN TO ME!
AND I I STILL HATE YOU FOR STEALING MY IDENTITY!
I JUST FIGURED THAT EXTREME MEASURES WERE NECESSARY TO CONV NCE YOU TO STOP MUTILATING YOURSELF LIKE THE BRAINLESS DINOSAUR THAT YOU ARE!
AND IN THE END, EVERYTHING I DID WAS FOR ME, YOU KNOW?
I GOT TO PUNISH YOU! I GOT TO MAKE YOU SUFFER! I GOT TO LECTURE YOU! AND I ENJOYED EVERY SINGLE SECOND OF THAT!
...
THOSE WERE WELL WORTH MY SELF-INFLICTED CUTS!
AND UNFORTUNATELY FOR ME, THERE IS STILL ONE LAST THING I NEED TO DO FOR MY CONSCIENCE
AND THIS... WILL BE TO MAKE SURE THAT YOU WON'T DO ANYTHING STUPID AGAIN. .


I'M HOME, MASTER RAPHAEL...
...AND I'M HERE TO STAY.


WELCOME BACK ..
MY STUDENT ..



CHAPTER 10 RATIONAL VOICE?

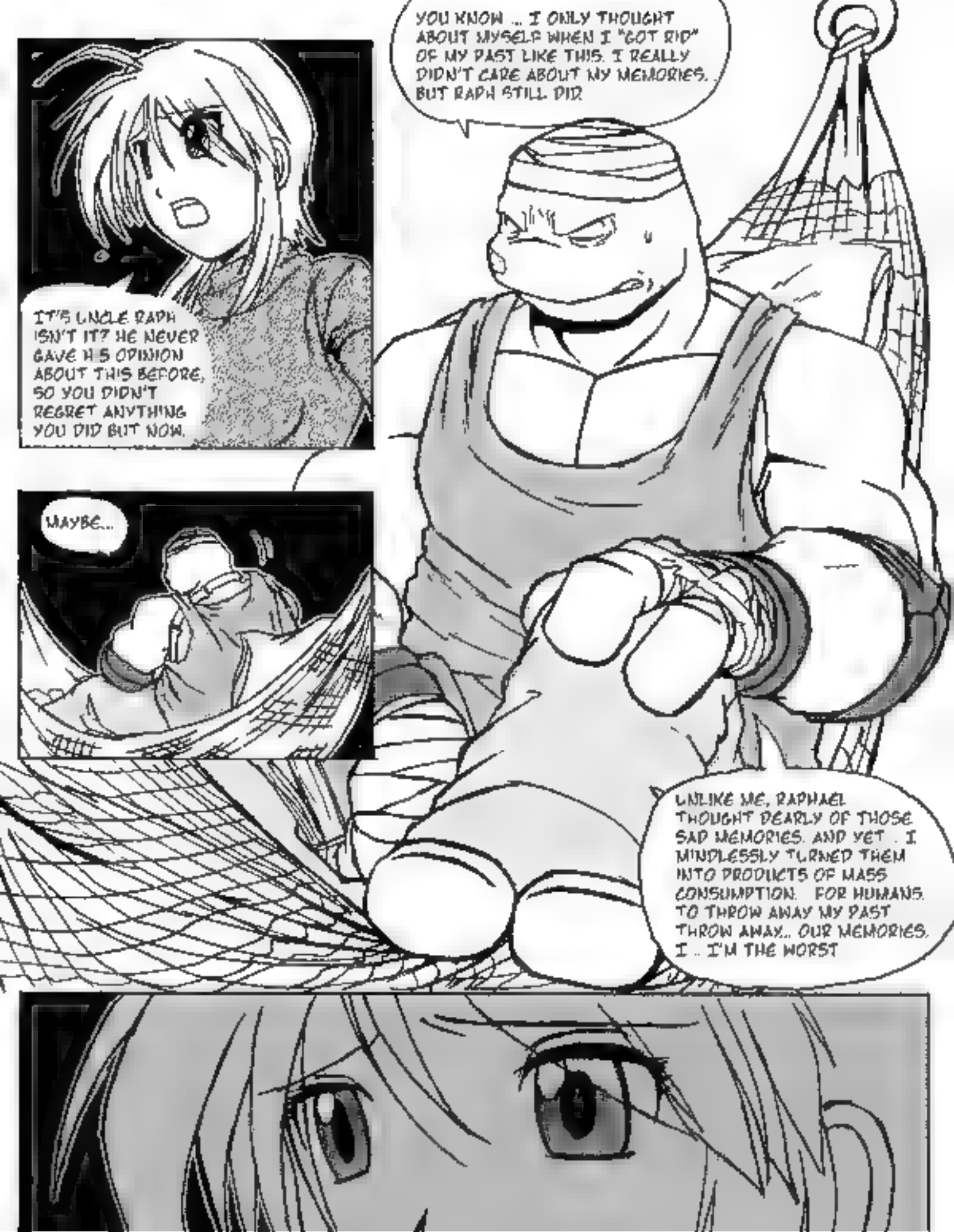
ENTER CASEY AND APRIL!!!


PLEASE TELL M. BUONAROTTI...
THAT IS NEW CREATION IS A MIRACLE!
WE'VE TOPPED THE CHARTS FOR THIS CHRISTMAS! I'VE NEVER SEEN ANYTHING LIKE THIS!
I MUST ADMIT, I WAS SKEPTICAL WHEN HE SENT ME JOURNAL ENTRIES INSTEAD OF A CONVENTIONAL NOVEL...
BUT HE HIT THE BULL'S EYE! THE READERS ACTUALLY DIG HIS NEW APPROACH AT STORY-TELLING! NOT TO MENTION HIS DETAILED DESCRIP-TIONS... SOME PEOPLE EVEN BELIEVE THEY ARE BASED ON REAL FACTS!
TELL ME... ABOUT THOSE INFORMATIONS DID HE REALLY MAKE THEM UP? OR DID HE HAVE A RELIABLE SOURCE OF INFORMATION?
I'M SORRY WE DO NOT KNOW.


I KNEW IT WAS GONNA COME DOWN TO THIS TRYIN TO GET SOME INFO OUT OF US BUT EVEN THOUGH WE AGREED NOT TO DISCUSS ABOUT THE ORIGINS OF HIS INSPIRATION?
I'M AFRAID MR HUSSAIN'S RIGHT MISTER KON OUR CONTRACT STATES THAT YOU ARE NOT SUPPOSED TO INQUIRE US ABOUT HIS PRIVATE LIFE
IF THIS IS THE ONLY REASON WHY YOU INTERVIEWED US REPRESENTATIVES OF MUSHABOTTI HERE TODAY I BELIEVE WE HAVE NOTHING ELSE TO SAY TO EACH OTHER
WAIT WHEN WE'RE NOT DONE YET!! THIS GREEDY GUY WAS ASKING FOR IT!
C'MON! LET'S TAKE IT OUTSIDE! JUST YOU AN ME!


TODAY'S HOT TOPIC: MIKAEL BUONAROTTI'S NEW NOVEL! RELEASED ONLY TWO DAYS AGO, IT BECAME IMMEDIATELY A BESTSELLER!
THAT'S RIGHT, PAUL. WE WERE ALL TAKEN BY SURPRISE BY HIS BOOK "ON THE TRAILS OF PURPLE DRAGONS"!
I WAS ESPECIALLY IMPRESSED BY THE NARRATION. BECAUSE THE STORY IS TOLD THROUGH JOURNAL ENTRIES, A FEELING OF INTIMACY IS CREATED BETWEEN THE READER AND THE PROTAGONIST. THE EVENTS IN THIS BOOK ARE SO CONVINCING THAT I HAVE A HARD TIME BELIEVING IT'S ALL FICTIONAL.
UNCLE MIKEY, ARE YOU FEELING OKAY?
AND THE DETAILS ABOUT THE PURPLE DRAGONS, PAUL. THE POLICE HAS ACTUALLY CONFIRMED THAT SOME OF IT ARE AUTHENTIC!


I... I REALLY DID IT THIS TIME. I SOLD OUT MY OLD SELF FOR MONEY.
MY MEMORIES... THEY WERE ENCLOSED IN THAT DIARY.
MEMORIES OF A LIFE FILLED WITH SADNESS AND MISERY. NORMALLY, I SHOULDN'T CARE SO WHAT AM I SO ANXIOUS ABOUT...?


IT'S UNCLE RAPH ISN'T IT? HE NEVER GAVE HIS OPINION ABOUT THIS BEFORE, SO YOU DIDN'T REGRET ANYTHING YOU DID BUT NOW.
YOU KNOW .. I ONLY THOUGHT ABOUT MYSELF WHEN I "GOT RID" OF MY PAST LIKE THIS. I REALLY DIDN'T CARE ABOUT MY MEMORIES. BUT RAPH STILL DID
MAYBE...
UNLIKE ME, RAPHAEL THOUGHT DEARLY OF THOSE SAD MEMORIES. AND YET . I MINDLESSLY TURNED THEM INTO PRODUCTS OF MASS CONSUMPTION. FOR HUMANS TO THROW AWAY MY PAST THROW AWAY... OUR MEMORIES. I .. I'M THE WORST


UNCLE MIKEY. IT'S NOT NECESSARILY A BAD THING THAT UNCLE RAPH'S OPINION MADE YOU FEEL THAT BAD.
ACTUALLY, I'M QUITE RELIEVED TO HEAR THAT
AFTER WHAT HAPPENED, I REALLY THOUGHT THAT YOU WOULD WANT TO CUT TIES WITH UNCLE RAPH...
BUT IT SEEMS THAT YOUR CONSCIENCE WON'T LET GO OF HIM.
YOUR REGRET IS A SIGN THAT DEEP INSIDE, YOU STILL CARE ABOUT HIM.
C'MON, CHEER UP, UNC' MIKEY! WIPE THAT PITIFUL LOOK OUTTA YOUR FACE AND GOOF OFF! MAKE PRANKS! ..LIKE WE DID WHEN I WAS YOUNG!
AH ..!! AHAHA! SURE! SURE THING, SHADOW! POINT TAKEN!
YOU KNOW MY SKULL IS STILL FRACTURED!
WHOA. APRIL WAS RIGHT. ONE ADULT MUTANT REALLY WAS THIS HAMMOCK'S MAXIMUM CAPACITY.


AHOY, MATEYS! WE'RE BACK FROM THE PUBLISHING HOUSE!
WE HEARD A LOUD THUD FROM INSIDE THE APARTMENT JUST NOW. IS EVERYTHING ALRIGHT?
A SITUATION WE'RE PERFECTLY FINE
AHOY! CAPTAIN! PLEASE TELL ME HOW DID IT GO?


WHY DO YOU LOOK SO STARTLED ABOUT THAT? HE'S FAMILY, YOU KNOW?
HAVE YOU CALLED HIM AT ALL?


HOW CAN YOU EXPECT UNCLE MIKEY TO TALK TO HIM AFTER WHAT HAPPENED? I TOLD YOU BEFORE, MOM: UNCLE RAPH WENT CRAZY AND ALMOST SPLIT UNCLE MIKEY'S SKULL OPEN! EVEN I HAD TO INTERVENE! SHOULDN'T WE LET THINGS COOL DOWN BETWEEN THEM FOR NOW?
SHADOW, I WASN'T JUST TALKING TO MIKEY


I ALSO HAD EXPECTIATIONS FROM YOU, MY DEAR. THAT MIKEY DOESN'T WANT TO TALK TO RAPHAEL, I UNDERSTAND BUT .
WHAT ABOUT YOU? RAPHAEL PROBABLY DOESN'T HAVE ANYTHING AGAINST YOU... IT WOULD PROBABLY EVEN HAVE MADE HIM HAPPY TO HEAR YOUR VOICE, YOU KNOW?
IF YOU WERE ABLE TO GATHER ENOUGH GUTS TO STAND UP TO HIM BEFORE, WHY CAN'T YOU DO THE SAME NOW?


ME ? BUT NO NO, I CAN'T ..


BECAUSE . I'VE BEEN BAD . I...


...I LET DOWN A FRIEND IN NEED. HE CLEARLY SHOWED ME WHAT HIS PROBLEM WAS, I KNEW I WAS THE ONLY ONE WHO COULD HELP HIM.
INSTEAD, I TOLD HIM HOW INSIGNIFICANT HIS PROBLEMS WERE COMPARED TO UNCLE RAPH'S AND FORCED HIM TO LEAVE. I DIDN'T GIVE HIM A SINGLE BIT OF THE PEACE OF MIND HE NEEDED... MAYBE... MAYBE I MADE HIM FEEL LIKE HE DOESN'T EVEN EXIST.
IF I WAS TO CALL UNCLE RAPH AND GET HIM ON THE LINE INSTEAD... I WOULDN'T KNOW WHAT TO TELL HIM... AFTER WHAT HAPPENED.
SHADOW...


I CAN'T JUST LIE AND TELL HIM THAT I SHOULD'VE PICKED HIM OVER MY FAMILY...
..BUZ UNCLE MIKEY WAS GETTING KILLED AND UNCLE RAPH WAS ALMOST SUICIDAL! I KNEW MY PRIORITIES I HAD NO CHOICE!
AND YA DID THE RIGHT THING, SHADOW. I DUNNO 'BOUT YOUR FRIEND, BUT I THINK HE'S THE ONE BEING UNREASONABLE.
WHAT'S HE GOT TO DO WITH RAPH, ANYWAYS?
JUST HIS ROOMMATE. I HAPPENED TO BE FRIENDS WITH HIM LONG AGO... WELL. I HAVE HOMEWORK TO DO, SO I'LL BE IN MY ROOM IF YOU NEED ME.
I... I'M AUGUSTUS, RIGHT? NOT... NOT 'RENOIR'...? I'M NOT THAT OBNOXIOUS ALCOHOLIC'S DISCIPLE...!
AND I DON'T KNOW THAT GUY YOU CALL 'MIKEY'... I'M NOT RELATED TO THEM, CAN'T YOU SEE, SHADOW? I'M HUMAN! WHY SHOULD I CARE?
WAIT
AUM.
EHEM...?
バタン

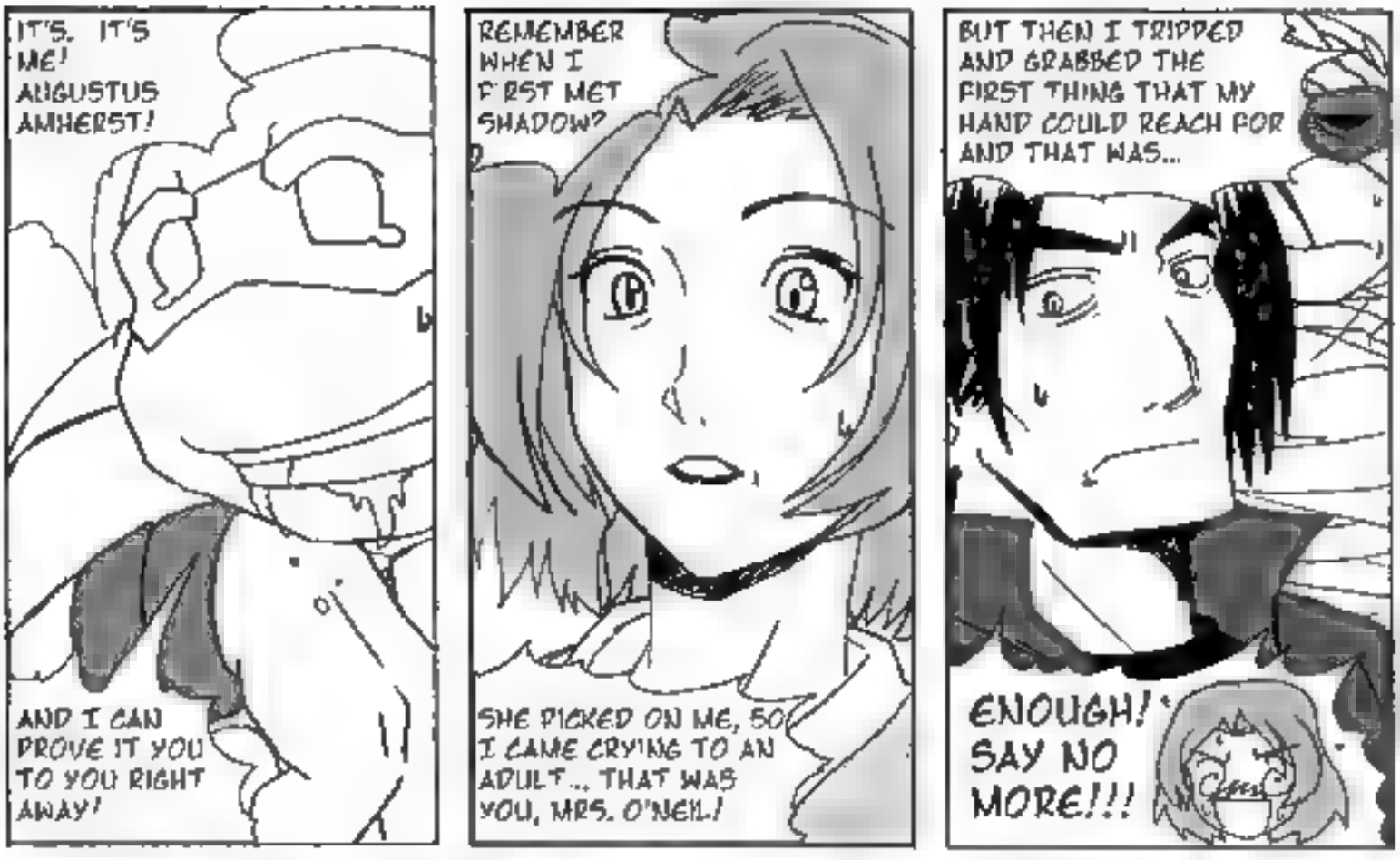

"AND I THOUGHT YOU UNDERSTOOD ME, SHADOW..."
WHAT? WHILE WE WERE AWAY ON A SECOND HONEY-MOON...
...ANOTHER MUTANT TURTLE LIKE YOU GUYS HAS APPEARED?

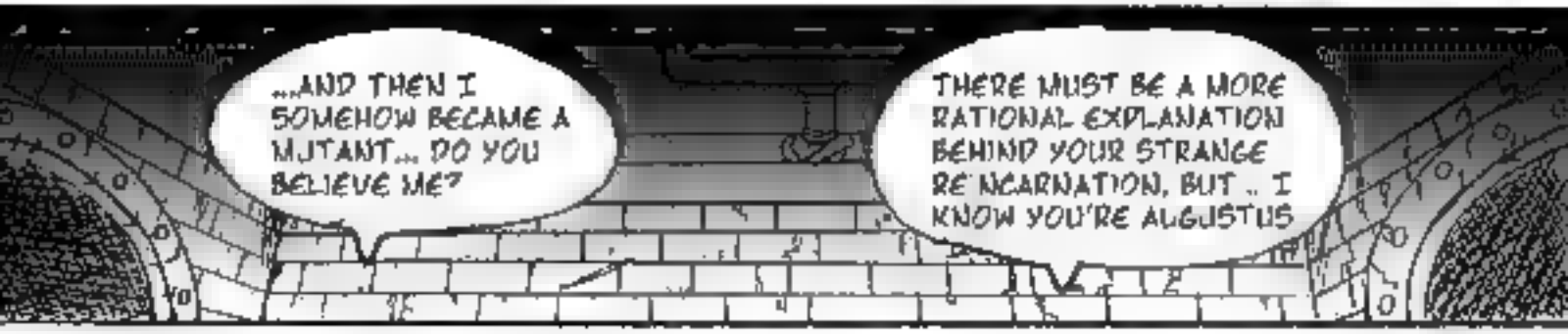

YEAH. ALL I KNOW ABOUT HIM IS THAT HE PRETENDS TO BE A HUMAN AND THAT RAPH ACTS AS HIS MASTER .
I SEE. SO THAT MUTANT IS THE REASON WHY SHADOW IS SO UNEASY? WHERE IS IT RIGHT NOW?
...SHADOW AND I ENTRUSTED RAPH TO HIM THAT EVENING. HE MUST BE AT RAPH'S LAIR
RAPH...
CASEY?
RAPH!
Y...YOU BASTARD!
EH?
HE BETTER NOT HAVE DONE IT YET!!
WHAT'S WRONG WITH YOU?
CASEY! WAIT UP!!!


HARDER!
HARDER!
I CAN BARELY FEEL YOUR PUNCHES!
'KAY THAT'S IT FOR TODAY YA REALLY NEED TO WORK ON YOUR STAMINA. ON THE BATTLEFIELD, YOU'RE GONNA BE GIVEN NO BREAK, RENOIR.
REMEMBER TO HIT HARD IF A FOE AIN'T FLINCHIN AFTER A CLEAN HIT, YOU'RE DEAD
O... OKAY! GOT IT!
...GOOD WORK, RENOIR.


SORRY FOR BARGING IN -
SO RAPH... YOU'VE TAKEN IN A DISCIPLE WHILE I WAS AWAY..
ガッ
YA HAVEN'T DONE THE HAZING WITHOUT ME, EH?
HAZING...
CASEY, APRIL! WELCOME BACK!
MRS. O'NEIL? MR. JONES?
DON'T WORRY. I DIDN'T DO A THING WITHOUT YOU...
...GOOD. LET'S GET DOWN TO IT, RAPH.


HAHAHA! THAT MAKES 20 BOTTLES!
WAIT, THIS IS THE BEST PART..
URGH..
URRRGH...
HA HA HA HA
C'MON, RENOIR! SHOW US WHAT 'CHA MADE OF! CASEY, LET'S GIVE HIM TEN MORE BOTTLES!
NO MORE..! I.Q DROPPING DRAMATICALLY!
バッ
ドガン
NEED.. TO GET RID OF SOURCE OF STUPIDITY.. NOW...!!!
ARE YOU OKAY?
URR.


IT'S. IT'S ME! AUGUSTUS AMHERST!
AND I CAN PROVE IT YOU TO YOU RIGHT AWAY!
REMEMBER WHEN I FIRST MET SHADOW?
SHE PICKED ON ME, SO I CAME CRYING TO AN ADULT... THAT WAS YOU, MRS. O'NEIL!
BUT THEN I TRIPPED AND GRABBED THE FIRST THING THAT MY HAND COULD REACH FOR AND THAT WAS...
ENOUGH! SAY NO MORE!!!


...AND THEN I SOMEHOW BECAME A MUTANT... DO YOU BELIEVE ME?
THERE MUST BE A MORE RATIONAL EXPLANATION BEHIND YOUR STRANGE RE-INCARNATION, BUT .. I KNOW YOU'RE AUGUSTUS


YEAH, KNOWIN' YA, I'M NOT SURPRISED YA REMEMBER SO WELL THAT DAY WHEN YA PULLED DOWN APRIL'S.
OH, HUSH.
SO YOU DO BELIEVE ME!

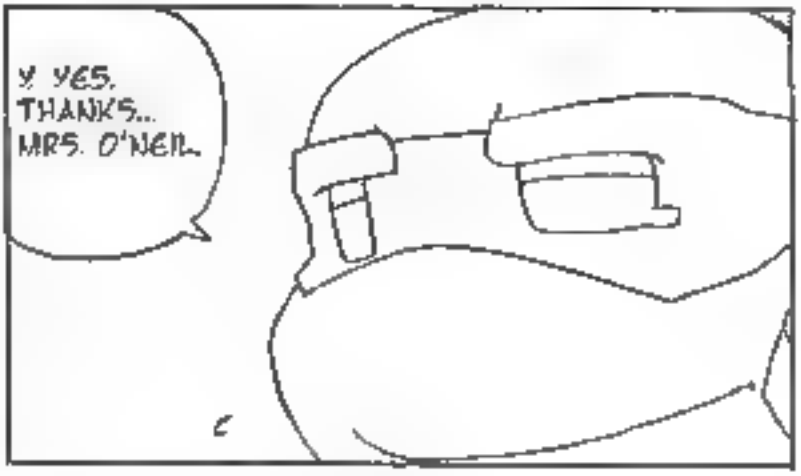

W...WAIT! DON'T TELL ME YA BELIEVE HIS FAIRY TALE! RENOIR MADE IT ALL UP! I'M SURE OF IT!
A HUMAN STUCK IN A MUTANT'S BODY.. THAT'S STUPID!


CRAZY, YES. JUST AS CRAZY AS HUMANOID TURTLES ROAMING THE EARTH. EH, RAPH? YET, YOU GUYS DO EXIST.
ERRRRHHH..
IDIOT
WHY DENY THE PARANORMAL WHEN YOU ARE PARANORMAL YOURSELF?
SEE? THEY HAVE FAITH IN ME!
HAHA! YA GOT DISSED RAPH!
HA-HA-HA!
AUGUSTUS... SHADOW TRULY REGRETS WHAT SHE DID TO YOU...
CAN YOU POSSIBLY GIVE HER A CALL AND SORT THINGS OUT A LITTLE BIT?
YOU! WIPE THAT SMILE OUTTA YOUR FACE!
UGYA!


I'M SORRY, MRS. O'NEIL. I'M AFRAID I WON'T BE VERY RECEPTIVE TO HER WORDS IF I CALL HER NOW...
IT'S OKAY. I UNDER-STAND...
BUT... MRS. O'NEIL. MR JONES. DO... DO YOU THINK YOU CAN HAVE A WORD WITH MY PARENTS AND CONVINCE THEM THAT I'M THEIR SON? I MEAN... YOU'RE ADULTS, THEY MIGHT BELIEVE YOU AND...
I WISH IT COULD BE THAT SIMPLE, KID.
LIFE IS NOT A COURTROOM. IT'S GONNA TAKE MORE THAN PROOFS AND WITNESSES TO OPEN YOUR PARENTS' EYES. NO MATTER HOW CONVINCING WE SOUND, NO MATTER HOW LOGICAL OUR ARGUMENTS ARE... IF YOUR PARENTS ARE NOT READY TO ACCEPT THE TRUTH, WE'RE JUST GONNA BE WASTIN' OUR TIME.
WE'RE USED TO UNREAL STUFF... BUT YOUR PARENTS AREN'T.
I UNDERSTAND. SORRY FOR ASKING A FAVOR SO SUDDENLY.
IT'S JUST THAT IT'S ALMOST CHRISTMAS AND I THOUGHT THAT MAYBE... JUST MAYBE... I COULD BE WITH THEM...


WHY DON'T YOU COME TO OUR CHRISTMAS PARTY THIS YEAR, AUGUSTUS?
OH NO .. I CAN'T DO THAT, MRS. O'NEIL... I...


IT'S FINE! WE'VE KNOWN YOU FOR A LONG TIME! BESIDES...
IT MIGHT BE THE IDEAL MOMENT TO MAKE UP WITH SHADOW...


Y, YES, THANKS... MRS. O'NEIL.


WAAAHHHH! I MISS MY OLD LIFE!
THERE, THERE.
HEH, WE'RE A BIG FAMILY NOW, EH, RAPH?
CRAP SHE'S FEEDIN' HIS IMAGINATION...


HEY, YA COMIN' TOO, EH?
...


I DON'T WANNA SEE "HIS" FACE.
FORGET IT
LOOK! I KNOW I ALMOST KILLED MIKEY, 'KAY? I KNOW I SHOULD BE SORRY 'BOUT IT AND APOLOGIZE!
AND YA KNOW WHAT? I TRIED MAKIN UP FOR WHAT I DID, BUT HE REJECTED ME! ONLY RENOIR WAS THERE FOR ME... ONLY HE TRULY CARED 'BOUT ME!
HEX..
BUT ANOTHER PART OF MYSELF STILL CAN'T FORGIVE THAT BASTARD FOR MAKIN' CASH OUTTA OUR PAST!
RAPHAEL!
READ THE LAST PAGE. NOW.
MIKEY'S NEW BOOK? WHY...?
NOW.
ERRH...


"Afterword
I have received many letters from readers inquiring about the origins of my inspiration."
"I shall not deny it: I only acted as a witness. The ones who have made the writing of my stories possible are my brothers... and my old self as well."
"While the stories I wrote are completely fictional, we have once lived a similar life than that of my characters. When I look back at that life, all I saw was sadness, hardships and pain. Intuitively, I based my creations off my past experience to seek liberation from that burden. I wanted to get rid of those memories by pretending they were someone else's."
"However, I have realized that denying my past is like denying my whole self. The past is what made me what I am today. Even if I had amnesia, I would still be in the body that was inhabited by the souls of my past self."
"Even so, I am not ready to accept my past yet. I doubt I ever will. However, one day, the cogs of fate will turn and I will have to confront my past."
"Destiny is a cruel mistress."


MIKEY WASN'T ALL ABOUT MONEY, YOU KNOW?
HE IS NOT A SOULLESS WRITING MACHINE THAT VOMITS ITS MEMORIES!
HIS MEMORIES MEAN SOMETHING TO HIM... HE MAY NOT CHERISH THEM.
BUT AT LEAST HE NOW REALIZES THAT THEY ARE PART OF HIM!
ALL THESE YEARS, MIKEY THOUGHT HE FINALLY MOVED ON WITH HIS LIFE...
BUT IN FACT, HE DIDN'T! HE UNCONSCIOUSLY WRITES ABOUT HIS PAST BECAUSE A PART OF H M STILL CLINGS ON TO IT!
I GET IT, APRIL. I GET IT.
I'LL BE THERE.


YA KNOW, HON, I THINK RAPH GOT THE POINT, THANKS TO YOU BUT DONCHA THINK YA WENT A BIT TOO FAR?
YA KNOW THAT IN RESPONSE TO STRESS OR SHOCK, HE TENDS TO MUTILATE HIMSELF ?
IT'S ALRIGHT, CASEY I KNEW I WAS DOING. RAPHAEL WILL BE FINE. AFTER ALL...


.. HE IS NOT
ALONE ANYMORE.



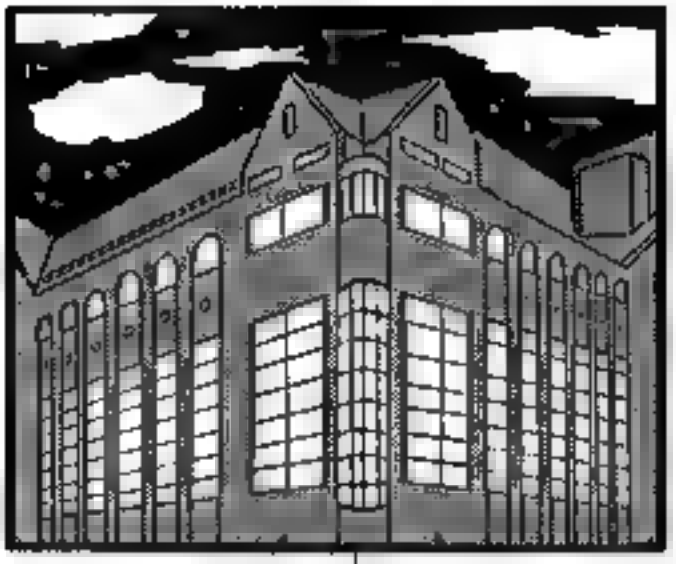
CHAPTER 11 :

A PRELUDE TO...


EVER SINCE THAT TURTLE PUBLISHED HIS BOOK ABOUT THE FOOT CLAN.
...THE COPS ARE HOT ON OUR TRAIL. TEN OF OUR MEN HAVE ALREADY BEEN APPREHENDED.
LONG AGO, OUR EX-LEADER KARAI HAS MADE A TRUCE WITH THE TURTLES AFTER THEY HELPED HER PUT AN END TO AN INTERNAL WAR WITHIN THE FOOT CLAN. ALL FOOT NINJAS ARE TO RESPECT HER DECISION
HOWEVER, WE ARE DIFFERENT WE ARE THE ONLY REMAINING MEMBERS OF THE FOOT CLAN IN NEW YORK... WE ARE INDEPENDANT
AS THE SOLE SURVIVOR OF THE REBELLION FORCE AGAINST KARAI. I WILL ELIMINATE ANYTHING THAT GETS IN THE WAY OF OUR AMBITION, INCLUDING TURTLES. THEREFORE...
MICHELANGELO HAMATO HAS TO DIE!


02:40
WE WOULD LIKE TO ASK THE OWNER OF THE BLACK CHRYSLER VAN PARKED AT BASEMENT LEVEL THREE TO MOVE HIS OR HER CAR OUT OF THE MAIN ALLEY. THANK YOU.


FIRST OF ALL, I'LL DROP MY STUFF AT HOME. THEN DAVIANNA AND I WILL GO TO THE NEWYORK-PRESBYTERIAN HOSPITAL.
AAW, HOW SWEET! YOU GUYS ARE LIKE SISTERS TO HER SINCE THE DAY YOU MET AUGUSTUS, RIGHT?
REALLY?
SPEAKING OF WHICH, WE PROBABLY SHOULD BE LEAVING SOON.
EEEK! SOMEONE GRABBED MY BUTT!!!
AUGUSTUS' LITTLE SISTER WHO STAYED THERE FOR WEEKS IS GOING HOME TODAY. WE'RE GONNA BRING HER A CHRISTMAS PRESENT TO CHEER HER UP A LITTLE BIT
CAUGHT IN THE ACT YA PERV!
JUSTICE KICK!!!!
AAAH! HE DID IT! HE'S THE ONE!
BLARG!
THANK YOU, YOUNG LADY!



I WONDER HOW BIG BRO IS DOING... THE LAST TIME I SAW HIM WAS AT THE CEMETARY.

WHY WON'T HE EVEN VISIT ME? IS IT BECAUSE HE IS TOO BUSY WITH WORK?

IS IT BECAUSE HE IS DOING ANOTHER MOVIE WITH ALL THOSE OTHER GREEN ACTORS?

IT'S NOT EVEN SNOWING OUTSIDE THIS YEAR'S CHRISTMAS IS GOING TO BE SO BORING..

HUH?


YAY! BIG BRO! I KNEW YOU'D COME!
HELLO,CAROLE! OPEN THE WINDOW, WILL YOU?
BIG BRO. I MISSED YOU SO MUCH.. I.. I...
AWWW I MISSED YOU TOO, CAROLE YOU DON'T NEED TO HOLD BACK YOUR TEARS.
SHE AIN'T CRYIN'! SHE'S SHIVERIN' CUZ SHE'S FREEZIN'!
HUM?
CLOSE THAT WINDOW!

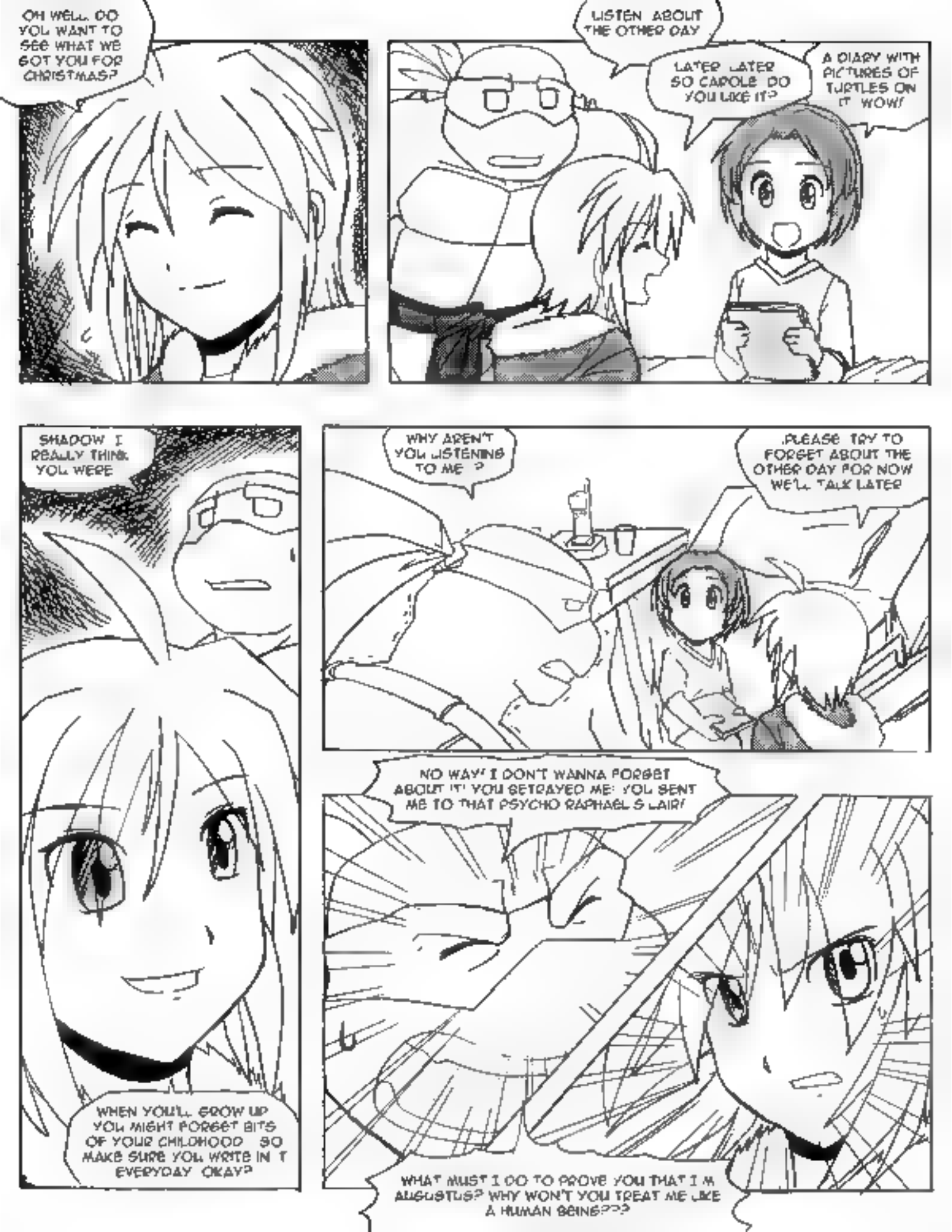

THERE' A NEW BANDANA FOR YOUR DOLL AND IT'S DARK YELLOW JUST LIKE MINE
THE TRUTH IS. I CUT IT OFF MINE IN A HURRY SOPPY I CAN T GIVE YOU ANYTHING BETTER FOR CHRISTMAS..
IT S OKAY· I LOVE IT, BIG BRO WITH THIS. IT'S GOING TO BE AS IF YOU'RE WITH ME ALL THE TIME
HURRY UP IF A NURSE COMES IN
WHO IS THIS OLD FAT ACTOR AND WHY IS HE SO BOSSY?
WHY IS THE OLD FAT MAN SO STINKY?
WHY IS THE OLD FAT MAN SO UGLY?
BIG BRO WHY IS HE SO OLD AND FAT?
66...
IT'S NOT FAT IT S MUSCLE. SIRUE
AND AS A TURTLE I M NOT RELATIVELY AS OLD AS YOU THINK
SCARY
BUT YOU RE SO HUGE YOU LOOK FAT
RENOIR I HEARD THAT!
HEY!
OW!
MISTER! IT'S NOT ALRIGHT TO HIT MY BROTHER ON HIS HEAD· YOU HURT HIM.
NOW NOW CAROLE '
ALSO HIS NAME IS AUGUSTUS. NOT RENOIR'
NO HIS NAME IS RENOIR' I KNOW 'T CUZ I NAMED HIM!


YOU CAN'T RENAME HIM!
WHEN HE WAS BORN, MOMMY CALLED HIM "AUGUSTUS"!
MOMMY HURT HER TUMMY TO MAKE BIG BRO, SO IT'S ONLY HER WHO IS ALLOWED TO GIVE HIM A NAME!
WHOA! BAD BAD GIRL! MR. RAPHAEL IS AN ADULT! DON'T BE RUDE TO GROWN-UPS, REMEMBER?
BUT THAT MAN...
OH NO. NOW LOOKIE HERE! YOU'VE HURT MR. RAPHAEL'S FEELINGS! HE'S BECOME SO SAD THAT NOT EVEN CHRISTMAS PRESENTS WILL BE ENOUGH TO CHEER HIM UP! BE A GOOD GIRL AND APOLOGIZE TO HIM. ALRIGHT?
I'M SORRY I WAS RUDE, MR RAPHAEL.
HAVE I BEEN A GOOD GIRL?
YES
YOU'RE THE NICEST LIL SIS EVER CAROLE!
I LOVE YOU, BIG BRO!


I'M SO HAPPY! NOW YOU'LL COME HOME AND WE'LL CELEBRATE CHRISTMAS TOGETHER!
HUM, CAROLE..
MOM AND DAD WILL BE VERY VERY VERY HAPPY! THEY THINK THAT YOU WENT TO HEAVEN AND THAT YOU'LL NEVER RETURN!
CAROLE, LISTEN!
I CAN'T GO HOME RIGHT NOW
WHAT?
NO...NO! DON'T LEAVE ME AGAIN! I PROMISE I'LL BE GOOD! I WON'T TELL MOM WHERE YOU HIDE YOUR MONTHLY DIRTY MAGAZINES! I PROMISE!
I'M SORRY BUT SOMEONE ELSE NEEDS ME RIGHT NOW
PLEASE.. JUST WAIT A LITTLE BIT MORE, OKAY?
CAROLE! IT'S DAVIANNA AND I!

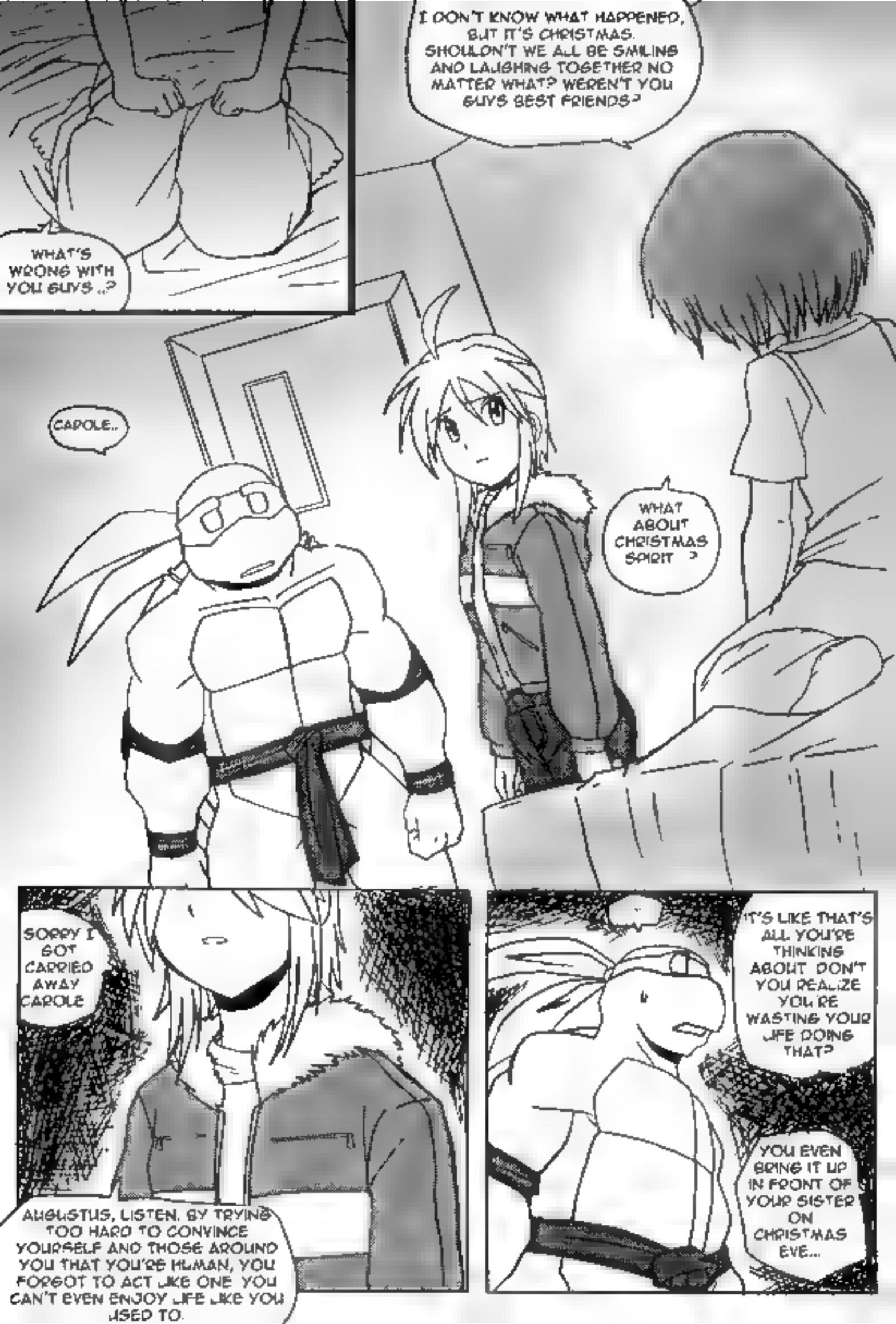

MERRY CHRISTMAS CAPOLE
SHADOW
HEY CAPOLE! OH AUGUSTUS!
DAVIANNA!
AH UNC DAWN AND AUGUSTUS
HOW AWKWARD WHAT AM I SUPPOSED TO TELL THEM AB OUT THE WAY I ACTED THE OTHER DAY?
YAY! WE'RE ALL TOGETHER AGAIN!
DAVIANNA COME ON COME 'ON HAVE YOU SEEN BIG BOY? HE S ALL GREEN AND
TEEHEE! I KNOW CAPOLE ISN'T IT STRANGE? HE BECAME ALL BIG AND


HAHAHA! LET'S GO FOR A RIDE DAVANNA!
AAAAH!
WHAT UH?


OH WELL. DO YOU WANT TO SEE WHAT WE GOT YOU FOR CHRISTMAS?
LISTEN ABOUT THE OTHER DAY
LATER LATER SO CAROLE DO YOU LIKE IT?
A DIARY WITH PICTURES OF TURTLES ON IT WOW!
SHADOW I REALLY THINK YOU WERE
WHEN YOU'LL GROW UP YOU MIGHT FORGET BITS OF YOUR CHILDHOOD SO MAKE SURE YOU WRITE IN T EVERYDAY OKAY?
WHY AREN'T YOU LISTENING TO ME ?
PLEASE TRY TO FORGET ABOUT THE OTHER DAY FOR NOW WE'LL TALK LATER
NO WAY! I DON'T WANNA FORGET ABOUT IT! YOU BETRAYED ME! YOU SENT ME TO THAT PSYCHO RAPHAEL'S LAIR!
WHAT MUST I DO TO PROVE YOU THAT I M AUGUSTUS? WHY WON'T YOU TREAT ME LIKE A HUMAN BEING???


NOW YOU'RE REALLY BEING STUPID!
AAH!! SHADOW! WHY DID YOU HIT HIM?
WHAT DID HE DO TO YOU?
TELL HER, SHADOW


TELL HER IT'S BECAUSE TO YOUR EYES I'M NOT YOUR FRIEND, BUT A FREAKY MUTANT CALLED "DENOIR"!
WHICH MEANS I'M NOT WORTHY OF ATTENTION ANYMORE.
IDIOT
YOU DON'T GET IT AT ALL!
I KNOW YOU'RE A MUTANT AND I KNOW YOU'RE AUGUSTUS! I SENT YOU TO RAPH BECAUSE I TRUSTED YOU! I THOUGHT I COULD COUNT ON YOU! I DIDN'T TRY TO GET RID YOU!
WHY DO YOU ALWAYS BRING UP THIS "IDENTITY CRISIS" OF YOURS?
'CUZ I'M NOT YOUR MUTANT FRIEND, I'M YOUR HUMAN FRIEND! YET YOU TREAT ME LIKE TRASH! WHAT WOULD YOU DO IF YOU BECAME ONE YOURSELF AND EVERYONE STARTED LOOKING AT YOU DIFFERENTLY?
I WOULDN'T LET ANY OF THAT CONTROL MY LIFE, THAT'S FOR SURE!
!!


WHAT'S WRONG WITH YOU GUYS ..?
I DON'T KNOW WHAT HAPPENED, BUT IT'S CHRISTMAS. SHOULDN'T WE ALL BE SMILING AND LAUGHING TOGETHER NO MATTER WHAT? WEREN'T YOU GUYS BEST FRIENDS?
CAROLE..
WHAT ABOUT CHRISTMAS SPIRIT ?
SORRY I GOT CARRIED AWAY CAROLE
AUGUSTUS, LISTEN. BY TRYING TOO HARD TO CONVINCE YOURSELF AND THOSE AROUND YOU THAT YOU'RE HUMAN, YOU FORGOT TO ACT LIKE ONE. YOU CAN'T EVEN ENJOY LIFE LIKE YOU USED TO.
IT'S LIKE THAT'S ALL YOU'RE THINKING ABOUT. DON'T YOU REALIZE YOU'RE WASTING YOUR LIFE DOING THAT?
YOU EVEN BRING IT UP IN FRONT OF YOUR SISTER ON CHRISTMAS EVE...


WHY DID YOU BRING ME OUT HERE, AUGUSTUS? WHAT ABOUT YOUR SISTER ..?
JUST ADMIRE THE VIEW, BABY. AIN'T NEW YORK PURTY EVEN WITHOUT SNOW?
YEAH . I LOVED THIS CITY, EVER SINCE I MOVED HERE AS A CHILD I STILL DO
SAY, DO YOU REMEMBER OUR FIRST MEETING?
WE WERE IN FIRST GRADE ..
OH. SURE PUMPKIN!
YOU WERE CUTE AS HELL AND I WAS A PERVERTED BRAT!


CUTE AS HELL ? PERVERTED BRAT?
WHAT?
AH, EER .. HEHEHE!
WELL. YOU WERE CUTE BACK THEN, RIGHT? EH?
AHAHAHAH
A . ANYWAY.
SHADOW GAVE ME OUR BOOK REPORT'S CORRECTION THE OTHER DAY, SAYING YOU PUT A LOT OF EFFORT INTO IT
ACTUALLY, MIKEY DID T
OH. YEAH YEAH.
I REALLY APPRECIATE IT, AUGUSTUS..
THANK YOU.


YOU ARE NOT AUGUSTUS.
HE SWORE NOT TO KISS ME BEFORE I TURN EIGHTEEN .. EVEN IF I WAS TO ASK HIM TO, HE WOULDN'T! HE MAY BE ACT LIKE A PERVERT AROUND ME .. BUT HE KNOWS WHEN TO STOP!
HE SWORE . AND HE ALWAYS KEEPS HIS PROMISES!
JUST WHO ARE YOU?


SHADOW, BIG BRO, PLEASE STOP FIGHTING! I DON'T LIKE IT WHEN YOU GUYS FIGHT!
THERE THERE CAROLE IT'S JUST A NORMAL DISCUSSION THAT GOT OUT OF HAND IT'S OKAY NOW IT'S OVER
HA THERE YOU GO AGAIN, ACTING LIKE AN OMNISCIENT MEDIATOR, AS IF YOU WERE IN POSITION TO JUDGE US ALL... MICHELANGELO RAPHAEL, MYSELF
ALL YOU EVER DID WAS TO FORCE YOUR WAY OF THINKING UPON US, REGARDLESS OF OUR CIRCUMSTANCES WHY CAN'T YOU BE THE LEAST CONSIDERATE TOWARDS OTHERS?
W. .WHAT DID YOU SAY? I'M NOT CONSIDERATE? ME?
NO! PLEASE DON'T FIGHT!
YEAH! I SA D THAT! AND DON'T SCREAM IN CAROLE S EAR YOU FRIGID W TCH! SHE'S SICK AND TIRED, YOU KNOW?
SHE JUST HAS ASTHMA, YOU IDIOT! HOW CAN YOU PRETEND TO CARE FOR HER WHEN YOU DIDN'T EVEN CHECK ON HER WHEN SHE WAS ADMITTED IN THE HOSPITAL? AND IT WAS ON THE FRICKIN' TV!
SEE? THAT'S WHAT I MEANT! YOU FORGOT THAT I WAS STUCK WITH YOUR PSYCHOTIC UNCLE, EH?
HE'S NOT PSYCHOTIC! HE JUST NEEDS ATTENTION!


WHAT IS HAPPENING HERE?
WE HEARD YOU GUYS ARGUING WITH SOMEONE AND... CAROLE? WHY ARE YOU CRYING?
AH! HI... HI, MR AND MRS. AMHERST! DON'T WORRY!
WE WERE JUST DOING A SKIT AND CAROLE HERE PUT UP A VERY CONVINCING PERFORMANCE, RIGHT?
HMM. YES
OH, IS THAT SO? WELL, WE APOLOGIZE FOR INTERRUPTING YOUR SMALL GAME BUT WE'RE HERE TO TAKE CAROLE HOME
WE'RE HOSTING THE CHRISTMAS PARTY THIS YEAR SO THE WHOLE FAMILY WILL BE COMING EXCEPT W WELL ANYWAYS PUT ON SOME WARM CLOTHES, HONEY
THANK YOU FOR ALWAYS LOOKING AFTER HER, SHADOW CAROLE WHAT DO YOU SAY TO SHADOW?
THANK YOU, SHADOW
PLEASE GIVE OUR BEST WISHES TO YOUR PARENTS, SHADOW!


BIG BOO
I KNOW I'M NOT SUPPOSED TO TELL MOM AND DAD HE'S UNDER THE BED, BUT... I WANT TO AT LEAST SAY GOOOOOBYE
PLEASE WAIT! LET US DO ONE LAST SKIT!
I'LL BE AN ANGEL WHO DELIVERS MESSAGES TO HEAVEN. YOU, CAROLE WILL BE YOURSELF
WHAT WOULD YOU LIKE THE ANGEL TO TELL AUGUSTUS IN HEAVEN ON A DAY LIKE THIS?
I KNOW YOU'VE BEEN A VERY GOOD PERSON THIS YEAR! I HOPE YOU'LL GET LOTS OF PRESENTS!
I ALSO WANT YOU TO KNOW THAT MOM AND DAD MISS YOU, BUT I MISS YOU TEN TIMES MORE
MERRY CHRISTMAS, AUGUSTUS! I HOPE YOU'LL COME HOME ONE DAY! I LOVE YOU LOTS!


RAPHAEL . YOU LIED TO ME ABOUT AUGUSTUS... BECAUSE YOU WERE WORRIED ABOUT MY .. SANITY? WHY? WHAT DO YOU KNOW ABOUT ME?
LOOK... WHEN PEOPLE ARE FACED WIT' LIFE AND DEATH, THEIR MINDS GET ALL MESSED UP. I KNOW IT 'CUZ . ONE OF MY BROS WENT THROUGH THAT, WE FORCED REALITY INTO HIS MIND, AGAINST HIS WILL... AND HE LOST IT
SO... IT WAS ALL THE LIE AUGUSTUS IS REALLY DEAD ..? AND EVEN SHADOW .. EVEN MY OTHER CHILDHOOD FRIEND LIED TO ME ABOUT IT..?
SHE THAT POLLUTED MY DEAD BELIE SHE PROBABLY DOESN'T EVEN KNOW WHY WE'RE DOIN' THAT DON'T BLAME HER
LISTEN YOUR "AUGUSTUS" I DON'T THINK HE'S DEAD HE'S ACTUALLY
ENOUGH
THAT'S ENOUGH... TO MY EYES HE ALREADY DIED TWICE
PLEASE STOP PLAYING WITH MY EMOTIONS


LOOK, I'M SORRY I DIDN'T MEAN TO MAKE
DON'T PRETEND TO FEEL SORRY FOR ME HOW CAN I KNOW YOU MEAN IT AFTER LYING TO ME LIKE
WHAT WAS THE USE OF YOU AND SHADOW SAVING ME THE OTHER DAY, IF IT WAS TO TOY WITH MY EMOTIONS IN SUCH AN INHUMAN
BUT . BUT SHADOW DOES.. YET SHE DIDN'T TELL ME A THING.. SHE SHE MADE FUN OF ME SHE PLAYED WITH MY EMOTIONS ! A CLOSE CHILDHOOD FRIEND OF MINE .. TO DO SUCH A THING TO


C'MON DON'T CRY
DON'T TOUCH ME. I DON'T EVEN KNOW YOU!
I DON'T HAVE ANYTHING TO DO WITH YOU
I'M GOING BACK TO THE MORTAL ON MY OWN! PLEASE DON'T FOLLOW ME AND STAY OUT OF MY LIFE!


THEY'RE GONE YOU KNOW?
SHUT UP AND CALM DOWN
SCREW YOU
FIRST, YOU HUMILIATE ME IN FRONT OF CAROLE
THEN... YOU STEAL HER AFFECTION FROM ME...!
IS SOMETHING I
FROM YOUR SISTER... AND IT'S YOURS


O OY
SHADOW I HAVE SOMETHING TO ASK YOU
A AH! SUDE! WHAT IS IT DAYANNA?
N-N WHAT?
WHERE IS AUGUSTUS. TELL ME?
AH GOOD WHY ISN'T HE RIGHT NEXT TO YOU?
SHADOW SHE KNOWS SHE JUST WENT OUT WITH "RAPHAEL" SO EP


YOU'RE ALL NOTHING BUT LIARS! COLD-HEARTED LIARS!
WAIT DAVIANNA
DAVIANNA!
YOU GUYS GO AHEAD AND LEAVE WITHOUT ME.. I'LL MEET YOU ALL AT MY APARTMENT LATER


WHAT THE FU
EVEN AFTER SHE BLEW MY COVER I TRIED TELLIN' HER THAT YOU'RE HER "AUGUSTUS"
SODDY, BUT
SHE DIDN'T BUY IT
M..MASTER NO RAPHAEL' YOU. YOU '
DAVIANNA.. NO '
EVEN THOUGH IT WAS TOO LATE WHY DID YOU INSIST ON TELLING HER THAT? DOES IT MEAN YOU. ?
WHATEVER ANYWAYS, IT'S 'BOUT TIME YA START MOVIN' IN THE CITY ON YER OWN, SO LET'S EACH GO OUR OWN WAY I'LL MEET CHA AT THE JONES LATER

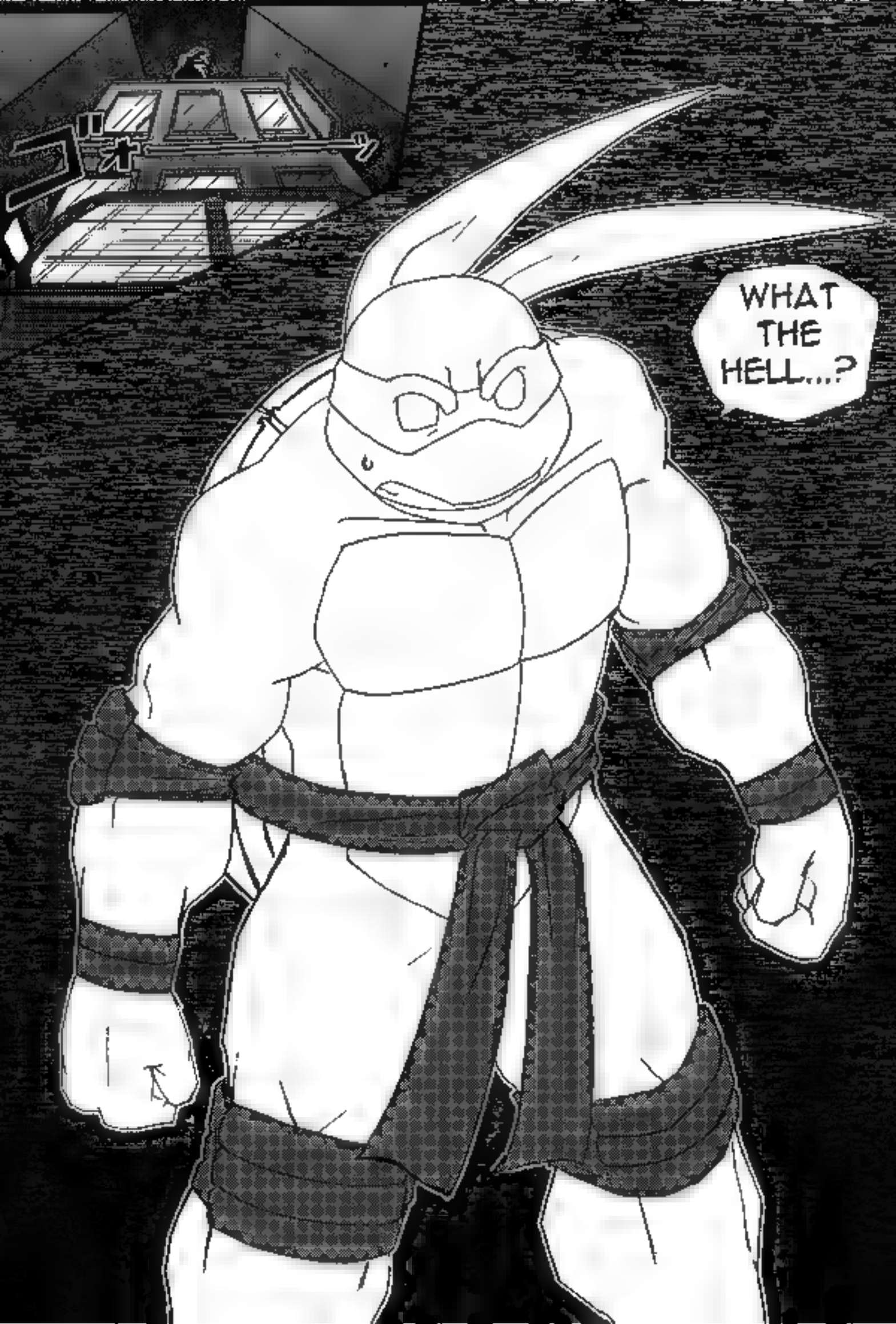

HEY!
DAVIANNA! WAIT UP!
LOOK I'M SORRY! YOU LOOKED SO HAPPY BACK THEN I THOUGHT I HAD TO
WHAT? NOW YOU SAY IT'S OKAY TO KEEP ME BLINDLY HAPPY?


YOU KNEW HE WAS IMPORTANT TO ME!
YOU KNEW HE WAS MY FIRST FRIEND WHEN I MOVED HERE
EVEN SO EVEN SO YOU LIED TO ME!
YOU MADE ME WASTE MY FEELINGS FOR HIM ON A STRANGER!
HE HE WAS YOUR FRIEND TOO DON'T YOU HAVE ANY RESPECT FOR HIS DEATH?
IMAGINE WHAT HE'D THINK IF HE KNEW WHAT YOU AND YOUR MUTANT FRIENDS DID!
DAVIANNA I KNOW WHAT HE'D THINK LISTEN WE NEED TO TALK


コロッ
コロッ
SMOKE BOMBS?
ドドドド
DAV ANNA! GRAB MY ARM! I'LL GET YOU OUTTA HERE!




THAT'S EVEN BETTER THE MORE THE MERRIER
THAT MUTANT TURTLE WOULDN'T


WHAT THE HELL...?

MUTANT NINJA TURTLES GAIDEN



CHAPTER 12

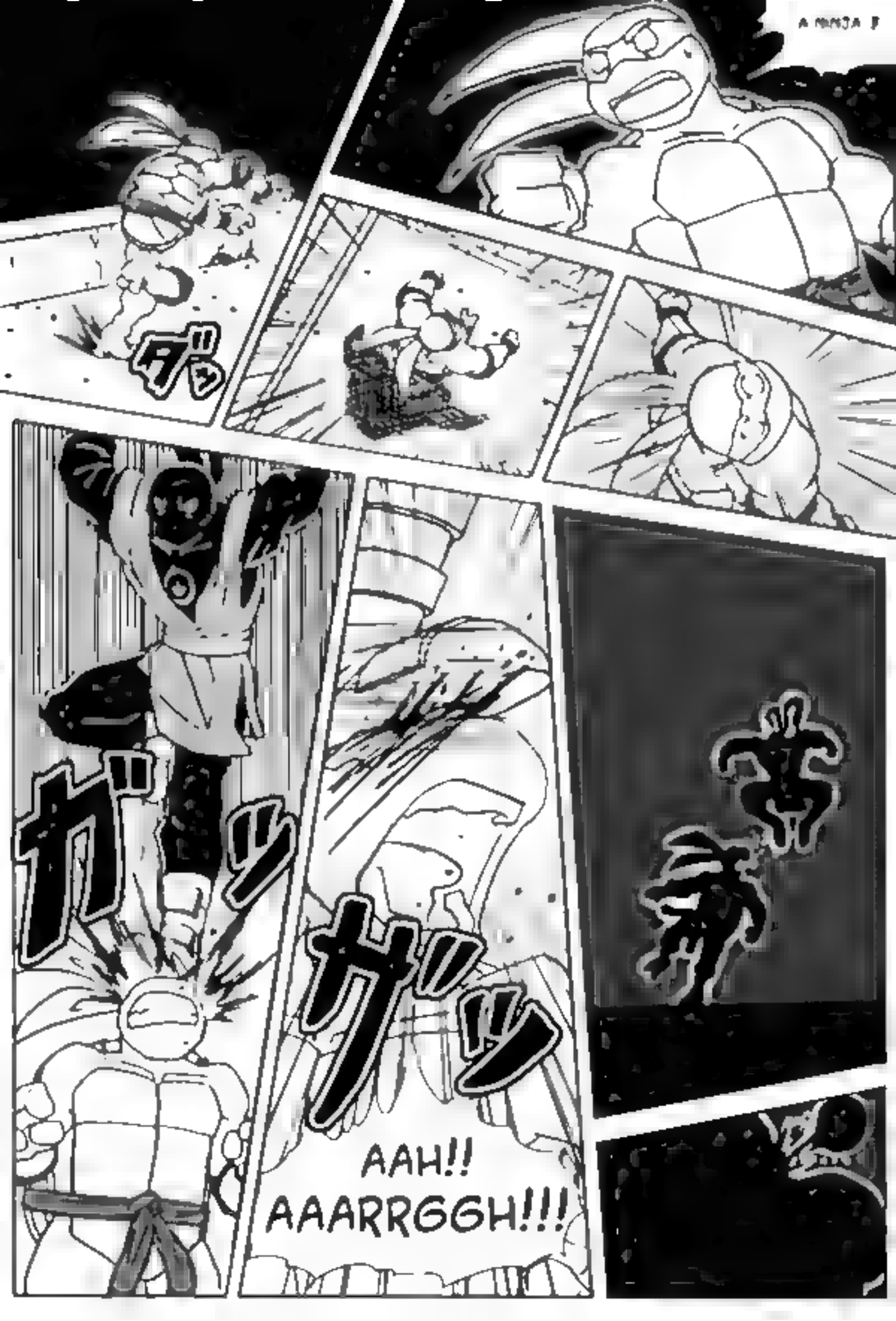
THE CRIMSON CHRISTMAS


ACHOO!
COLD WEATHER WE'RE HAVING, EH DONNIE?
WE'RE GLAD TO HAVE YOU WITH US THIS YEAR. HERE, HAVE SOME HOT COCOA
HEH, THANKS APRIL. I JUST HAPPENED TO HAVE A GAP IN MY "SCHEDULE" THIS YEAR, SO I DECIDED TO DROP BY AND SAY "HI". YOU SAID RAPH'S GONNA COME WITH THAT RENOIR GUY TOO, RIGHT?
AA...


...CHOO!!
ERR...HULLO,
HE'LL BE
OWN
LATER.





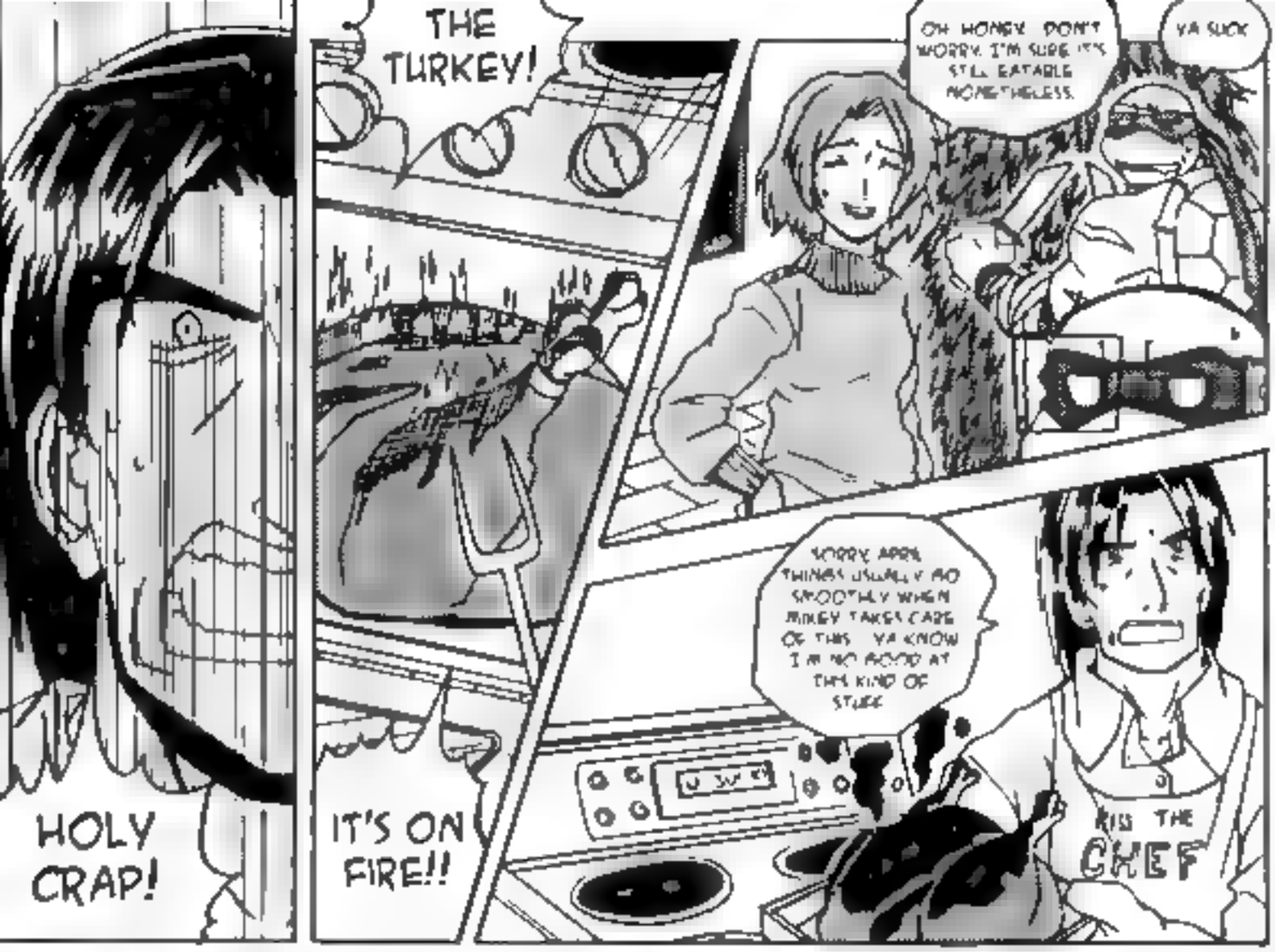

ガッ
ガッ
ガッ
AAH!!
AAARRGGH!!!


GUH...!
ドッ
ゴゴゴ


SOMETHING'S ON YOUR MIND?
YEAH A WHOLE BUNCH OF THINGS.
BUT DONCHA WORRY, APRIL IT AIN'T NO BIG DEAL
HE'S IN HIS ROOM WRAPPING PRESENTS. HE'S A BIT OBSESSED WITH THE "SURPRISE" ASPECT OF CHRISTMAS, SO HE'D LIKE ALL OF US TO KEEP AWAY FROM HIS ROOM UNTIL HE'S DONE
POOR SANTA. HE'S MISSING HIS FAITHFUL LITTLE HELPER SO HE'S ON HIS OWN.
ERR. WASSUP WIT' MIKEY? HOW COME HE AIN'T HERE IN THE LIVIN' ROOM?
I THOUGHT YOU'D NEVER ASK, RAPH.
YO! DONCHA MAKE FUN OF KLUNK, DONNIE! MIKEY LIKED THAT CAT AND SO DID I .. AND YA DID TOO, DARNIT! WHAT THE HELLS WRONG WIT' YA?
WHOA! WHOA! NO FIGHTING ON CHRISTMAS EVE, BOTH OF YOU!
RAPH, WHY DON'T YOU HELP OUT A LITTLE BIT WHILE WAITING FOR SHADOW, AUGUSTUS AND MIKEY? YOU KNOW, THE CHRISTMAS TREE HASN'T BEEN TRIMMED YET AND I WONDERED IF YOU COULD
ARRH YA GOT ME THERE, APRIL YA KNOW I LIKE CUTTIN' THINGS. HOPE YA STILL GOT THOSE BUTTERFLY KNIVES.


I'M SURE YOU HAVE THE RIGHT TO KNOW WHAT WE HAVE IN PLAN FOR YOU AND YOUR FRIEND MISS SONOE
YOU SEE, YOUR UNCLE MICHELANGELO HAS BEEN A LITTLE TOO... CHATTY ABOUT US IN HIS BOOKS LATELY
AND THIS IS BAD FOR OUR BUSINESS... SO BAD WE ARE FORCED TO TAKE DRASTIC MEASURES, SUCH AS SILENCING HIM, FOREVER
USING YOU AS A DECOY, WE'LL LURE HIM INTO AN ABANDONED FACTORY IN THE NEAREST HARBOR!
HE'LL RUN STRAIGHT INTO AN AMBUSH. ALONG!!
ONCE HE SEES A PICTURE OF HIS PRECIOUS NIECE AND HER FRIEND BEING HELD HOSTAGE, HE WON'T GIVE A SECOND THOUGHT ABOUT THE COURSE OF ACTION HE SHOULD TAKE
THEN WE'LL MAKE HIM SUFFER...! WE'LL SKEWER HIM AND MAKE HIM SCREAM HIS LUNGS OUT FOR MERCY UNTIL BLOOD LOSS DOES HIM IN!
BAAAH!!
MMM!!
BEHAVE OR I'LL KILL YOU HERE AND NOW!!
I UNDERSTAND FROM YOUR REACTION THAT YOU DON'T WANT TO SEE YOUR UNCLE SUFFER, IS THAT RIGHT?
DON'T WORRY WE CAN HELP YOU WITH THAT...


PLEASE HELP
SOMEBODY... M... MY EYE HURTS HELP DAS ANNA SH SHADOW H...HELP
HMM?
AAAAAH!!
MONSTER! HERE!
THERE'S A HUGE UGLY MUTANT HERE! RUN FOR YOUR LIVES!
I DON'T WANNA DIE!!
EEEK! IT'S COMING THIS WAY!
I LOOKED AT ME!


HOLY CRAP!
THE TURKEY!
IT'S ON FIRE!!
OH HONEY, DON'T WORRY. I'M SURE IT'S STILL EATABLE NONETHELESS.
YA SUCK
SORRY, APRIL THINGS USUALLY GO SMOOTHLY WHEN MIKEY TAKES CARE OF THIS. YA KNOW I'M NO GOOD AT THIS KIND OF STUFF
KISS THE CHEF


MAN, IS THIS CHRISTMAS TREE PERFECT, OR WHAT?
YA KNOW GUYS, I ALWAYS THOUGHT I WOULD MAKE A GREAT BARBER IF I REALLY BOY DOWN TO IT SERIOUSLY. DONCHA THINK SO?
YEAH, RIGHT YOU'D MESS CUSTOMERS WITH SCALPS AS WIDE AS THIS TREE TO DO YOUR JOB RIGHT. YA DUMMY!
MY, MY.
WHAT IS TAKING SHADOW SO LONG? THE NEW YORK-PRESBYTERIAN HOSPITAL IS NOT THAT FAR FROM HERE
I SAW HER!
SHE TOLD ME SHE'S GONNA COME LATER!!
I SEE


S BLACK CAR LOOKING FOR FOR BLACK CAR...
T LOOKS WOUNDER.. I DON'T THINK IT CAN HARM ANYBODY IN ITS CURRENT STATE.
EEW! HOW FREAKY! IT'S MISSING AN EYEBALL AND IT'S TALKING LIKE US!!
I HEARD IT DEVOURED A GUY A FEW MONTHS AGO...
B..BLACK CAR.. H... HAVE YOU.. SEEN IT .?
B .PLEASE HELP..
LOOKING FOR.. B... BLACK CAR.. FAST
DEAR GOD.. SUCH A GROTESQUE SIGHT. AND ON CHRISTMAS EVE, NO LESS!
PLEASE... HELP ME...
I.. I'M HUMAN TOO...! I...
'I IT HURTS.. MY EYE IT HURTS SO MUCH.. PLEASE HELP.
UGH... WHAT AN ABOMINATION... IT SHOULDN'T BE ALLOWED TO LIVE.
LET'S PIN IT ON THE GROUND UNTIL THE POLICE COMES!
SH.. SHADOW. D .DAVIANNA.. SHADOW... DAVIANNA. !!


GRAAH!
G... GET OUTTA MY WAY!
IT'S ANGRY!
WHA!
GET OUTTA MY WAY!!
I'm A MONSTER! I'm A MONSTER!
AND I'm GONNA EAT ANYONE THAT GETS IN MY WAY!! ANYONE!!!
HEY! IT'S GETTING AWAY!
R..RUN AWAY EVERYONE!!!
IT'S GONNA KILL US!!
IT'S GOING FOR THE ROOFTOPS!


REINOIR'S COMING... THIS MEANS I'LL BE ABLE TO GET MY HANDS ON MORE SAMPLES.
WHY SUCH A STERN FACE, DONNIE? IT'S CHRISTMAS! REJOICE! SMILE A LITTLE BIT MORE!
I KNOW, LET'S SING
UH, ALRIGHT APRIL.
YO, CASEY! DID'JA GET YER HANDS THAT THING I ASK YA FOR?
HEH, SURE THING, RAPH. MIKEY'S MUST BE WRAPPING IT RIGHT NOW.
DONCHA WORRY.
IT'S TOP QUALITY!
THANKS A BUNCH, MAN.
♪ "GOOD KING WINCESLAS WENT OUT ON THE FEAST OF STEPHEN..." ♪
"...WHEN THE SNOW LAY ROUND ABOUT, DEEP AND CRISP AND EVEN!" ♪


DONE AT LAST
WELL, THAT'S ONE PART OF MY LONG LIST OF TASKS COMPLETED FOR
NOW, FOR THE UGLY AND
GO OUT THERE AND STAND RAPH FOR THE REST OF THE NIGHT
A SHURIKEN... AND A LETTER ?


AND THIS WAS FOR THAT
ROUGH HER UP AS MUCH AS YOU WANT
GONNA DISPOSE OF HER ANYWAYS
WE'RE THE REAL THING... WE DON'T TAKE ANYONE




SOMEBODY... HELP ME... HELP ME...!!
GOOD NIGHT, MISS JONES!
I DON'T WANT TO DIE!! I DON'T WANT TO DIE!!


LET'S GET ON WITH THE PLAN.
ゴオオオオ...

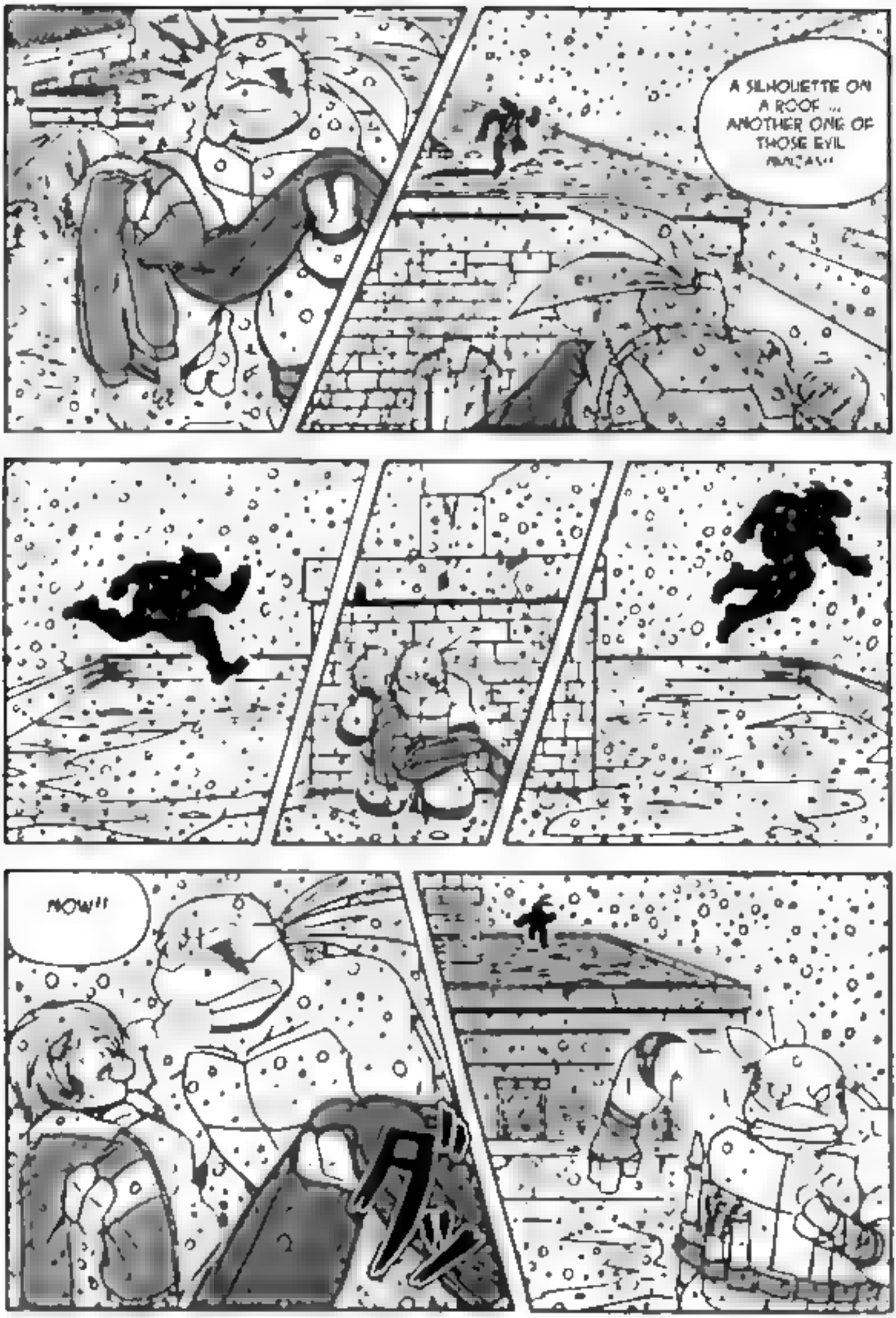

KEEP OUT
OH MON
DAYIANNA, WAIT HERE!
HER!"

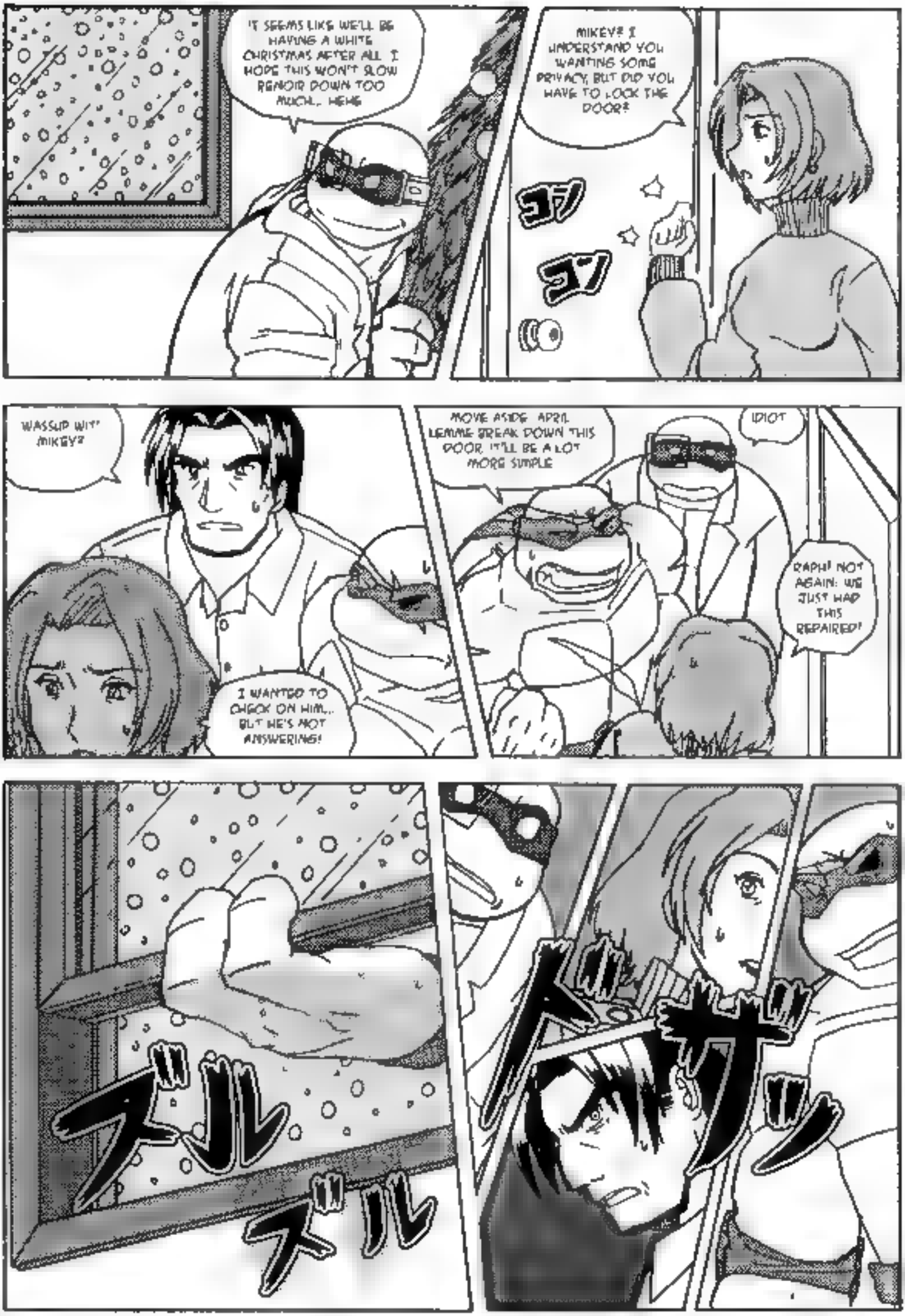

SHADOW!!
DON'T LEAVE ME ALONE!!


"COUGH"
"COUGH"
!!
R...RE NOIR.
A... AUGUS.. TUS.
I I WAS SCARED. I. I !!
SHADOW. !!




THE MORE I STRAY AWAY FROM MY PAST..
BACK INTO THE WORLD OF DARKNESS, THEN.
PAIN... I'M READY TO DIVE INTO YOUR ARMS NOW.
THE MORE IT CATCHES UP WITH ME. POISONING MY CURRENT LIFE.
TONIGHT THERE'S NO ESCAPE NO WAY I CAN KEEP DENYING.
...BECAUSE SOMEONE CALLED MICHELANGELO HAMATO IS SCREAMING AT THE BOTTOM OF MY SOUL, TELLING ME WE HAVE AT LAST TOUCHED COMMON GROUND AND THAT WE SHOULD COOPERATE.
WE BOTH WANT TO PROTECT OUR LOVED ONES NO MATTER WHAT.


A SILHOUETTE ON A ROOF ... ANOTHER ONE OF THOSE EVIL NINJAS!!
MOW!!

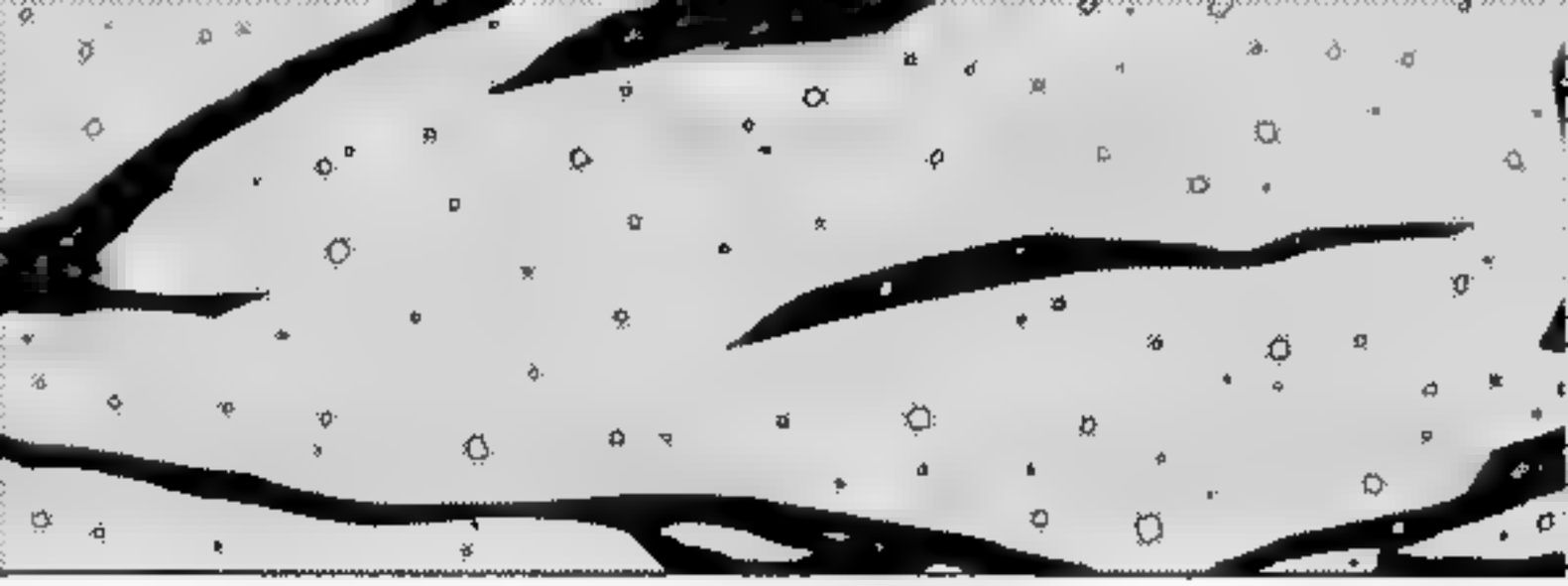

IT SEEMS LIKE WE'LL BE HAVING A WHITE CHRISTMAS AFTER ALL. I HOPE THIS WON'T SLOW RENOIR DOWN TOO MUCH... HEHE
MIKEY? I UNDERSTAND YOU WANTING SOME PRIVACY, BUT DID YOU HAVE TO LOCK THE DOOR?
コン
コン
WASSUP WIT' MIKEY?
I WANTED TO CHECK ON HIM... BUT HE'S NOT ANSWERING!
MOVE ASIDE APRIL. LEMME BREAK DOWN THIS DOOR. IT'LL BE A LOT MORE SIMPLE
IDIOT
RAPH! NOT AGAIN! WE JUST HAD THIS REPAIRED!
ドル
ドル
ドル

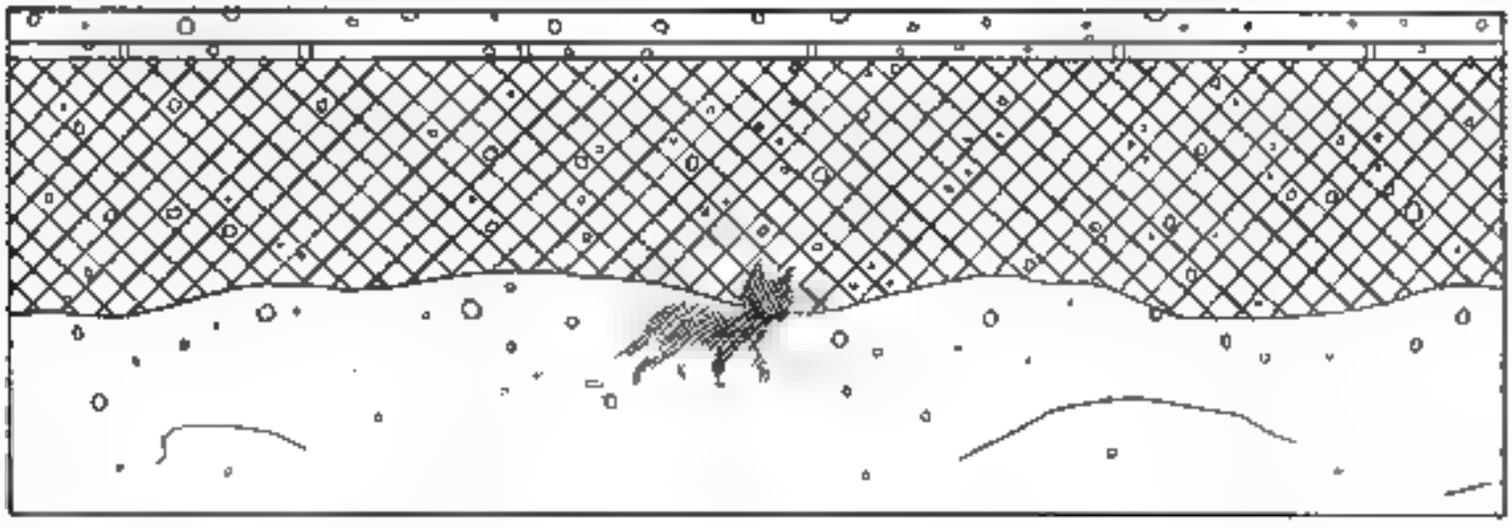

RENOIR!!
SHADOW!!
AT LAST... MADE IT...
UNCLE MIKEY... HE.. HE MUST NOT... LEAVE... IT'S... IT'S AN AMBUSH...!

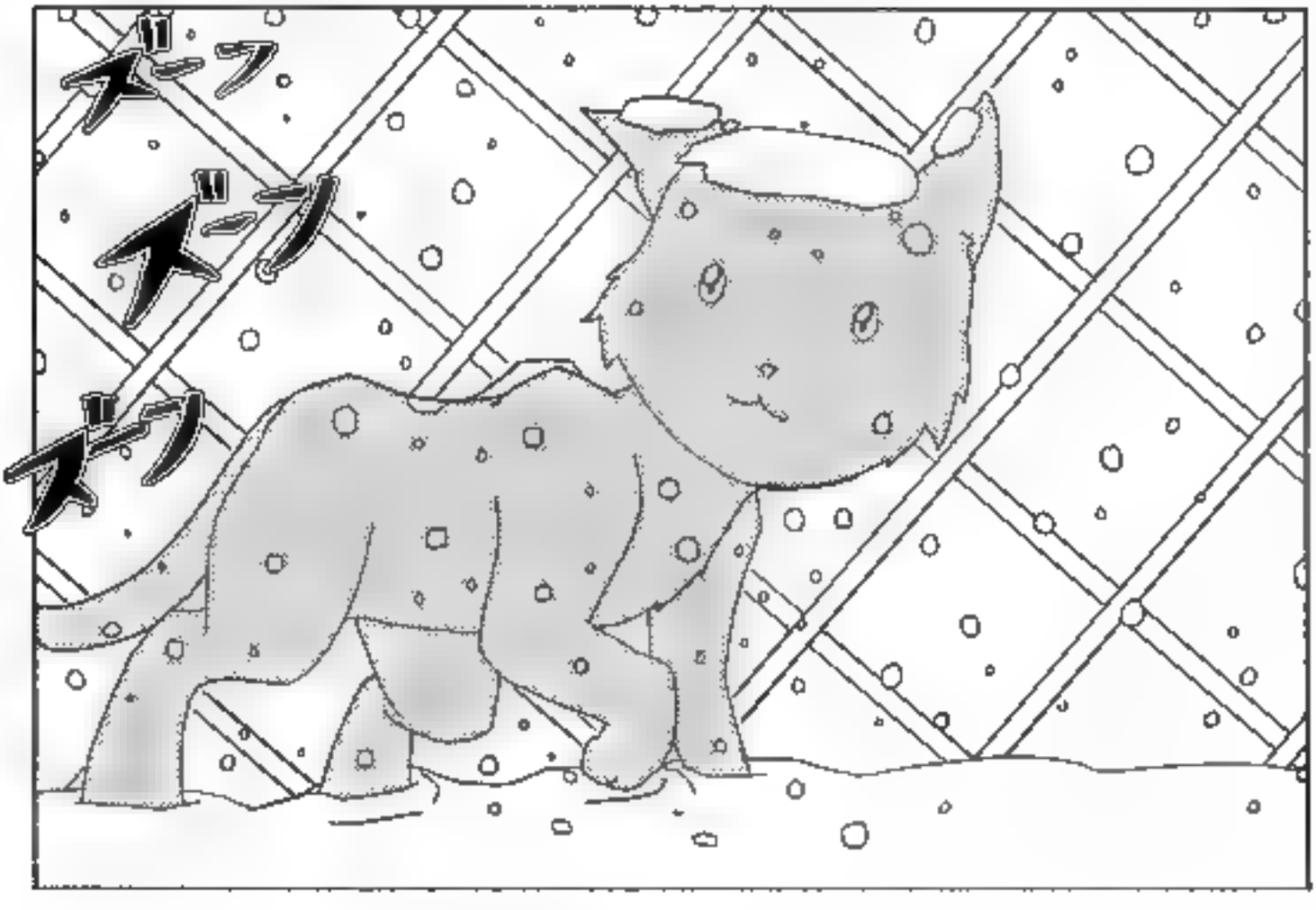
MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
MNT 外伝
GAIDEN



CHAPTER 13
BACK INTO THE SHADOWS

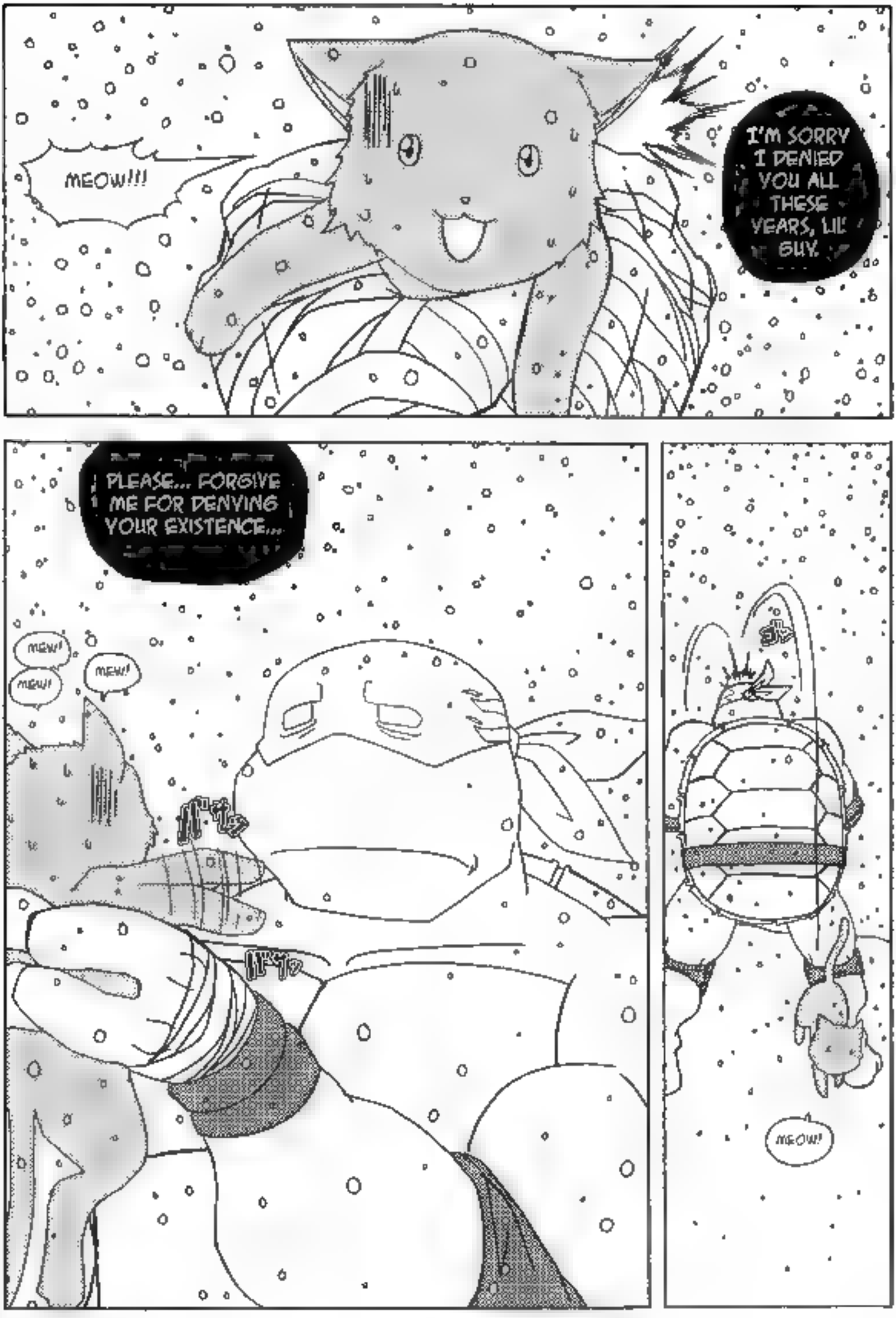





ズン
ズン
ズン


ズッ
ズッ
ズズー
バッ


I JUST REMEMBERED
HUMAN WORLD
IT CALLED HIM "KLUNK"


MEOW!!!
I'M SORRY I DENIED YOU ALL THESE YEARS, LIL' GUY.
PLEASE... FORGIVE ME FOR DENYING YOUR EXISTENCE...
MEW!
MEW!
MEW!
MEOW!




MIKEY, 'TIS CASEY HERE! C'MON, LET US IN!
ドン
ドン
YA KNOW WHAT? I THINK HE'S JUST CURLED UP IN A BALL CRYIN'!! WAIT TILL I BREAK DOWN THIS DOOR, I'LL...
ドン
WHA ?
HIS WINDOW'S OPEN! HE'S ALREADY GONE!
MEANS HE'S GOIN'
AFTER FOOT
OH, BROTHER.


I WONDER IF MIKEY CAN FEND OFF FOOT NINJAS AFTER ALL THESE YEARS.
WELL, HE DID WORK OUT TO STAY IN SHAPE BUT NO NINJA TRAININ', SO
UNC' MIKEY.
UURRRGGHH!! THAT SHITHEAD!!
WHY'D HE HAVE TO INVOLVE SHADOW AND RENOIR!?
RAPH, PLEASE CALM DOWN.
AAAND HE'S AT IT AGAIN.


WAIT! WHERE DO YOU THINK YOU'RE GOING?
HEADING OUT EMPTY HANDED WITH ABSOLUTELY NO CLUE AS TO WHERE MIKEY, THAT GIRL AND THE FOOT NINJAS ARE... DON'T MAKE ME LAUGH
スタ
スタ
スタ
SAVE DAVIANNA
INCLUDIN' MIKEY'S!!
OKAY, GENIUS!!
I'LL SHOW YA MY TELEPATHY!!
ヲッ
ヲッ
ヲッ
ヲッ
ヲッ


RAPH...! HAVE YA GONE NUTS?
URGGHHH... WHAT THE F...!
JUST 'CUZ YOU'RE UPSET DOESN'T MEAN YA CAN DO STUPID THINGS LIKE VENT OUT YOUR ANGER ON YOUR OWN FAMILY!
WHY, CASEY.


WHY DO YA SINGLE ME OUT, CASEY. WHEN YA FEEL EXACTLY THE SAME!!
BE ME SO MAD THAT YA WANNA BEAT THE CRAP OUTTA EVERY-THING THAT PISSES YA OFF.. DON'CHA FEEL LIKE THAT TOO!?
RAPH! JUST WHAT ARE YOU.
WE SAT BACK, LET HIM HAVE HIS WAY ALL THOSE YEARS AND NEVER STOPPED HIM!!
YOUR OWN KID, CASEY... YOUR OWN FRICKIN' KID GOT THRASHED 'CUZ OF MIKEY!! AND 'CUZ OF US!!
HOW CAN YA WANT TO STAY PUT KNOWIN' WE LET THIS HAPPEN?
THAT'S 'CUZ... WE REGRET NOTHING UNC' RAPH.


WHAT?
DON'T BE STUPID! YA ALMOST GOT KILLED!
ALMOST B. BUT LOOK. I UNCLE RAPH. I'M STILL HERE RIGHT? AND YOUR "STUDENT" TOO...
W. WE GOT BEATEN UP REAL B BAD BUT WE'RE S. STILL ALIVE AND KICKING... UNCLE MIKEY'S ON H. HIS WAY TO A HUGE FIGHT HE, TOO, IS STILL ALIVE. DAVIANNA R. PROBABLY IS TOO.. N. NOTHING'S OVER YET NOTHING'S IRREVERSIBLE YET T THERE NOTHING TO GET UPSET ABOUT YET!!
SO WE MUST (COUGH) STOP WASTING T TIME AND (COUGH) GO HELP (COUGH) I...I'LL (COUGH) I'LL SHOW THE WAY (COUGH) (COUGH)
YOU ARE GOING NOWHERE, YOUNG GIRL! AN AMBULANCE IS ON ITS WAY, SO JUST LIE DOWN AND REST FOR NOW!
RAPHAEL LISTEN. LIFE IS TOO SHORT TO WASTE IT REGRETTING THE PAST WE MUSTN'T FORGET TO JUST... "LIVE AND LET LIVE"
THAT'S WHY THE LEAST WE SHOULD ALL DO IS NEVER LOOK BACK ON DECISIONS THAT COME FROM THE HEART... AND DEAL WITH THE CONSEQUENCES.
MIKEY DECIDED TO FOLLOW HIS HEART AND BECAME A WRITER. WE FOLLOWED OURS TOO THAT'S WHY WE SUPPORTED HIM, AND ALWAYS WILL
YA CAN'T EXPECT ME TO SEE GLITTERIN' RAINBOWS AND FLYIN' UNICORNS IN MY LIFE LIKE YOU DO, APRIL!

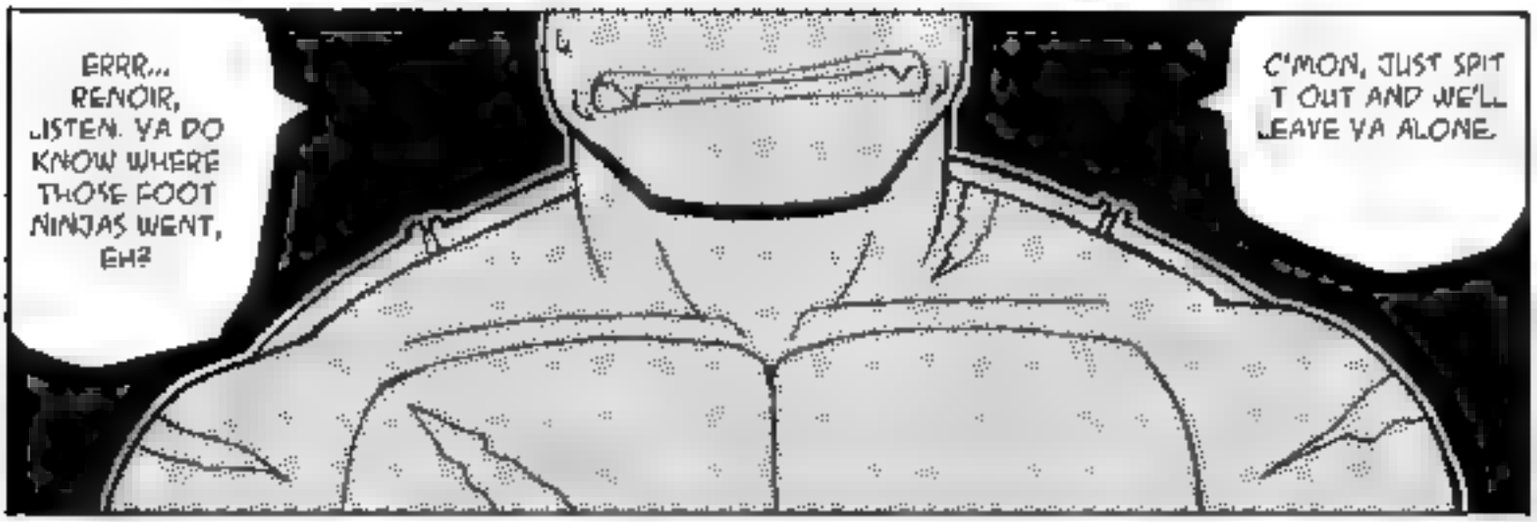

RAPH! I'M NOT ASKING YOU TO DISTORT YOUR VIEW ON REALITY! I KNOW YOU WENT THROUGH A LOT, BUT YOU HAVE TO STOP LETTING YOUR PAST POISON YOUR LIFE!
DON'T YOU SEE? YOU CAN'T EVEN HANDLE THIS SITUATION RATIONALLY! YOU'VE BECOME COMPLETELY UNABLE TO REACT POSITIVELY TO ANYTHING!
WHY USE THE PAST AS A REASON TO MAKE YOUR LIFE MISER-ABLE, RAPH? CAN'T YOU SEE YOU DON'T NEED TO FOCUS ON IT TO LIVE?
GERRGH.
IT'S NOT JUST THAT YOU CAN'T HELP OTHERS, WE CAN'T EVEN HELP YOU LIKE THIS... YOU NEED TO OPEN YOUR HEART A BIT MORE, RAPH. HAVE FAITH IN THOSE WHO ONLY WISH YOU WELL... YOUR FAMILY... WE WOULD NEVER TURN OUR BACK ON YOU.
URRRGH.. I GET IT.., I GET IT.. I'M SORRY DONNIE, I DIDN'T MEAN T
SURE YOU DID BUT I'LL FORGIVE NONETHELESS. AS USUAL
CASEY. I DIDN'T MEAN YOU WERE A BAD PARENT OR ANYTHING, I
I KNOW I SHOULDA REACTED DIFFERENTLY...
T'S OKAY, RAPH.

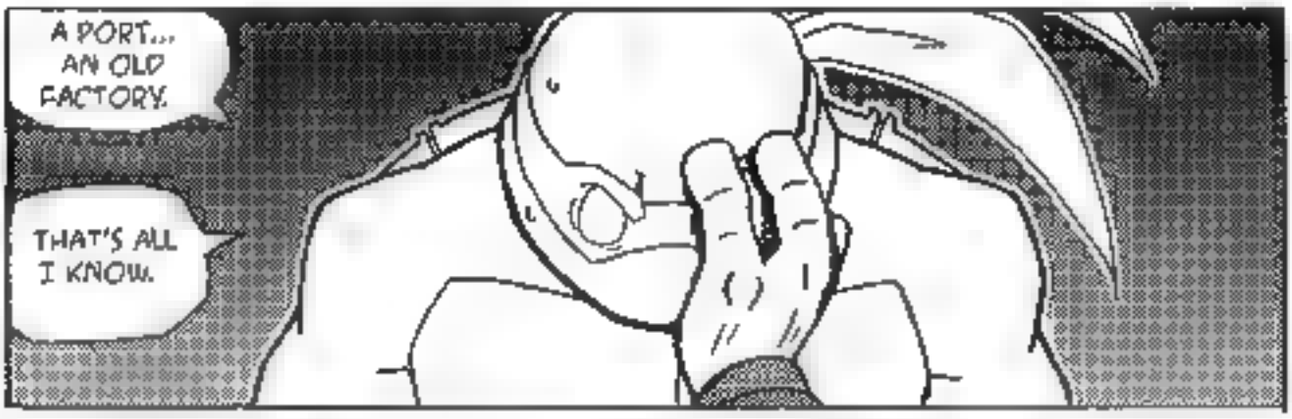

DAD PROUD, SHADOW... NEXT TIME, TRY NOT TO GET BEATEN UP, 'KAY?
AND LET LS VETERANS HAVE OUR SHARE OF THE ACT.ON...
ONE PIECE!
OH, DEAR DO NOT CONDONE VIOLENCE, CASEY.

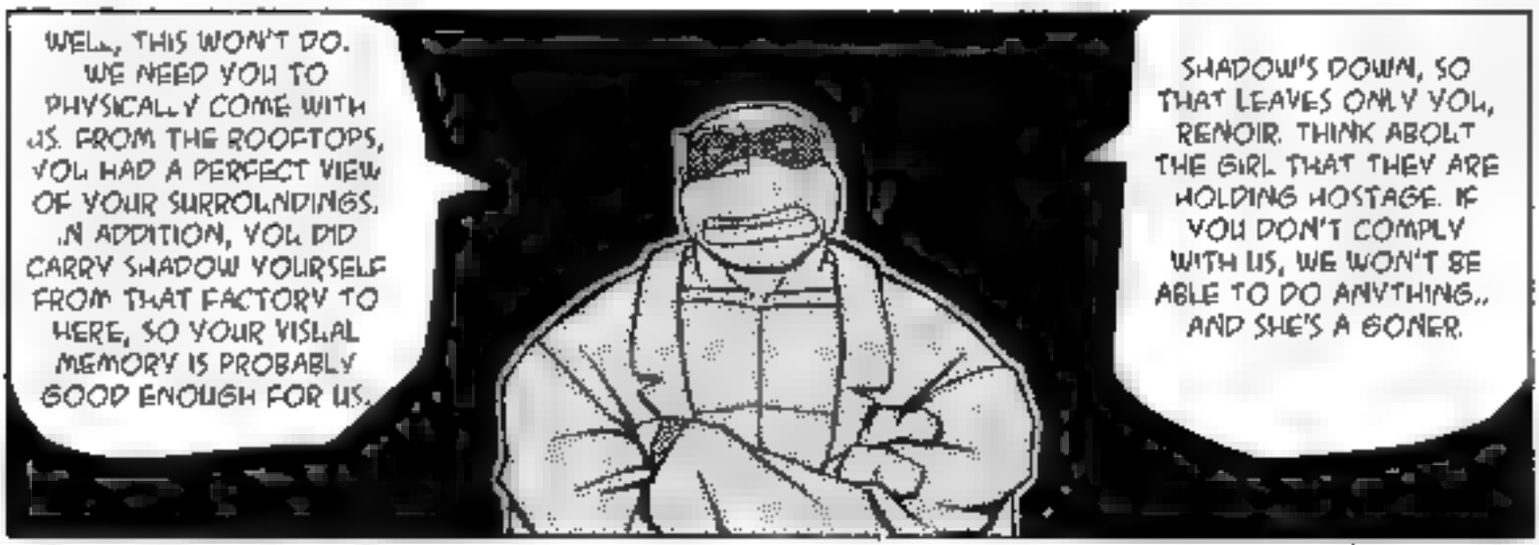

IT WAS, A PORT MUM
WITH... FACTORIES AROUND IT AND ERRR
R..DON'T REMEMBER MUCH... (COUGH) (COUGH) ..TOO DISTRACTED BY ANGER...
THEN (COUGH) I TOO EXHAUSTED (COUGH) I TO OPEN EYES (COUGH
HEY DE
SHADOW, I'M NOT SO PROUD OF YOU AFTER ALL
OUR ONLY LEAD
WAIT! SHE GOT CARRIED HERE BY
CARRIED SO HE MUST KNOW WHERE THEY WERE
HMM...


N.. NO!!
NO!!
I DON'T WANNA DIE!!
ERRR. RENOIR'S WIMPIN' OUT, SO LET HIM BE. HE'S GONNA SLOW US DOWN ANYWAYS, EH?
W. WE CAN MANAGE WITHOUT HIM.
NO, WE CAN'T TIME IS RUNNING OUT HE'S OUR ONLY LEAD, SO HE'S COMING WITH US.
DONNIE! GIVE HIM A DAMN BREAK! CAN'TCHA SEE HE'S HAD ENOUGH OF IT ALREADY?


I SEE. SO RENOIR SHOULD BE ALLOWED TO SIT THIS ONE OUT JUST BECAUSE HE'S "HAD ENOUGH OF IT"?
LIVES ARE AT STAKE, YET YOU'RE NOT WILLING TO ASK HIM TO PUSH HIS LIMITS A LITTLE BIT?
YOU PERSECUTED MIKEY FOR THE LAST 17 YEARS, AND WHY? JUST BECAUSE YOU WANTED HIM TO SHARE YOUR STATE OF MIND AND SUFFER WITH YOU. NO LIVES AT STAKE HERE.
I JUST LOVE HOW YOU ACT SO AMBIGUOUSLY ALL THE TIME, RAPHAEL.
MIKEY'S AFRAID OF PAIN AND DEATH. SO IS RENOIR YET YOUR BROTHER'S GONE TO FACE HIS FEARS ON HIS OWN... YOUR 17 YEARS OF "HARD WORK" HAVE FINALLY PAID UP EH?
OH, AND RENOIR? NAH, HE'S EXCUSED BECAUSE YOU WANT IT .. EVEN IF HE'S NEEDED NOW.
TSK TSK. NOW ISN'T THIS SITUATION INFINITELY UNFAIR...
...TO YOUR OWN BROTHER, RAPHAEL?


ERRR... RENOIR, LISTEN. YA DO KNOW WHERE THOSE FOOT NINJAS WENT, EH?
C'MON, JUST SPIT IT OUT AND WE'LL LEAVE YA ALONE.

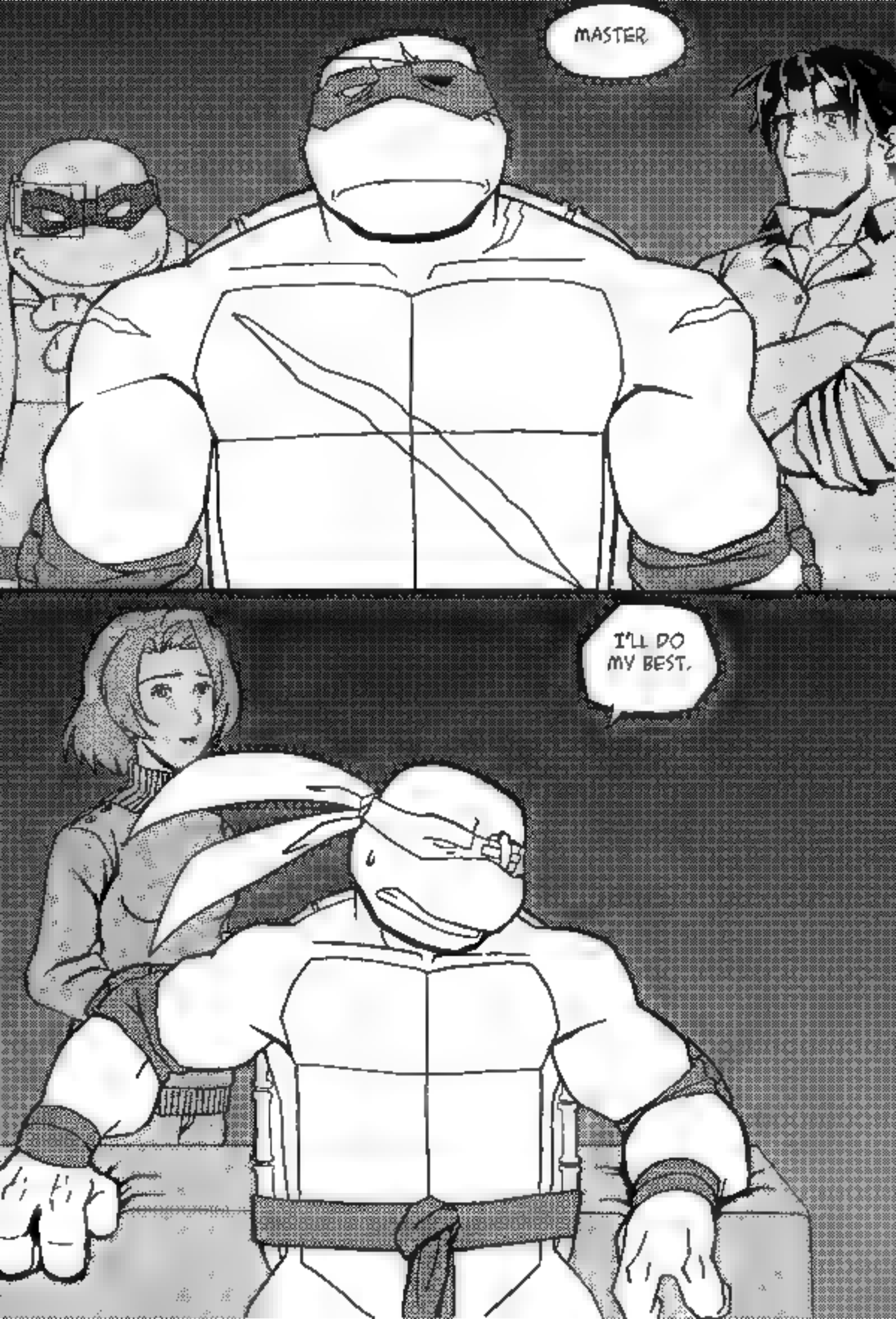

A PORT... AN OLD FACTORY.
THAT'S ALL I KNOW.


WELL, THIS WON'T DO. WE NEED YOU TO PHYSICALLY COME WITH US. FROM THE ROOFTOPS, YOU HAD A PERFECT VIEW OF YOUR SURROUNDINGS. IN ADDITION, YOU DID CARRY SHADOW YOURSELF FROM THAT FACTORY TO HERE, SO YOUR VISUAL MEMORY IS PROBABLY GOOD ENOUGH FOR US.
SHADOW'S DOWN, SO THAT LEAVES ONLY YOU, RENOIR. THINK ABOUT THE GIRL THAT THEY ARE HOLDING HOSTAGE. IF YOU DON'T COMPLY WITH US, WE WON'T BE ABLE TO DO ANYTHING.. AND SHE'S A GONER.


I'M TIRED, OKAY? I'M TIRED OF BEING FORCED TO PRETEND TO BE WHAT I'M NOT AND SUFFERING FROM IT!
MY FRIEND DAVIANNA'S IN DANGER BECAUSE OF THAT "MIKEY"! HE'S YOUR BROTHER, SO TAKE RESPONSIBILTY AND STRAIGHTEN THINGS OUT YOURSELVES! DON'T LUMP ME WITH YOU NINJAS!


SCREW YOU, YA LIL' [illegible] I WANTED YOU TO STAY, BUT IT AIN'T GONNA HAPPEN, CAPICHE?
JP
DON'T.. MAKE THINGS MORE DIFFICULT THAN THEY ALREADY
SCREW YOU!
NOW STOP ACTIN' [illegible] YOU'RE COMIN' [illegible]
SAME TOO, BUT LET'S TRUST RAPH ON THIS ONE.


LOOK, IF YOU'RE GONNA THROW AWAY YOUR NINJA IDENTITY, JUST DO IT
I DON'T CARE ANYMORE. IT'S NOT LIKE IT'S GONNA CHANGE ANYTHIN'
HOWEVER, KNOW THIS.. EVERYTIME YA GIVE SOMEONE YOUR WORD, THAT'S WHEN YA SHOW YOUR TRUE SELF
ONLY ONCE YA GAVE ME YOUR WORD, KID NOT AS A NINJA TURTLE OR AS RENOIR, BUT JUST AS A PERSON WHO DIDN'T WANNA GIVE UP ON ME, EVEN IF I AIN'T WORTH IT .. THAT'S WHAT I SAW IN YOU
NO ONE'S A NOBODY IN THIS WORLD. WE ALL HAVE AN IDENTITY. AND IF THERE WAS ONE FOR YA THAT WE'D PROBABLY BOTH AGREE ON.....
IT'S GOTTA BE THAT ONE


MASTER.
I'LL DO MY BEST.


HERE.
WE MAKE SOME PREPARATIONS HERE.
YOU KNOW, YOUR BITCHY FRIEND HIT ME REAL HARD IN THE BALLS
NOW THAT SHE'S DEAD.. YOU'RE GONNA PAY FOR WHAT SHE DID


DON'T...DON'T TOUCH ME!!
WHERE SHOULD I START
IDIOT!
ドン!!
UUURGHH!
バギ!!!
DON'T LOWER YOURSELF TO THE LEVEL OF THOSE PUNY PURPLE DRAGONS! WE ONLY KILL, WE DON'T DISHONOR AND RAPE WOMEN!
SHIIIT!! MY JAW!!!
LOWEST OF THE LOW...
THAT'S WHAT YOU ARE.
NO MATTER WHAT YOU SAY.


HOW CAN YOU SEE MORE DIGNITY IN "KILLING" THAN "RAPING"?
WHO SAID ANYTHING ABOUT DIGNITY?
BOTH ACTS ARE JUST AS IMMORAL AND UNFORGIVABLE!!
I WAS SIMPLY IMPLYING THAT THE PURPLE DRAGONS ARE INFERIOR BECAUSE THEY ACT ACCORDING TO THEIR INDIVIDUAL NEEDS AND IMPULSES. THEY LACK AMBITION.
UNLIKE THEM, WE FOOT NINJAS ACT AS A WHOLE. WE ONLY FOCUS ON COMMON OBJECTIVES SO THAT EVERYTHING WE DO IS PROFITABLE TO OUR INDEPENDANT CLAN. THUS... WE ARE SUPERIOR TO THOSE WORTHLESS GANGSTERS.
FOR EXAMPLE, YOUR FRIEND'S USEFULNESS WAS UP SO WE COULD ALLOW OURSELVES TO DISPOSE OF HER TO GET RID OF EXCESS BAGGAGE...
...SPEAKING OF WHICH, IT'S ALMOST TIME FOR YOU TO FULFILL YOUR PURPOSE. THAT'S WHY I WANTED YOU TO REMAIN ALIVE AND HEALTHY.
WE NEED SOME INCENTIVE FOR OUR GUEST ONCE HE GETS HERE... A SCREAMING GIRL WITH A BLADE AT HER THROAT WOULD BE APPROPRIATE, DON'T YOU THINK?




KIT
S...
SHIT!!
I JUST REMEMBERED...
IN BATTLE, THERE IS NO TIME TO THINK ABOUT PAIN. ONE SECOND OF DISTRACTION, AND I'M DEAD




CAN'T... TAKE IT ANYMORE... MY ARM...
IT... IT HURTS...!
I HAVE TO DO SOMETHING...!

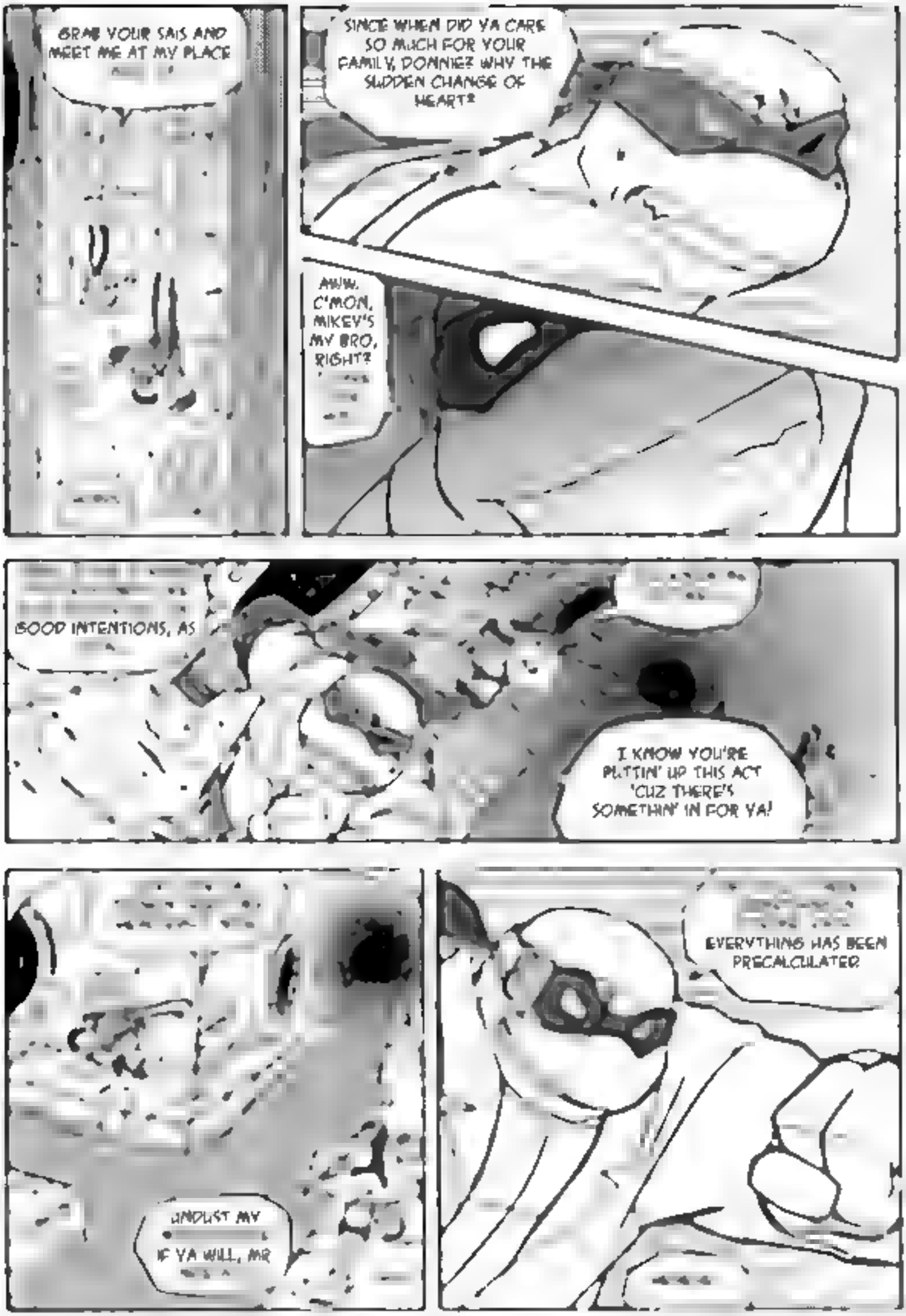



DONNIE! I FOUND MY SHELL CELL!
GOOD. PASS IT TO CASEY!
THANKS, HON.
CATCH!
LIKE I SAID, WE'LL SPLIT INTO TWO GROUPS TEMPORARILY.
CASEY, HAVE RENOIR GUIDE YOU TO WHERE HE LAST SAW THE FOOT NINJAS AND SCOUT YOUR SURROUNDINGS! THAT'S OUR ONLY LEAD, BUT CHANCES ARE THEY HAVEN'T MOVED FAR FROM THERE! JUST MAKE SURE YOU STAY WELL HIDDEN!
MEANWHILE, RAPH AND I WILL GO GRAB OUR WEAPONS IN OUR LAIR. WE'RE UP AGAINST FOOT NINJAS SO WE MUSTN'T TAKE ANY CHANCES! WITHOUT THEM, WE'RE AS GOOD AS DEAD...
THEN WE'RE GOING TO JOIN YOU GUYS USING OUR SHELL CELLS' RADARS AND RAPH'S MOTORCYCLE... OKAY?
C'MON, ROOKIE! LET'S HIT THE ROAD!
Y.. YES, MR. JONES!
WAIT, RENOIR!


JUST USE IT, OKAY?
ALRIGHT, GUYS, GET GOING NOW! MIKEY AND DAVIANNA ARE COUNTING ON YOU!
I KNOW YOU'RE A LOT STRONGER THAN THOSE FOOT NINJAS THEY DON'T STAND A CHANCE AGAINST YOU, SO...
...COME BACK SAFE AND SOUND FOR CHRISTMAS... ALL OF YOU!


HOP IN THE BACKSEAT, RENOIR.
VESSIR.
HOPE YA DON'T MIND ME CALLIN' YA THAT FOR THE TIME BEING. I'M STILL KINDA CONFUSED AS TO WHO YOU ARE... AND IT MAKES THINGS MORE SIMPLE FOR EVERYBODY.
IT'S OKAY. I GET THAT ALL THE TIME. CALL ME WHATEVER YOU WANT.
THANKS FOR SAVING MY DAUGHTER, LIL' GUY.
SHADOW'S GONNA BE OKAY, RIGHT?
OH COURSE! HER BURNIN' PASSION FOR JUSTICE AIN'T GONNA LET HER DOWN! SHE'LL PULL THROUGH JUST FINE!
WITH A FATHER LIKE THIS, NO WONDER SHE'S SO WILD.
SHE'S JUST LIKE HER DAD... I'M SO PROUD OF MY MINI-VIGILANTE!!
HEY, WHY DON'CHA OPEN YOUR PRESENT NOW?
MINE?
RAPH HAD ME SEARCHIN' ALL OF NEW YORK FOR THE BEST ONES FOR YA. YA MUST MEAN A LOT TO HIM...
From RAPH
RENOIR


A PAIR OF TONFAS... ? RAPHAEL...
GWAH!!
ENOUGH TALKIN'! LET'S MAKE THOSE SCUM PAY FOR WHAT THEY DID TO SHADOW!!
I'M COUNTIN' ON YA, RENO'R! SHOW ME THE WAY!!
GAAAH!! MY EYE SOCKET!!
FOCUS, KID! FOCUS!!
T TURN AROUND! TURN AROUND! YOU'RE GOING THE WRONG WAY!!


GRAB YOUR SAIS AND MEET ME AT MY PLACE
SINCE WHEN DID YA CARE SO MUCH FOR YOUR FAMILY, DONNIE? WHY THE SUDDEN CHANGE OF HEART?
AWW, C'MON, MIKEY'S MY BRO, RIGHT?
GOOD INTENTIONS, AS
I KNOW YOU'RE PUTTIN' UP THIS ACT 'CUZ THERE'S SOMETHIN' IN FOR YA!
UNDUST MY
IF YA WILL, MR
EVERYTHING HAS BEEN PRECALCULATED

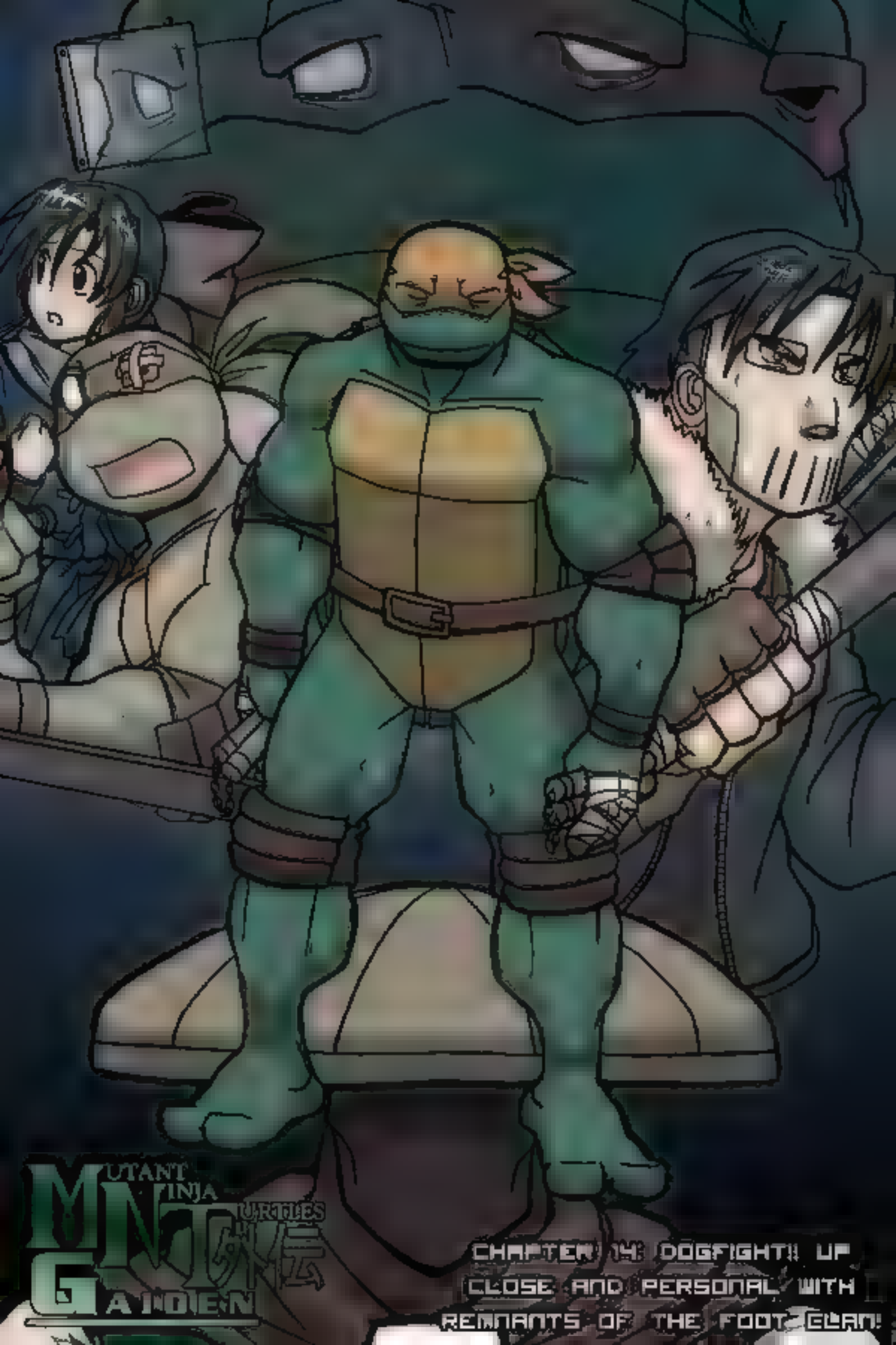

"URGH!!"
RUNNING AWAY JUST MAKES IT WORSE...
LIKE A NINJA
MATTER HOW WELL PREPARED YOU ARE, IF YOU ARE ATTACKED BY AN INVIS
YOUR CHANCES TO SURVIVE ARE VERY SLIM, MICHELANGELO"
"BUMMER. AND I THOUGHT WE NINJA TURTLES WERE INVINCIBLE!"
"YOU'RE A NINJA, MICHELANGELO! ONE WITH THE GIFT OF AGILITY! IF ANYONE, YOU CAN EASILY TURN THE TABLES IF YOU WANTED TO!"
STEALTH! AS A NINJA, YOU MUST BECOME ONE WITH THE SHADOWS! THEN YOU MIGHT BE ABLE TO GAIN THE
"YOU MEAN THAT 'CAT THING' THAT LEO DOES TO FREAK CASEY OUT?"
"I YES, PUT IT THAT WAY..."
SENSEI'S SHOW ME




MICHELANGELO HAMATO, WE KNOW YOU ARE
THANK YOU FOR JOINING US TONIGHT...
WITH US?

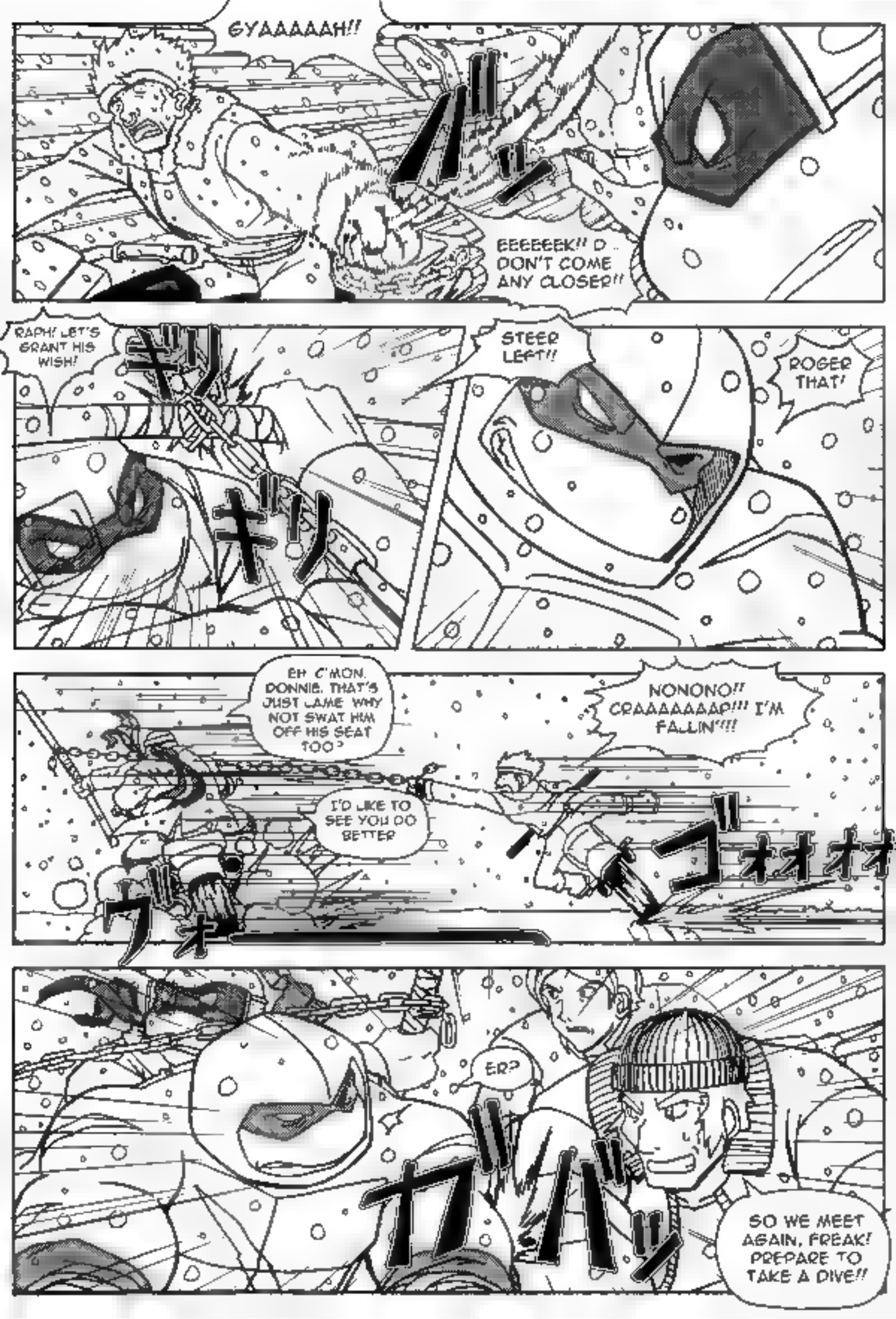

NO!! NO, PLEASE DON'T COME OUT! RUN AWAY WHILE YOU STILL CAN!!
NOTHING GOOD WILL COME OUT OF IT! IT'LL MAKE NO DIFFERENCE!
THEY'LL KILL ME EITHER WAY!!
JUST LIKE THEY KILLED SHADOW!!
SHADOW IS...
...DEAD!!

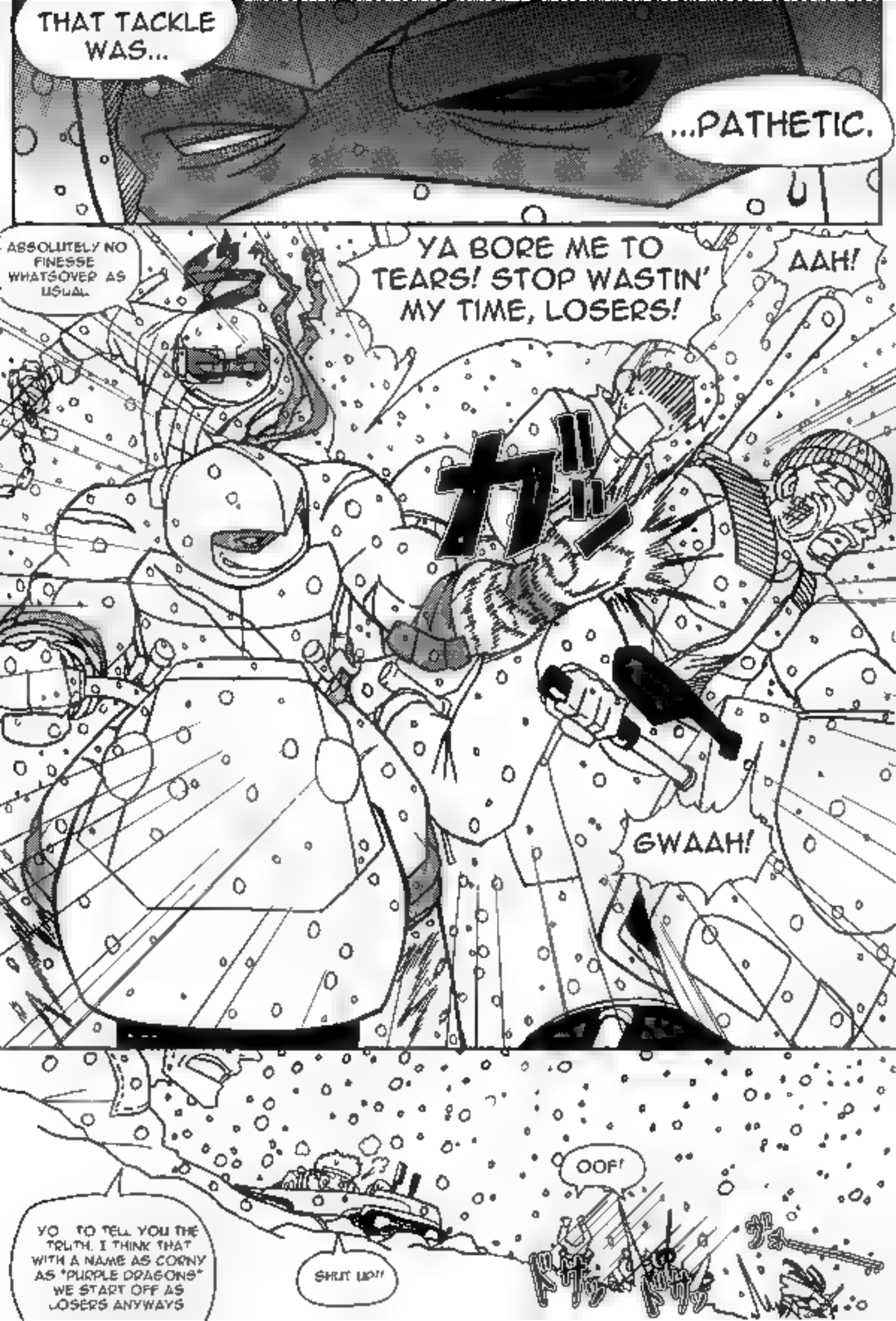

INDEED ONLY ONE INNOCENT LIFE REMAINING. YOU COWER AWAY, SHE DIES HERE AND NOW. YOU SHOW UP, SHE "MIGHT" LIVE.
THE QUESTION IS... WITH ONE GIRL GONE, IS THE OTHER ONE STILL WORTH IT?


MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
MNTG
GAIDEN
CHAPTER 14: DOGFIGHT!! UP CLOSE AND PERSONAL WITH REMNANTS OF THE FOOT CLAN!


WHERE TO NEXT, DONNIE?
TURN LEFT ON LAIRD STREET!
GOTCHA!
WE'RE GONNA HAVE TO TAKE SHORTCUTS TO AVOID ENCOUNTERING HUMANS! THE LAST THING WE NEED NOW IS TO BE SLOWED DOWN!
STATIN' THE OBVIOUS AREN'T CHA...?
HUH?
THERE THEY ARE!!

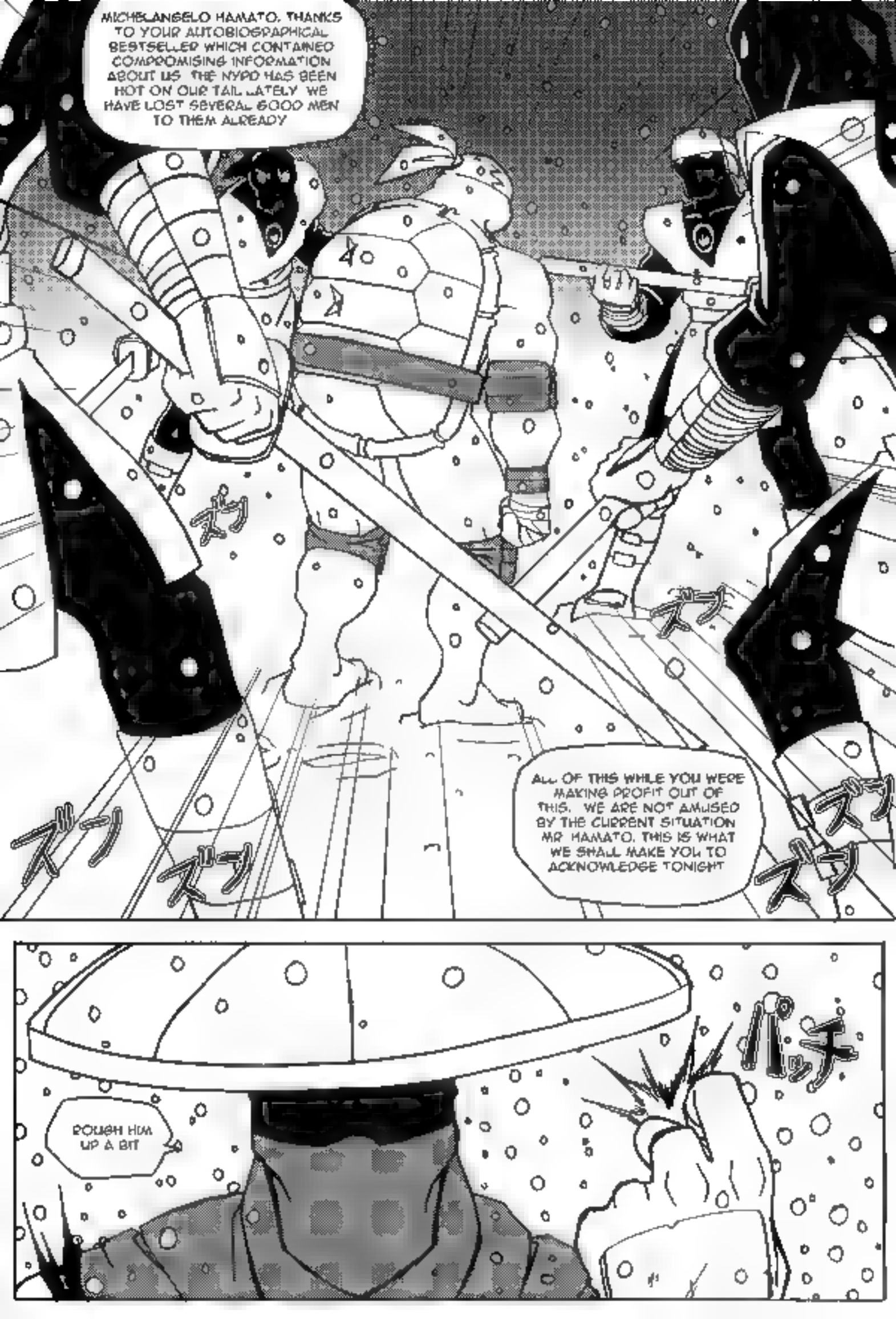

YOU'RE DEAD MEAT, FREAKS!
JUST OUR LUCK ! PURPLE DRAGONS!
IT'S PAYDAY YA GREEN MONSTERS! WE'LL MAKE YA REGRET WHAT YA DID THE OTHER DAY!
YEAH! YOU'RE GONNA GET IT REAAAL BAD!
NOW YOU'RE THE ONE STARING THE OBVIOUS FACT!
I'LL TAKE CARE OF THEM, RAPH. STEER RIGHT A LITTLE BIT
YOU'RE RIGHT? HEH I'D LIKE TO SEE THAT!


GYAAAAAH!!
EEEEEEK!! D.. DON'T COME ANY CLOSER!!
RAPH! LET'S GRANT HIS WISH!
STEER LEFT!!
ROGER THAT!
EH C'MON, DONNIE. THAT'S JUST LAME WHY NOT SWAT HIM OFF HIS SEAT TOO?
I'D LIKE TO SEE YOU DO BETTER
NONONO!! CRAAAAAAAP!!! I'M FALLIN'!!!
ER?
SO WE MEET AGAIN, FREAK! PREPARE TO TAKE A DIVE!!


THAT TACKLE WAS...
...PATHETIC.
ABSOLUTELY NO FINESSE WHATSOEVER AS USUAL.
YA BORE ME TO TEARS! STOP WASTIN' MY TIME, LOSERS!
AAH!
GWAAH!
OOF!
SHUT UP!!
YO... TO TELL YOU THE TRUTH, I THINK THAT WITH A NAME AS CORNY AS "PURPLE DRAGONS" WE START OFF AS LOSERS ANYWAYS


LET'S MAKE THIS BRIEF, TURTLE.
HMPF!!
HMPF!
WE DON'T REQUEST YOUR LIFE JUST YOUR PRESENCE IN EXCHANGE I WILL LOWER MY AXE
AN EFFORTLESS AND PAINLESS TRADE.. SOUNDS GOOD DOESN'T IT?
COME ON, TURTLE! I KNOW YOU VALUE THIS YOUNG GIRL'S LIFE! IF YOU DON'T ACT IMMEDIATELY, HER DEATH WILL HAUNT YOU FOR THE REST OF YOUR RECLUSED EXISTENCE!
DON'T EVEN THINK FOR A SECOND THAT WE ARE BLUFFING! WE ASSASSINATE TO EARN OUR LIVING AND I WILL SLIT HER THROAT IF I HAVE TO! YOU HAVE THREE SECONDS TO COMPLY!!
ONE..
TWO..


PLEASE... IN THE MEMORY OF SHADOW... PLEASE DON'T CAUSE HER ANY HARM.
COME
CLOSER
SIR..
HERE I AM. NOW PLEASE, LET HER GO

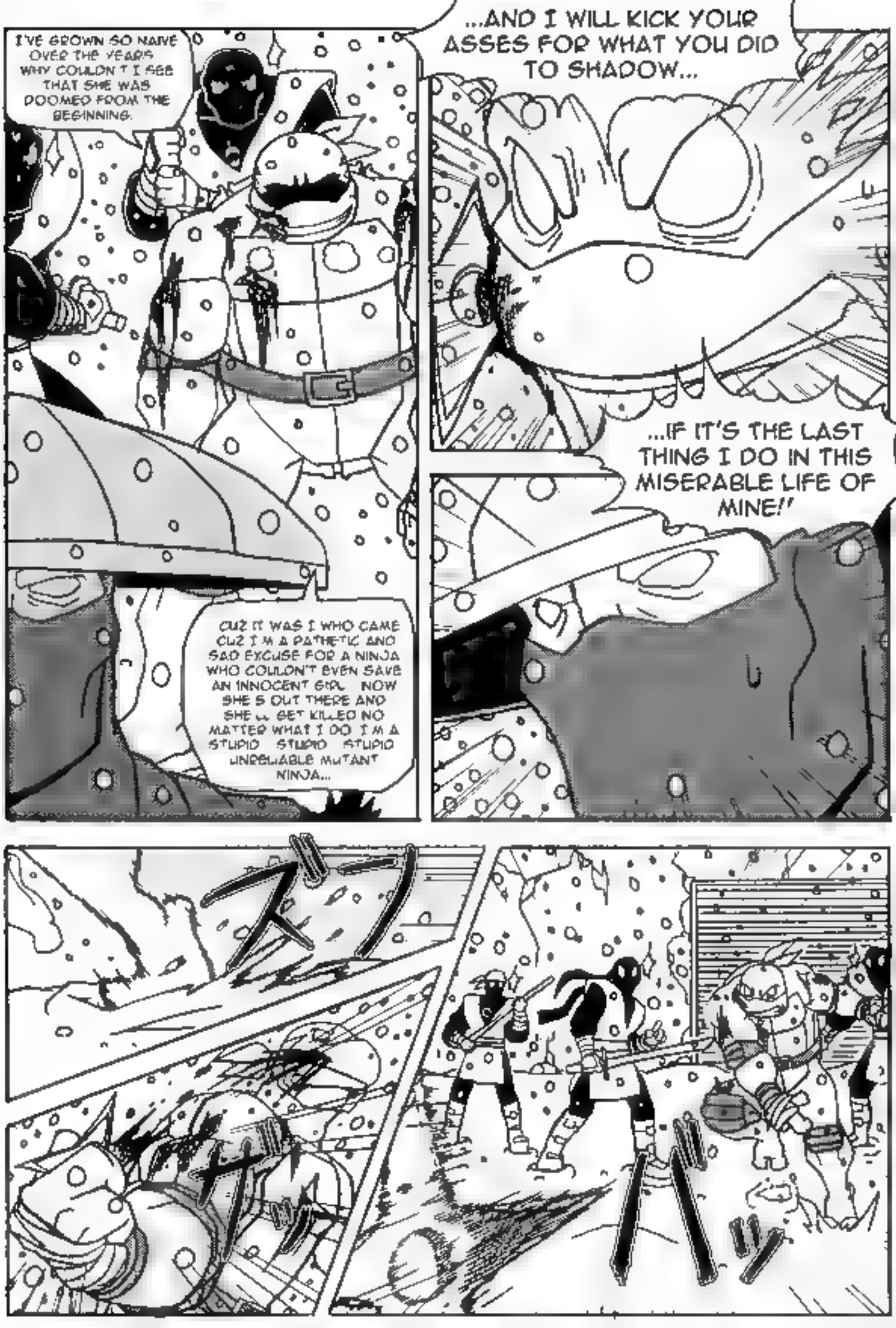

MICHELANGELO HAMATO. THANKS TO YOUR AUTOBIOGRAPHICAL BESTSELLER WHICH CONTAINED COMPROMISING INFORMATION ABOUT US THE NYPD HAS BEEN HOT ON OUR TAIL LATELY WE HAVE LOST SEVERAL 6000 MEN TO THEM ALREADY
ALL OF THIS WHILE YOU WERE MAKING PROFIT OUT OF THIS. WE ARE NOT AMUSED BY THE CURRENT SITUATION MR HAMATO. THIS IS WHAT WE SHALL MAKE YOU TO ACKNOWLEDGE TONIGHT
ROUGH HIM UP A BIT
ドン




PLEASE.. LET THE GIRL GO..
WE... WE HAD A DEAL..
I ONLY PROMISED I'D LOWER MY AXE
THAT'S IT


I... I BEG OF YOU. PLEASE LET THE GIRL GO.
I UNDERSTAND THAT YOU WANT HER FREED, MR HAMATO?
VERY WELL. STAY STILL FOR A WHILE LONGER AND WE WILL CONSIDER YOUR REQUEST
DON'T LISTEN TO THEM, SIR!! YOU MUST FIGHT BACK!!
SHUT UP
IF I'M THE REASON WHY YOU CAN'T MOVE, IF I M THE ONE HOLDING YOU BACK .. THEN FORGET ABOUT ME!!
!


AAAAAHH!!!
THAT LITTLE BITCH... SHE BROKE FREE AND STABBED ME!!
THIS IS NOT A PROBLEM. WE'RE DONE WITH HER EITHER WAY. TIME TO DISPOSE OF THE WITNESS.
YOU! GO AFTER THE GIRL AND SILENCE HER
YES
HEHEHE YOU HAD ME GOING THERE FOR A MINUTE. YOU MADE ME BELIEVE THERE WAS A WAY OUT OF THIS MESS


I'VE GROWN SO NAIVE OVER THE YEARS WHY COULDN'T I SEE THAT SHE WAS DOOMED FROM THE BEGINNING.
CUZ IT WAS I WHO CAME CUZ I'M A PATHETIC AND SAD EXCUSE FOR A NINJA WHO COULDN'T EVEN SAVE AN INNOCENT GIRL NOW SHE'S OUT THERE AND SHE'LL GET KILLED NO MATTER WHAT I DO I'M A STUPID STUPID STUPID UNRELIABLE MUTANT NINJA...
...AND I WILL KICK YOUR ASSES FOR WHAT YOU DID TO SHADOW...
...IF IT'S THE LAST THING I DO IN THIS MISERABLE LIFE OF MINE!!


HUMPF!
UUUGHH!!
RAAAAHH!!





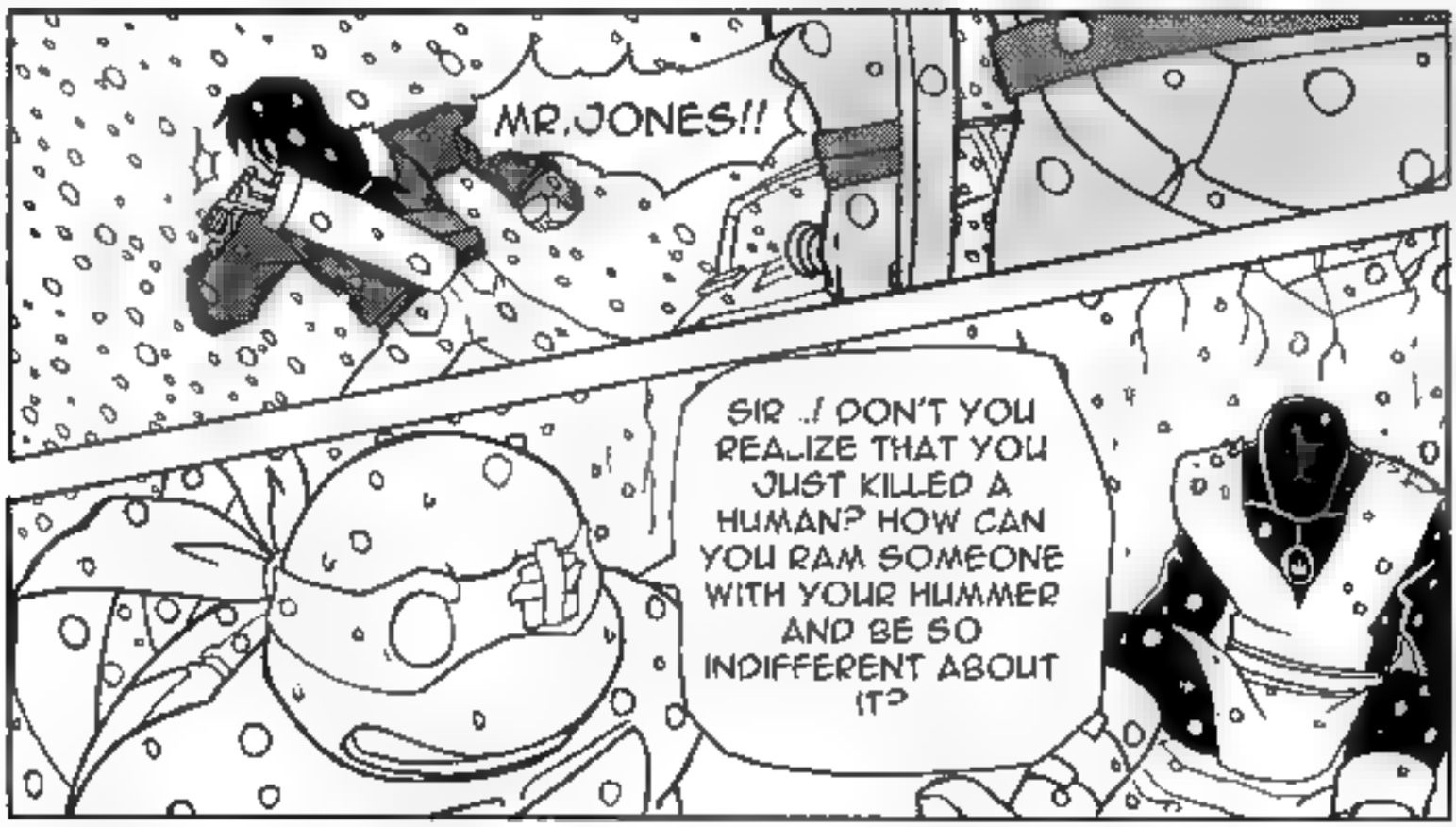

COWABUNGA, DOUCHEBAGS.
MIKEY'S BACK IN THE HOUSE.


SOMEONE PLEASE HELP ME
SOMEONE
AAH!!
NOOOO!! SOMEONE!! HEEEELP!!


HUFF
HUFF
TH.. THANK YOU...


DAVIANNA WALLACE! YOU HAVE NOTHING TO FEAR! THE MASKED VIGILANTE, FRIEND OF JUSTICE, IS HERE! YOU'RE SAFE NOW!
DAVIANNA!!
EEH! MR JONES! YOU'RE A MASKED VIGILANTE TOO?
UH.. HOW DID YOU GUESS MY TRUE IDENTITY?
DAVIANNA.. YOU'RE SAFE
WELL.. YOU'RE MY CHILDHOOD FRIEND'S FATHER SO I RECOGNIZED YOUR VOICE..
I'M SORRY MR JONES.. I- I HAVE BAD NEWS.. THERE WAS NOTHING I COULD DO SHADOW SHE'S..
..PROBABLY IN A HOSPITAL RIGHT NOW CURSIN' 'BOUT NOT BEIN' ABLE TO BE HERE. I KNOW
SHADOW'S GONNA BE OKAY, DAVIANNA.
S...SHADOW IS ALIVE? BUT.. HOW..?
LET'S JUST SAY HER REPTILIAN GUARDIAN ANGEL HERE WAS LOOKING AFTER HER. HE BROUGHT HER BACK TO US


BY THE WAY DAVLANNA.
..DID YA SEE ANOTHER MUTANT TURTLE AROUND HERE BY ANY CHANCE?
I DID MR JONES! HE TRIED TO PROTECT ME FROM THOSE EVIL NINJAS BUT GOT SERIOUSLY WOUNDED IN THE PROCESS.
PLEASE SIR! YOU GOTTA HELP HIM!! JUST FOLLOW MY FOOTPRINTS. THEY'LL LEAD YOU TO HIM!
RENOIR DUTY CALLS STAY HERE AND TEND TO THIS LADY WHILE I'M AWAY
I NEED TO ATTEND A JOLLY CHRISTMAS REUNION WITH MY GOOD OL' PALS THE FOOT NINJAS


MR.JONES!!
SIR ..! DON'T YOU REALIZE THAT YOU JUST KILLED A HUMAN? HOW CAN YOU RAM SOMEONE WITH YOUR HUMMER AND BE SO INDIFFERENT ABOUT IT?


LISTEN. WHEN AN INNOCENT'S IN DANGER YOU CAN'T AFFORD TO HESITATE AND WORRY BOUT THE PERP'S LIFE.
YOU GOTTA PUT ALL YOUR BET ON THE VICTIM'S SAFETY IT'S AS SIMPLE AS THAT
WOULD YA RATHER REGRET NOT BEING ABLE TO SPARE A PERP'S LIFE AFTER SAVIN' A VICTIM?
OR REGRET NOT BEING ABLE TO SAVE A VICTIM WHILE THE PERP GETS AWAY WIT IT? THINK BOUT T


HUM. SORRY I CALLED YOU NAMES AND RAN OFF BACK AT THE HOSPITAL
HMMRRRM DON'T WORRY ABOUT IT
THANK YOU. FOR SHADOW
REALLY I THANK YOU FROM THE BOTTOM OF MY HEART RENOIR... SHADOW MEANT TO A LOT TO ME
IT'S OKAY BUT I HAVE SOMETHING I'D LIKE TO TELL YOU.
AAARGH!!
AAH!


RENOIR! WHAT'S WRONG!!
HE'S .. HE'S STILL ALIVE !!
HRRR.
HAAA HAAAA
RENO R! GET UP!! HURRY! HE'S COMING!!
I CAN'T!! I CAAAN'T!!!
MY LEGS... TH... THEY HURT!!


GYAAH!!
HIYAAAAA!!
HAAH.
HAAAH


YAH!
ドゴッ
ハァ=ハァ
AH...
ドゴッ
AGH!

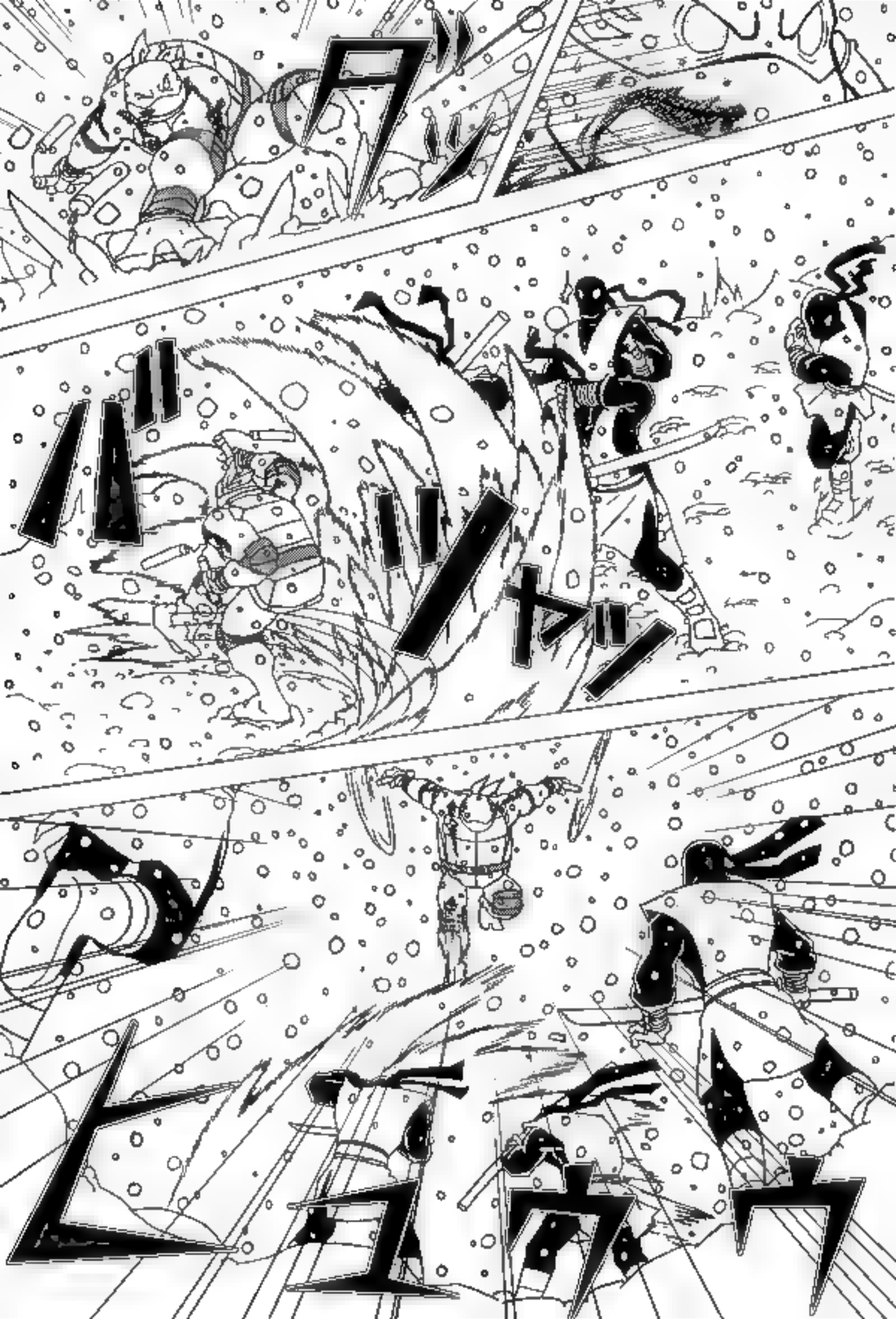

HPFFR!!
HRRRFFFF!!
DAVIANNA, RUN AWAY, NOW!
B. BUT YOU .?
I SAID RUN AWAY, NOW!!!
EVERYTHING'S GONNA BE OKAY, I WAS TRAINED FOR THIS KIND OF SITUATION, EVERYTHING'S GONNA BE OKAY I WAS TRAINED FOR.
HMRRRRRR..
RRAAAH!


OH NO HE'S PISSED..!
SHIT SHIT SHIT SHIT SHIT SHIT SHIT SHIT..!
HAAA
HURRRRGH.
RRRAAAAHHH!!!
N.. NO..!
NOOOO!!


DAVIANNA?


I CAN'T RUN AWAY... NOT LIKE THIS!!
D...DAVIANNA!
UWOOOH!!!
DAVIANNA LET GO OF MY TONFA, NOW!!
HE'S PUTTING ALL HIS WEIGHT INTO HIS ARMS! IT'S NOW OR NEVER!!
I WILL KEEP DAVIANNA OUT OF HARM'S WAY!!
URYAAAAAAH!!!


HAA.
HAA..
HAA.
HAA.




CASEY!! WHAT'RE YOU DOING HERE!
SAME THING YOU'RE DOIN' PUNISHIN' NAUGHTY KIDS ON CHRISTMAS EVE.

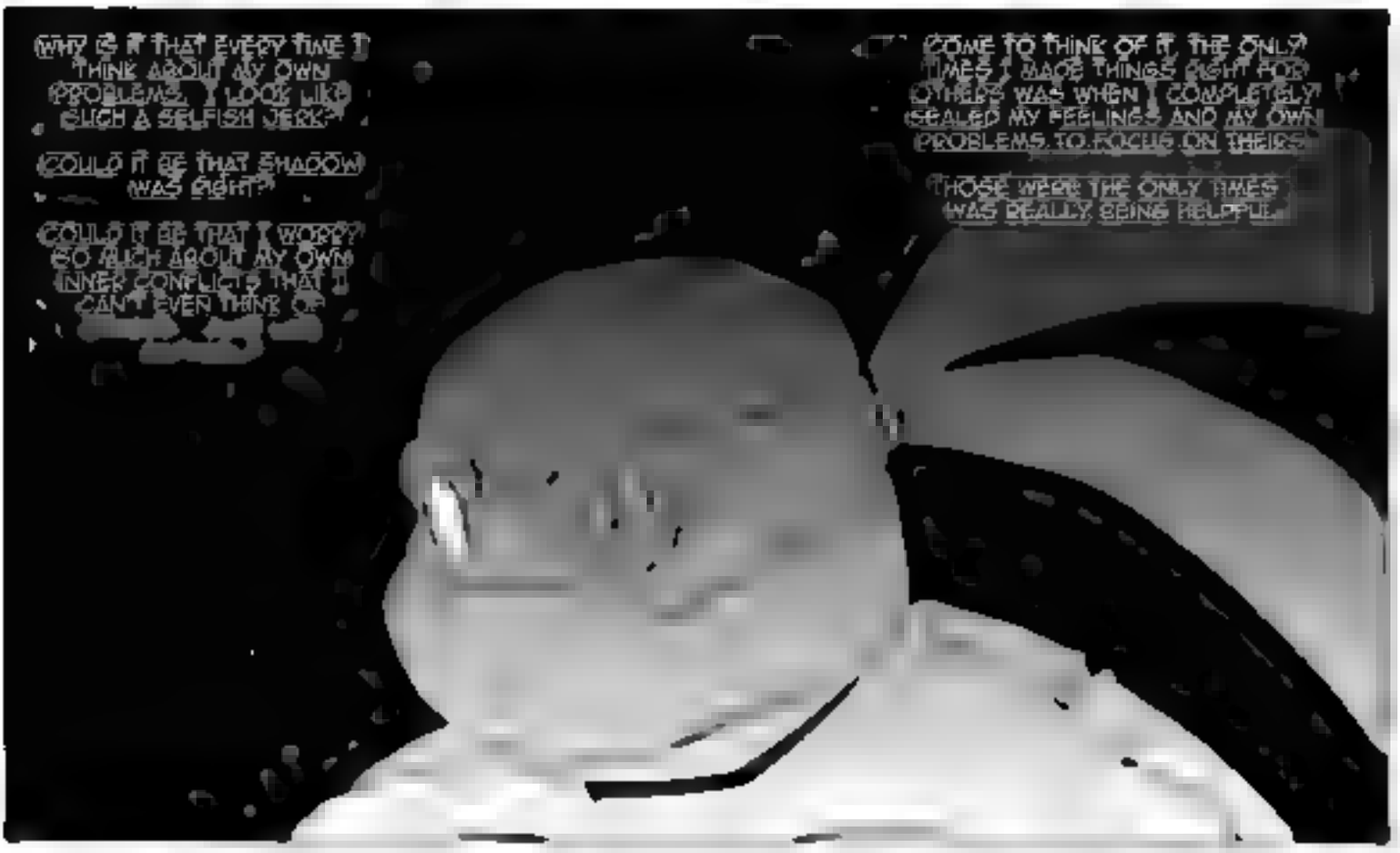

OKAY, ACTUALLY, I CAME HERE TO TELL YA THAT SHADOW AND OTHER GIRL ARE BOTH SAFE!
SO LET'S WRAP THIS UP AND GET OUTTA HERE!
IT'S. ALL OKAY EVERYTHING IS.
I GOTCHA BACK, MIKEY!
OY, MIKEY!! YOU OKAY?
MIKEY?


HEHE SO SO THIS WAS ALL A BAD DREAM. ?
I'LL. I'LL JUST REST A LITTLE BIT I'M SO EXHAUSTED
WHAT DID YA SAY?
ANYWAYS JUST STAY LOW MIKEY HELP IS ON THE WAY.
WE'LL TAKE CARE OF THE TURTLE LATER! TAKE DOWN THE HIPPIE WITH THE MASK!

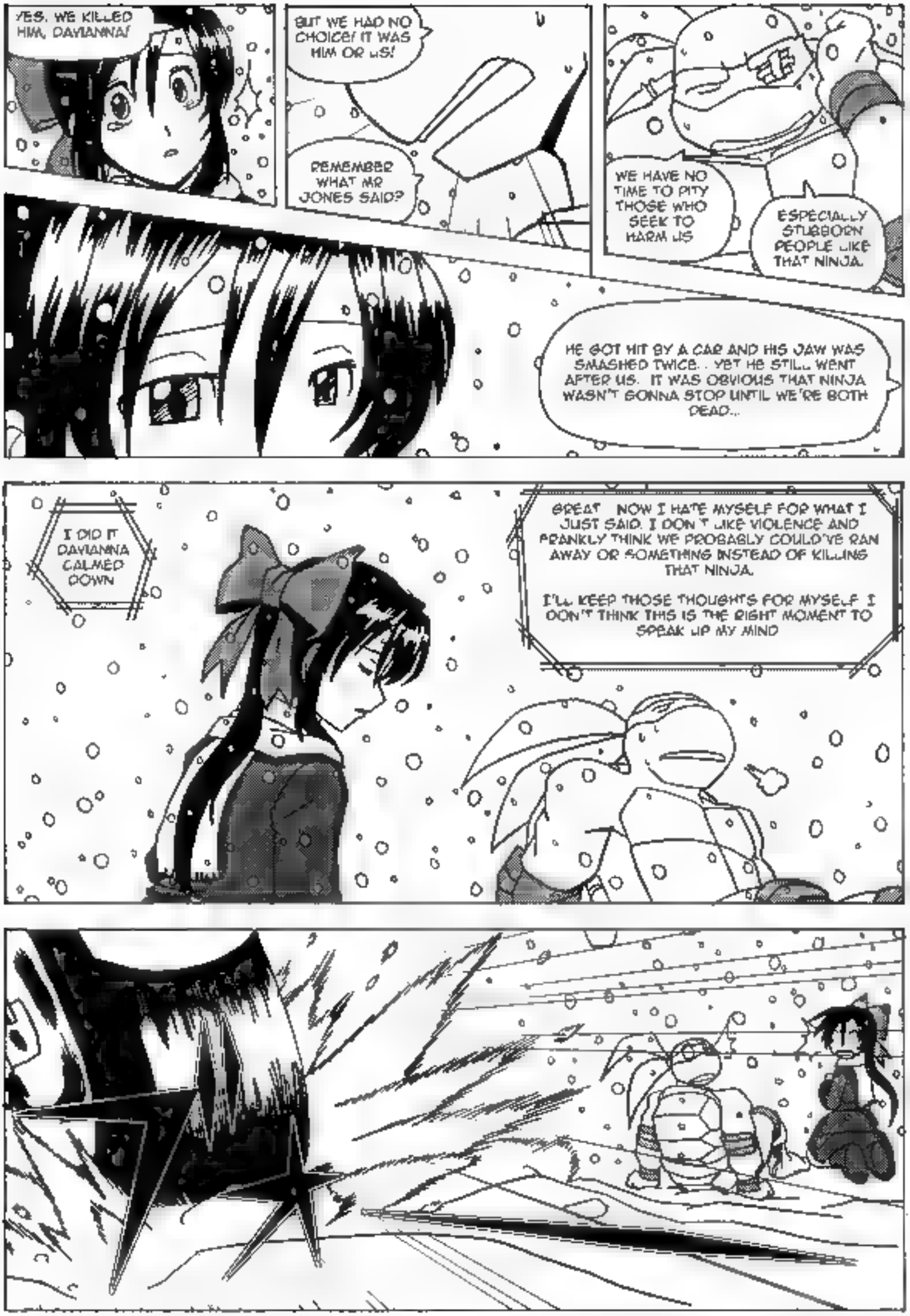

ORYAAAAAAH!


NO.. NO I DIDN'T WANT THIS TO HAPPEN.
WHY DIDN'T HE STOP!?
EVEN THOUGH HE COULD BARELY WALK .. WHY DID HE MAKE US DO THAT!!
RENOIR YOU'RE SAYING WE REALLY DID THIS .? DID WE JUST KILL A PERSON .?
NO. THIS DIDN'T HAPPEN. IT . IT'S JUST A DREAM. I M DREAMING I DIDN'T KILL SOMEONE..
RENOIR ?
I DIDN'T KILL ANYBODY !
RENOIR! LISTEN TO ME!! IT.. IT WAS AN ACCIDENT, RIGHT?
WE DIDN'T KILL HIM. RIGHT? RENOIR? ANSWER ME!!
ANSWER ME, RENOIR!!




WHY IS IT THAT EVERY TIME I THINK ABOUT MY OWN PROBLEMS, I LOOK LIKE SUCH A SELFISH JERK?
COULD IT BE THAT SHADOW WAS RIGHT?
COULD IT BE THAT I WORRY SO MUCH ABOUT MY OWN INNER CONFLICTS THAT I CAN'T EVEN THINK OF
COME TO THINK OF IT, THE ONLY TIMES I MADE THINGS RIGHT FOR OTHERS WAS WHEN I COMPLETELY SEALED MY FEELINGS AND MY OWN PROBLEMS TO FOCUS ON THEIRS.
THOSE WERE THE ONLY TIMES I WAS REALLY BEING HELPFUL.


BACK THEN, I STOPPED THINKING ABOUT MY IDENTITY CRISIS AND RETURNED TO RAPHAEL, EVEN THOUGH WE'VE NEVER GOTTEN ALONG!
HE'S OKAY NOW.
AND JUST NOW... I FORGOT ABOUT MY PAIN AND WENT AFTER SHADOW. THINGS TURNED OUT OKAY!
I GET IT NOW.
I REACT TO SHOCK BY WORRYING ABOUT MYSELF ONLY. NOTHING GOOD CAN COME OUT OF THIS.
THE WORLD DOES NOT REVOLVE AROUND ME. I NEED TO BE MORE CONSIDERATE WITH OTHER PEOPLE AROUND ME IN ORDER TO BECOME A BETTER PERSON.
I NEED TO BE MORE SELFLESS.


YES. WE KILLED HIM, DAYIANNA!
BUT WE HAD NO CHOICE! IT WAS HIM OR US!
REMEMBER WHAT MR JONES SAID?
WE HAVE NO TIME TO PITY THOSE WHO SEEK TO HARM US
ESPECIALLY STUBBORN PEOPLE LIKE THAT NINJA.
HE GOT HIT BY A CAR AND HIS JAW WAS SMASHED TWICE.. YET HE STILL WENT AFTER US. IT WAS OBVIOUS THAT NINJA WASN'T GONNA STOP UNTIL WE'RE BOTH DEAD..
I DID IT DAYIANNA CALMED DOWN
GREAT NOW I HATE MYSELF FOR WHAT I JUST SAID. I DON'T LIKE VIOLENCE AND FRANKLY THINK WE PROBABLY COULD'VE RAN AWAY OR SOMETHING INSTEAD OF KILLING THAT NINJA.
I'LL KEEP THOSE THOUGHTS FOR MYSELF. I DON'T THINK THIS IS THE RIGHT MOMENT TO SPEAK UP MY MIND

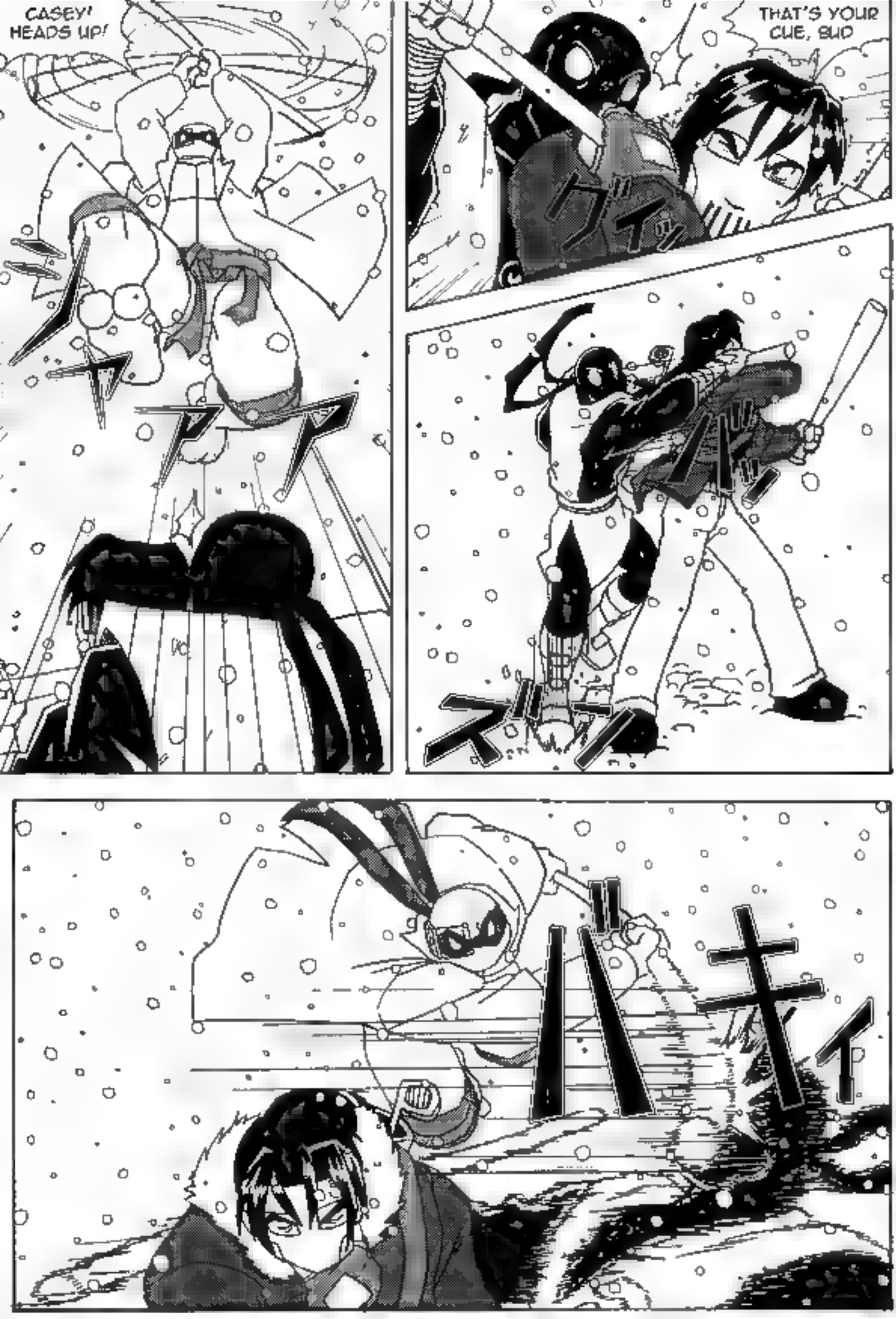

RENOIR! DAVIANNA! YOU'RE BOTH OKAY!!
BLOOD...?
WHERE'RE MIKEY AND CASEY?
RAPHAEL! THEY'RE BOTH AT THE OTHER SIDE OF THE FACTORY! JUST FOLLOW THE TRAIL I LEFT IN THE SNOW!
ROGER THAT! WE'RE GOIN'!
YOU GO WITHOUT ME! I'LL STAY HERE AND CHECK OUT RENOIR'S WOUNDS.
WHAT?
YOU GOTTA BE KIDDIN'! MIKEY'S YOUR BRO! YOU AIN'T GONNA LET HIM DOWN!!
LOOK AT RENOIR! HE NEEDS MEDICAL ATTENTION!
DON'T GIMME THAT SHIT, DONNIE! YOU'RE COMIN' WIT' ME!
RAPH DO YOU EVEN CARE ABOUT YOUR OWN STUDENT?


HEY, I'M ALL FINE!
DON'T WORRY ABOUT ME. IT'S NOTHING, JUST A SUPERFICIAL SCRATCH! IT DOESN'T EVEN HURT!
WELL SAID, RENOIR I EXPECTED NO LESS FROM YA.
WELL THERE GOES MY BLOOD SAMPLE.
SEE DONNIE? THERE AIN'T NOTHIN' TO WORRY BOUT! THE KID'S TOUGH!
YOU'RE RIGHT I WAS MISTAKEN. LET'S GO
JUST A REMINDER, RENOIR IF YOU EVER FEEL LIKE TALKING TO SOMEONE OR IF YOU NEED TO HAVE SOME WOUNDS TREATED..
YOU'RE ALWAYS MORE THAN WELCOME TO STOP BY MY LAB I'LL BE MORE THAN HAPPY TO ASSIST YOU IN ANY WAY I CAN.
THE LEAST RAPHAEL COULD'VE DONE WAS TO THANK ME FOR LEADING THE WAY OR AT LEAST NOTICE THE DEAD NINJA AND ASSOCIATING THAT TO ME
I DON'T LIKE BEING IGNORED. TERRIBLE THINGS HAPPENED TO ME.. I WANT HIM TO ACKNOLEDGE THAT!


MASTER RAPHAEL!!
WHA?
I... FOR WHAT THEY DID TO SHADOW..
GET THEM!!!
YOU REALLY ARE TOUGH... AREN'T YOU, RENOIR?


THIS 'S THE END OF THE LINE FOR YOU, VIGILANTE
S SHIT!
ORRYAAAA!!!


STAY STILL, RAPH!

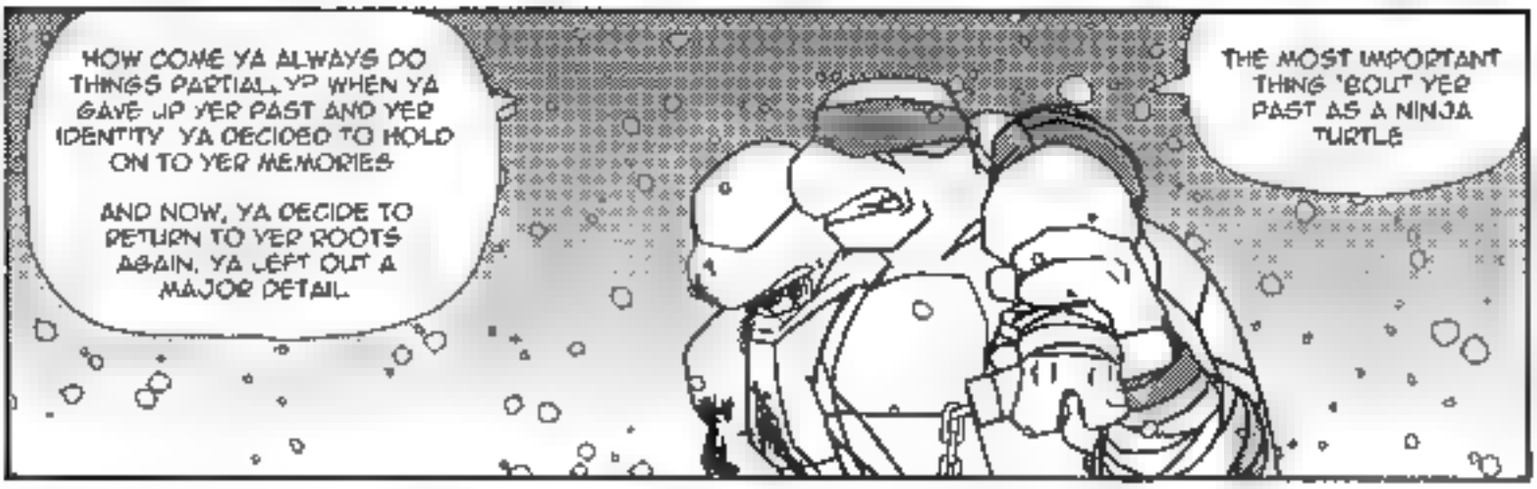

CASEY! HEADS UP!
THAT'S YOUR CUE, BUD
グヴッ
スパ


MIKEY!!
WHERE ARE YA?
WHAT THE !!
M...MIKEY?! DAMMIT! WE DIDN'T MAKE IT!!
YA MEAN "ALMOST DIDN'T MAKE IT", RAPH!! HE'S JUST OUT COLD!
HE'S GONNA BE OKAY, RAPH!
FOR NOW LET'S TEACH THOSE FOOT BOZOS NOT TO MESS WIT' US AGAIN!
THIS AIN'T THE FIRST TIME ONE OF MY BROS GETS GANGED UP ON BY FOOT NINJAS ON CHRISTMAS EVE LAST TIME, T'WAS LEO.. THIS TIME..
MIKEY !!


DON'T EVEN THINK 'BOUT IT, YOU.!
URGH..
CRAP!!
I CAN'T SEE WITH ALL THIS BLOOD!
YOU GUYS SURE TOOK YOUR SWEET TIME!
DID YA MAKE A HUNDRED PIT STOPS ON YOUR WAY HERE WHILE I WAS BABYSITTIN' MIKEY ON MY OWN OR SOMETHIN'?
PUT A SOCK IN IT CASEY! WE HAD TO DEAL WITH PURPLE DRAGONS!!
LISTEN, CASEY! I WANNA CHECK ON MIKEY NOW, SO I'M COUNTIN' ON YA TO KEEP THOSE SCUM AWAY FROM ME! GOT IT?
YA NEED ME TO COVER YA? AREN'CHA A BIT TOO TOUGH FOR THAT?
FINE! I'LL COVER MY OWN ASS!!
AWRIGHT AWRIGHT! I GOT T' NO NEED FOR A BLOODY RAMPAGE! I DON'T WANNA HAVE DOZENS OF DEAD FOOT NINJAS IN MY CONSCIENCE TONIGHT!
URK!

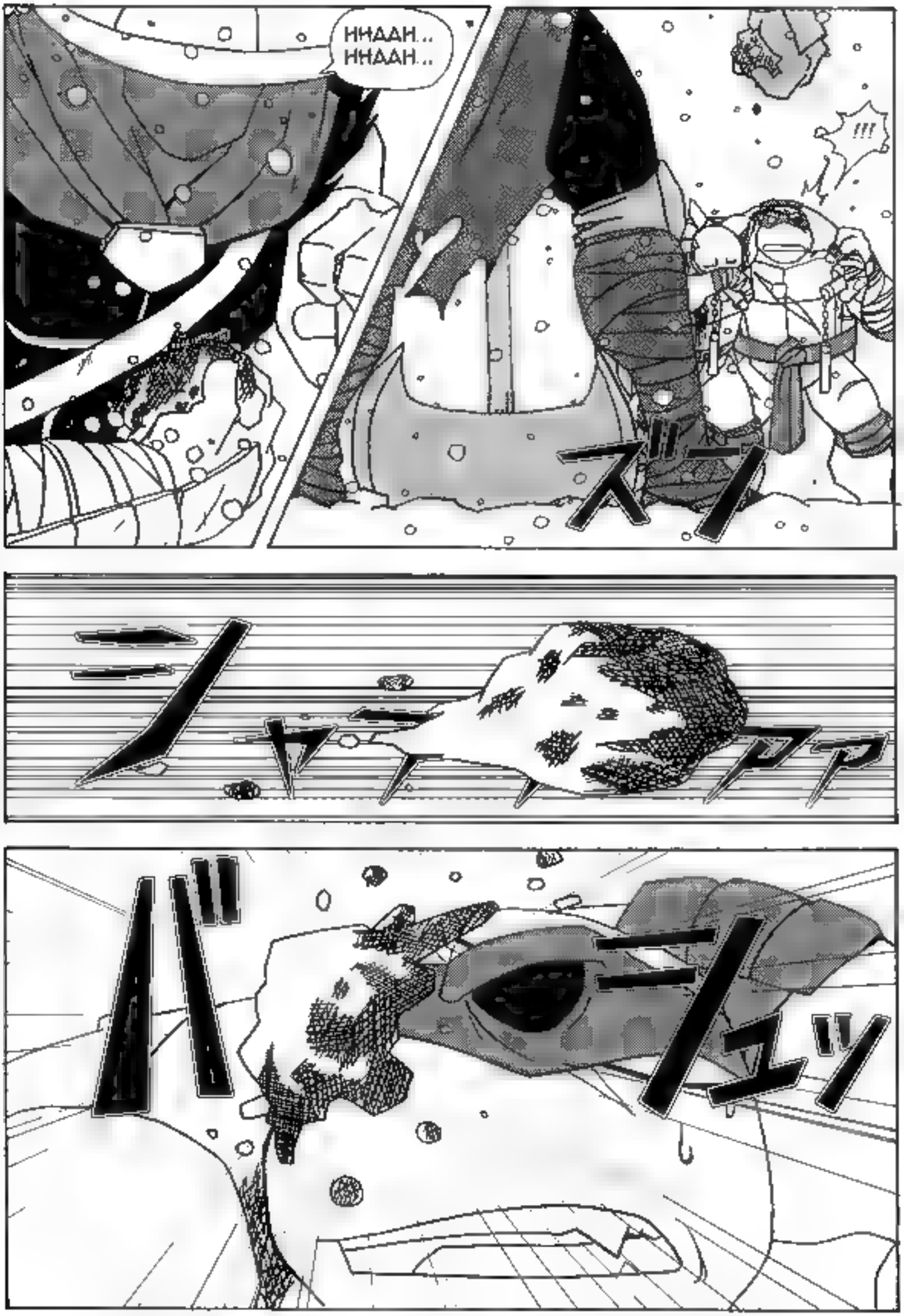

WHEN I'LL GET BACK APRIL AND SHADOW WILL BE GREETING ME AT THE DOOR
CASEY WILL HAVE SET UP THE TABLE BY THEN.
DONNIE WILL BE THERE TOO, ENJOYING A CUP OF HOT COCOA
AND RAPH. HE'LL TELL ME
YA DUMBASS!!
LOOK AT YA ALL BLOODY AND CRIPPLED THINK IT MAKES YA ANY LESS LAME THAN BEFORE? EH?
PICK UP YER WEAPONS WE RE GETTING OUTTA HERE
RAPH. ?
YOU. YOU CAME TOO? WHY ?


MIKEY YOU IDIOT


HOW COME YA ALWAYS DO THINGS PARTIALLY? WHEN YA GAVE UP YER PAST AND YER IDENTITY YA DECIDED TO HOLD ON TO YER MEMORIES
AND NOW, YA DECIDE TO RETURN TO YER ROOTS AGAIN. YA LEFT OUT A MAJOR DETAIL
THE MOST IMPORTANT THING 'BOUT YER PAST AS A NINJA TURTLE


WE'RE BROTHERS, MIKEY. WE'RE ALWAYS THERE FOR EACH OTHER, FOR THE BETTER OR THE WORSE... THAT'S WHY I'M HERE NOW

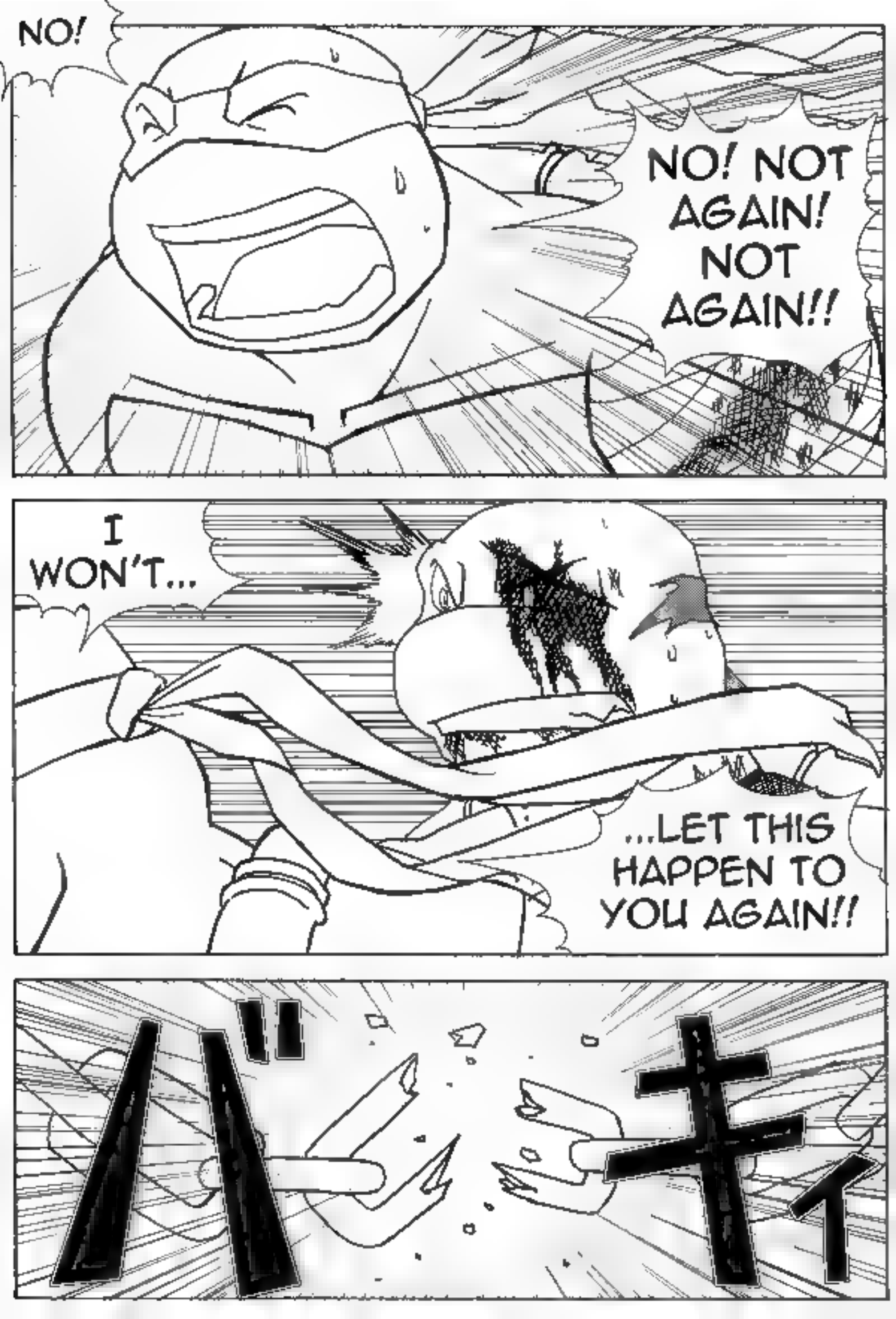

TCH... YA WUSS THIS AIN'T THE TIME TO CRY
STOP THAT OR ELSE I'LL... I'LL...


ННДДН..
ННДДН..
!!!


GAAAAH! THERE'S FRICKIN' BLOOD IN MY EYE!
DON'T WORRY, MIKEY I GOTCHA...!
BLINDED OR NOT I AIN'T GONNA LET YA DOWN!
AND NO FOOT NINJA IS GONNA HARM YA AGAIN TONIGHT! I CAN TAKE ON ANYTHIN YA HEAR ME? ANYTHIN'! SO TO WHATEVER BASTARD THREW THAT DAMN SNOWBALL... GIMME YER BEST SHOT!!
HAAAH... HAAAH...
RAPH! MIKEY!
SHIT! WHERE DID THAT ELITE FOOT COME FROM?


I'LL PROTECT YA, BRO..
R...RAPH...
I DON'T CARE WHAT HAPPENS TO ME!!
I'LL PROTECT YA, NO MATTER WHAT!!




NO!
NO! NOT AGAIN! NOT AGAIN!!
I WON'T...
...LET THIS HAPPEN TO YOU AGAIN!!
AH



MUTANT NINJA TURTLES GAIDEN

CHAPTER 15:

AND SO THE PAGES TURN...



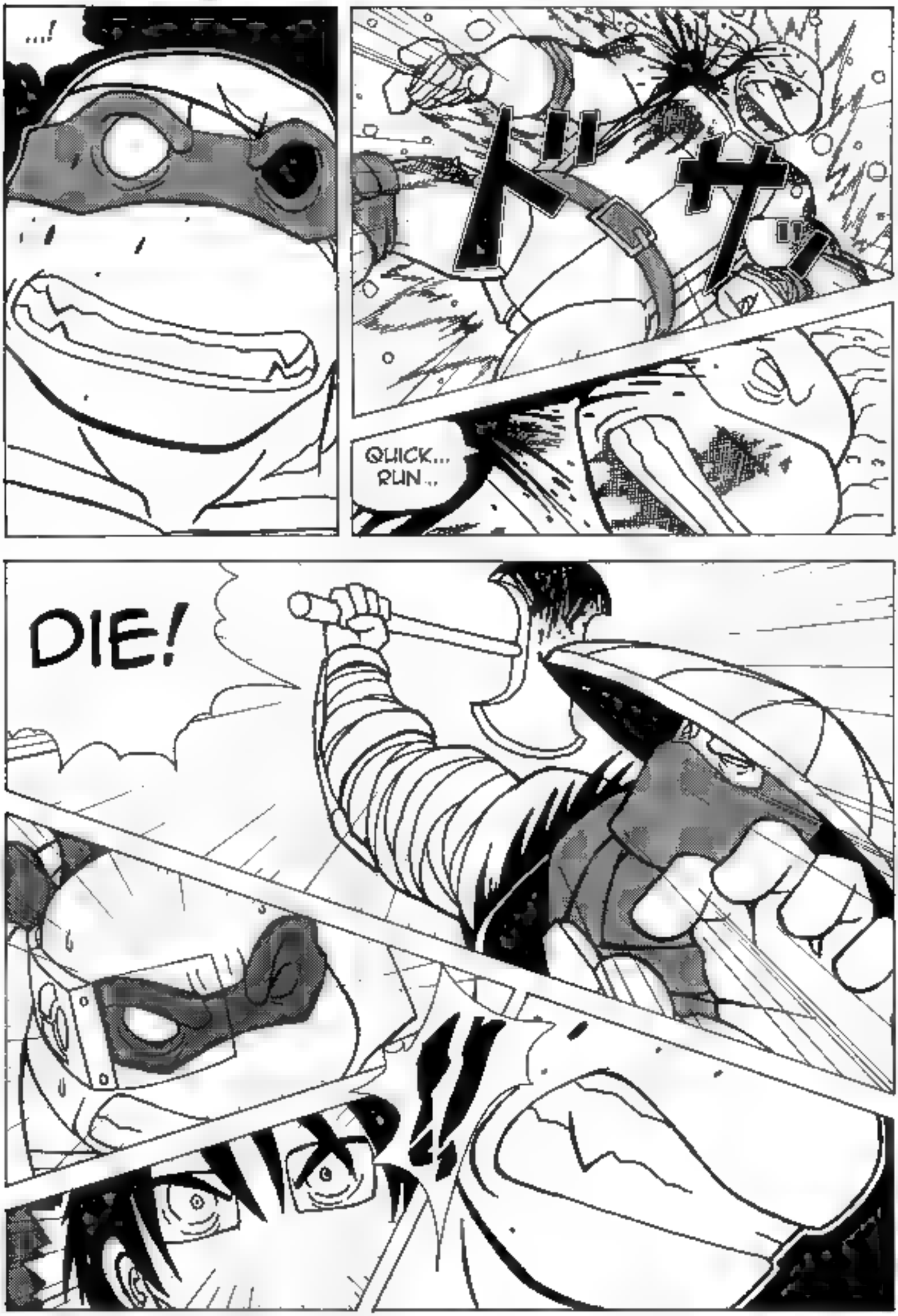

.. I SAID, THERE ARE NINJAS ATTACKING INNOCENT PEOPLE! PLEASE BELIEVE ME!
O...OKAY! WE'LL BE RIGHT OVER, MISS. PLEASE TRY TO HIDE SOMEWHERE SAFE FOR THE TIME BEING!
THE PLACE IS WILLIAMSBURG, IN BROOKLYN, HUH?
YEAH. FIRST MUTANTS, NOW NINJAS ON CHRISTMAS EVE, NO LESS WHAT IS NEW YORK COMING TO?
I KNOW AT THIS RATE, NEXT THING WE KNOW THERE'LL BE *MUTANT NINJAS*
MAN IF SUCH THINGS EXIST, I SWEAR I'LL GO TO THE CHIEF'S OFFICE AND ..
...SHIT. DON'T TELL ME.. YOU JUST DIALED 911, DAMANNA?
I I.. I SHOULDN'T HAVE???
IT'S JUST THAT US MUTANTS DON'T GET MUCH *LOVE* FROM AUTHORITIES..

RAPH. IT'S MY TURN TO PROTECT YOU.

BECAUSE LETTING YOU SUFFER ON YOUR OWN ALL THE TIME... THAT'S JUST NOT COOL!




HUMPF ..


...!
トッ
QUICK... RUN...
DIE!


...FUCKIN' DEAD, SCUMBAG!!
YOU
ARE


S...SHIT!
OH NO, YA DON'T!!
YA THINK YA COULD GET AWAY, HUH? HUH?
UWOOOH!


URGH!
AUGH!
SHUT THE FUCK UP, DICKHEAD!


TOO MANY LOSSES AND THE BOSS IS DONE FOR
. I KNOW, LET'S GO..
EVERYONE, RETREAT!
COME BACK HERE, YA COWARDS! I AIN'T DONE SMASHIN' YER FACE IN!
JUST LIKE ALWAYS..
WHEN THE BRAINS OF THEIR OPERATION IS PUT OUT OF COMMISSION, THEY RETREAT AS QUICKLY AS THEY CAME SOME PEOPLE NEVER CHANGE.
MORE IMPORTANTLY, MIKEY'S HURT REAL BAD! WE GOTTA HELP HIM!
CASEY, DON'T! DON'T GET ANYWHERE NEAR RAPH RIGHT NOW!
I RECOGNIZE THAT FACE OF HIS . HE'S GONE BERSERK!
STAY CLEAR FROM HIM OR YOU MIGHT GET WASTED LIKE THAT ELITE FOOT.


HAH.. HAH.. HAH.
NOT... ENOUGH.
WHAT YOU DID TO M.KEEEYY ..
IT IT AIN'T GONNA BE ENOUGH ..!!
'TIL I MAKE YA CHOKE ON YER OWN BLOOD!!
!?


R... RAPH!
DON'T!!
Y...YOU'RE JUST GONNA STOOP DOWN TO THEIR LEVEL!
G...GAH... HAH...HAH...
REMEMBER ? THE SENSEI... HE. TAUGHT US BETTER THAN THAT .
T... THAT'S WHY.. THAT S WHY WE'RE NOT LIKE THEM FOOT NINJAS, RAPH! WE HAVE A CONSCIENCE! WE DON'T KILL UNLESS IT'S OUR LAST RESORT!
... LOOK AROUND YOU, RAPH. WE WON. IT'S ALRIGHT NOW

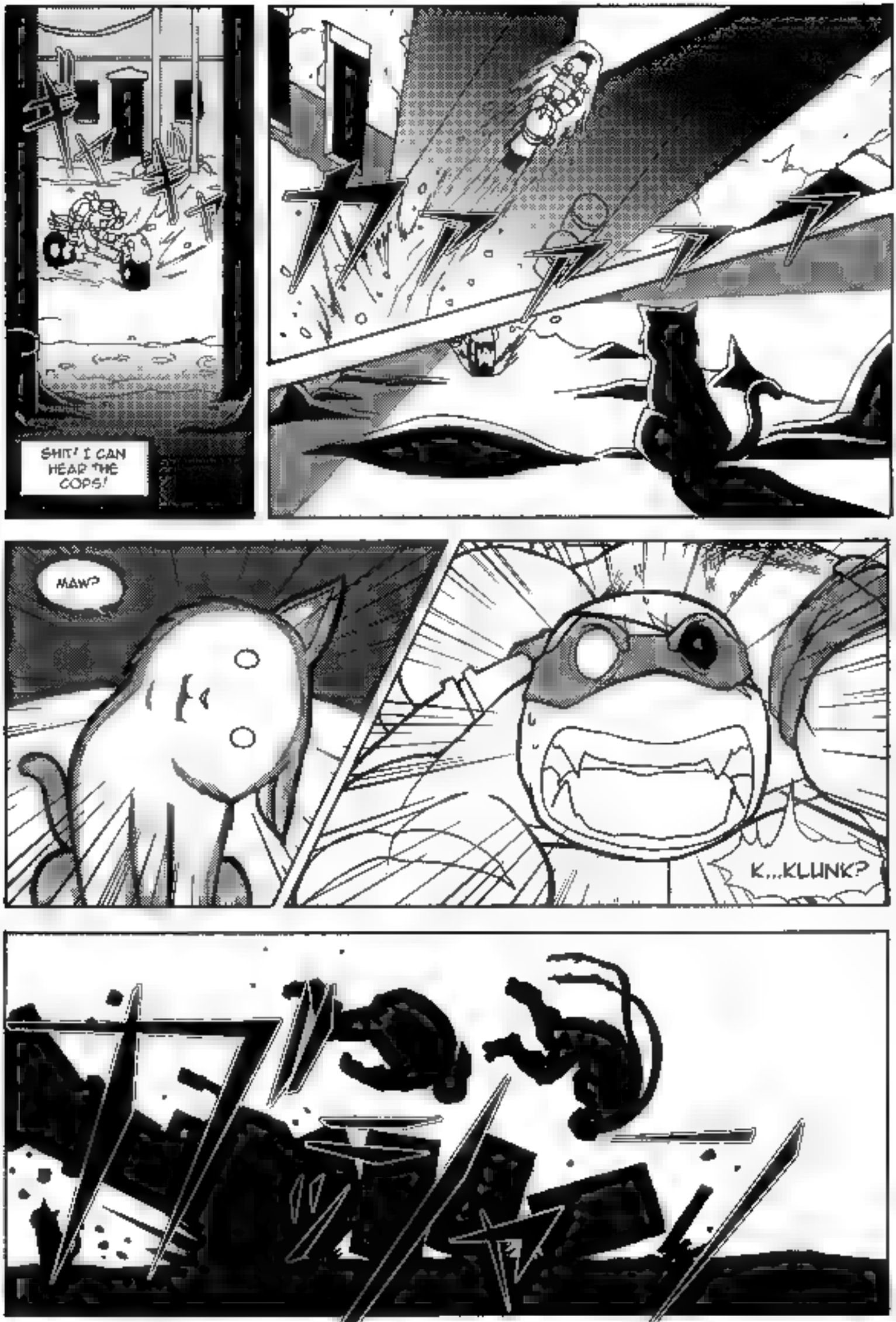

H HEHEHE! WHA WHAT? YOU SCARED?
W... WIMP!
HUMP!
HEAVENLY PUNISHMENT!
IN THE NAME OF JUSTICE!
GAAAH!
I'VE ALWAYS THOUGHT THAT ONLY GUYS WHO "HIT ON" MY DAUGHTER DESERVE A BEATIN'
BUT THIS BASTARD MADE ME REALIZE THAT SOMETIMES PEOPLE WHO "HIT" HER ALSO NEED TO BE TAUGHT A LESSON
NORMAL FATHERS WOULD THINK THE OTHER WAY AROUND

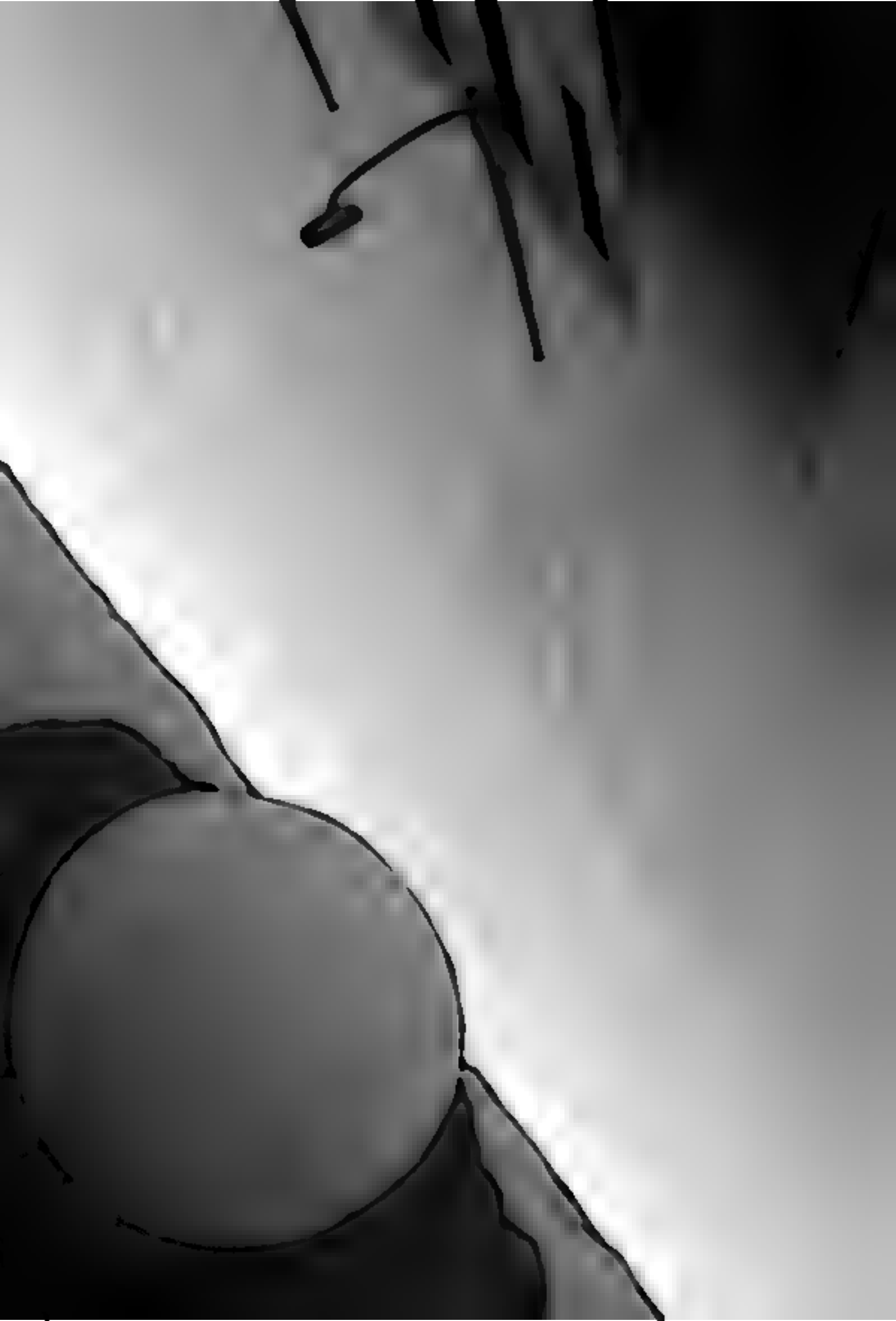

MIKEY !!
OY MIKEY!!
MIKEY!!
Y . YOU ACTUALLY CONTROLLED YOUR ANGER F FOR THE FIRST TIME IN SO MANY YEARS..
W WOW NOW IT REALLY SEEMS LIKE. LIKE WE RE BACK IN.. TIME..


EVERYONE! THE POLICE ARE COMING! LET'S GET OUT OF HERE, FAST!
TH...THE COPS?
WHO CALLED THEM?
WE . WE DON'T KNOW.
AFTER SO MANY YEARS THIS IS GOOOBYE. MY DEAR HUMVEE DADDY LOVED YOU TOO
I'LL GET THE LICENSE PLATE NUMBER AND CALL FOR BACKUP WE NEVER KNOW!
TONY THIS COSTUMED MAN IS STILL BREATHING...!
DRATS.
I'M GONNA HAVE TO LET GO OF THE HUMVEE THEY GOT IT
OH NO WHAT IF THE POLICE WERE TO FIND OUT THAT THIS HUMVEE IS MR JONES ?
CASEY AND APRIL CAN HANDLE IT
LET'S LEAVE THIS PLACE BEFORE MORE COPS ARRIVE


AS LONG AS WE REMAIN DISCRETE WE SHOULD HAVE NO PROBLEM AT ALL
?
D. DISCRETE, RAPH. ?
MIKEY I'LL PROTECT YOU.


THEY'RE GOING TO BE OKAY RIGHT?
NO. IN FACT, THEY'RE IN DEEP TROUBLE.
BECAUSE OF MIKEY'S WOUNDS THEY'RE GOING TO LEAVE A TRAIL OF BLOOD AS WELL, MAKING IT EASIER FOR THE AUTHORITIES TO TRACE THEM.
IF IT WAS STILL SNOWING, IT WOULDN'T HAVE BEEN A CONCERN, BUT.
OH NO...! SO THEY'RE GOING TO BE SITTING DUCK FOR THE POLICE?
I, ISN'T THERE ANYTHING WE CAN DO TO HELP?
CHECK OUT THOSE TRACKS IN THE SNOW
YEAH, THERE IS: DONNIE, YOU'LL GO AFTER RAPH AND MIKEY YEAH?
LEAVE RENOIR AND GAVIANNA TO ME!
DON'T WORRY I'LL CARRY YOU!
TH...THANKS, MR JONES!
(WHY DOES EVERYONE TRY TO KEEP ME AWAY FROM THAT SPECIMEN?)
HOLD ON TIGHT!
AH!! IT'S THE MUTANTS AGAIN!!
HEY YOU! FREEZE!!


SHIT! I CAN HEAR THE COPS!
MAW?
K...KLUNK?




"YOU TRAITORS! WHY DIDN'T YOU STAND UP FOR ME? I KNOW I WAS BAD, BUT I DIDN'T DESERVE THIS!"


I HATE YOU!
I HATE YOU!
I HATE YOU!
I HOPE YOU
ALL DIE DIE
DIE DIE DIE
DIE DIE DIE!
AND
NEVER EAT
ICE CREAM
AGAIN!
BUT DADA I AGREED
WITH MASTER SPLINTER
YOU SHOULD'VE STUCK
HITTING MIKEY ON THE
HEAD THE FIRST TIME HE
WARNED YOU
YEAH, JUST LIKE
DONNIE SAID DAD
BAD DADDIE MASTER
SPLINTER SAID NO
ICEY FOR RAPHIE!
YOU BOZO! I
CAN GET MY OWN
ICE CREAM!
I HATE YOU
TOO, YOU
OLD FART!
GWAAAH!
RAPHAEL!
COME BACK
HERE!
NO! YOU STINK
ANYWAYS!
HE'LL BE
BACK
YEAH


STOP FOLLOWING ME! I DIDN'T ASK FOR YOUR HELP!
STOP IT, I SAID! I DON'T NEED YOU! I DON'T NEED ANYBODY!!

"I'LL NEVER WAIT FOR YOU. I'LL NEVER ASK FOR YOUR HELP EITHER.

BUT... JUST COME AND HELP ME ANYWAYS, OKAY? DO THAT AND REMIND ME THAT IT'S ALWAYS BETTER THIS WAY.

I SWEAR I'LL THANK YOU LATER."

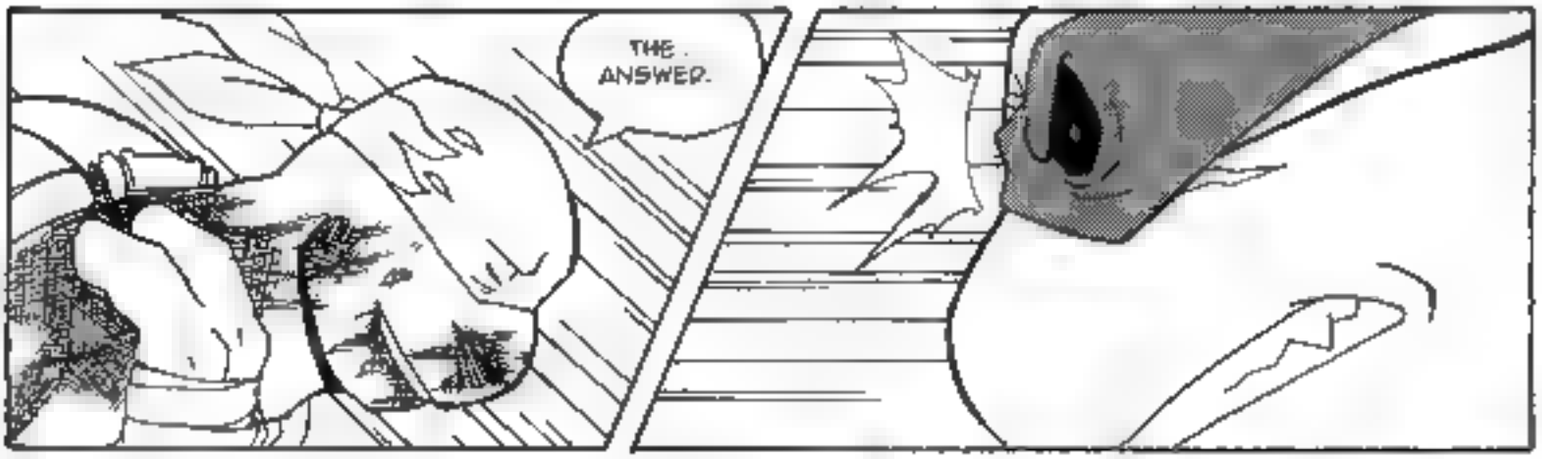



ゴゴゴ


ズフズフ
ゴロゴロゴロ
ゴォオオオオオ


K KLUNK YOU LIL' TRICKSTER
JUST WHAT DO YOU WANT FROM ME ?
WHAT THE HELL WAS THAT ?
THAT COULDN'T BE
AHH!! MIKEY!!
MIKEY! YOU OKAY, BRO?
..

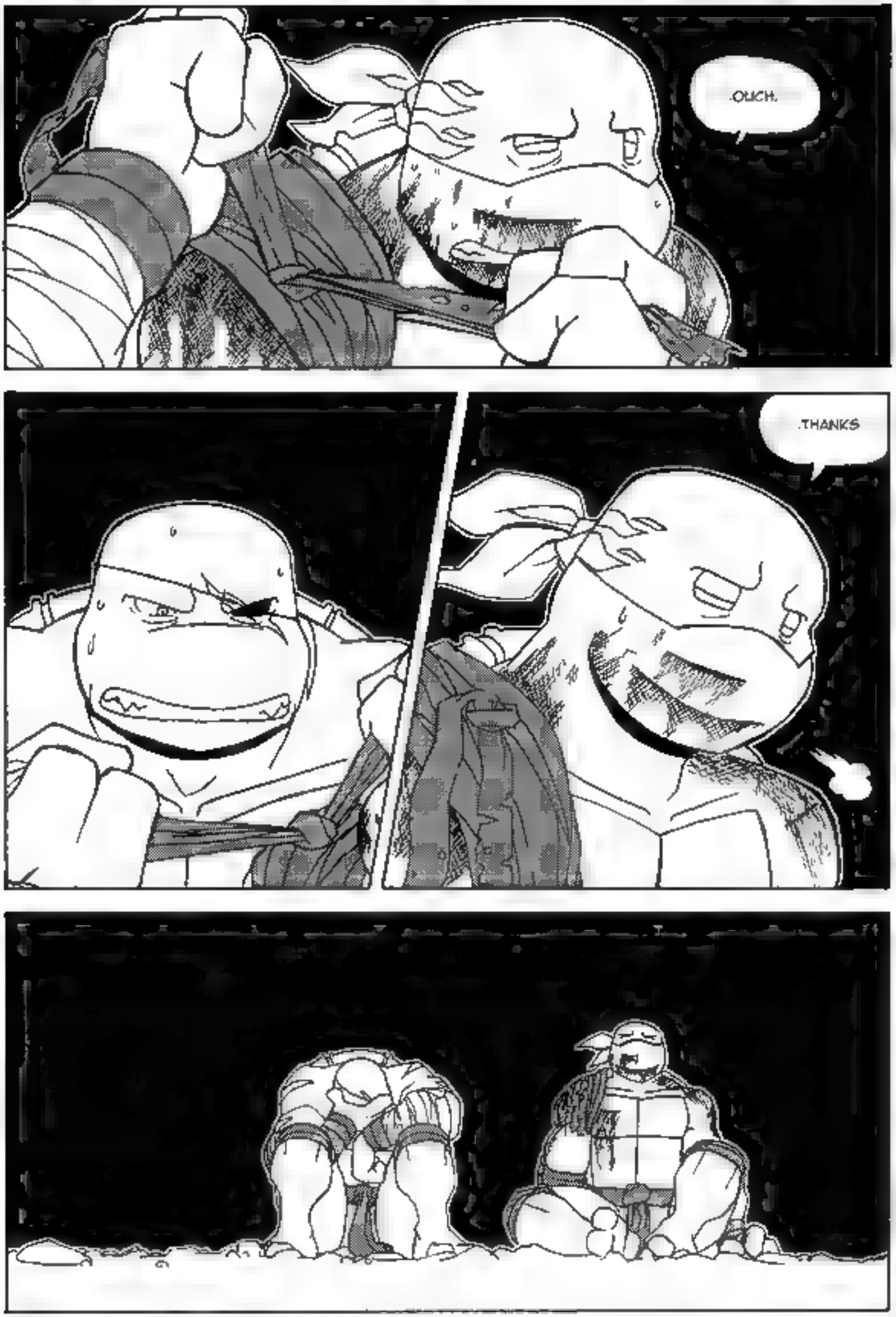

HA. HAHA I. I G .GET IT NOW .
THE ANSWER IT IT WAS RIGHT THERE . ALL ALONG..


THE . ANSWER.


MIKEY!


GOOD TO SEE YOU RE STILL IN ONE PIECE


STAY HERE
IT DOESN'T LOOK LIKE THIS PIECE OF JUNK S GONNA BRING US ANYWHERE NOW...
B.. BLOOD?
NO WAY HE WAS BLEEDIN' ALL THIS TIME?
HE WAS DYIN' AND I DIDN'T DO ANYTHIN' BOUT IT!!
SHIT


.OUCH.
.THANKS

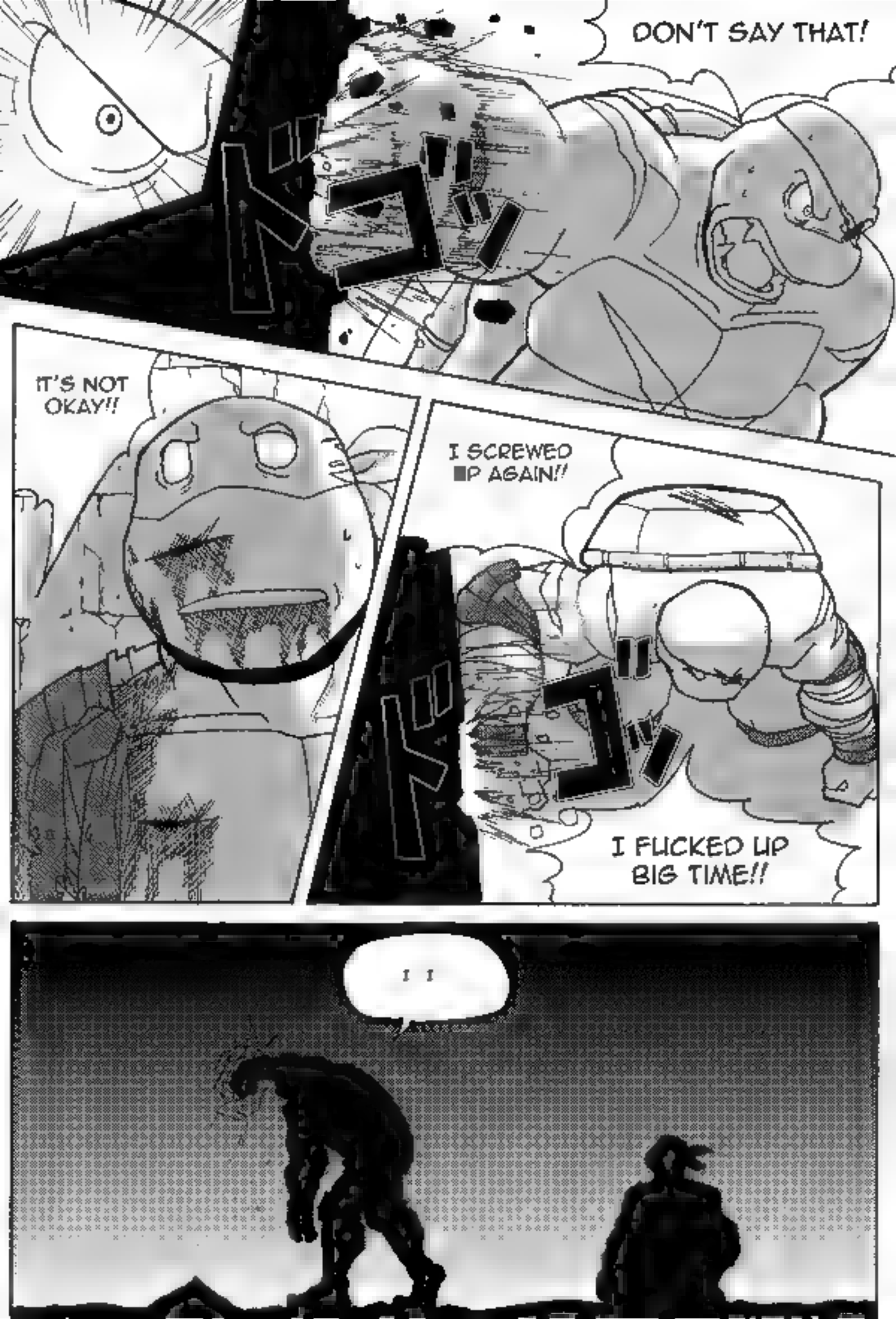

RAPH.
I'VE ALWAYS THOUGHT THAT MY PAST SELF WAS A SEPARATE ENTITY THAT I ISOLATED SEVENTEEN YEARS AGO.
HOWEVER IN THE MIDST OF BATTLE I REALIZED THAT I AM THE EXTENSION OF MY PAST EVERYTHING IT WAS - I AM EVERYTHING IT FELT - I'LL EVENTUALLY FEEL


YOU KNOW WHY, RAPH?
I WAS ABLE TO RECLAIM SOMETHING FROM MY PAST THAT I THOUGHT WAS LOST FOREVER.
IT CAME TO ME AS A DISTANT FEELING SO INTENSE AND NOSTALGIC... IT WAS LIKE LIKE A SHARD OF HAPPINESS FROM MY PAST IT FILLED ME WITH CONFIDENCE AND COURAGE.
AND THEN I REMEMBERED IT. THIS ONE THING THAT MADE ME FEEL COMPLETE ONCE AGAIN.


THE FOUNDATION OF OUR BROTHERHOOD: THE POWER OF OUR BONDS
TOGETHER, WE WERE UNSTOPPABLE


WHEN I LOOK AT

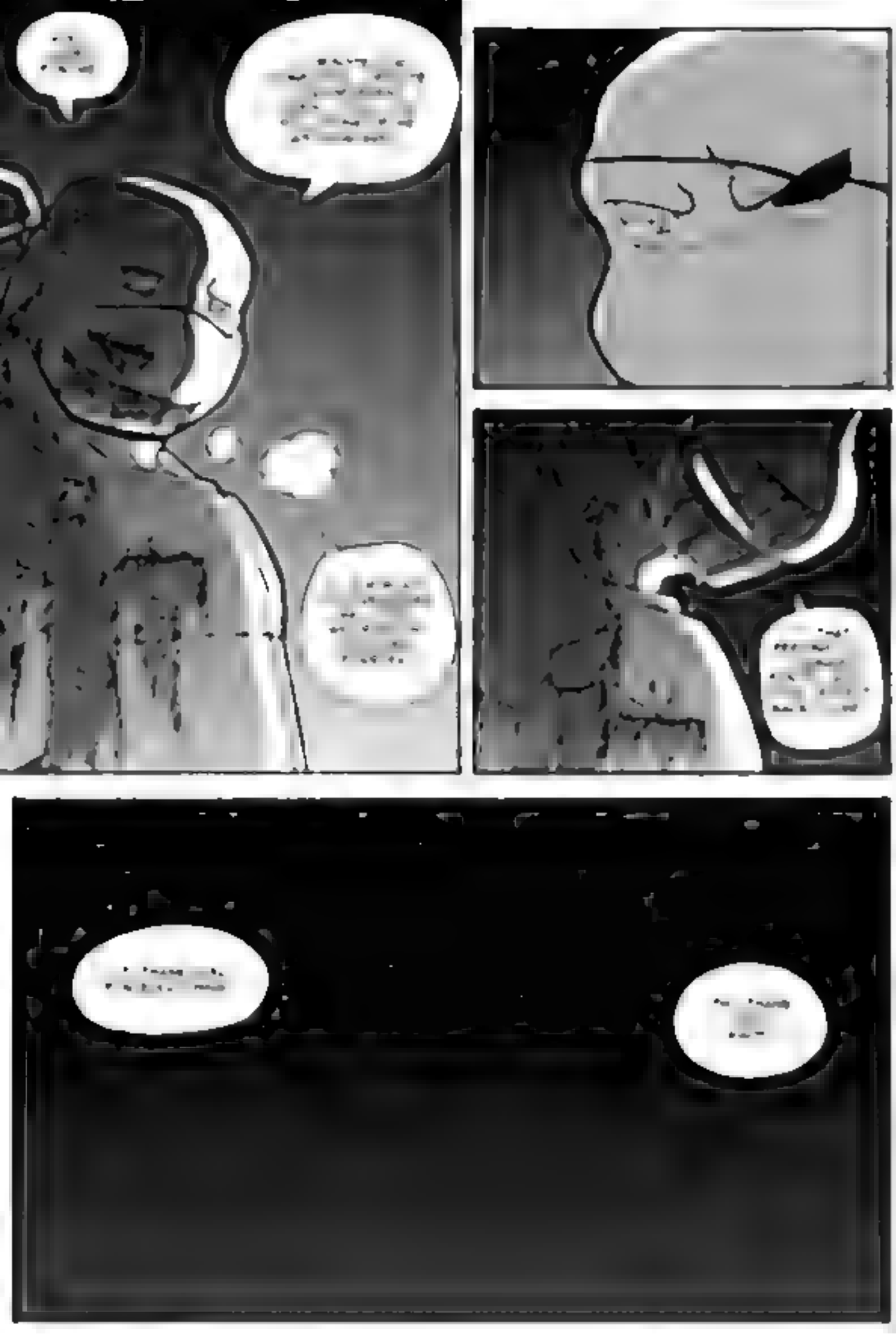

R...RAPH...
EVERYTHING S OKAY


DON'T SAY THAT!
IT'S NOT OKAY!!
I SCREWED ■P AGAIN!!
I FUCKED UP BIG TIME!!
I I

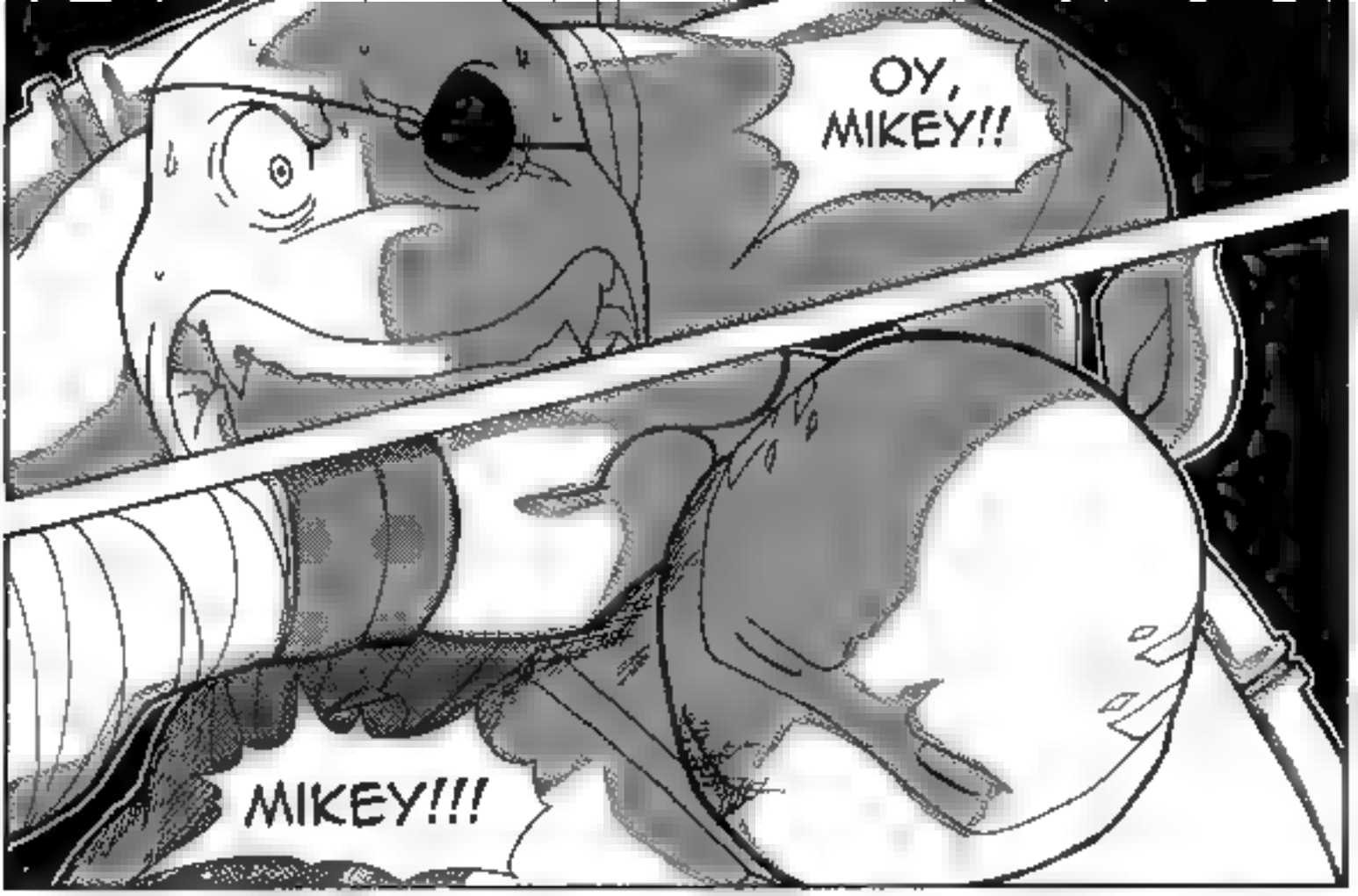


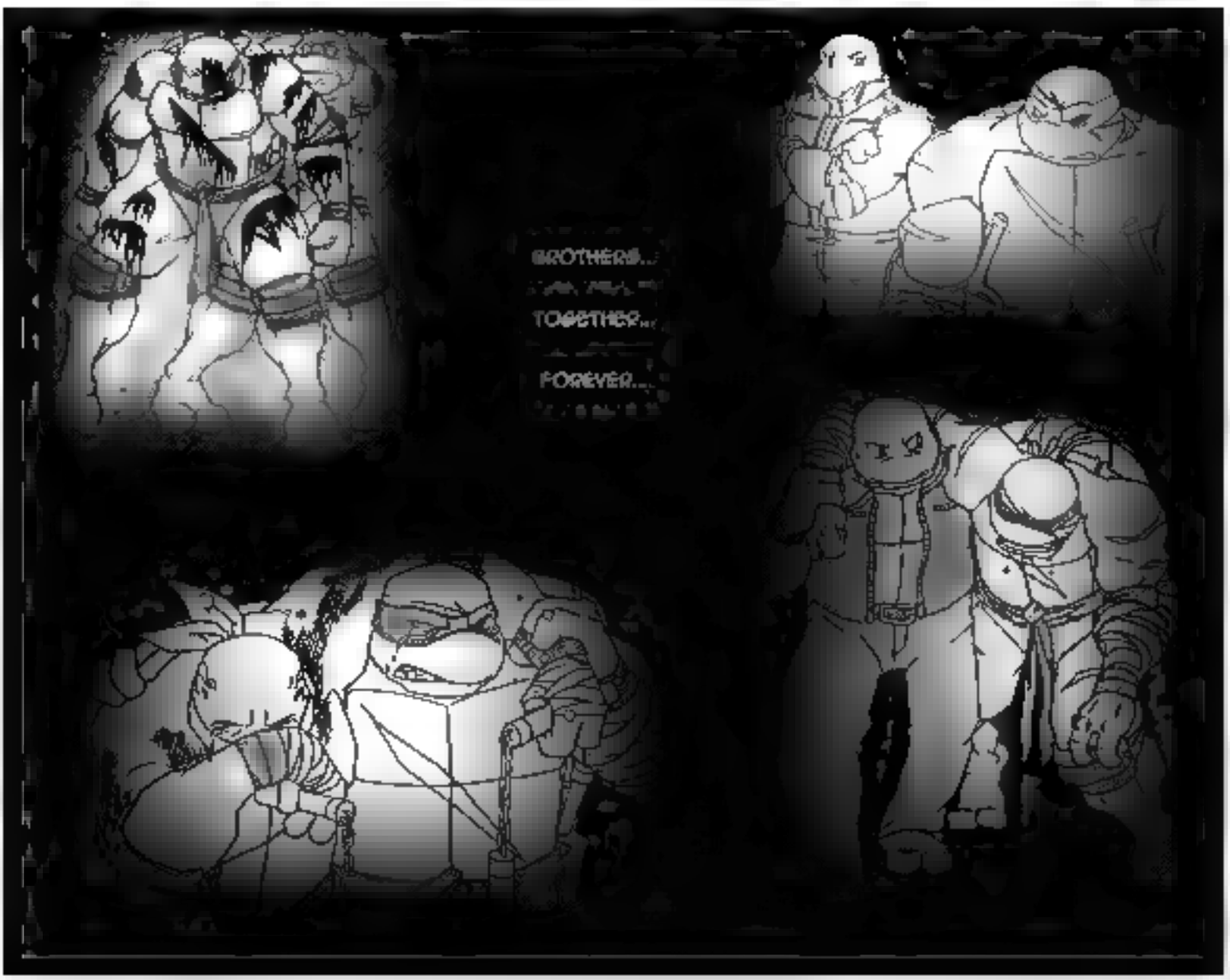

ME TO EVEN PROTECT


ALL THESE YEARS... I NEVER DID A DAMN THING TO HELP YA
AND JUST WHEN I FOUND OUT HOW MUCH YA MEANT TO ME... I.. I FAILED YA.. MY OWN
R... RAPH... YOU.. YOU DID SO MUCH FOR ME THAT WOUND ON YOUR SH.. SHELL... THAT S THE



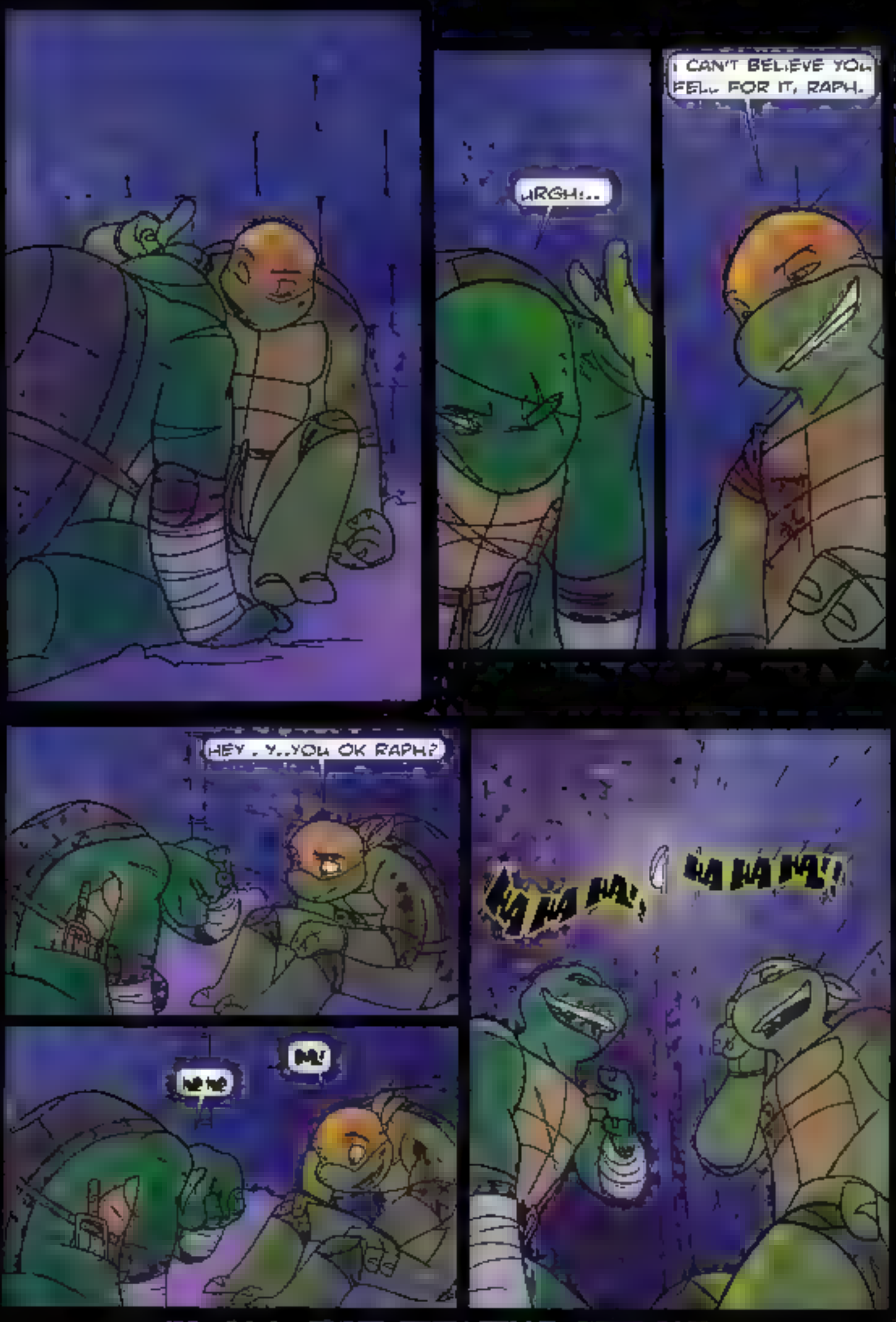



OY, MIKEY!!
MIKEY!!!


BROTHERS...
TOGETHER...
FOREVER...

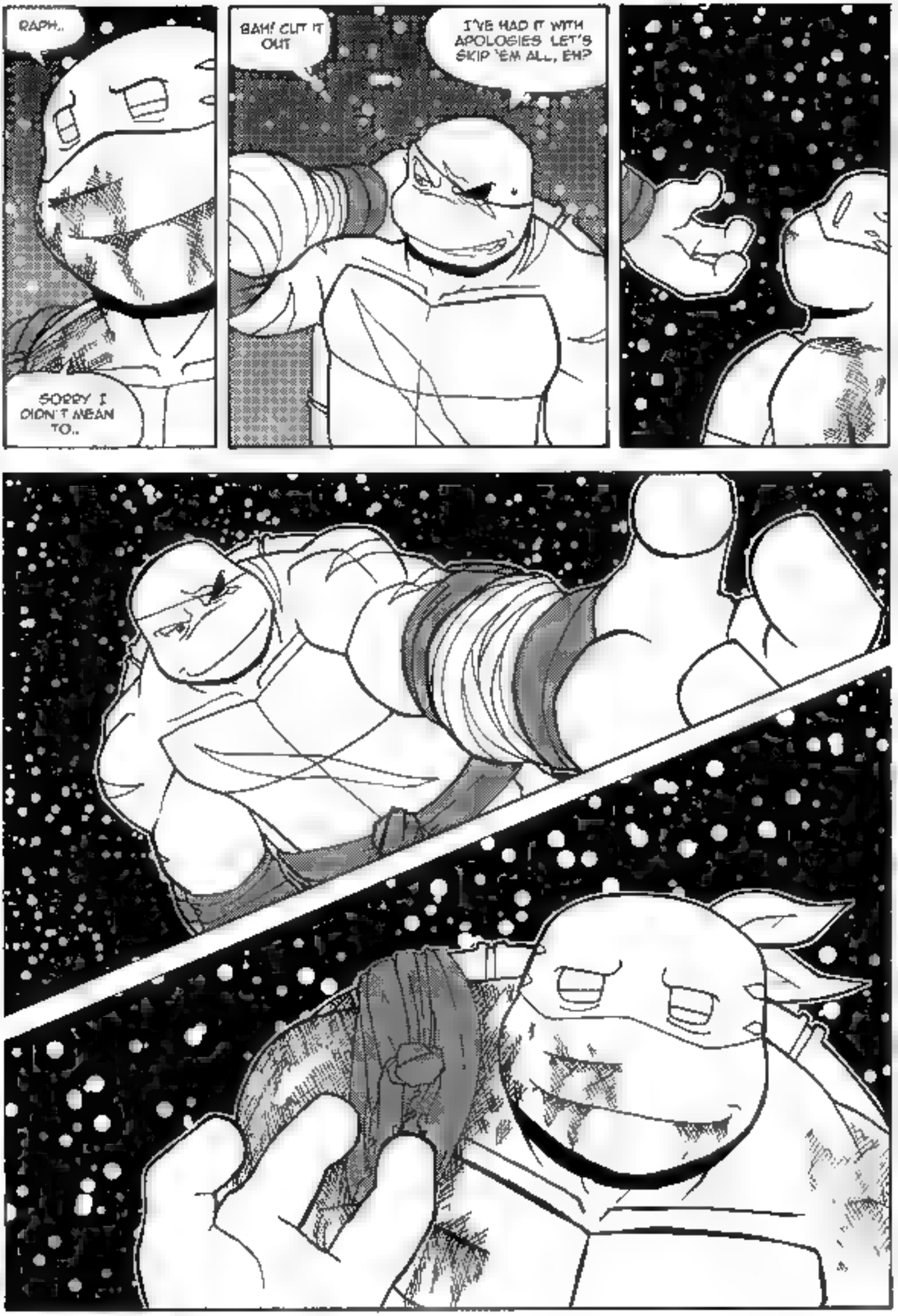


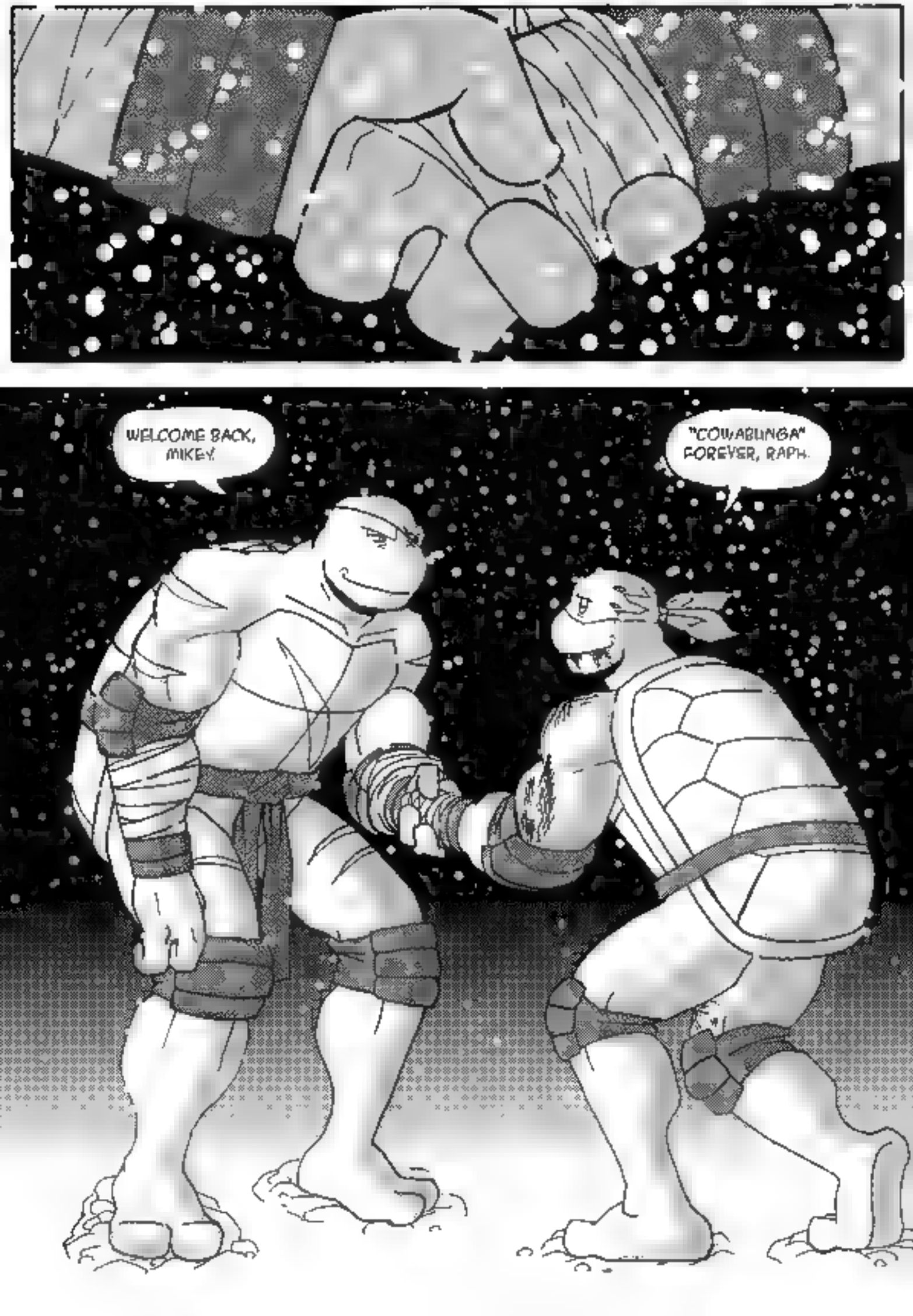




Guest page by enolianslave
http://enolianslave.deviantart.com/


DON' CHA FUCKIN' "HAHAHA" ME!! THAT WAS A LAME-ASS JOKE!!
HYAAA!! PLEASE BE GENTLE DEAR BRO! ♡
ARGH!! MY ARM! THE PAIN! THE PAIN!!
WAKEY WAKEY
O OKAY I CONFESS I M NOT DEAD
DON CHA EVER PULL OFF THIS KIND OF PRANK AGAIN.
ESPECIALLY NOT TO PEOPLE WHO ACTUALLY C CARE BOUT YA.. ALRIGHT?


RAPH..
SORRY I DIDN'T MEAN TO..
BAH! CUT IT OUT
I'VE HAD IT WITH APOLOGIES LET'S SKIP 'EM ALL, EH?


WELCOME BACK, MIKEY.
"COWABUNGA" FOREVER, RAPH.


HEH. ALL OF THIS WAS JUST DAMN CHEESY
LET'S KEEP IT FOR OURSELVES.. 'AIGHT?
YAH. I WON'T TELL A SOUL, RAPH.
ME NEITHER AND YOU'RE RIGHT ABOUT YOUR CONFESSION BEING CHEESY
JUST WATCHING THE BOTH OF YOU MADE ME FEEL EMBARRASSED.
"WELCOME BACK"? "COWABUNGA FOREVER"? WHAT NEXT? HUGS AND TEARS?
OH SHUDDAP, DONNIE AT LEAST IF WE CRIED, WE'D BE SHEDDING MANLY TEARS.
H. HUH?? WHUT?
ANYWAYS. THINK BEFORE YOU ACT NEXT TIME, RAPH.
YOU'RE LUCKY SOMEONE WAS LOOKING OUT FOR YOU TONIGHT
S.. SOMEONE?

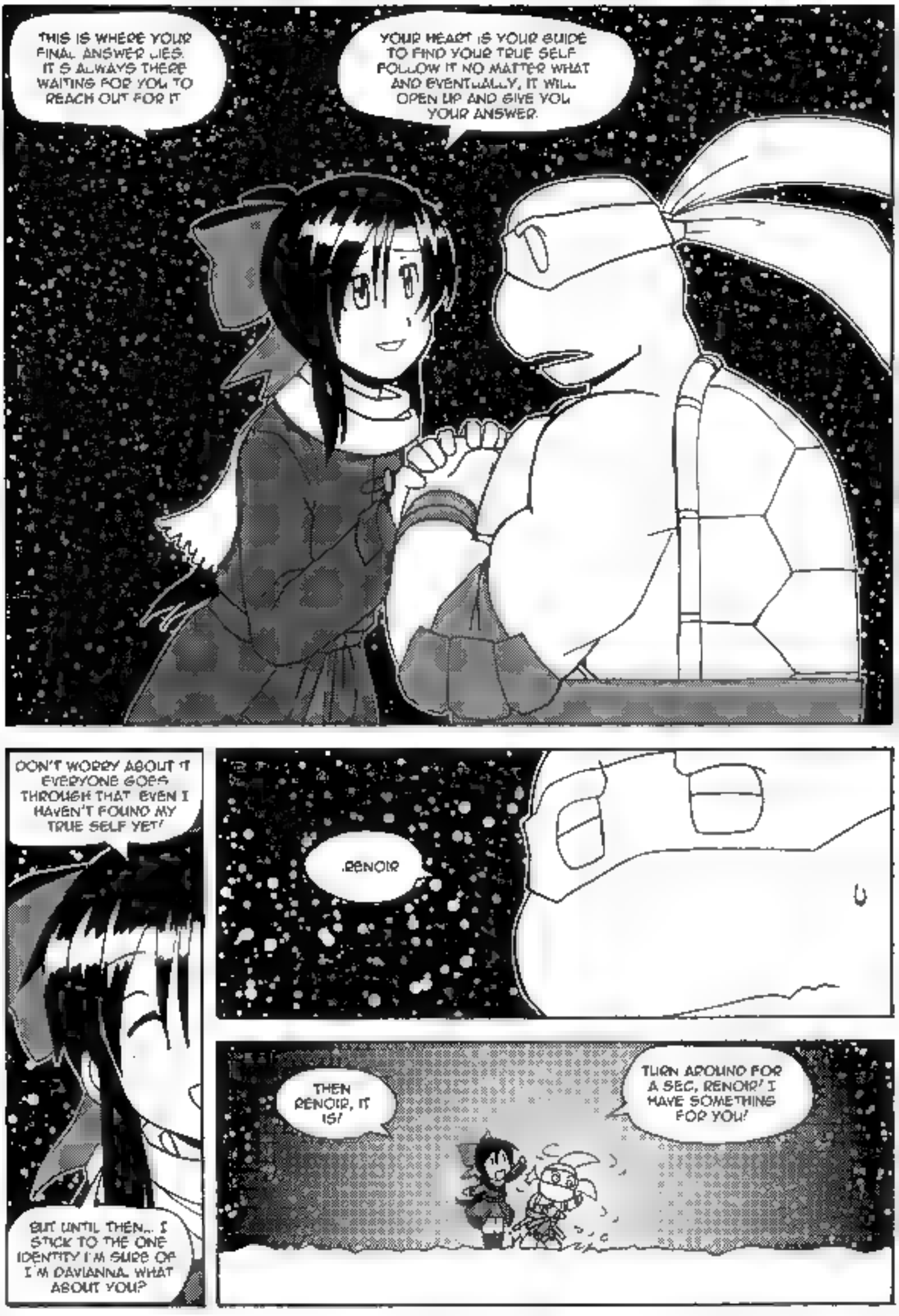

THE TRACKS YOU LEFT AS YOU ESCAPED COULD'VE LED THE POLICE TO YOU, HOWEVER
SOMEONE ERASED YOUR TRACKS AND ACTED AS A DECOY TO LURE YOUR PURSUERS AWAY FROM HERE
DO YOU KNOW WHO THAT WAS?
IF YER FISHIN' FOR COMPLIMENTS. JUST SAY IT STRAIGHT OUT THAT IT WAS YOU WHO SAVED US. DONNIE
INDEED YOU OWE ME YOUR LIVES.
...NOT" IT WASN'T ME! THAT'S WHY I'M ASKING IN THE FIRST PLACE!
HEY FRANKLY WHO CARES? WE'RE SAFE AND THAT'S ALL THAT COUNTS
WHAT? YA THOUGHT IT COULDA BEEN "HIM"?
A.. ANYWAYS.
WHERE ARE WE HEADIN' TO NOW?
LET'S GO TO APRIL'S APARTMENT REMEMBER WHAT SHE TOLD US? SHE EXPECTS US TO BE BACK FOR CHRISTMAS
YEAH! THE NIGHT'S STILL YOUNG! LET'S ER . "PAR-TAY"!! HEHEHE! COME, MY LOYAL SUBJECT! CARRY ME TO MY BANQUET!
I'M GLAD YOU'RE BACK BUT DON'T PUSH IT MIKEY

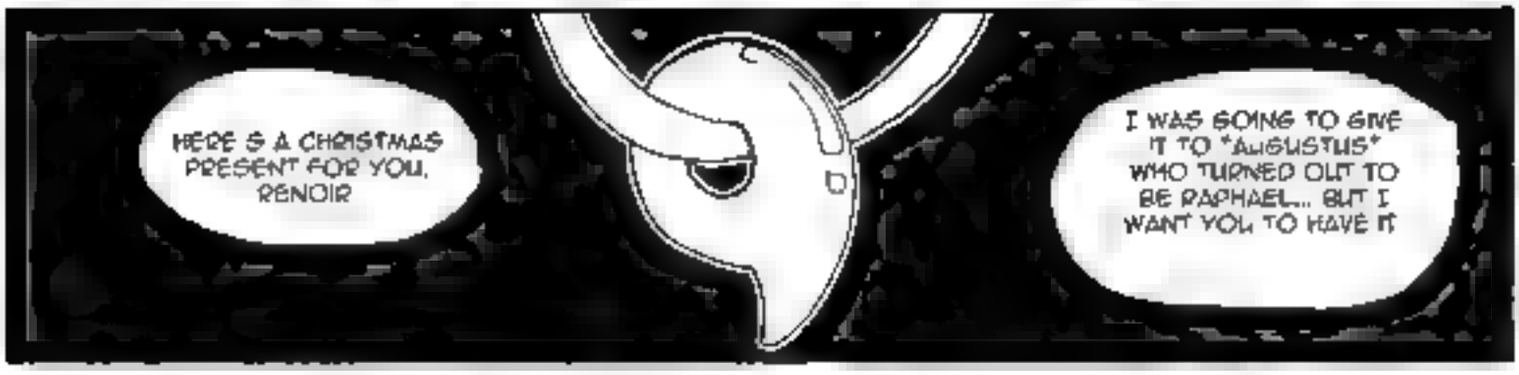

(SIGH) SO IT WAS YOU.
YOU'RE THE ONE WHO CALLED THE COPS
THEY TRACKED YOUR CELLPHONE ID TO YOUR HOME. THAT'S WHY THEY'RE RIGHT OVER THERE, HUH?
I KNOW IT AIN'T YER FOLKS WHO CALLED THE COPS. I ASKED APRIL TO CONTACT 'EM TO COVER UP YER ABSENCE UNTIL WE CAME BACK WITH YA.
I'M REALLY SORRY, MR JONES. I'LL TRY TO MAKE UP FOR AN EXCUSE THAT WILL KEEP YOU AND ALL THE OTHERS SAFE.
NOW THAT AIN'T THE ISSUE HERE GIRL. APRIL AND I CAN WORK OUR WAY THROUGH THIS SITUATION WE'VE BEEN MUCH WORSE THAN THIS.
ALSO, ANY SANE PERSON WOULDA CALLED THE COPS IN YER PLACE. I MEAN, NINJAS IN NEW YORK TRYIN' TO HARM PEOPLE. THAT'S JUST SCREAMIN' FOR SOME PUBLIC ORDER EH?
BUT SEE THIS GUY HERE? HE MADE UP A LIE TO COVER UP YER MISTAKE WHILE YA STOOD THERE SAYIN' NOTHIN'. IF YA AIN'T GONNA FESS UP, YA COULD'VE AT LEAST TRIED TO COVER UP YER OWN MISTAKES INSTEAD OF LETTIN' HIM DO THE DIRTY WORK!
DON' CHA KNOW IT'S THANKS TO HIM THAT YER STILL ALIVE RIGHT NOW?
MR JONES! CAN YOU PLEASE LEAVE US ALONE FOR TWO SECONDS?
IT WON'T BE LONG. I PROMISE
GUESS I JUST AIN'T GOOD WITH 'EM YOUNG 'UNS.


I HOPE YOU'RE NO LONGER MAD AT SHADOW, DAVIANNA.
H...HUH? OH, NO, NO! OF COURSE NOT!
I SAID MEAN THINGS TO HER TONIGHT
I'M JUST GLAD I'M GIVEN A CHANCE TO APOLOGIZE TO HER
I'M SUCH A SELFISH, USELESS PERSON.
DON'T SAY THAT REMEMBER WHEN SHADOW USED TO BULLY YOU IN KINDERGARTEN?
ONE DAY DURING A FIELD TRIP, SHE FELL IN A LAKE AND ALMOST DROWNED DESPITE EVERYTHING SHE DID TO YOU. YOU WENT OUT OF YOUR WAY TO HELP HER
YOU ONLY KNEW JAPANESE.. BUT YOU DID YOUR BEST TO GET HELP FROM PEOPLE, RUNNING AROUND, SHOUTING WEIRD WORDS LIKE "TASUKETE" OR "ABUNAI".
SO DON'T WORRY TOO MUCH ABOUT IT I THINK YOU'RE A VERY ALTRUISTIC PERSON!
SO? FEEL BETTER DAVIANNA?
RENOIR..
WHY DO YOU KNOW SO MANY DETAILS ABOUT MY CHILDHOOD? EVEN THINGS SHADOW DOESN'T KNOW?


OH. DROPPED MY WALLET
I GOT IT
OH MY GOD YOU PERV
HAH... HAH.
YOUNGSTERS. I DON'T GET 'EM.
YOU. YOU... IT WAS JUST LIKE HIM.
NO ! RENOIR TELL ME..
TELL ME THE TRUTH! WHO ARE YOU, REALLY?


I... I'VE BEEN WAITING FOR THIS MOMENT FOR SO LONG, DAVIANNA. BUT BUT NOW THAT YOU'RE HERE WITH ME I CAN GET THE ANSWER..
ANSWER ? YOU MEAN THAT.
YOU DON'T KNOW WHO YOU ARE?
DAVIANNA. I'M I'M AUGUSTUS RIGHT?
COME ON.. SAY IT
WHAT? BUT .. I MEAN. I THINK SO BUT TO ME, YOU ARE ALSO A MUTANT THAT I MET A FEW MONTHS AGO
GIVE ME A STRAIGHT ANSWER. DAVIANNA! EVERYONE'S BEEN GIVING ME ALL KINDS OF IDENTITIES UP TILL NOW! RAPH'S STUDENT WILD MUTANT, MONSTER, "RENOIR".
BUT I DON'T CARE ABOUT THEM! WHAT YOU THINK IS ALL THAT MATTERS TO ME DECIDE WHO I AM FOR ME.. AND THAT'S ALL. THE TRUTH I NEED!
TELL ME WHAT I WANTED TO HEAR ALL THAT TIME!
WHY RELY SO MUCH ON HOW OTHERS SEE YOU?
YOUR DEFINITIVE IDENTITY THAT'S SOMETHING THAT IS YOURS ALONE TO DECIDE NOT OTHERS
DON'T LOOK TOO FAR FOR YOUR ANSWER.
BUT BUT DAVIANNA. I..


THIS IS WHERE YOUR FINAL ANSWER LIES. IT S ALWAYS THERE WAITING FOR YOU TO REACH OUT FOR IT
YOUR HEART IS YOUR GUIDE TO FIND YOUR TRUE SELF FOLLOW IT NO MATTER WHAT AND EVENTUALLY, IT WILL OPEN UP AND GIVE YOU YOUR ANSWER.
DON'T WORRY ABOUT IT EVERYONE GOES THROUGH THAT EVEN I HAVEN'T FOUND MY TRUE SELF YET!
BUT UNTIL THEN... I STICK TO THE ONE IDENTITY I'M SURE OF I'M DAVIANNA. WHAT ABOUT YOU?
RENOIR
THEN RENOIR, IT IS!
TURN AROUND FOR A SEC, RENOIR! I HAVE SOMETHING FOR YOU!


HERE'S A CHRISTMAS PRESENT FOR YOU, RENOIR
I WAS GOING TO GIVE IT TO "AUGUSTUS" WHO TURNED OUT TO BE RAPHAEL... BUT I WANT YOU TO HAVE IT


DAVIANNA, WHAT IS THIS PENDANT?
"MAGATAMA"


WHAT?
AMULET THIS PROTECTS YOU FROM EVIL


HMMM.. THANKS.


WELL, I'D BETTER GO AND LET MY PARENTS KNOW THAT I'M SAFE
DAVIANNA, PLEASE
PLEASE JUST GIVE ME AN ANSWER WHO AM I?


RENOIR
ONLY YOU HAVE THE RIGHT TO DECIDE WHO YOU ARE



Metal Gear Solid Gaiden

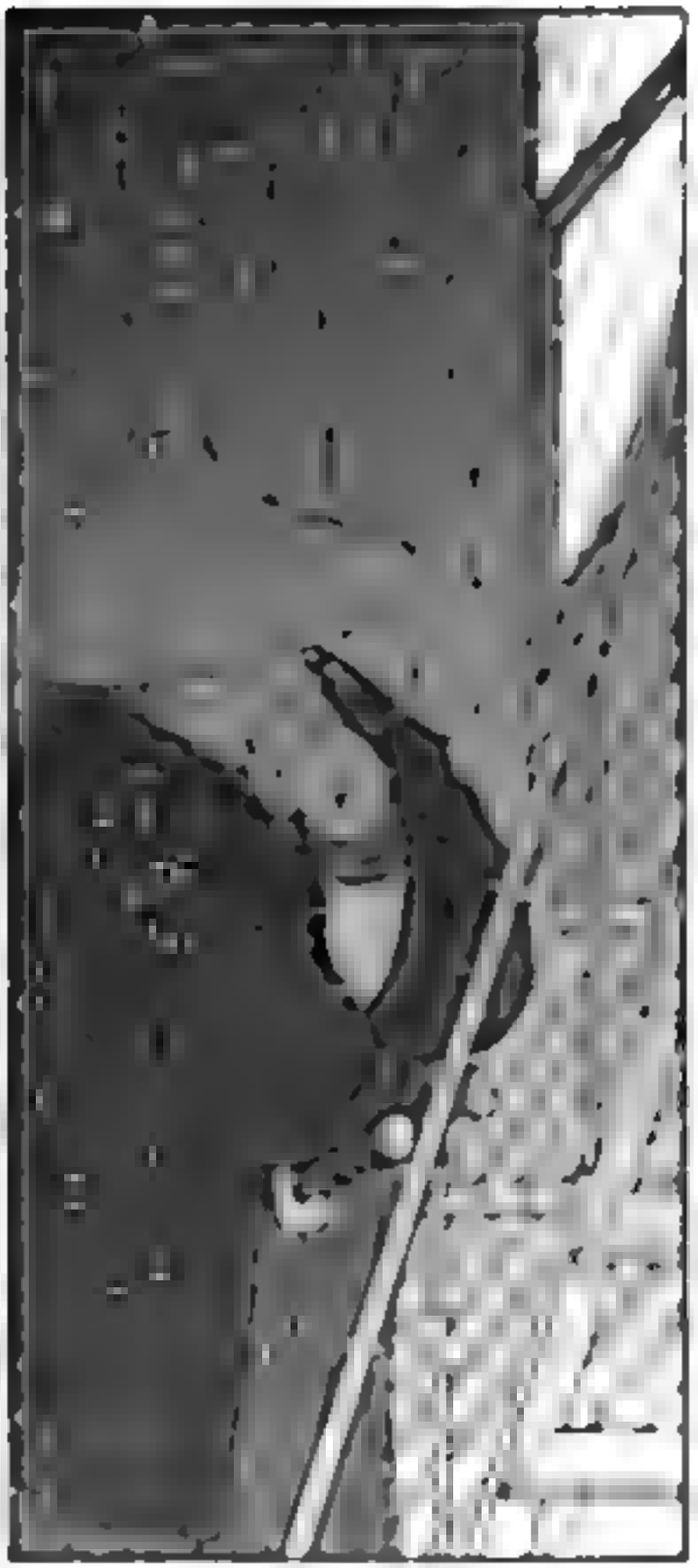
Chapter 16: The Leader



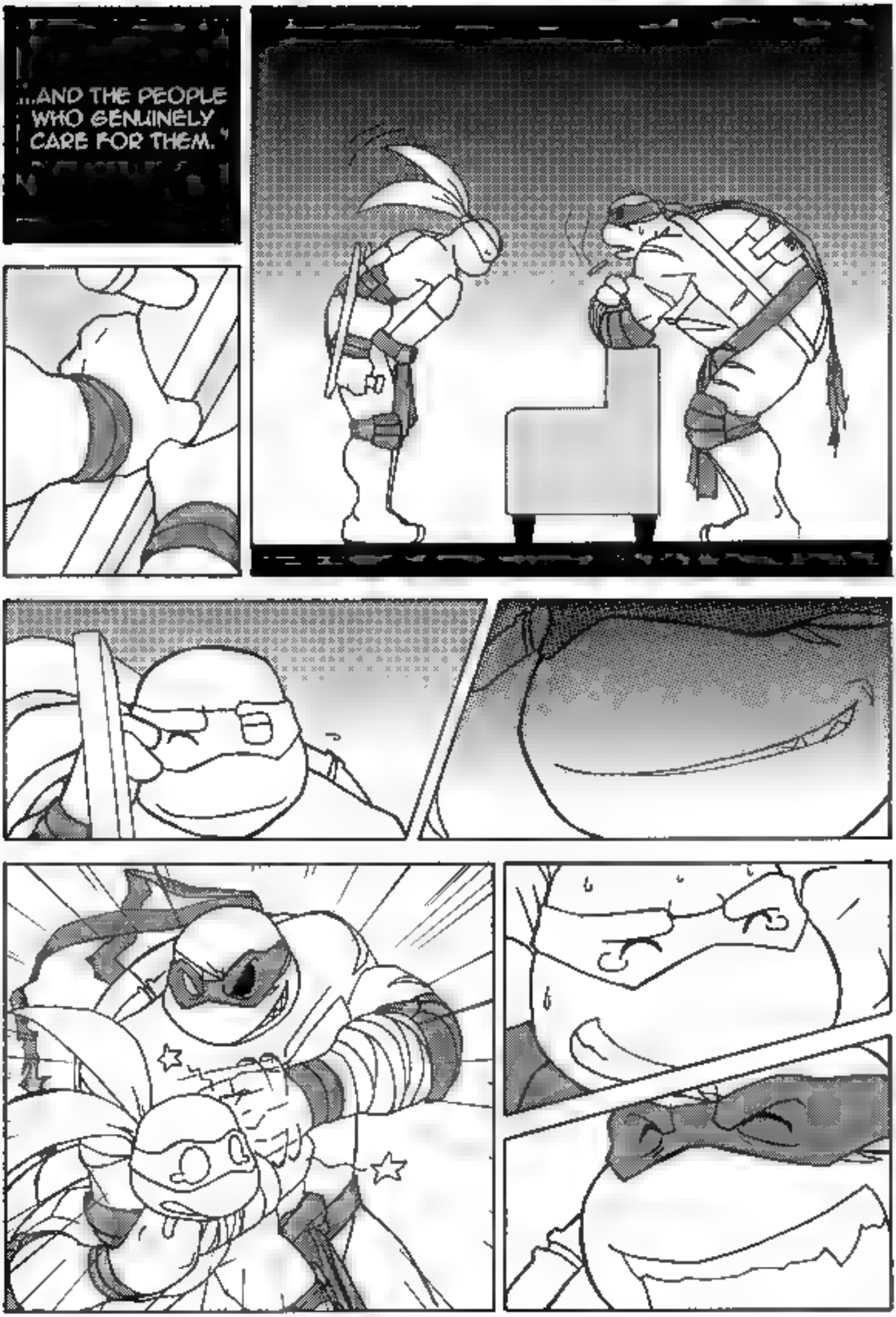
AND SO ENDS THE LONGEST NIGHT OF THE YEAR.





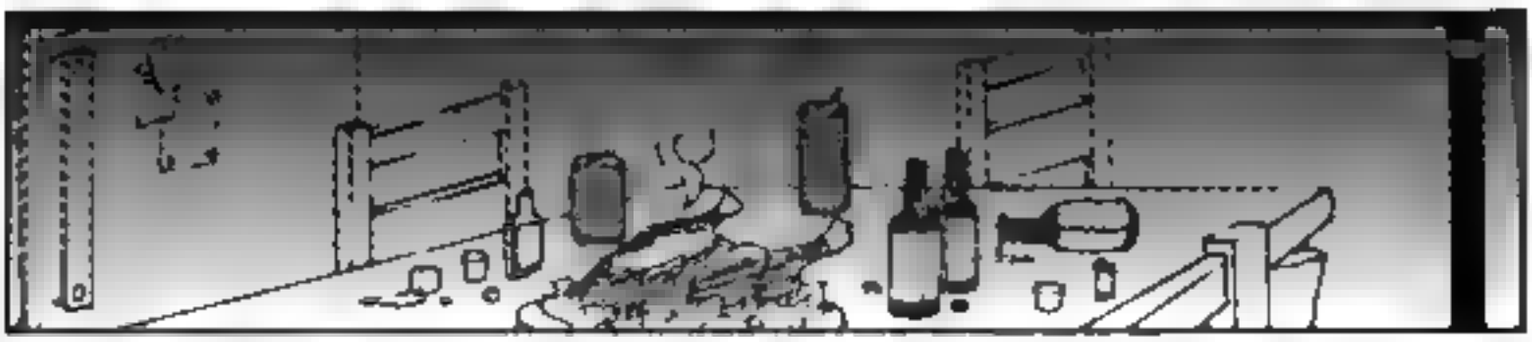


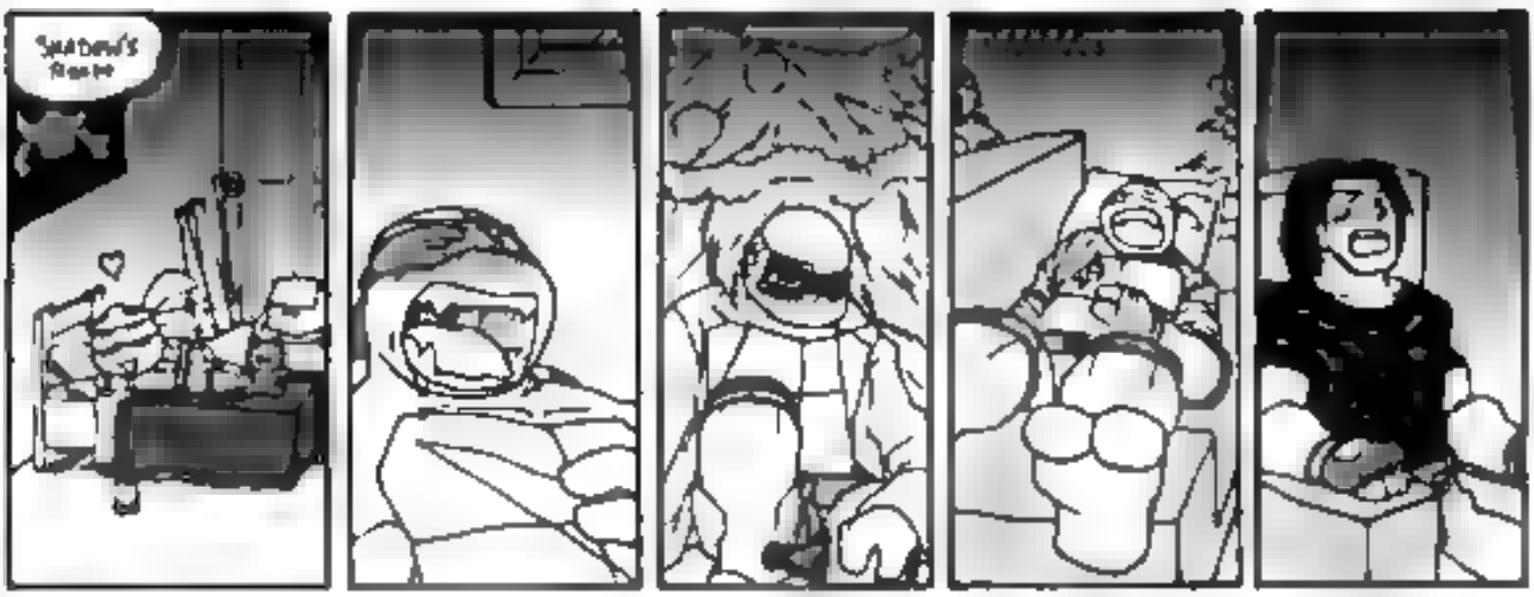

A NIGHT SO LONG THAT SOME TALK TO EACH OTHER LIKE THEY HAVE NOT MET IN YEARS...
...AND THAT SOME LEARN TO APPRECIATE THE PRESENT FOR WHAT IT IS...


...AND THE PEOPLE WHO GENUINELY CARE FOR THEM.


EVERYONE HAD A REASON TO CELEBRATE.

EVENTUALLY, SILENCE FELL IN THE APARTMENT.







"JUST LIKE THE GOOD OLD DAYS... I'M GLAD NOTHING HAS CHANGED."

"EVERYONE... PLEASE WAIT JUST A BIT MORE. I'LL BE BACK SOON."

BUT DESTINY HAD IT THAT THE PAGES TURNED FOR THE ESTRANGED BROTHER AS WELL...

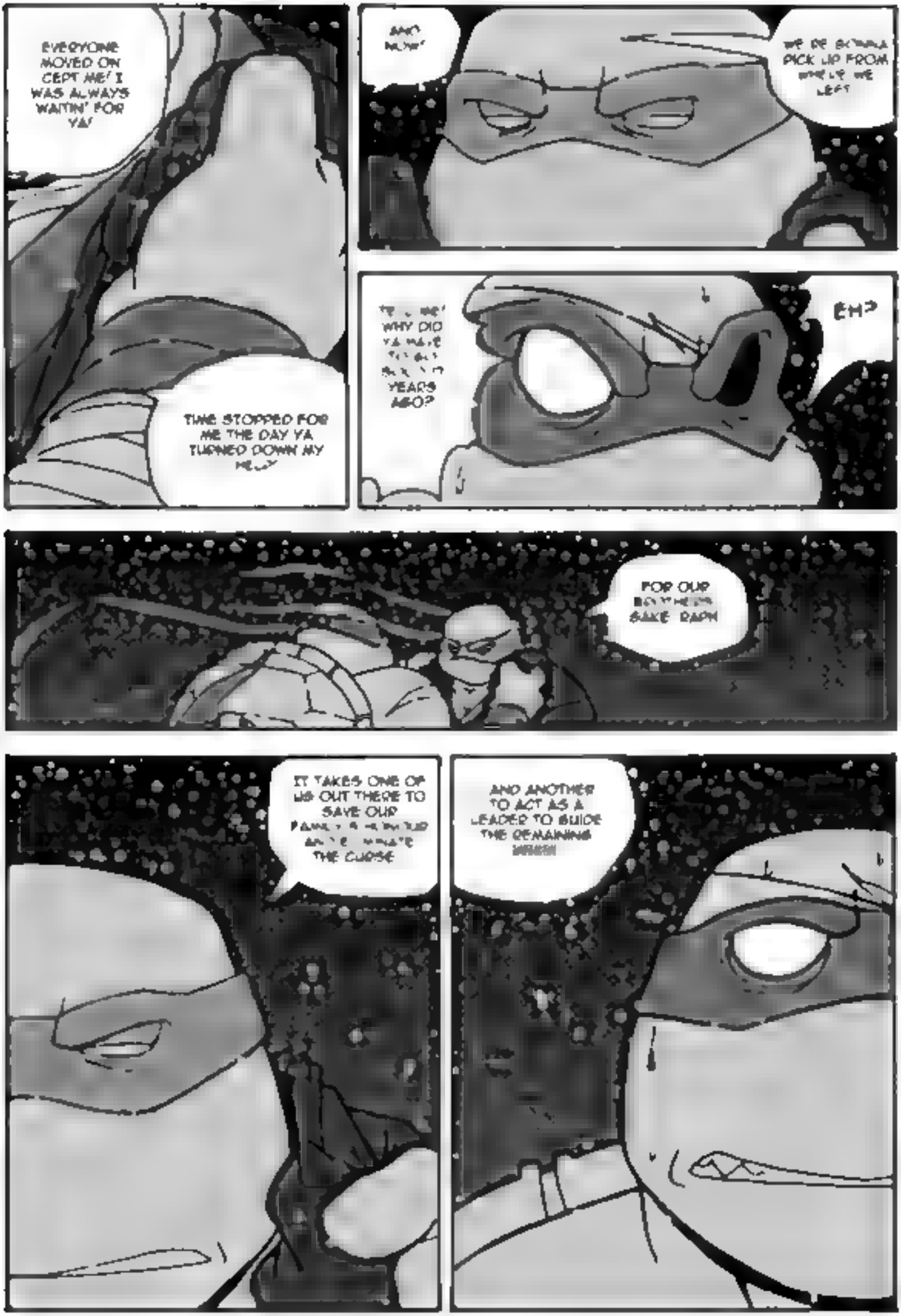



WAIT!
D.
DON'T RUN AWAY AGAIN...
...LEO!


WHERE
WHERE THE HELL WERE YA
PLUS THE LAST 17 YEARS
...WHERE WERE YA WHEN WE NEEDED YA THE MOST?
LOOK AT ME!


RAPHAEL... IT'S BEEN A WHILE.


THAT'S ALL YA HAVE TO HAVE TO SAY, ASSHOLE?
...HOW MUCH SHIT I HAD TO DEAL WIT'?


EVERYONE MOVED ON CEPT ME! I WAS ALWAYS WAITIN' FOR YA!
TIME STOPPED FOR ME THE DAY YA TURNED DOWN MY HELP
AND NOW!
WE'RE GONNA PICK UP FROM WHERE WE LEFT
WHY DID YEARS AGO?
EH?
FOR OUR SAKE RAPH
IT TAKES ONE OF US OUT THERE TO SAVE OUR THE CURSE
AND ANOTHER TO ACT AS A LEADER TO GUIDE THE REMAINING


BULLSHIT!
YA KNOW I WAS ALWAYS JEALOUS OF YER POSITION!
SO YA SWITCHED ROLES TO PISS ME OFF, HUH?
YOU'LL PAY FOR THIS!!
SHIT IT'S STUCK!
YA CAME TO LAUGH AT ME DIDN'T YA?
YA LIKE MAKIN FUN OF ME DON'T CHA?


HEHEHE...
PPASH!
GWAHAHAHAHA! THAT'S IT, LEO! GIVE UP THIS FIGHT! GIVE UP EVERYTHING, LIKE YA GAVE UP ON YER BROS WHEN THE SHIT HIT THE FAN!
YA FUCKIN' COWARD!!


SHUDDAP!
YER FULL


AAARGGH!!
SCREW YOU, LEO!
FUCK OFF!!


NOW YOU LISTEN TO ME
THE CURSE STILL EXISTS AND IT HAS TO BE [illegible] THAT'S WHY I WAS AWAY FOR SUCH A LONG TIME
I KNOW MY DECISION SEEMED IRRESPONSIBLE, BUT YOU HAVE TO UNDERSTAND WHAT IS AT RISK HERE
DO YOU REMEMBER? THIS CURSE REINFORCES ALL OF OUR SOULS NEGATIVE THOUGHTS AND SEALS THE REST
UNLESS SOMETHING IS DONE ABOUT THAT CURSE WE ARE THE ONES WHO WILL SUFFER THE MOST FROM IT
HEHEHEHE
YOU UNDERSTAND ME I KNOW IT


HAHAHAHA!
YER KIDDIN' ME, RIGHT?
YA FELLIN ME THAT I AIN'T IN CONTROL OF MYSELF?
I I'M GONNA KILL YA! I WAITED 17 YEARS FOR THAT!

"NO... THIS IS NOT WHY I WAITED FOR LEO."

"THIS IS ALL WRONG! I DON'T WANT HIM DEAD!! AFTER ALL WHAT HE DID FOR US..."

"I DON'T WANT TO KILL MY OWN BROTHER!!"


"I WAS HOPING LEO WOULD MOVE OUT OF THE WAY"
"YE' HERE I AM IN FRONT OF LEO."
"PERHAPS SOMEONE BIZARRE TRY HAND AT THE LAST MINUTE."
"MIKEY? DONNIE? CASEY? APRIL? SHADOW? SENSEI? LEO?"
BUT NO ONE DID NOT EVEN LEO."
"I DON'T WANT TO BELIEVE THIS."
"THIS IS NOT HAPPENING... THIS CAN'T BE HAPPENING!"

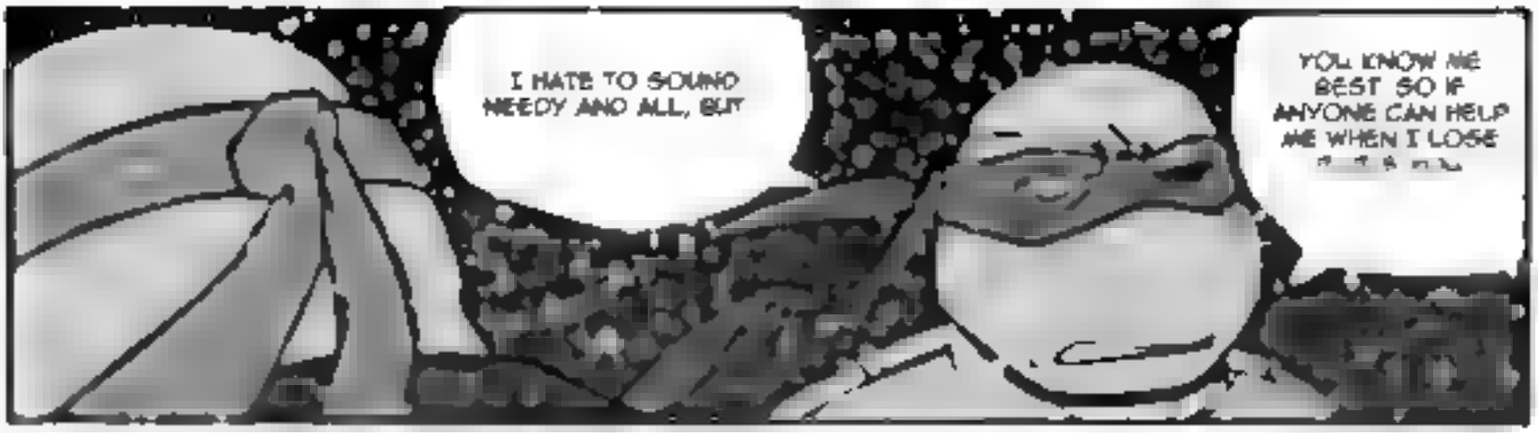


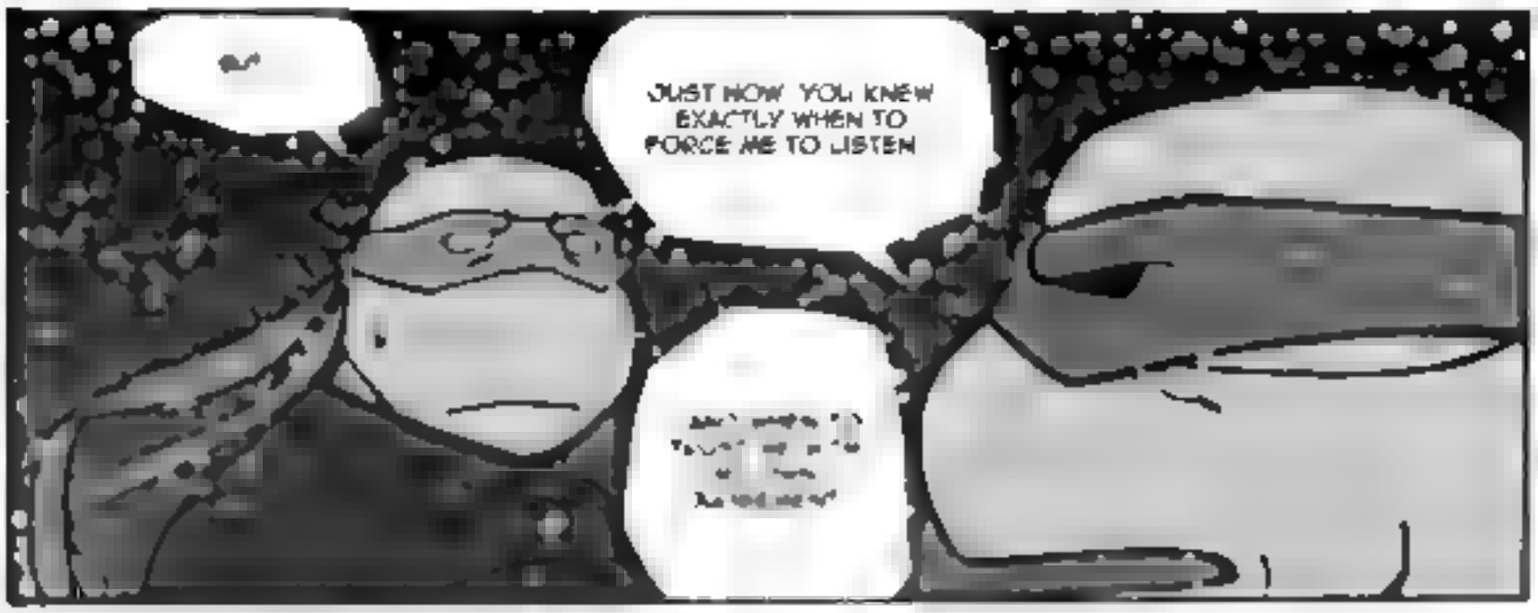


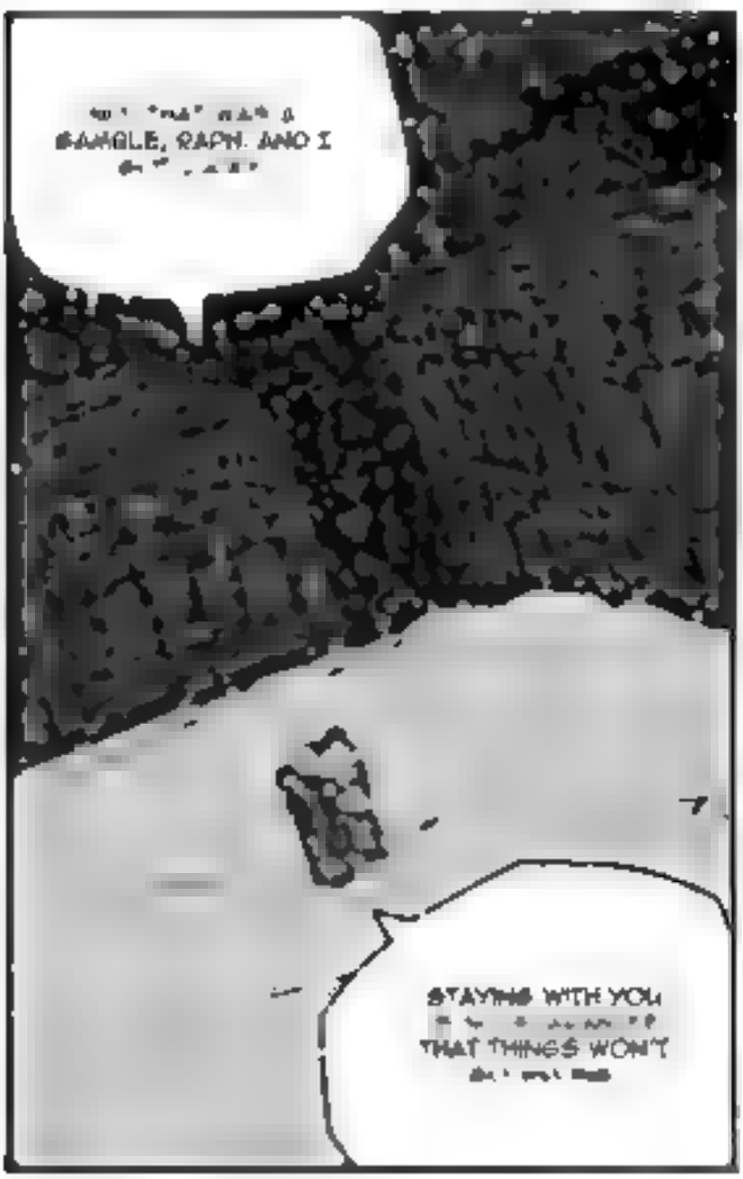

YOU'RE NOT ALONE, LEO!
I'LL PROVE IT TO YOU!


DON'T GO!
I CAN'T GO, LEO.
BUT .. YA GOTTA STAY! WE CAN MAKE IT TOGETHER, LEO!


RAPH, HAVE YOU EVER THOUGHT ABOUT WHAT TRIGGERS THE CURSE IN YOU?
IT STRIVES ON YOUR SOUL'S WEAK SPOTS RAPH
I'M SOMEHOW RELATED TO THEM.
AND.. AND YER SAYIN' THAT'S WHY YA HAVE TO LEAVE?
NO... NO, THAT AIN'T A GOOD ENOUGH REASON!
LEO... INSTEAD OF THE CAUSE, HAVE YA "THOUGHT" ABOUT WHAT PROTECTS ME FROM THE CURSE?
THIS IS SOMETHIN' WE USED TO TAKE FOR GRANTED
BUT MIKEY MADE ME REALIZE HOW MUCH WE RELY ON IT
OUR BONDS
AS AN OUTCAST OF THE HUMAN SOCIETY, MY FAMILY WAS ALL I HAD. AND THAT'S ALL I NEEDED
WE MIGHT NOT ALWAYS GET ALONG LEO
BUT YOU ARE THE FIRST ONE I THINK OF WHEN I [illegible] TO SEIZE CONTROL OF MY MIND


I HATE TO SOUND NEEDY AND ALL, BUT
YOU KNOW ME BEST SO IF ANYONE CAN HELP ME WHEN I LOSE


JUST HOW YOU KNEW EXACTLY WHEN TO FORCE ME TO LISTEN

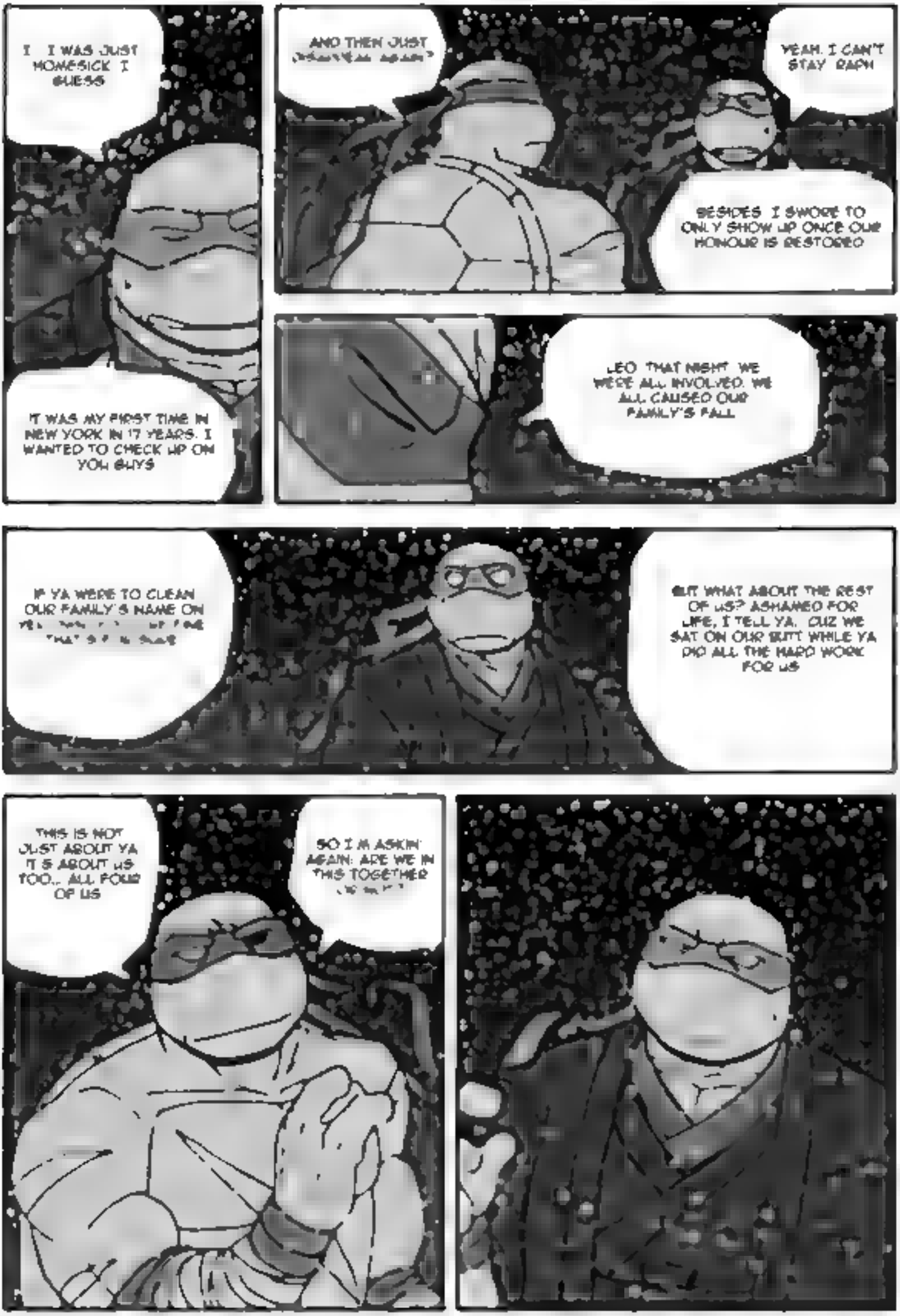

SAMBLE, RAPH. AND I
STAYING WITH YOU
THAT THINGS WON'T

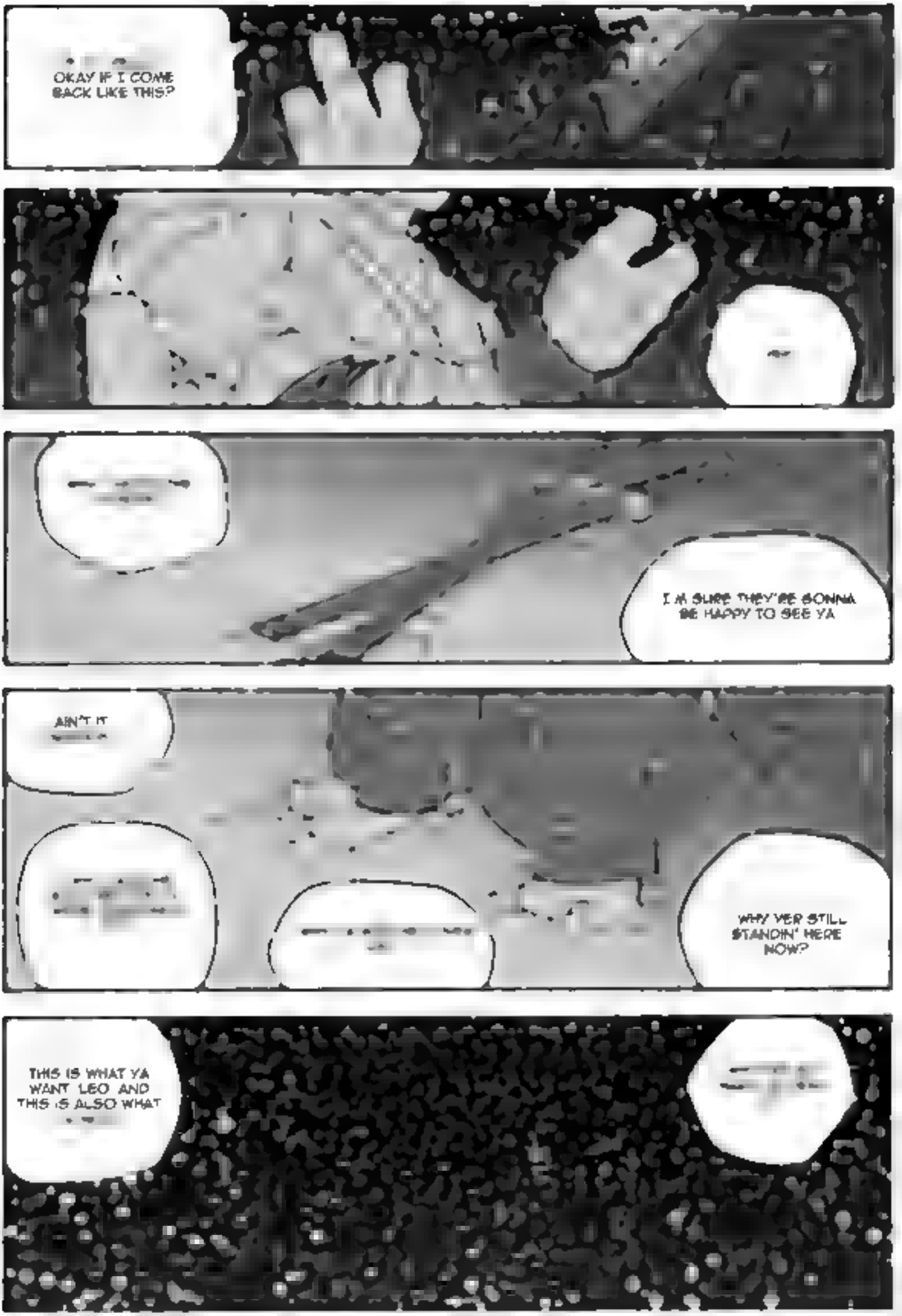

THIS IS WHY WE MUST PART WAYS UNTIL THIS


DUMBASS




I DON'T JUST SAY THAT
I DIDN'T EXPECT YOU TO GET ALL MOPY ON ME LIKE THAT
BUT IT SURE IS GOOD TO HEAR THAT YOU STILL TRUST ME AFTER ALL THESE YEARS
GAPH
WAIT A SEC
OH NOW GET IT
THAT IS WHAT YA WANTED ALL ALONG... YOU DAMN ATTENTION WHORE
WHAT?
YA LIKE TO FEEL NEEDED. SO YA TEASE ME BY THREATENIN' TO LEAVE!
IF YA REALLY WERE THE LONE WOLF YA SAY YA WERE WHY DID YA SPY ON US IN THE FIRST PLACE?
WANNA PLAY HARD TO GET OR SOMETHIN ?


I I WAS JUST HOMESICK I GUESS
IT WAS MY FIRST TIME IN NEW YORK IN 17 YEARS. I WANTED TO CHECK UP ON YOU GUYS
AND THEN JUST [illegible]?
YEAH. I CAN'T STAY RAPH
BESIDES I SWORE TO ONLY SHOW UP ONCE OUR HONOUR IS RESTORED
LEO THAT NIGHT WE WERE ALL INVOLVED. WE ALL CAUSED OUR FAMILY'S FALL
IF YA WERE TO CLEAN OUR FAMILY'S NAME ON [illegible]
BUT WHAT ABOUT THE REST OF US? ASHAMED FOR LIFE, I TELL YA. OUZ WE SAT ON OUR BUTT WHILE YA DID ALL THE HARD WORK FOR US
THIS IS NOT JUST ABOUT YA IT S ABOUT US TOO.. ALL FOUR OF US
SO I M ASKIN' AGAIN: ARE WE IN THIS TOGETHER [illegible]


OKAY IF I COME BACK LIKE THIS?
I'M SURE THEY'RE GONNA BE HAPPY TO SEE YA
AIN'T IT
WHY YER STILL STANDIN' HERE NOW?
THIS IS WHAT YA WANT LEO AND THIS IS ALSO WHAT



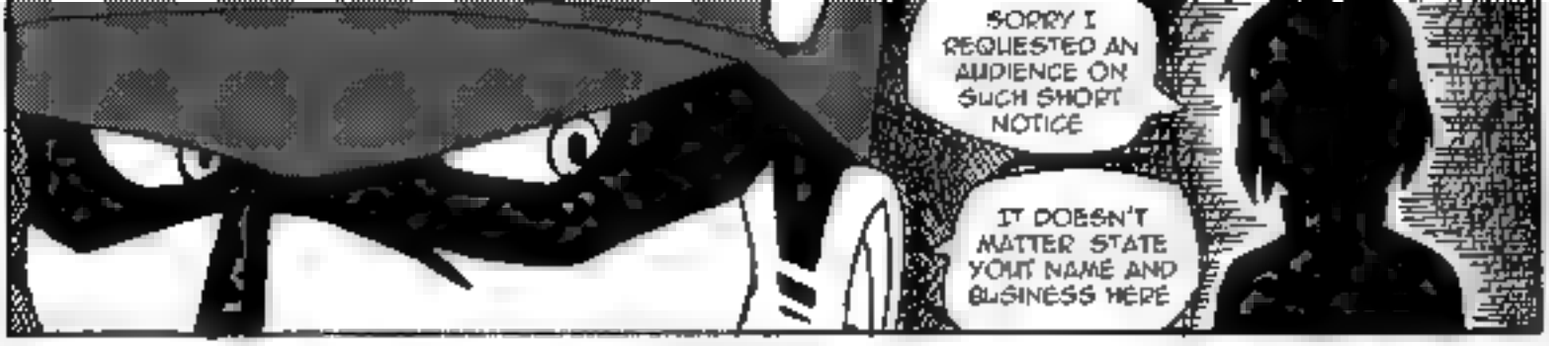

MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
GAIDEN
CHAPTER 17: BETWEEN
COPS AND NINJAS


BACKUP IS ON ITS WAY IN THE MEANTIME, LET'S KEEP OUR EYES PEELED FOR ANY SUSPECT
ブオオオオ
"TONY" DID YOU HEAR THAT? SOUNDS LIKE A MOTORCYCLE
IT CAME FROM OVER THERE!
ズンバルズー
AH!! IT'S THE MUTANTS AGAIN!
HEY, YOU! FREEZE!!
THEM AGAIN! ARE THEY BEHIND THIS MASSACRE?
THERE'S NO DOUBT ABOUT IT! NOW LET'S GO AFTER THEM!
HUH?
AH??

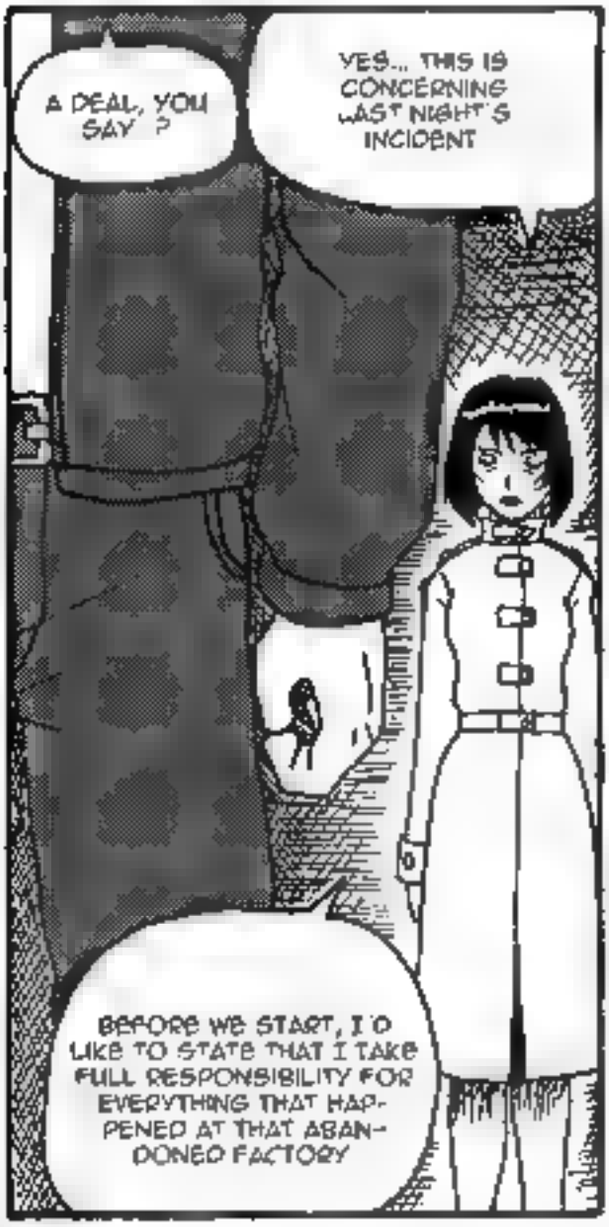

AND THAT'S ALL I CAN REMEMBER THEY SNEAKED UP ON US FROM BEHIND AND KNOCKED US OUT
YES AND BY THE TIME OUR BACKUP CAME THEY WERE GONE. THE MUTANTS, THE NINJAS ALL OF THEM. EVEN THE WOUNDED ONES!
I SEE THEY CLEANED UP THEIR MESS
SORRY WE COULDN'T DO A THING CAPTAIN
TO THINK WE COULD'VE NABBED THOSE MUTANTS TOO
GUYS SORRY TO CUT YOUR MEETING SHORT, BUT SOMEONE WANTS TO MEET WITH THE CAPTAIN IT SEEMS TO BE A MATTER OF THE UTMOST IMPORTANCE
TONY EVA, THIS WILL BE ENOUGH FOR THE BOTH OF YOU TODAY TAKE THE REST OF THE DAY OFF TO GET SOME WELL DESERVED REST
I'LL TAKE CARE OF THIS CASE BY MYSELF

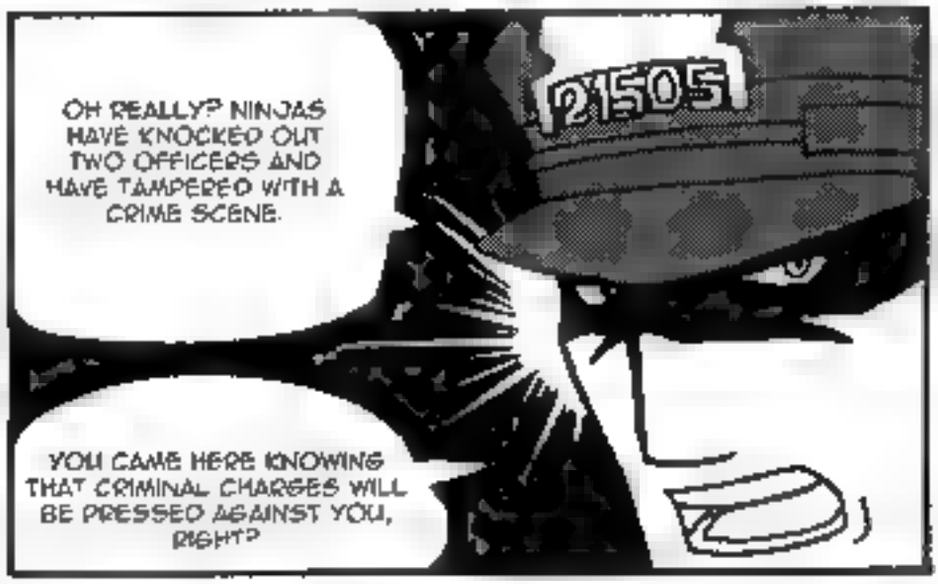

THE CAPTAIN'S A BIT STRANGE, DON'T YOU THINK? WHY IS HIS OFFICE ALWAYS SO DARK?
DUNNO.. TO HIDE FROM US?
YOU SAID YOU'D BE HOME BY MIDNIGHT
I DIDN'T HEAR FROM YOU, SO I CAME HERE
BUT YOU'RE OKAY!!
YAAAY!! YAAAAY!!
EVAAAAA!!
OOOW!
MARION, GIVE YOUR SIS A BREAK SHE HAD A ROUGH NIGHT SHIFT
TEE HEE!
IT'S TOO BAD YOU WEREN'T HOME FOR CHRISTMAS EVE, BUT WE CAN ALWAYS MAKE UP FOR THAT TODAY, RIGHT?
CAN WE SPEND THE DAY TOGETHER BEFORE I GO TO MY FRIEND'S SLEEPOVER PARTY?
WHEN DUTY CALLS, I NEED TO BE OUT THERE PROTECTING CITIZENS. MARION.
ANYWAYS I HAVE THE WHOLE DAY OFF, SO LET'S GO WITH YOUR IDEA.
NOW GO HOME AND WAIT FOR ME BEFORE I START THINKING ABOUT GIVING YOU UP FOR ADOPTION FOR YOUR LITTLE STUNT JUST NOW
GOT IT!


EVA.. DON'T YOU FEEL A BIT RESTLESS ABOUT THIS WHOLE SITUATION? MUTANTS LURKING IN NEW YORK CITY, TERRORIZING CITIZENS, NINJAS CAUSING TROUBLE
AND HERE WE ARE UNABLE TO DO ANYTHING ABOUT IT YET IT'S OUR DUTY TO PROTECT THE CITY FROM THEM!
TONY GIVE IT A REST WILL YOU?
I WAS THINKING ABOUT ACTUALLY ENJOYING MY DAY OFF
IF YOU DON'T WANT TO THINK ABOUT IT THEN JUST DON'T IT'S JUST THAT AS A POLICE OFFICER, I CAN'T HELP BUT FEEL LIKE I'M DOING A LOUSY JOB
.MY DAY OFF . WITH YOU.
WITH YOU? AND WHAT DO YOU MEAN BY THAT?
DINNER TONIGHT AT MY PLACE TO THANK YOU FOR ALWAYS LOOKING AFTER ME
MARION WILL SLEEP AT HER FRIEND'S HOUSE. SO
B .BUT DON'T WORRY! IT'S NOTHING BIG! JUST A FUN AND CASUAL EVENING WITH ITALIAN TAKE-OUT AND BOARD GAMES! WE'RE NOT GOING TO S...SPEND THE NIGHT TOGETHER OR ANYTHING! HAHA-HAHA!
AH? AHAHAHAHA! OF COURSE NOT! I MEAN, THE IDEA OF DOING IT WITH YOU DIDN'T CROSS MY MIND AT ALL EITHER! HAHAHA!
EXCUSE ME.. I'M HERE TO SEE THE CAPTAIN.
BUSTED
(SIGH) WASN'T THAT A NICE DISPLAY OF WORK ETHICS


SORRY I REQUESTED AN AUDIENCE ON SUCH SHORT NOTICE
IT DOESN'T MATTER STATE YOUR NAME AND BUSINESS HERE


I M THE LEADER OF THE FOOT CLAN'S JAPANESE FACTION. I GO BY THE NAME "KARAI"
I CAME TO MAKE A DEAL WITH YOU, CAPTAIN.


A DEAL, YOU SAY ?
YES... THIS IS CONCERNING LAST NIGHT'S INCIDENT
BEFORE WE START, I'D LIKE TO STATE THAT I TAKE FULL RESPONSIBILITY FOR EVERYTHING THAT HAP-PENED AT THAT ABAN-DONED FACTORY


21505
OH REALLY? NINJAS HAVE KNOCKED OUT TWO OFFICERS AND HAVE TAMPERED WITH A CRIME SCENE.
YOU CAME HERE KNOWING THAT CRIMINAL CHARGES WILL BE PRESSED AGAINST YOU, RIGHT?


PLEASE ALLOW ME TO EXPLAIN MYSELF FIRST
CAPTAIN.. ARE YOU FAMILIAR WITH A 17 YEAR OLD INCIDENT THE MEDIA CALLED "THE CITY AT WAR"?


EVERYONE IN THE POLICE FORCE KNOWS ABOUT IT
THE BIGGEST FIASCO OF THE HISTORY OF THE NYPD... IT WAS SOME KIND OF WAR BETWEEN NINJAS IN NEW YORK CITY
DAY AFTER DAY MUTILATED BODIES OF NINJAS WERE STREWN ALL THE PLACE
THE NYPD HAD ABSOLUTELY NO CONTROL OVER THIS WHOLE SITUATION
UNTIL ONE DAY
THE BODIES SIMPLY STOPPED PILING UP
NO ONE HAD DATA ABOUT ANY OF THE DECEASED ONES NOT EVEN THE JAPANESE GOVERNMENT
AND THE MEDIA WAS QUICK TO POINT OUT THAT THE POLICE HAD NO HAND IN THE RESOLUTION OF THIS CHAOS
SORRY IF THINGS TURNED OUT THAT WAY BACK THEN. WE BELIEVED THAT KEEPING THE POLICE OUT OF THIS WAS THE BEST COURSE OF ACTION TO AVOID UNNECESSARY CASUALTIES
I SEE.. SO THAT WAS YOUR DOING NOW YOU'RE TRYING TO TURN THE TABLES TO MAKE YOUR ACTS SEEM NOBLE?
P1505
SORRY MISS KARA, BUT AS LONG AS YOU'RE KILLING PEOPLE IN MY CITY YOU'RE RUBBING ME THE WRONG WAY
YOU OUGHT TO GET THE WHOLE PICTURE BEFORE JUDGING ME CAPTAIN
OUR PURPOSE WAS NOT TO WRECK HAVOC IN YOUR CITY WE HAD OUR OWN AGENDA


AFTER THE DEMISE OF THEIR LEADER THE FOOT DIVISION BROKE UP INTO
SOME WANTED POWER OTHERS JUST WANTED BLOODSHED
AS THE LEADER OF FOOT DIVISION. IT WAS MY DUTY TO PUT AN END TO THIS CHAOS AND RESTORE ORDER WITHIN NEW YORK'S CLAN
THE LEADERLESS NINJAS ALL FOCUSED THEIR ATTENTION ON US.
CAUGHT OFF GUARD WE SUFFERED TERRIBLE LOSSES. BUT THROUGH AN UNLIKELY ALLIANCE WITH OLD FOES OUR MISSION WAS ACCOMPLISHED
WHAT WE DIDN'T KNOW UNTIL NOW WAS THAT ONE INFLUENTIAL FIGURES OF THIS REBELLION
AFTER WE RETURNED TO JAPAN. THIS MAN ROSE FROM HIS HIS OWN FACTION DISSIDENT NINJAS TO FOLLOW HIS
I WON'T DENY THE FACT THAT PLACE LAST NIGHT BUT THAT WAS THEIR DOING NOT OURS WE MERELY CLEANED UP THEIR MESS
REST ASSURED, WE HAVE THE ONES RESPONSIBLE IN OUR CUSTODY THEY WILL NO LONGER BE CAUSING YOU ANY MORE


I SEE. IF YOU CAME HERE EXPECTING ME TO HELP YOU COVER UP THEIR ACTS, FORGET IT
PLEASE RECONSIDER CAPTAIN.
OR SHOULD I SAY . NOBODY
WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT? WHAT IS "NOBODY"?
YOU HEARD ME WELL, NOBODY LAW ENFORCER BY DAY VIGILANTE BY NIGHT, AM I CORRECT?
ACCORDING TO OUR INFORMATION NETWORK, YOU WERE TRANSFERRED HERE FROM SPRINGFIELD 17 YEARS AGO.
IT SEEMS YOUR TRANSFER WAS DUE TO A SUDDEN SURGE OF CRIMINALITY IN NEW YORK AT THAT TIME A PROBLEM THAT STILL PERSISTS TILL THIS DAY
I WOULD ASSUME THAT THE CRIMINAL ACTIVITIES IN NEW YORK WERE MORE THAN YOU CAN HANDLE.. AND STILL ARE
THEREFORE..
BY CONFINING ALL THE CULPRITS RESPONSIBLE FOR LAST NIGHT'S INCIDENT AND KEEPING THEM OFF THE STREETS. WE ARE DOING YOU A FAVOUR
IN RETURN WE ASK YOU TO OMIT ANY MENTION OF THE FOOT CLAN IN YOUR REPORTS AND INTERVIEWS
NOW IF YOU DON'T TAKE HEED OF MY REQUEST AND START A WITCH HUNT ON US..
THEN LET S SAY THAT YOU WILL BE BITING OFF A LOT MORE THAN YOU CAN CHEW MR VIGILANTE


SO THAT'S WHAT IT'S ALL ABOUT!
BLACKMAIL!
DON'T GET TOO EXCITED. NOBODY


BEHIND YOU!
CAPTAIN!
21505
DON'T MOVE!
KEEP YOUR HANDS OFF HIM!
THIS WAS MEANT TO BE A TRUCE NOT A BLACKMAIL
YEAH, RIGHT BIG WORDS FOR SUCH A LOWLY ACT HOW DO I KNOW YOU'LL KEEP YOUR PART OF THE BARGAIN?


I ALWAYS KEEP MY WORD, NOBODY
THAT'S WHY RAPHAEL AND HIS BROTHERS ARE STILL ALIVE.
THEY KILLED THE LEADER OF NEW YORK'S FOOT CLAN LONG AGO..
THEY WERE MARKED FOR DEATH BY OUR CLAN.. BUT I LET THEM OFF THE HOOK 17 YEARS AGO AS PART OF A DEAL. AND I'M STILL TRUE TO MY WORDS
RAPH?
EVA. TONY HOSLTER YOUR GUNS
ROGER
FUJIO. PUT AWAY YOUR WEAPON.
THOSE GUYS ARE AS GOOD AS DEAD TO ME.
NEVER GAVE ME A SIGN OF LIFE ALL I KNOW IS THAT THEY'RE ON TV, BRANDED AS MAN-EATING MUTANTS.
DON'T BE SO HARSH ON THEM. THEY SURELY HAVE THEIR OWN PROBLEMS TO DEAL WITH.
BESIDES..
LEONARDO TOLD ME HE STILL HAS FAITH IN YOU
HE IS THE ONE WHO REFERRED US TO YOU. SAYING THAT YOU WERE THE ONLY PERSON IN THE POLICE FORCE WE COULD AFFORD TO TRUST BECAUSE YOU HAD A BROAD VISION OF JUSTICE
THIS IS A WIN-WIN SITUATION, NOBODY THINK ABOUT YOUR OFFICERS WELFARE
WHAT WILL IT BE?
YOU GOT THE DEAL.. KARAI.
P15


THEN THIS CONVERSATION IS OVER!
HEY!
!!!
WHAT?




WHERE'D THEY GO?
UGH!


YOU TWO...
Y YESSIR!

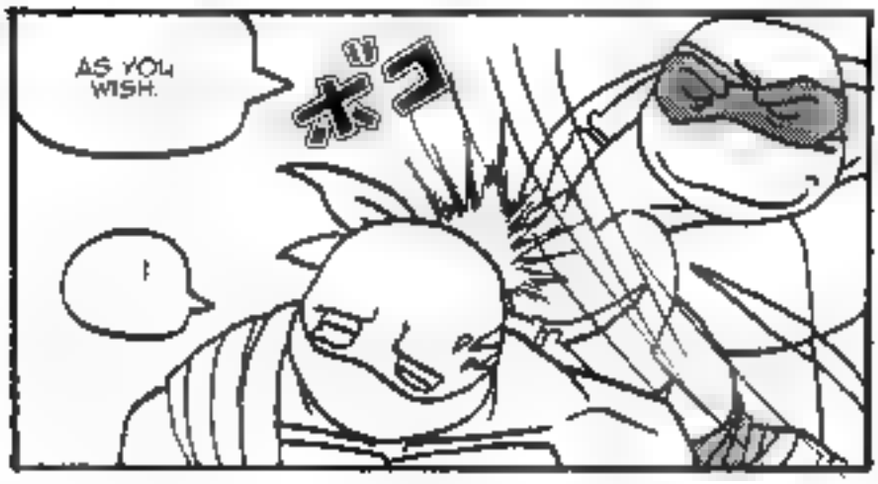

NOT A WORD OF THIS TO ANYONE!


NOBODY KNOWS!
..?
IS THAT CLEAR?


TO THINK WE JUST CHECKED IN CASE THE LADY REPORTED OUR BEHAVIOUR WOW THE CAPTAIN'S A VIGILANTE ?
THAT DOES IT I M GETTING TO THE BOTTOM OF THIS
BUT THE CAPTAIN SAID..
YEAH, WELL HE DIDN'T SAY ANYTHING ABOUT MUTANTS!
WE RE BEING FORCED TO CONCEAL THE TRUTH BEHIND LAST NIGHT'S INCIDENT BY THOSE NINJAS..
BUT THOSE MUTANTS THAT'S MY CUE' I'LL GATHER EVIDENCE AND EXPOSE THEM!
WELL I WON'T STOP YOU
BUT HEY . DON'T DO ANYTHING CRAZY OKAY? YOU'RE COMING TONIGHT RIGHT?
STORAGE
YEAH, SURE
I'LL BE THERE
I CAN'T BELIEVE I'VE FALLEN THIS LOW HAVING TO BARTER WITH CRIMINALS LIKE THIS..
LEO YOU'D BETTER HAVE DAMN GOOD REASON TO SIDE WITH THOSE SHADY PEOPLE


IT'S OKAY, RAPH. JUST LET HIM SLEEP, I CAN WAIT
MUUUUH... MWWHAT?
OY, MIKEY!


BRRR... HI, MIKEY
RAPH, PINCH ME


AS YOU WISH.
ポコ
!


I'M NOT DREAMING!!
LEO LEO LEO
LEO LEO LEO
LEO LEO LEO
LEO LEO LEO!

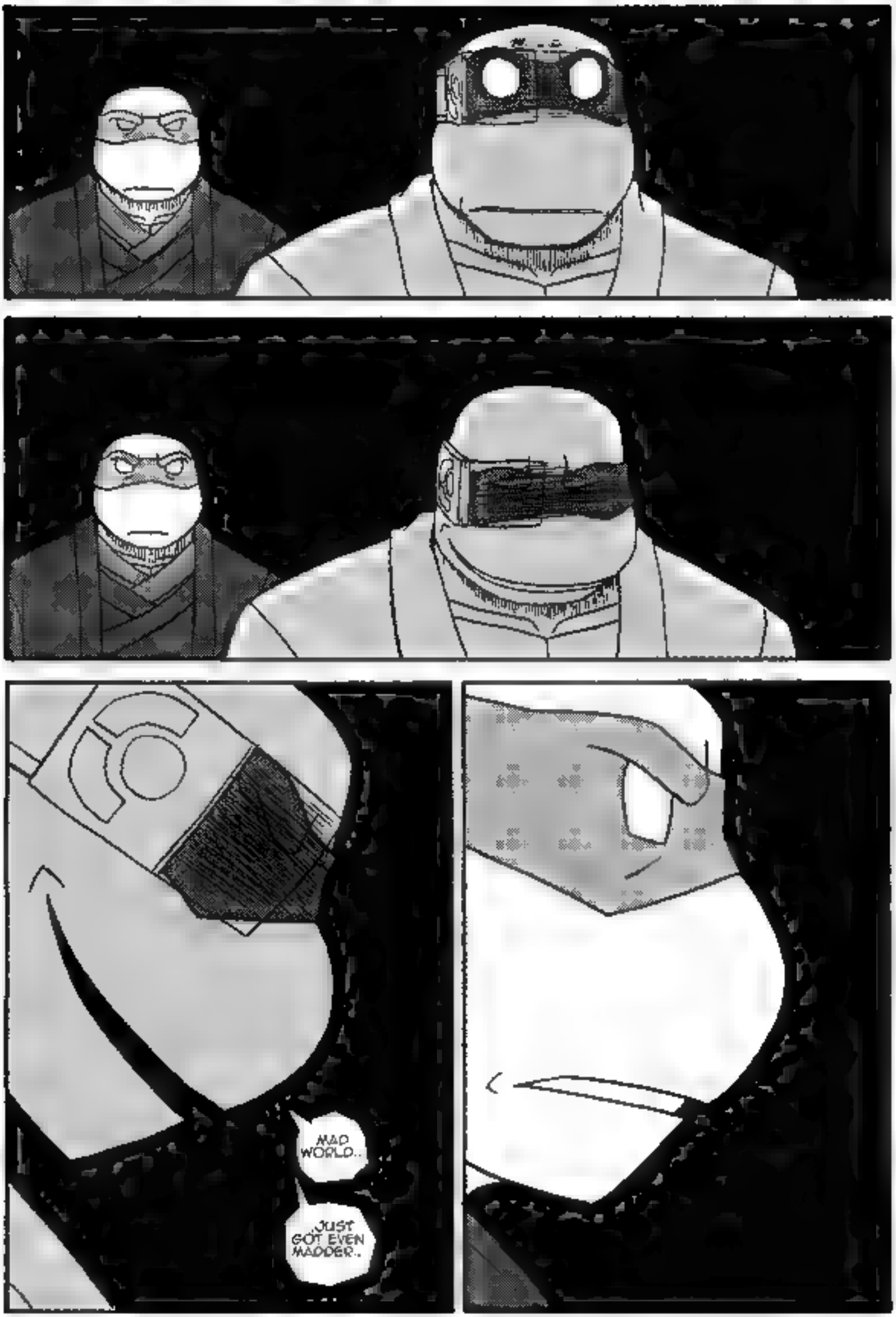

BOY AM I GLAD TO SEE YOU" HOW'VE YOU BEEN?
BEEPM
LEO, YA PRICK" WHERE YA BEEN HIDIN' ALL THESE YEARS?
YEAH!
WELCOME BACK, BRO!
OY OY GUYS GIVE THE GUY SOME AIR
WASSUP WITH THIS OUTFIT? YOU'VE BEEN TRICK AND TREATIN' FOR CHRISTMAS OR SOMETHIN?
CASEY MIKEY


THIS IS KIND OF SUDDEN. I
I DON'T KNOW WHERE TO START
HEY ANYTHING BUT AN APOLOGY WILL DO.
THAT S MY LINE
YOU KNOW, IF ONLY I HAD MORE GUTS BACK THEN, MAYBE THINGS COULD'VE TURNED OUT IN A DIFFERENT WAY FOR ALL OF US
SORRY I LET YOU DOWN ONCE, LEO... I SWEAR I'LL MAKE IT UP TO YOU THIS TIME AROUND.
DON'T BLAME YOURSELF, MIKEY IT WAS ALL MY FAULT
MY MIND WASN'T STRONG ENOUGH THAT'S WHY WE LOST THE SENSEI AND
STOP IT RIGHT THERE DON' CHA RUIN THE MOMENT WITH GUILT TRIPS
WHATEVER HAPPENED... IT'S ALL COOL NOW 'AIGHT?
AS LONG AS YA CAME BACK TO DO YER OWN SHARE OF CRIME-FIGHTIN', THAT IS.
YEAH, KIND OF

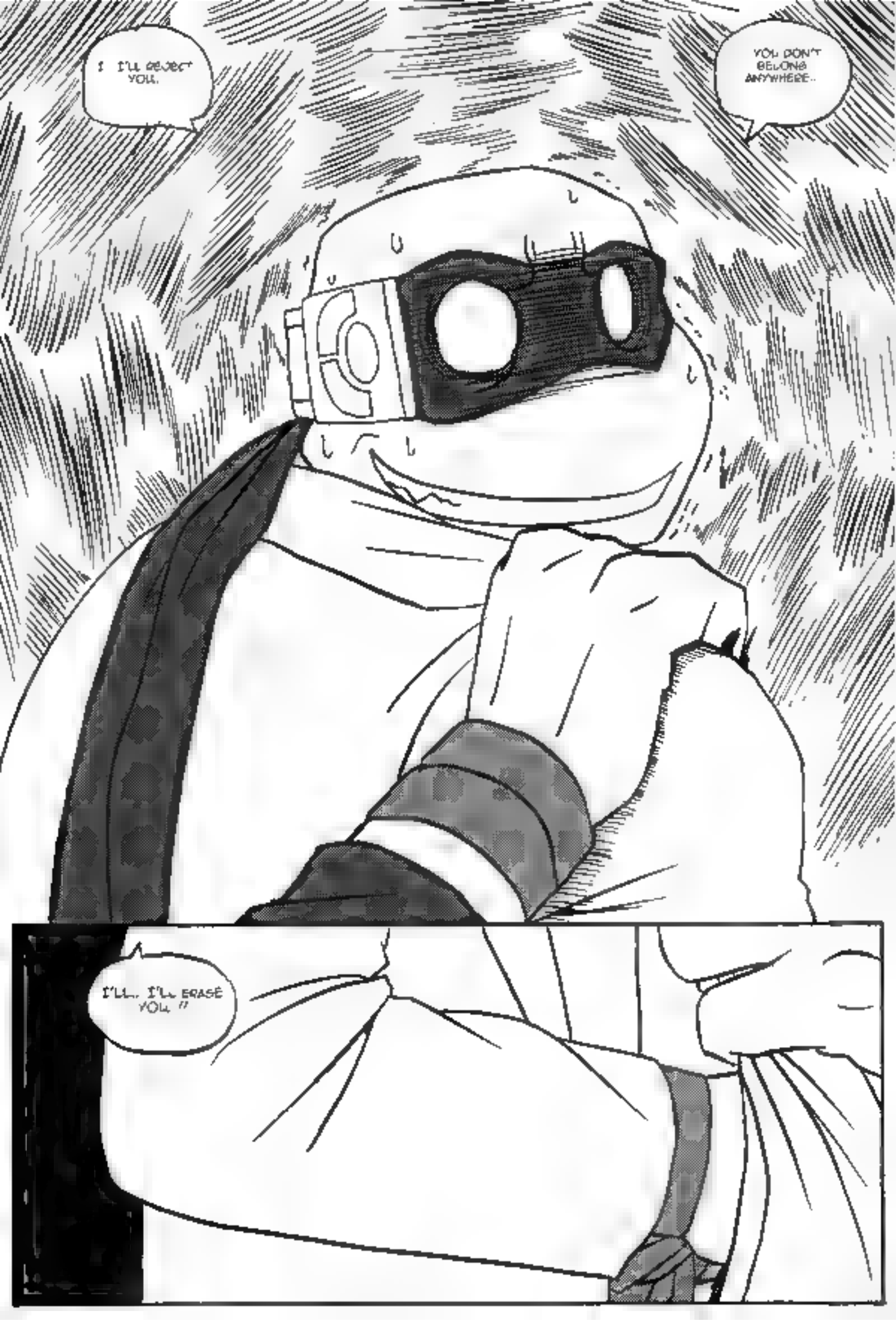

SO, WHEN ARE WE GONNA HEAR IT?
HUH?
YOUR TALE, LEO! WHAT YOU'VE BEEN UP TO FOR THE LAST 17 YEARS, IN FULL DETAILS!
NOT JUST "I'VE BEEN INVESTIGATIN' THE CURSE" OR SOME HALF-ASSED SYNOPSIS. GIVE US THE WHOLE THING!
LET'S WAKE DONNIE UP FIRST
HE'S FAMILY. HE SHOULD HEAR WHAT I HAVE TO SAY ABOUT THE CURSE


YOUR REALITY IT'S SLOWLY SLIPPING AWAY FROM YOUR GRASP...
WHAT? EVEN THOUGH I WORKED SO HARD TO ACHIEVE IT WHY?
HOW DARE HE HE KNOWS HE DOESN'T BELONG IN MY REALITY THAT'S WHY HE WANTS TO GET IN MY WAY, RIGHT?
I'LL NEVER FORGIVE HIM I WILL REJECT HIM.
TIME IS RUNNING OUT. YOU MUST BRING ME BACK. YOUR REALITY IS WAITING FOR YOU.
I WILL BRING YOU BACK. I WILL SERVE YOU I WILL PROTECT YOU


OY!
AT LAST! DONNIE, WE HAVE GREAT NEWS!
GUESS WHAT?
WHERE'S RENOIR?
HE SHOULD BE IN SHASOW'S ROOM, BUT FIRST...
NOT NOW
LEAVE ME ALONE
DONATELLO. IT'S ME


MAD WORLD..
..JUST GOT EVEN MADDER..


HEY, DONNIE, LOOKIE HERE! IT'S LEO, YER BRO!
I NEED TO END THIS NIGHTMARE THIS IS NOT MY REALITY
H.. HEY! DONNIE! C'MON! CHEER UP! WE'RE A TEAM AGAIN! JUST LIKE BEFORE! LEO'S HERE!
FOR MY REALITY I'LL REJECT HIM
I'LL REJECT HIM. I'LL REJECT HIM. I'LL REJECT HIM. I'LL REJECT HIM. I'LL REJECT HIM. I'LL REJECT HIM.
I FORGOT TO TELL YA.
HE NEVER REALLY GOT OVER WHAT HAPPENED.
BOOHOO HE DIDN'T EVEN LOOK AT ME
BUT I CAN'T JUST IGNORE HIM.
HE'S FAMILY
DONATELLO


I'll reject you.
You don't belong anywhere.
I'll... I'll erase you!!


WAIT, DONNIE!
I'D UNDERSTAND IF YOU DION'T WISH TO ME SEE AGAIN..
HA..
HA.
BUT BEFORE YOU JUDGE ME..
PLEASE, LISTEN TO WHAT I HAVE TO SAY IT S ABOUT THE CURSE
FOOLS
ALL FOOLS.








DON'T WORRY I EXPECTED HIM TO REACT LIKE THIS I WON'T GIVE UP ON HIM


HOWEVER, HE SEEMS SHAKEN UP BY MY PRESENCE I'LL HAVE TO KEEP MY DISTANCE UNTIL HE GETS USED TO ME ONCE AGAIN


RENOIR!
GET UP, NOW!
S. SIR! THOSE P .PANTIES, I. PLEASE, PLEASE DON'T TELL SHADOW!!!
I WAS DRUNK
RENOIR, COME WITH ME TO MY LAB!
NOW!
EH? WHY?
WELL, I'LL LISTEN TO YOUR ALL YOUR PROBLEMS. UNLIKE RAPH!
NOW COME!
I DON'T NEED TO TALK RIGHT NOW.
I HAVE REAL FOOD! YOU WON'T HAVE TO EAT THE PERISHED GOODS RAPH GIVES YOU!
BUT I'M NOT HUNGRY RIGHT NOW
PORN! I CAN GET YOU PORN FROM MY PC! AND PANTIES! YOU'RE A PERVERT, SO YOU LIKE THOSE DON'T YOU?
WHAT?
WHOA. DUDE YOUR PC GIVES OUT PANTIES?
...
TIME RUNNING OUT RAISED TOO MUCH SUSPICION. !!
YOU! JUST MOVE IT!
HEY!


OW, OW, OW, OW!
HEY!! LET GO OF ME!!
IF YOU'RE NOT GONNA COME WITH ME, I'LL DRAG YOU THERE MYSELF!!
OW!
EVEN IF I NEED TO USE A BODYBAG!!
WHAT...
...DID YA SAY?
RAPH! STOP IT!
LET'S TALK THIS OVER!
(SIGH) LIKE THE GOOD OL' DAYS
LEO'S STILL GOT IT
パッチ
OOOH DONNIIIE
I AIN'T MAD... PLEASE EXPLAIN TO YOUR DEAR BRO
WHAT'S THE DEAL WITH THAT "BODY BAG"


MY LAST ATTEMPT TO GET A SAMPLE WAS TOO RISKY... THE MORE SUSPICIOUS I AM, THE MORE PEOPLE WILL HOLD ME DOWN IN THIS REALITY. :/
THIS REALITY'S RAPH IS NOT ACTING LIKE HIMSELF. THIS MIGHT BE MY CHANCE TO UNDO MY MISTAKE.. AND RENEW MY CHANCES TO ACQUIRE A SAMPLE!
HA HA HA HA!
YOU GOT IT ALL WRONG I THINK!!
MY BURNING DESIRE TO HELP YOUNG PEOPLE LIKE RENOIR GOT THE BETTER OF ME!
SO EVEN IF HE'S BROUGHT TO ME IN A BODYBAG I'D GLADLY USE THE POWER OF SCIENCE TO REVIVE HIM!!
OKAY OKAY! I APPRECIATE IT! THANK YOU SIR BUT I M FINE!
NO. NO!! SAY YOU HATE THAT LUMBERING IDIOT! SAY YOU'D RATHER COME WITH ME!
HMM, YES, YES THANK YOU, DONATELLO
SO CLOSE !!!
COME BACK TO ME.
I CAN FEEL AN INTRUDER APPROACHING.
COME BACK. PROTECT ME. PROTECT YOUR REALITY.
I GOTTA GO!! IT'S... MY OVEN IS ON!!
SO LONG!

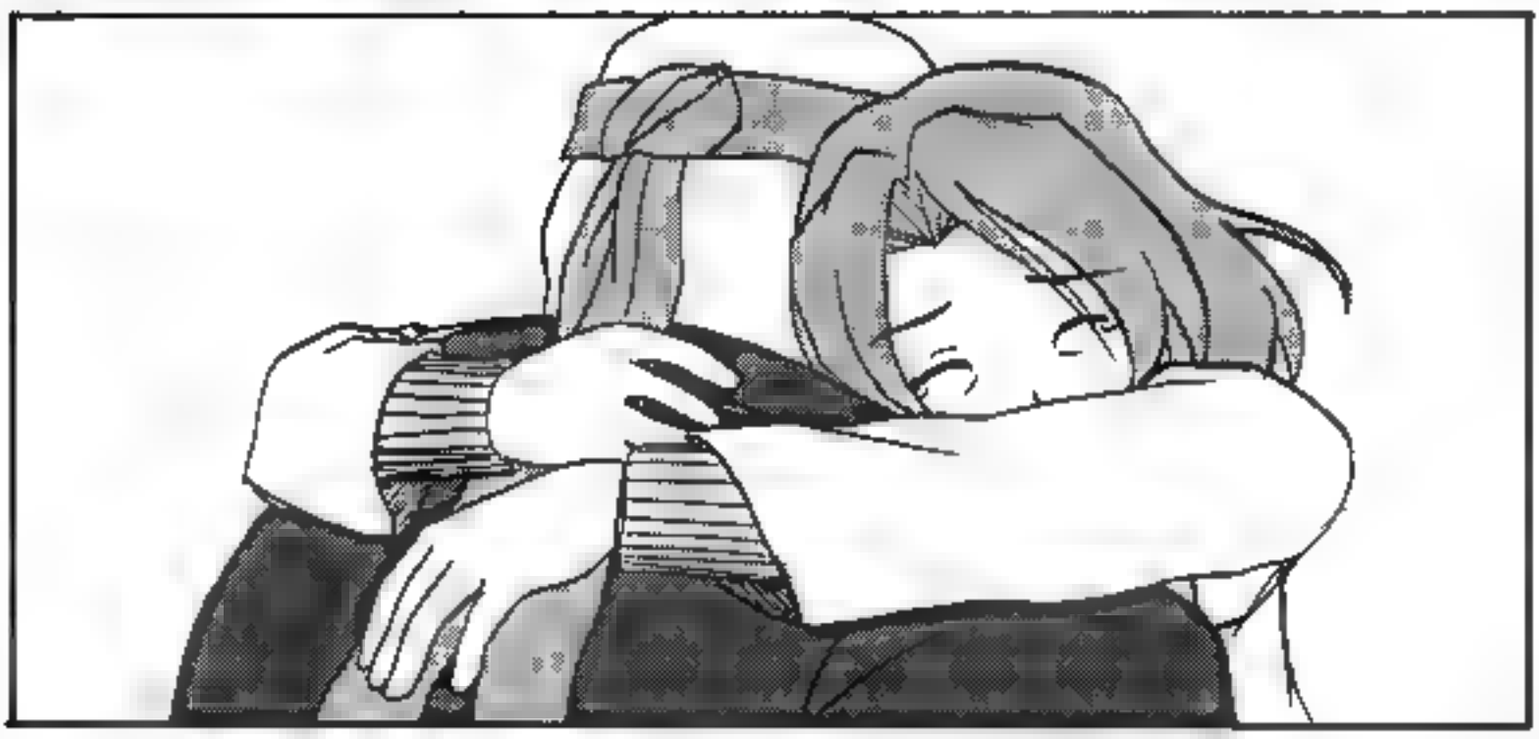

WE'RE HOME!
OH, HI, DONNIE!
I'M SORRY! GOTTA RUN!!
OH... ALRIGHT I WON'T HOLD YOU BACK TAKE CARE!
WASSUP WITH HIM?
ER
YOU TOO APRIL.
APRIL, SHADOW!
MIKEY!
UNC' MIKEY! L...LOOK AT YOU! THOSE BATTLE SCARS...
IT HURT LIKE HELL BUT I DON'T CARE!!
HAHAAAA!! YOU'RE REALLY FIGHTING FOR JUSTICE ONCE AGAIN!! I'M SO PROUD OF YOU!!
GO ON, LEO WHAT 'CHA WAITIN' FOR?
OOF!! W..WAIT!
NO EXCUSES. C'MON GREET MY WIFE
AH. HI.. APRIL

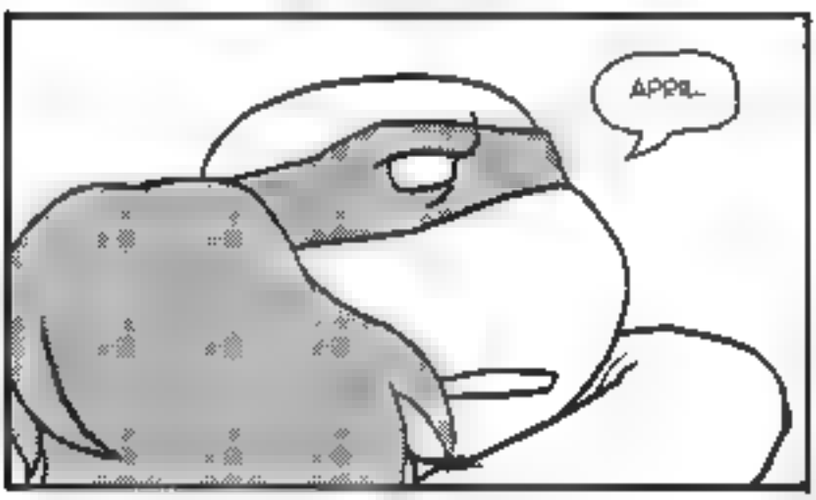


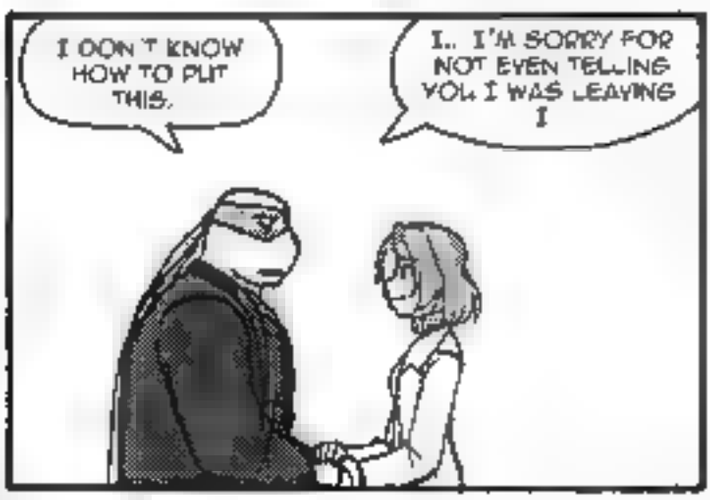



HUM. I CAN COME BACK LATER
I DID COME HERE UNANNOUNCED AFTER ALL, AND..


OH, YOU!
DON'T BE SILLY




APRIL.

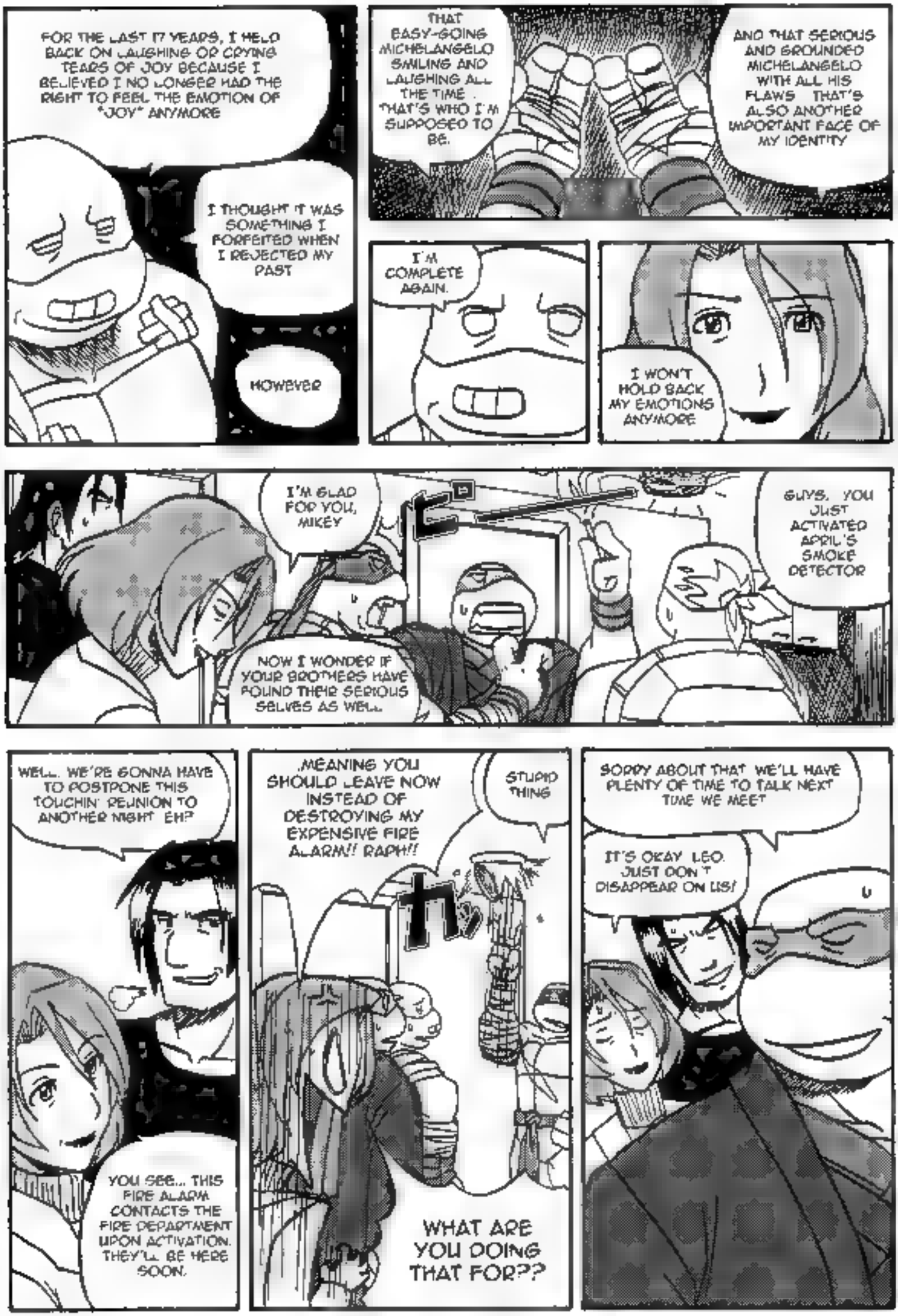

I DON'T KNOW HOW TO PUT THIS.
I.. I'M SORRY FOR NOT EVEN TELLING YOU I WAS LEAVING I

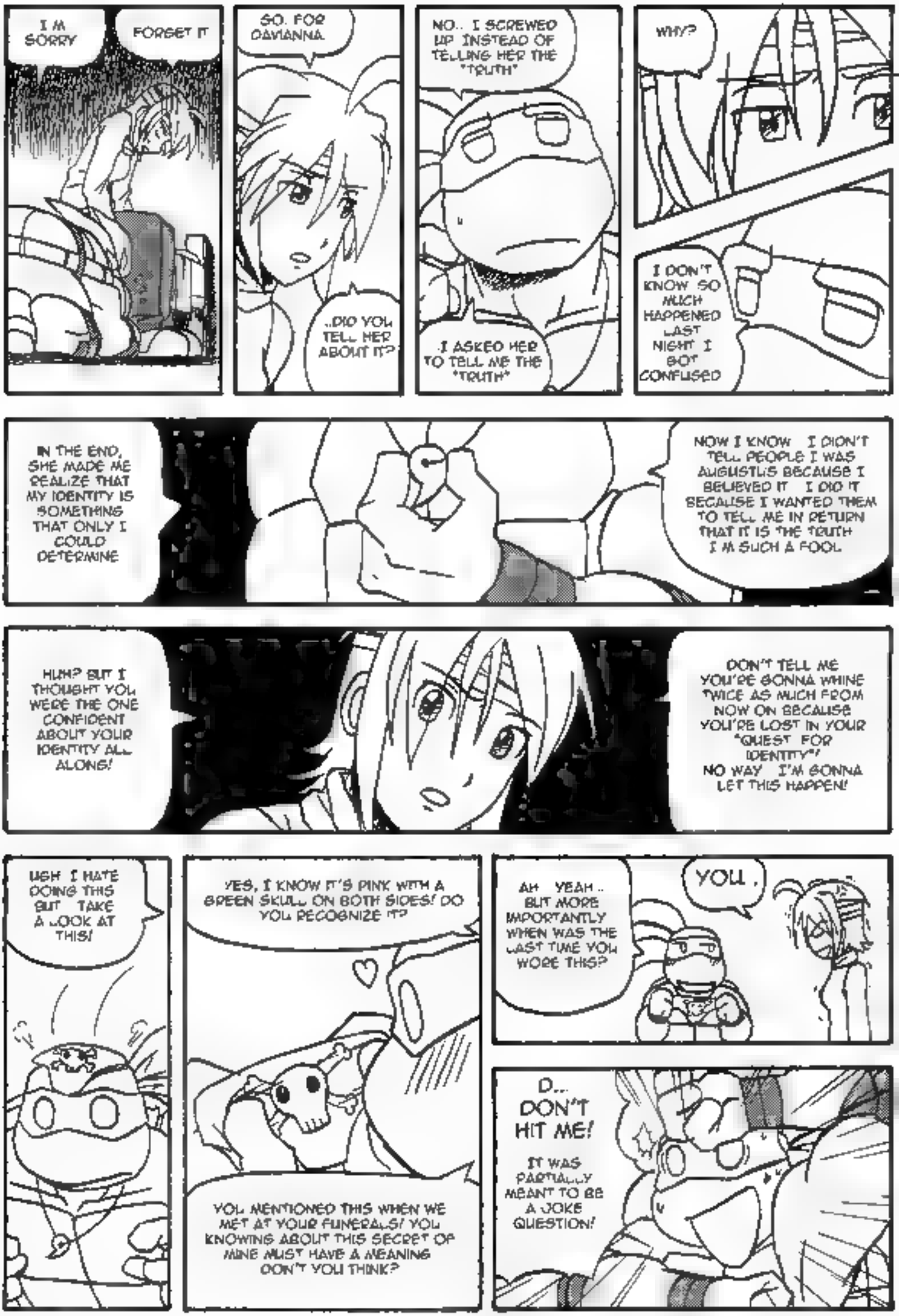

I DON'T EXPECT ANY APOLOGY FROM YOU AS LONG AS YOU PROVE ME RIGHT
IN BELIEVING IN YOUR RETURN ALL THESE YEARS
AND HERE YOU ARE IN FRONT OF ME. AFTER 17 YEARS
SO, THANK YOU, LEO... AND WELCOME HOME
HOME - HUH?
I'M HOME APRIL.
YEAH. YEAH WELCOME BACK TO "KANSAS", "DOROTHY"

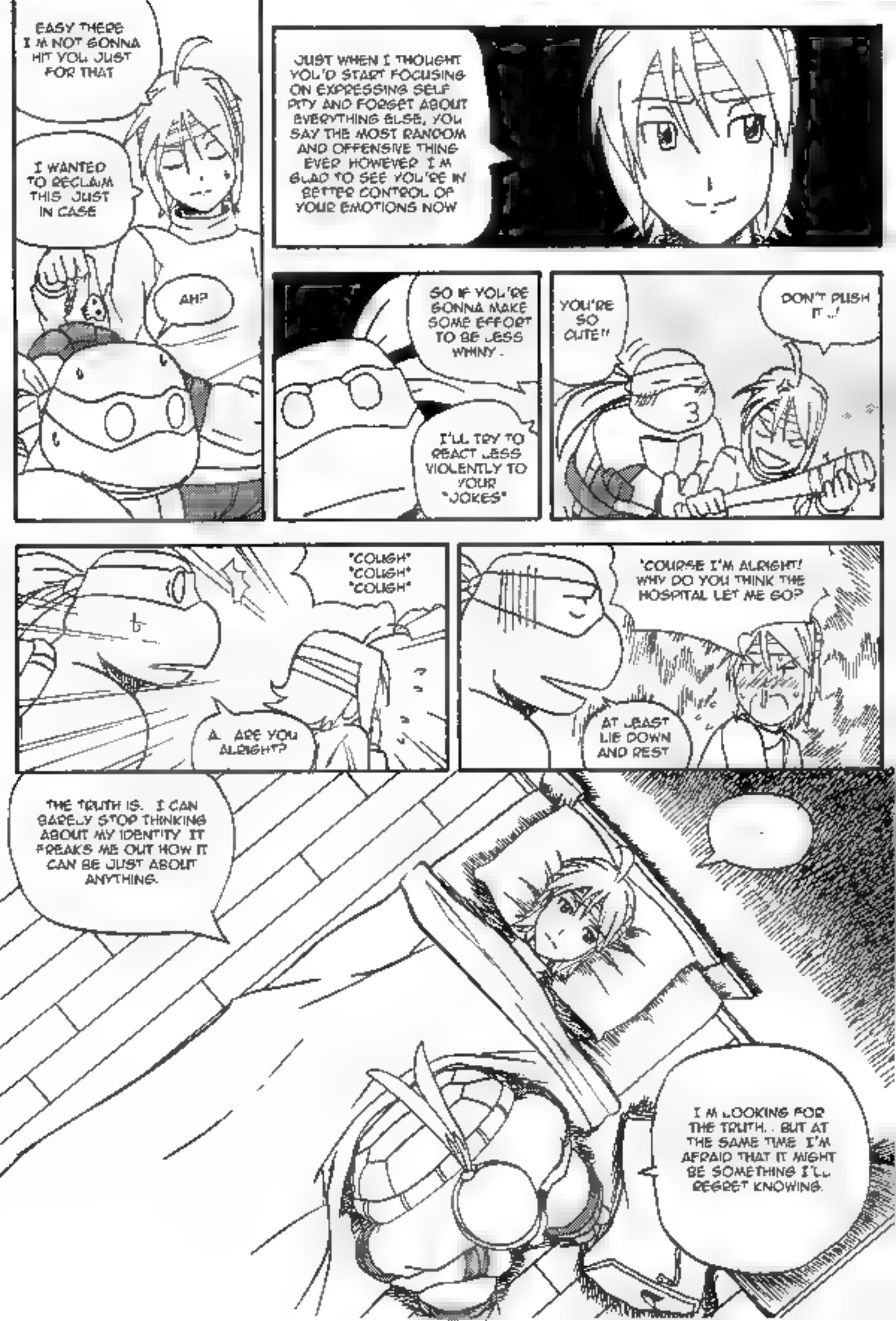

HEY, MOM! WHO'S THAT NEW FACE?
OH. RIGHT YOU NEVER MET HIM BEFORE.
THIS IS OUR DAUGHTER.
HOWDY! THE NAME'S SHADOW SHADOW JONES!
I CAN SEE THE PASSIONATE FLAMES OF JUSTICE BURNING IN YOUR EYES.
HUH?
MUST BE YOUR FATHER'S BLOOD RUNNING IN YOUR VEINS
WHAT THE HECK? HE SOUNDS LIKE SOME PHILOSOPHICAL SMARTASS THAT LIVED ALL HIS LIFE IN A MONASTERY AND ONLY SPEAKS IN RIDDLES
ACTUALLY, SHE AIN'T BLOOD RELATED TO NEITHER OF US
OH?
DAD HAS BLACK HAIR AND MOM'S A BRUNETTE I'M BLONDE ANYONE WOULD KNOW THAT
LONG STORY
MAKES SENSE RIGHT?
TWO WORDS RECESSIVE GENES THE ODDS ARE LOW, BUT THAT'S NO REASON TO DISMISS THEM.
WHA...? HE'S SMARTER THAN HE MADE ME THINK HE WAS
AH RIGHT
AH, WHERE ARE MY MANNERS? I M AN OLD FRIEND OF YOUR PARENTS
MY NAME S LEONARDO HAMATO PLEASED TO MEET YOU, SHADOW


OOH. SO YOU'RE THE DESERTER!
BE NICE, SHADOW.
YES MOM. YES DAD!
HAHAHA, FOR SOME REASON, I ALWAYS KNEW IF BOTH OF YOU WERE TO HAVE A CHILD.
..SHE'D BE JUST AS SPUNKY AS SHADOW HERE! THIS IS EXACTLY THE "JONES" FAMILY MODEL I HAD IN MIND!
YES INDEED IT IS SUCH A BLESSING TO HAVE AN UNDERSTANDING AND SUPPORTIVE HUSBAND LIKE CASEY AND A SWEET ANGEL OF A DAUGHTER LIKE SHADOW I REALLY LOVE WIT
LOOK, DAD! THAT GUY IS TOTALLY LITTERING IN OUR NEIGHBORHOOD!!
GOOD JOB, SHADOW! YOU JUST REDEEMED YOURSELF! NOW GRAB SOME STUFF AND SCARE HIM AWAY!
OH MY OH MY AND I WAS THINKING ABOUT REUSING THOSE BEAUTIFUL ORNAMENTS NEXT YEAR..
SORRY
CAN YOU BELIEVE IT? SHE'S NOT BLOOD RELATED TO CASEY YET SHE'S JUST AS WILD AS HE IS YOUR ASSESSMENT OF HER PERSONALITY WAS RIGHT ON THE MONEY
SICK VIGILANTES SHOULD REST
AH.
OH.. OH HI! SHADOW MY FRIENDDDDDD...
GO EASY ON HIM, SHADOW HE HAD A ROUGH NIGHT
MY MY LINGERIE... ALL OVER MY ROOM...

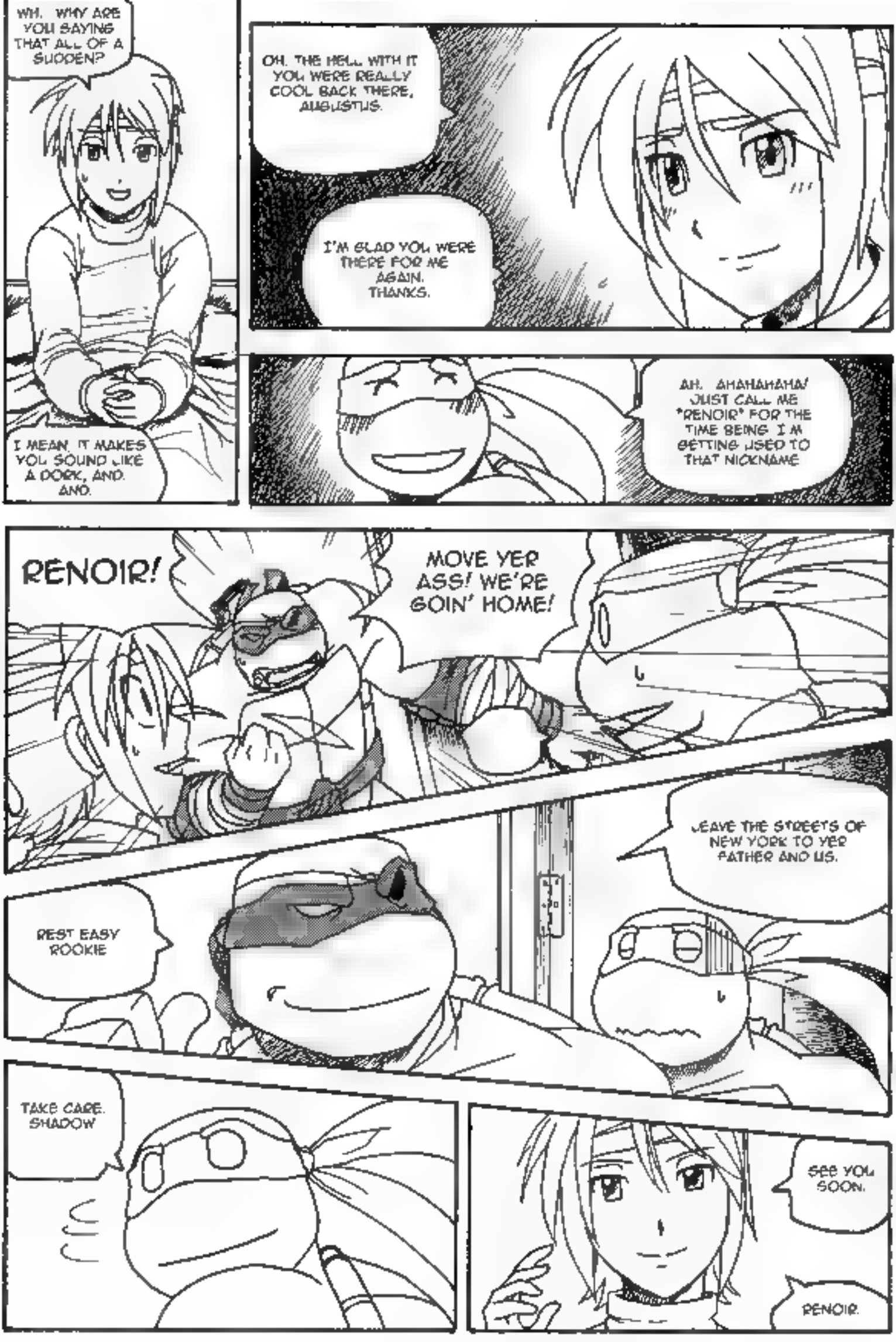

LEO. LEO LEO...
WHAT IS IT, MIKEY?
17 YEARS. LEO. IT'S BEEN 17 YEARS SINCE WE LAST TALKED CASUALLY LIKE THIS.
THAT'S WHY I CAN HARDLY BELIEVE MY EARS RIGHT NOW. YOU'RE BACK HOME WITH US AT LAST
AND IT'S NOT A OREEAAAAAM!
NEED A HUG?
EH NOTHING
I JUST WANTED TO HEAR YOU TALKING TO ME AGAIN.
BROOOOO!
IT'S IT'S ALRIGHT MIKEY
HEH, YOU'VE BECOME A SOFTIE USUALLY, YA JUST SHUT HUA UP WIT A RANDOM WEIRD-ASS PROVERB OR SOMETHIN
I THINK I GOT SOMETHIN' IN MY EYE ARE YA GONNA HUG ME TOO?
THINK WHAT YOU WILL, GUYS.
HEY WAIT A SECOND AM I SEEING RIGHT? ARE YOU DOING WHAT I THINK YOU'RE DOING?
YER SEEIN' RIGHT
I M EATIN' A LOLLIPOP.
HEY MIKEY
YOU'RE KILLING YOURSELF!
APRIL?
YOU'RE NOT OVERDOING IT, ARE YOU?
NOT AT ALL.


FOR THE LAST 17 YEARS, I HELD BACK ON LAUGHING OR CRYING TEARS OF JOY BECAUSE I BELIEVED I NO LONGER HAD THE RIGHT TO FEEL THE EMOTION OF "JOY" ANYMORE
I THOUGHT IT WAS SOMETHING I FORFEITED WHEN I REJECTED MY PAST
HOWEVER
THAT EASY-GOING MICHELANGELO SMILING AND LAUGHING ALL THE TIME . THAT'S WHO I'M SUPPOSED TO BE.
AND THAT SERIOUS AND GROUNDED MICHELANGELO WITH ALL HIS FLAWS THAT'S ALSO ANOTHER IMPORTANT FACE OF MY IDENTITY
I'M COMPLETE AGAIN.
I WON'T HOLD BACK MY EMOTIONS ANYMORE
I'M GLAD FOR YOU, MIKEY
NOW I WONDER IF YOUR BROTHERS HAVE FOUND THEIR SERIOUS SELVES AS WELL.
GUYS. YOU JUST ACTIVATED APRIL'S SMOKE DETECTOR
WELL.. WE'RE GONNA HAVE TO POSTPONE THIS TOUCHIN' REUNION TO ANOTHER NIGHT EH?
YOU SEE... THIS FIRE ALARM CONTACTS THE FIRE DEPARTMENT UPON ACTIVATION. THEY'LL BE HERE SOON.
MEANING YOU SHOULD LEAVE NOW INSTEAD OF DESTROYING MY EXPENSIVE FIRE ALARM!! RAPH!!
STUPID THING
WHAT ARE YOU DOING THAT FOR??
SORRY ABOUT THAT WE'LL HAVE PLENTY OF TIME TO TALK NEXT TIME WE MEET
IT'S OKAY LEO. JUST DON'T DISAPPEAR ON US!


I M SORRY
FORGET IT
SO. FOR DAVIANNA
..DID YOU TELL HER ABOUT IT?
NO.. I SCREWED UP INSTEAD OF TELLING HER THE "TRUTH"
..I ASKED HER TO TELL ME THE "TRUTH"
WHY?
I DON'T KNOW SO MUCH HAPPENED LAST NIGHT I GOT CONFUSED
IN THE END, SHE MADE ME REALIZE THAT MY IDENTITY IS SOMETHING THAT ONLY I COULD DETERMINE
NOW I KNOW I DION'T TELL PEOPLE I WAS AUGUSTUS BECAUSE I BELIEVED IT I DID IT BECAUSE I WANTED THEM TO TELL ME IN RETURN THAT IT IS THE TRUTH I M SUCH A FOOL
HUH? BUT I THOUGHT YOU WERE THE ONE CONFIDENT ABOUT YOUR IDENTITY ALL ALONG!
DON'T TELL ME YOU'RE GONNA WHINE TWICE AS MUCH FROM NOW ON BECAUSE YOU'RE LOST IN YOUR "QUEST FOR IDENTITY"! NO WAY I'M GONNA LET THIS HAPPEN!
UGH I HATE DOING THIS BUT TAKE A LOOK AT THIS!
YES, I KNOW IT'S PINK WITH A GREEN SKULL ON BOTH SIDES! DO YOU RECOGNIZE IT?
YOU MENTIONED THIS WHEN WE MET AT YOUR FUNERALS! YOU KNOWING ABOUT THIS SECRET OF MINE MUST HAVE A MEANING DON'T YOU THINK?
AH YEAH .. BUT MORE IMPORTANTLY WHEN WAS THE LAST TIME YOU WORE THIS?
YOU .
D... DON'T HIT ME!
IT WAS PARTIALLY MEANT TO BE A JOKE QUESTION!


EASY THERE I M NOT GONNA HIT YOU JUST FOR THAT
I WANTED TO RECLAIM THIS JUST IN CASE
AH?
JUST WHEN I THOUGHT YOU'D START FOCUSING ON EXPRESSING SELF PITY AND FORGET ABOUT EVERYTHING ELSE, YOU SAY THE MOST RANDOM AND OFFENSIVE THING EVER HOWEVER I M GLAD TO SEE YOU'RE IN BETTER CONTROL OF YOUR EMOTIONS NOW
SO IF YOU'RE GONNA MAKE SOME EFFORT TO BE LESS WHINY .
I'LL TRY TO REACT LESS VIOLENTLY TO YOUR "JOKES"
YOU'RE SO CUTE!!
DON'T PUSH IT ..!
"COUGH" "COUGH" "COUGH"
A. ARE YOU ALRIGHT?
'COURSE I'M ALRIGHT! WHY DO YOU THINK THE HOSPITAL LET ME GO?
AT LEAST LIE DOWN AND REST
THE TRUTH IS. I CAN BARELY STOP THINKING ABOUT MY IDENTITY IT FREAKS ME OUT HOW IT CAN BE JUST ABOUT ANYTHING.
I M LOOKING FOR THE TRUTH. . BUT AT THE SAME TIME I'M AFRAID THAT IT MIGHT BE SOMETHING I'LL REGRET KNOWING.


YOU CAN'T CHANGE REALITY ITSELF..
BUT WHAT YOU MAKE OF IT THAT YOU CAN
YOU KNOW I M NOT MY PARENTS BIOLOGICAL DAUGHTER MY REAL MOTHER DIED AT CHILDBIRTH. AS FOR MY REAL FATHER . NO ONE KNOWS
MOM AND DAD TOLD ME THE TRUTH WHEN I WAS TEN BECAUSE I KEPT ASKING THEM WHY MY HAIR COLOR WAS UNLIKE EITHER OF THEIRS
THE TRUTH WAS SO SHOCKING THAT I FELT LIKE RUNNING AWAY FOREVER
BUT INSTEAD I DECIDED TO OPEN MY EYES AND HAD A SECOND LOOK AT REALITY MY "REAL" PARENTS WERE THERE ALL ALONG
I ONCE HAD ISSUES WITH MY IDENTITY AS WELL
REALITY IS SET IN THE STONE BUT WE CAN HAVE CONTROL OVER HOW IT AFFECTS US TAKE EACH TRUTH REALITY HAS TO OFFER AND WEIGHT ITS IMPORTANCE - ASK YOURSELF WHAT TO MAKE OF EACH OF THEM.
ACCEPT THE EXISTENCE OF HURTFUL TRUTHS WHILE EMBRACING THE PLEASANT ONES TO MAKE UP FOR THEM. THAT'S HOW YOU CAN GET THE MOST OUT OF LIFE WITHOUT LYING TO YOURSELF.
GET THE MOST OUT OF LIFE WITHOUT LIES. HUH?
THAT SOUNDS GOOD TO ME...
WH.. WHAT?
IN THAT CASE LET ME SAY THIS.. I'M GLAD YOU RE ALIVE AND KICKING SHADOW


WH. WHY ARE YOU SAYING THAT ALL OF A SUDDEN?
I MEAN, IT MAKES YOU SOUND LIKE A DORK, AND. AND.
OH. THE HELL WITH IT YOU WERE REALLY COOL BACK THERE, AUGUSTUS.
I'M GLAD YOU WERE THERE FOR ME AGAIN. THANKS.
AH. AHAHAHAHA! JUST CALL ME "RENOIR" FOR THE TIME BEING. I AM GETTING USED TO THAT NICKNAME
RENOIR!
MOVE YER ASS! WE'RE GOIN' HOME!
LEAVE THE STREETS OF NEW YORK TO YER FATHER AND US.
REST EASY ROOKIE
TAKE CARE. SHADOW
SEE YOU SOON.
RENOIR.

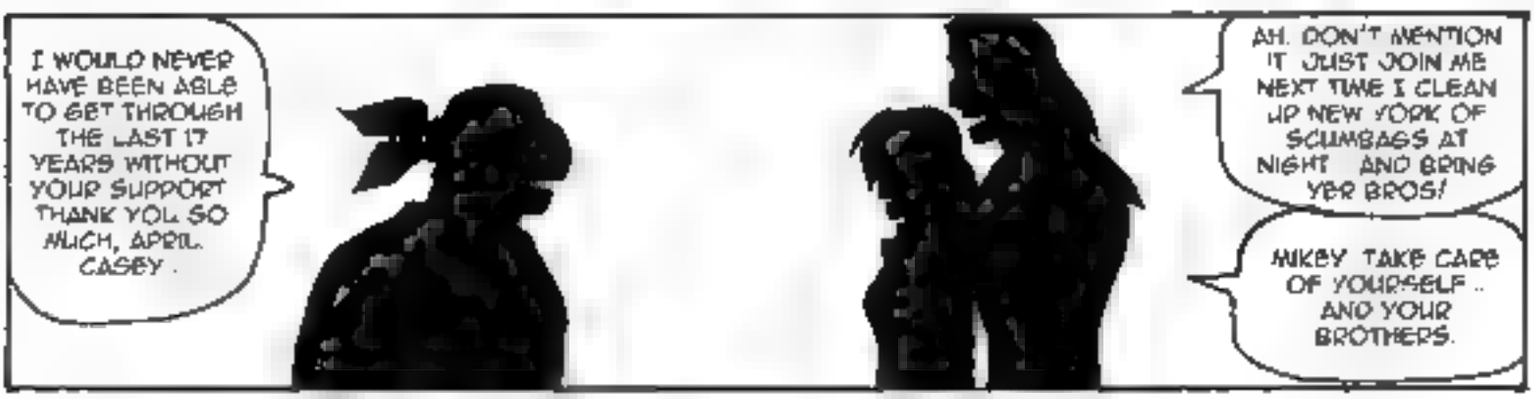

???
WHAT?
???
DO I KNOW YOU?
I DON'T THINK SO...
YER GONNA HAVE PLENTY OF TIME TO TALK LATER WE'RE IN A HURRY
OY WHAT CHA HIDIN'?
MIKEY.. ARE YOU SURE ABOUT THIS?
THERE AIN'T NO TURNIN' BACK PAST THIS POINT YA KNOW?
I KNOW BUT I'VE TAKEN MY DECISION.
IT'S BACK TO THE SEWERS FOR ME. SO MR BUONAROTT HAS TO DISAPPEAR INTO THIN AIR


WHAT'S THIS?
I WANT TO REVISIT THE BASICS OF BEING A NINJA TURTLE. WHAT BETTER METHOD THAN TOTAL IMMERSION?
BESIDES. RAPH AND I PATCHED UP AND LEO'S BACK. I FEEL LIKE EVERYTHING'S FALLING INTO PLACE FOR ME.


SO... MR. BUONAPOTTI HAS RETIRED.
PLEASE LET IT BE KNOWN.


VERY WELL.


YEAH! NOW I GET TO KICK THAT ANNOYING EDITOR-IN-CHIEF'S BUTT!!
THE LAST THING WE NEED IS A LAWSUIT, CASEY


I WOULD NEVER HAVE BEEN ABLE TO GET THROUGH THE LAST 17 YEARS WITHOUT YOUR SUPPORT. THANK YOU SO MUCH, APRIL. CASEY.
AH. DON'T MENTION IT. JUST JOIN ME NEXT TIME I CLEAN UP NEW YORK OF SCUMBAGS AT NIGHT. AND BRING YER BROS!
MIKEY. TAKE CARE OF YOURSELF.. AND YOUR BROTHERS.


RAPHAEL, LEONARDO..


I HEARD YA. WE'LL PLAY NICE
..INDEED. WE'LL "PLAY NICE"

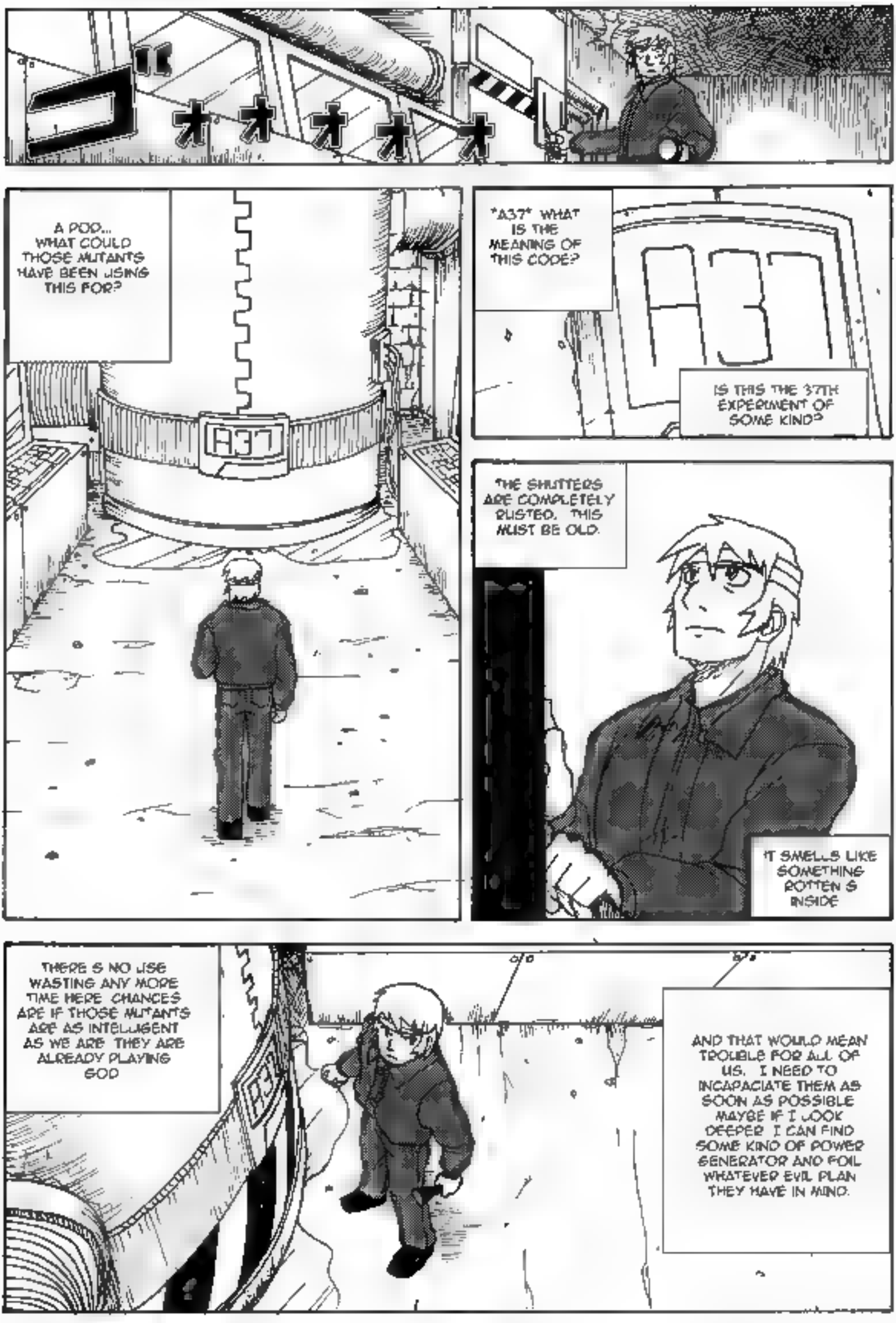

..AND I WON'T! HEHEHEH!
C'MON GUYS, LET'S HIT THE ROOFTOPS! IT'S A BEAUTIFUL DAY!!

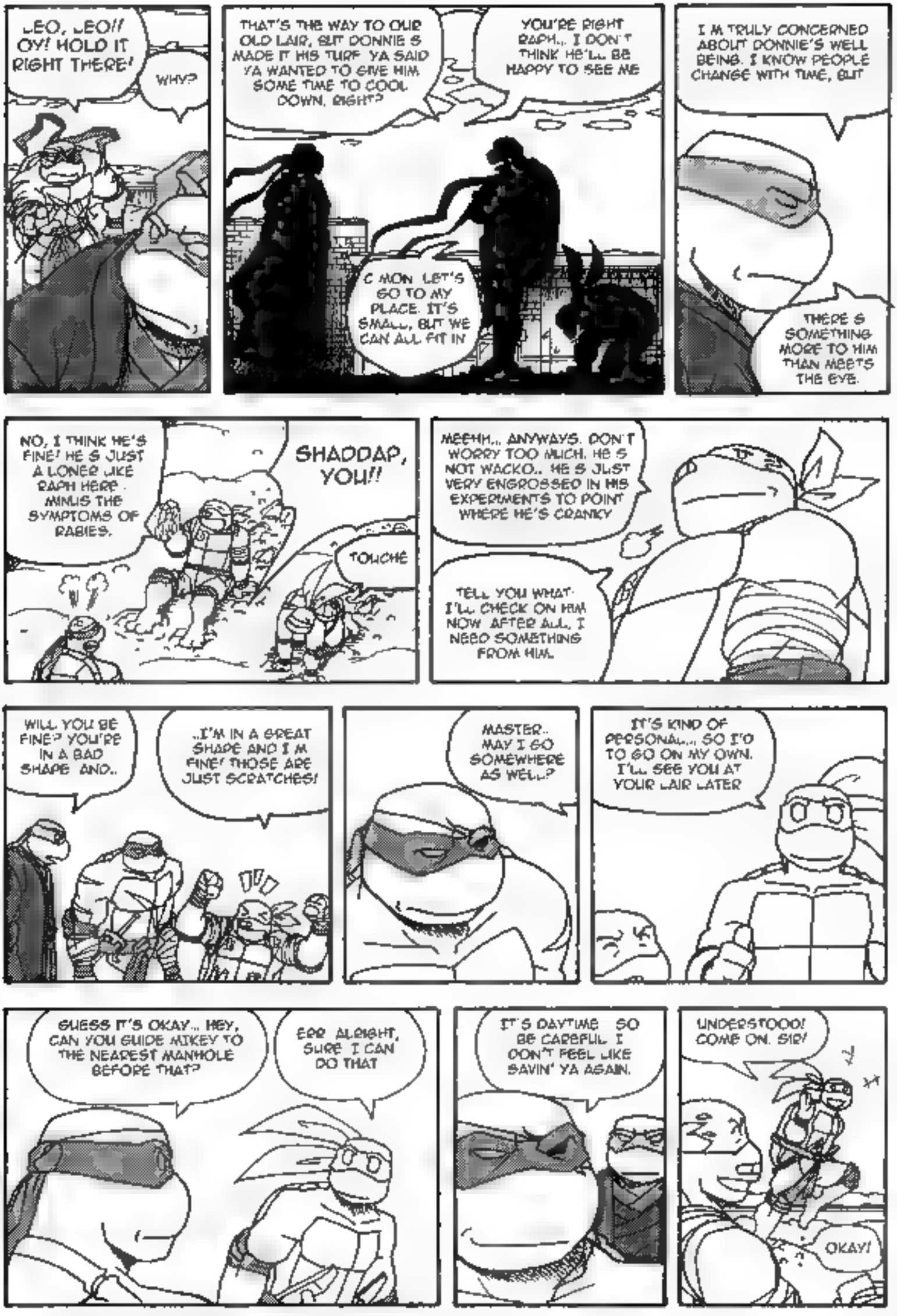

WAIT!! RAPH!!
S ..SLOW DOWN!
SEEIN' YA AS SLOW AS THIS MAKES ME WONDER HOW YA MANAGED TO GET TO THOSE FOOT NINJAS' MEETING POINT IN THE FIRST PLACE THEN AGAIN, YOU'RE OUTTA SHAPE AND YOU'RE STILL RECOVERIN' ..
CAN'T WE.. "HUFF" "HUFF" SLOW DOWN??
EX .EXACTLY! I .. I USED TO BE THE FASTEST ONE, REMEMBER? J .JUST JUST GIMME SOME TIME! I'LL CATCH UP WITH YOU GUYS!
WHAT ARE YOU DOING?
AH ! HE S ALREADY AHEAD OF US!
GET MOVING.
HEH
EEOOO!
GAAH! WAIT!!
ARE YOU CHALLENGIN' ME? EEEH???


MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
MNT
GAIDEN
外伝
CHAPTER 18: A LITTLE DEEPER IN DONATELLO'S WORLD


I CAN'T BELIEVE I M DOING THIS SCOUTING THE SEWERS OF BROOKLYN.
I HAVE NO CHOICE THEM LIVING IN THE SEWERS IS MY ONLY LEAD.
I HAD TO VAGUELY PINPOINT THE CENTER OF THEIR ACTIVITES BASED ON THEIR SIGHTINGS RECORDED IN THE LAST FEW MONTHS
THIS WILL EITHER YIELD SOMETHING OR BE A COMPLETE WASTE OF MY DAY-OFF
WHAT AN UNSANITARY PLACE
QUITE FITTING FOR THE MONSTERS THEY ARE I BET THEIR LIVING QUARTERS ARE AS PRIMITIVE AS A CAVEMAN'S

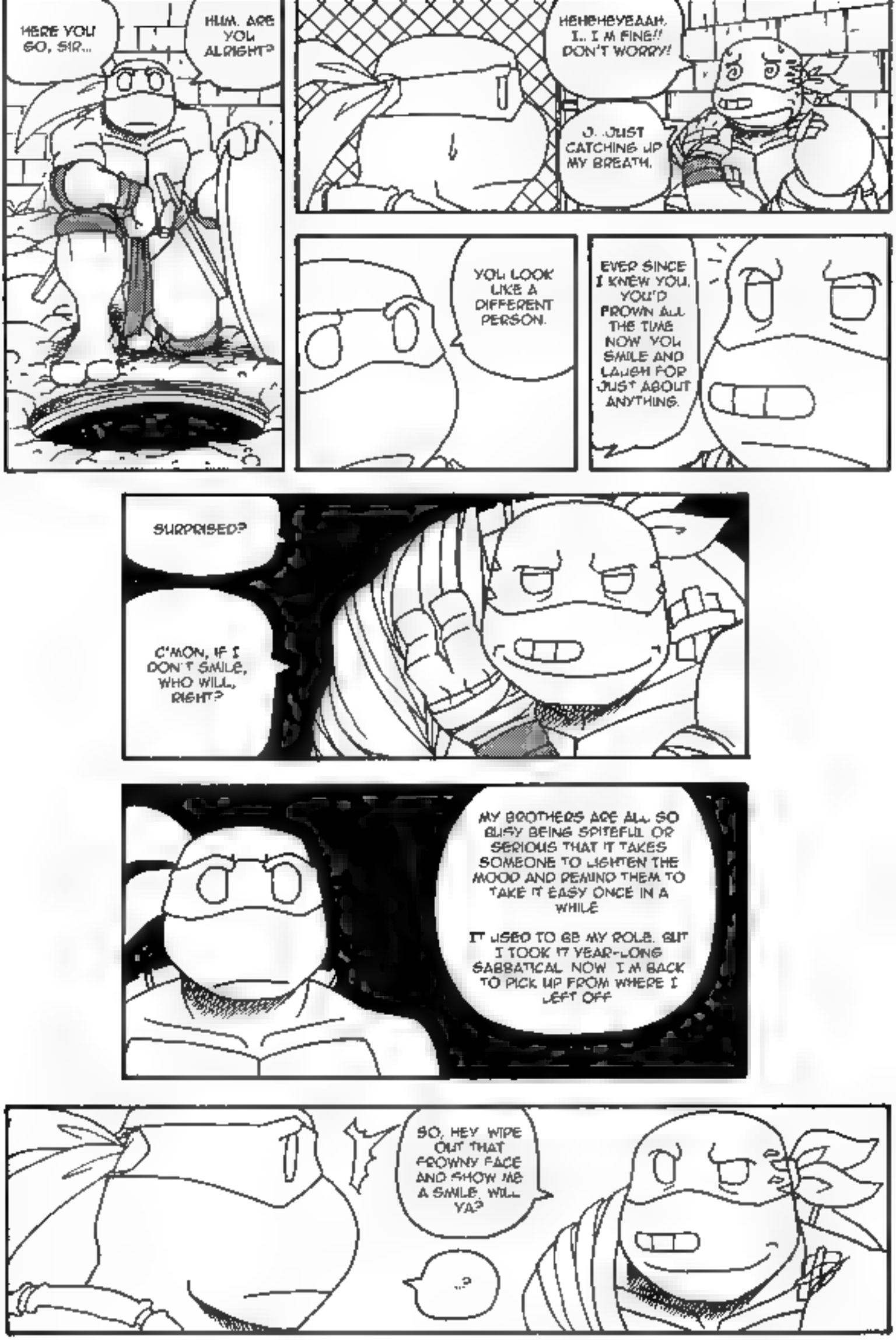



オオオオオオ
A POD... WHAT COULD THOSE MUTANTS HAVE BEEN USING THIS FOR?
A37
"A37" WHAT IS THE MEANING OF THIS CODE?
IS THIS THE 37TH EXPERIMENT OF SOME KIND?
THE SHUTTERS ARE COMPLETELY RUSTED. THIS MUST BE OLD.
IT SMELLS LIKE SOMETHING ROTTEN S INSIDE
THERE S NO USE WASTING ANY MORE TIME HERE CHANCES ARE IF THOSE MUTANTS ARE AS INTELLIGENT AS WE ARE THEY ARE ALREADY PLAYING GOD
AND THAT WOULD MEAN TROUBLE FOR ALL OF US. I NEED TO INCAPACIATE THEM AS SOON AS POSSIBLE MAYBE IF I LOOK DEEPER I CAN FIND SOME KIND OF POWER GENERATOR AND FOIL WHATEVER EVIL PLAN THEY HAVE IN MIND.

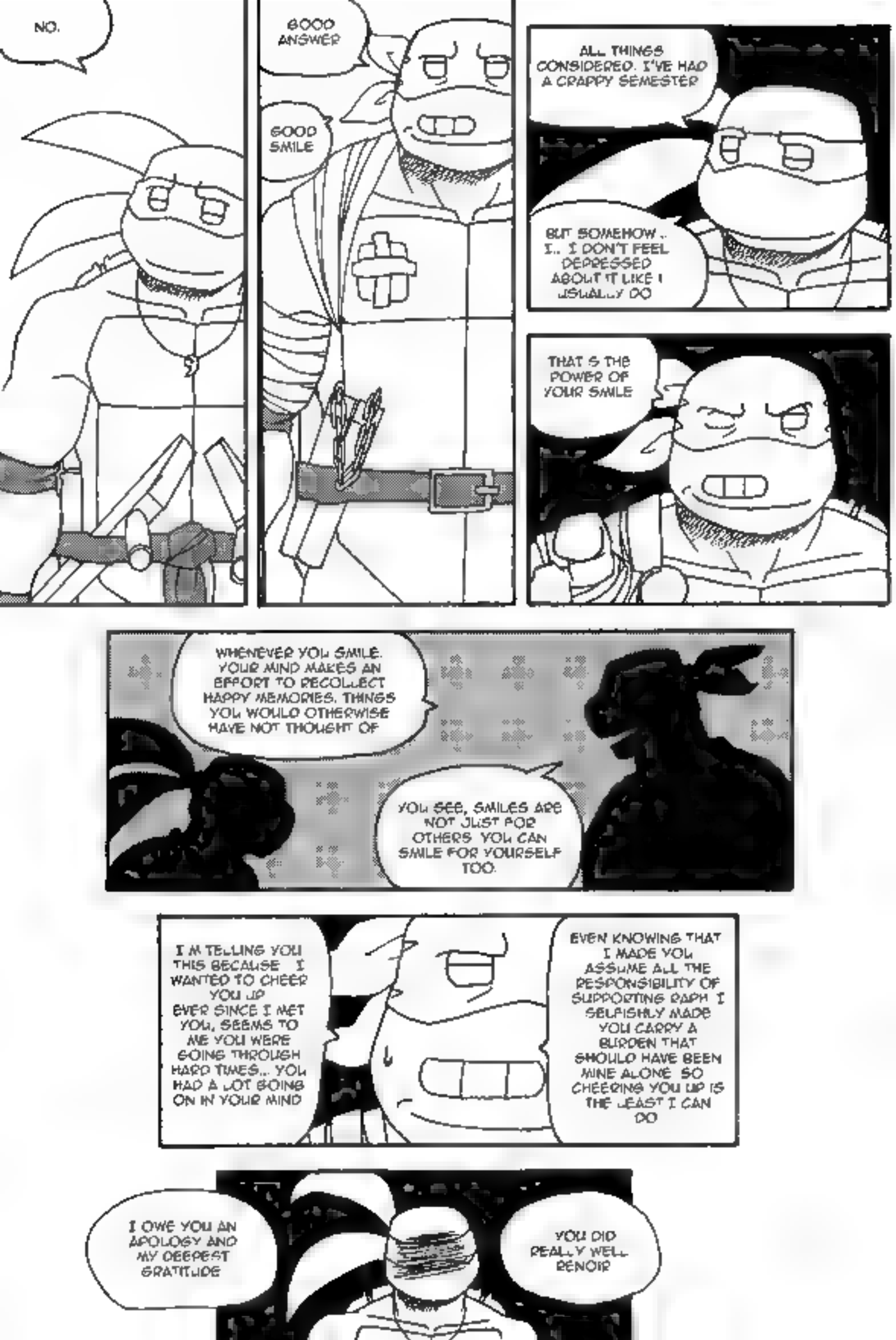

LEO, LEO!! OY! HOLD IT RIGHT THERE!
WHY?
THAT'S THE WAY TO OUR OLD LAIR, BUT DONNIE'S MADE IT HIS TURF. YA SAID YA WANTED TO GIVE HIM SOME TIME TO COOL DOWN, RIGHT?
YOU'RE RIGHT RAPH... I DON'T THINK HE'LL BE HAPPY TO SEE ME
C'MON. LET'S GO TO MY PLACE. IT'S SMALL, BUT WE CAN ALL FIT IN
I'M TRULY CONCERNED ABOUT DONNIE'S WELL BEING. I KNOW PEOPLE CHANGE WITH TIME, BUT
THERE'S SOMETHING MORE TO HIM THAN MEETS THE EYE.
NO, I THINK HE'S FINE! HE'S JUST A LONER LIKE RAPH HERE - MINUS THE SYMPTOMS OF RABIES.
SHADDAP, YOU!!
TOUCHÉ
MEEHH... ANYWAYS. DON'T WORRY TOO MUCH. HE'S NOT WACKO.. HE'S JUST VERY ENGROSSED IN HIS EXPERIMENTS TO POINT WHERE HE'S CRANKY
TELL YOU WHAT. I'LL CHECK ON HIM NOW. AFTER ALL, I NEED SOMETHING FROM HIM.
WILL YOU BE FINE? YOU'RE IN A BAD SHAPE AND..
..I'M IN A GREAT SHAPE AND I'M FINE! THOSE ARE JUST SCRATCHES!
MASTER.. MAY I GO SOMEWHERE AS WELL?
IT'S KIND OF PERSONAL... SO I'D TO GO ON MY OWN. I'LL SEE YOU AT YOUR LAIR LATER
GUESS IT'S OKAY... HEY, CAN YOU GUIDE MIKEY TO THE NEAREST MANHOLE BEFORE THAT?
EER ALRIGHT, SURE I CAN DO THAT
IT'S DAYTIME SO BE CAREFUL. I DON'T FEEL LIKE SAVIN' YA AGAIN.
UNDERSTOOD! COME ON, SIR!
OKAY!




HEY WHATCHA LOOKIN' AT, LEO?
AH.
HMMMM?
Pizza Hutt
OOOH! RIGHT RIGHT! YA MUST BE SICK OF SUSHI! WE RE GONNA GET SOME PIZZA FOR YA LATER!
THEY'VE GONE BEFORE RAPH COULD SEE THEM.
Y YEAH PIZZA IS GOOD!
AHA HA HA
MISS PIZZA!
YOU OKAY? HEY YA GOTTA RELAX, LEO. TAKE YER TIME TO REVISIT NEW YORK ONE THING AT A TIME, 'KAY?
YES... YOU'RE RIGHT, RAPH ONE THING AT A TIME ONE THING AT A TIME


HERE YOU GO, SIR...
HUM. ARE YOU ALRIGHT?
HEHEHEYEAAH. I.. I M FINE!! DON'T WORRY!
U. JUST CATCHING UP MY BREATH.
YOU LOOK LIKE A DIFFERENT PERSON.
EVER SINCE I KNEW YOU, YOU'D FROWN ALL THE TIME NOW YOU SMILE AND LAUGH FOR JUST ABOUT ANYTHING.
SURPRISED?
C'MON, IF I DON'T SMILE, WHO WILL, RIGHT?
MY BROTHERS ARE ALL SO BUSY BEING SPITEFUL OR SERIOUS THAT IT TAKES SOMEONE TO LIGHTEN THE MOOD AND REMIND THEM TO TAKE IT EASY ONCE IN A WHILE
IT USED TO BE MY ROLE. BUT I TOOK 17 YEAR-LONG SABBATICAL NOW I M BACK TO PICK UP FROM WHERE I LEFT OFF
SO, HEY WIPE OUT THAT FROWNY FACE AND SHOW ME A SMILE, WILL YA?
..?


SEE WHAT YOU JUST DID? THAT S WHAT I M HERE FOR!
I SMILED BECAUSE YOU TOLD ME TO IT FELT FORCED
HEY WHEN WAS THE LAST TIME YOU SMILED AND REALIZED IT?
PEOPLE SMILE SO CASUALLY EVERYDAY THAT THEY DON'T EVEN NEED TO REMIND THEMSELVES TO DO IT IT ENDS UP BEING TAKEN FOR GRANTED
AND THEN, THE DAY PEOPLE NO LONGER SMILE THEY DON'T EVEN REALIZE IT BECAUSE IT BECAME "INTUITIVE" TO THEM. THAT S WHY YOU GOTTA SMILE CONSCIOUSLY FROM TIME TO TIME TO REMEMBER WHAT IT'S LIKE
AH. ALRIGHT
SO SAYS THE VOICE IN MY HEAD!
BUT THAT'S ME AS WELL!! GWAHAHA!
A...AHA AHAHAHAHA. (IS HE MAD???)
JUST BETWEEN YOU AND ME
..ARE YOU DOING ALRIGHT? TELL ME THE TRUTH.

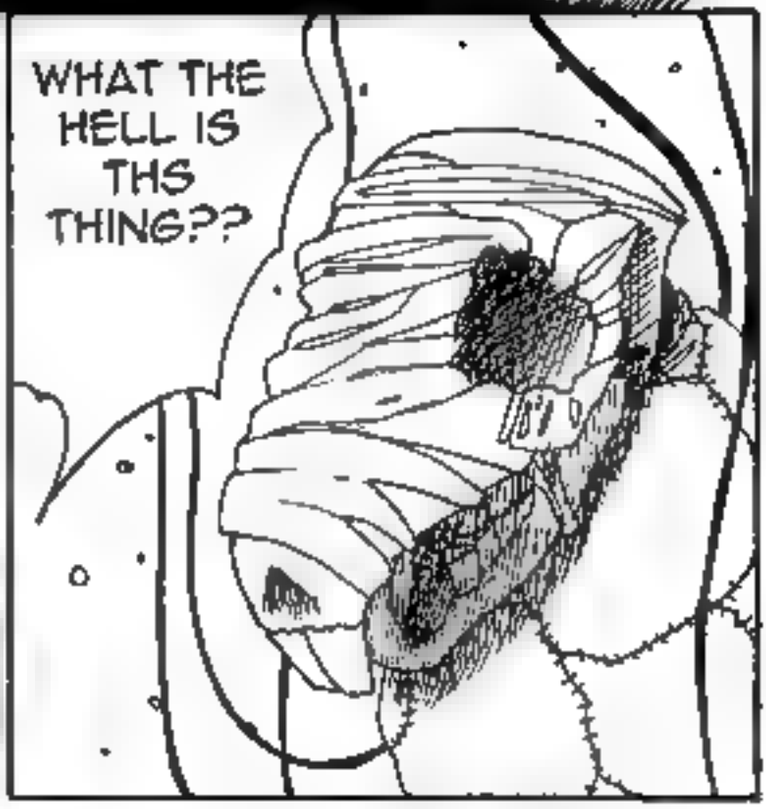

NO.
GOOD ANSWER
GOOD SMILE
ALL THINGS CONSIDERED. I'VE HAD A CRAPPY SEMESTER
BUT SOMEHOW .. I.. I DON'T FEEL DEPRESSED ABOUT IT LIKE I USUALLY DO
THAT S THE POWER OF YOUR SMILE
WHENEVER YOU SMILE. YOUR MIND MAKES AN EFFORT TO RECOLLECT HAPPY MEMORIES. THINGS YOU WOULD OTHERWISE HAVE NOT THOUGHT OF
YOU SEE, SMILES ARE NOT JUST FOR OTHERS YOU CAN SMILE FOR YOURSELF TOO.
I M TELLING YOU THIS BECAUSE I WANTED TO CHEER YOU UP EVER SINCE I MET YOU, SEEMS TO ME YOU WERE GOING THROUGH HARD TIMES.. YOU HAD A LOT GOING ON IN YOUR MIND
EVEN KNOWING THAT I MADE YOU ASSUME ALL THE RESPONSIBILITY OF SUPPORTING RAPH I SELFISHLY MADE YOU CARRY A BURDEN THAT SHOULD HAVE BEEN MINE ALONE SO CHEERING YOU UP IS THE LEAST I CAN DO
I OWE YOU AN APOLOGY AND MY DEEPEST GRATITUDE
YOU DID REALLY WELL RENOIR

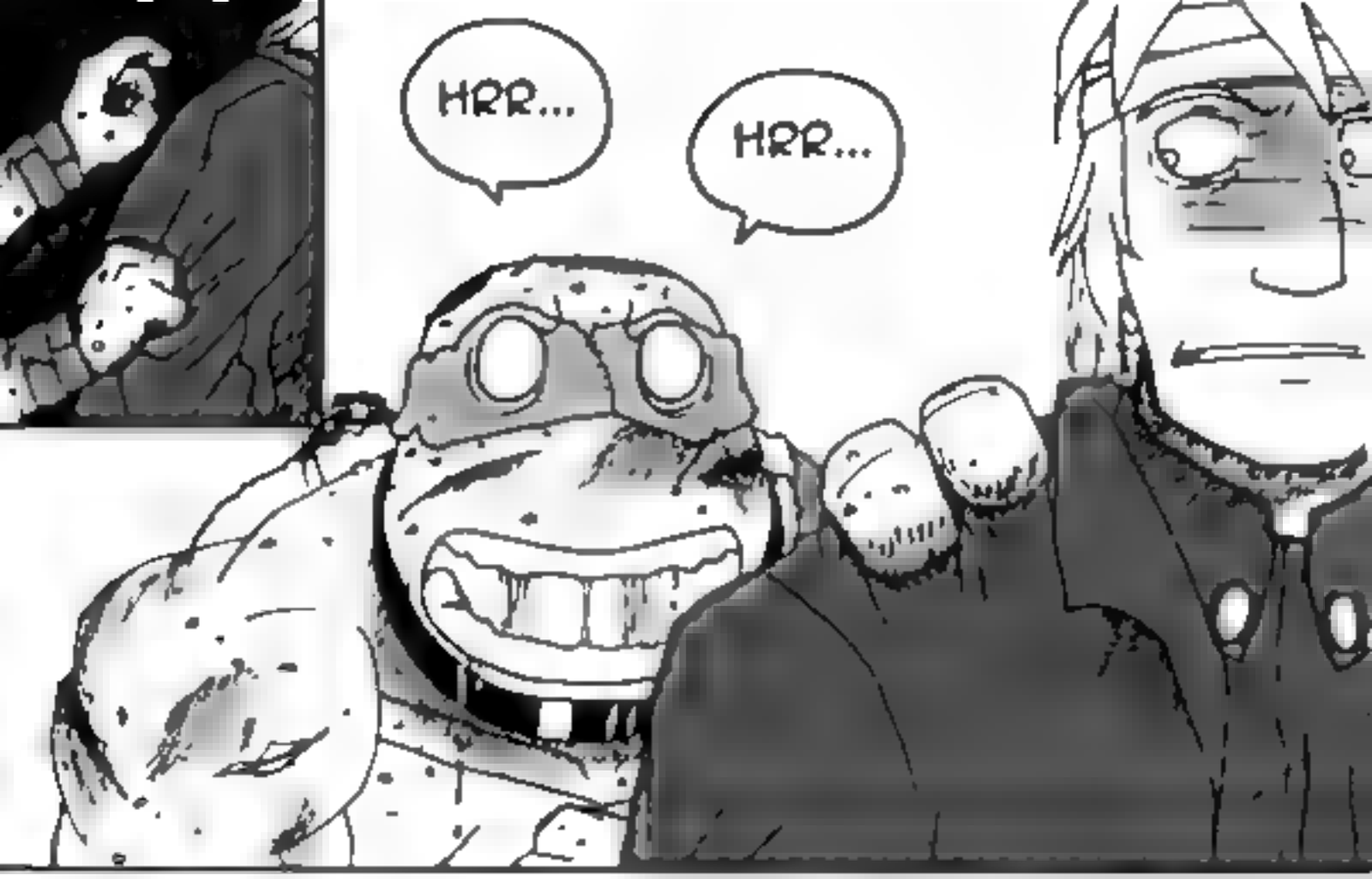

I ERR I'M GLAD I COULD HELP..
THINGS AREN'T SO BAD AFTER ALL RIGHT?
NO, THEY AREN'T
BE CAREFUL OUT THERE, KID.
SEE YOU LATER, SID

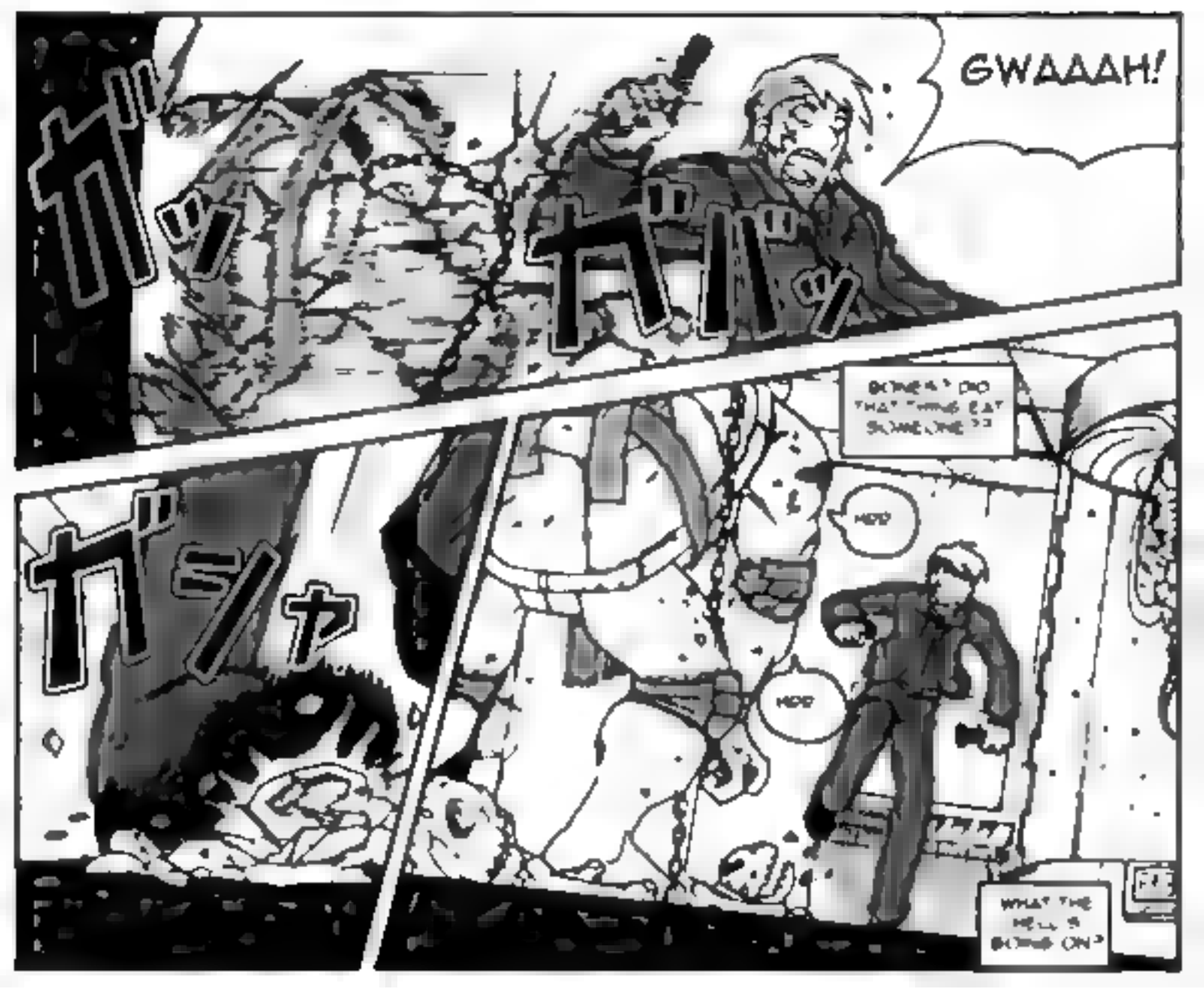

I DIDN'T KNOW THE SEWERS WERE THIS DEEP I FEEL LIKE IT'S GETTING HARDER TO BREATHE
NO WAY I CAN'T TURN BACK NOW!
パン
I KNOW I'M ON TO SOMETHING..
THERE MUST BE A REASON WHY THOSE FREAKS LOCKED DOWN THIS SECTION!
TILES..?
WELCOME BACK.
STANDBY MODE DEACTIVATED.
パッ
!!


A3B


A...
AAAAAAAAAH!!


WHAT THE HELL IS THS THING??

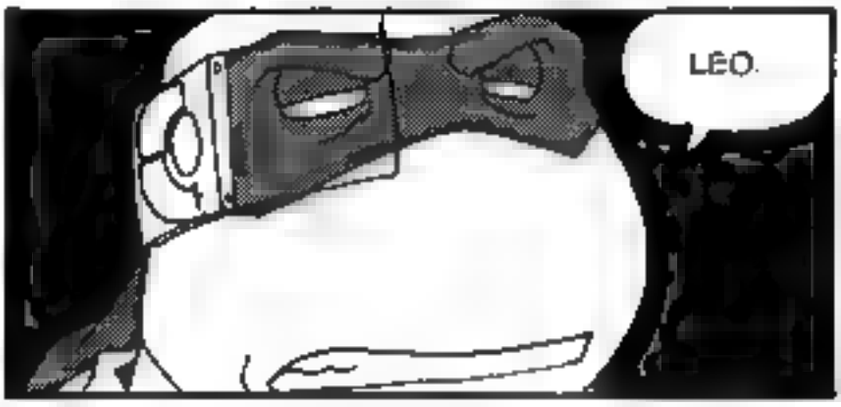

HRR...
HRR...

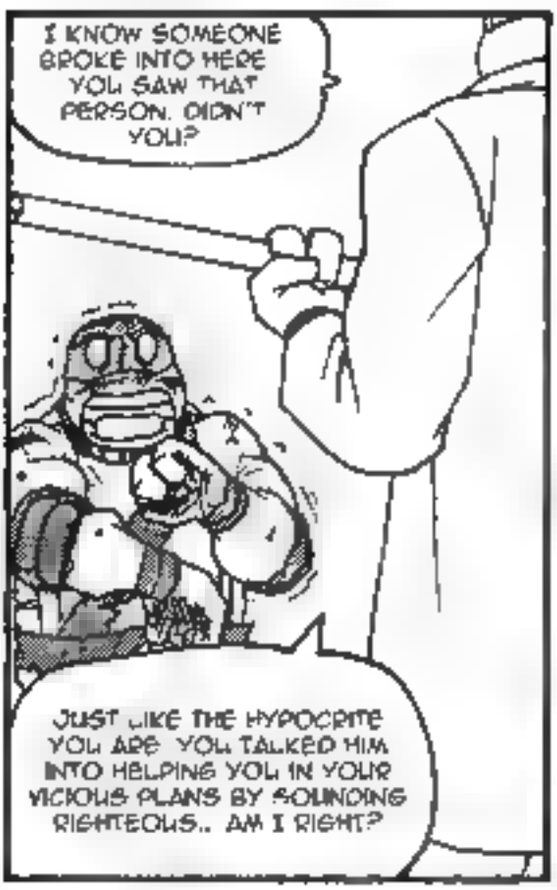

GWAAAH!
DOING? DO THAT THING EAT SOMEONE??
HOO
HOO
WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON?


HRR...
HRR...
DON'T MOVE.. DON'T MOVE!
HRRR!!
GGK!!
AH!
HRR
HRR
HAAH..
HAAH

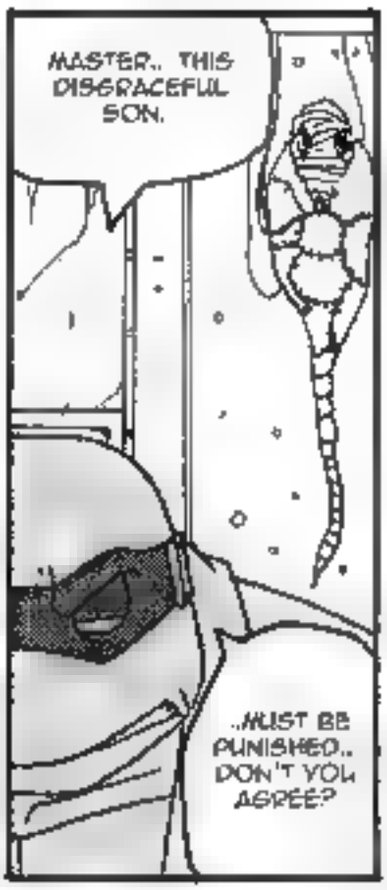

YES MASTER
YES I KNOW I M ALMOST THERE
DON'T WORRY
HRR!!
HRR!!
MASTER
I'LL ALWAYS PROTECT YOU
IT WILL BE ALRIGHT MASTER
SOMEONE BROKE THE LOCK TO YOUR SANCTUARY
BUT I WILL FIND THAT INTRUDER
38


HHHHP
HHHHP
BUT FIRST


LEO.

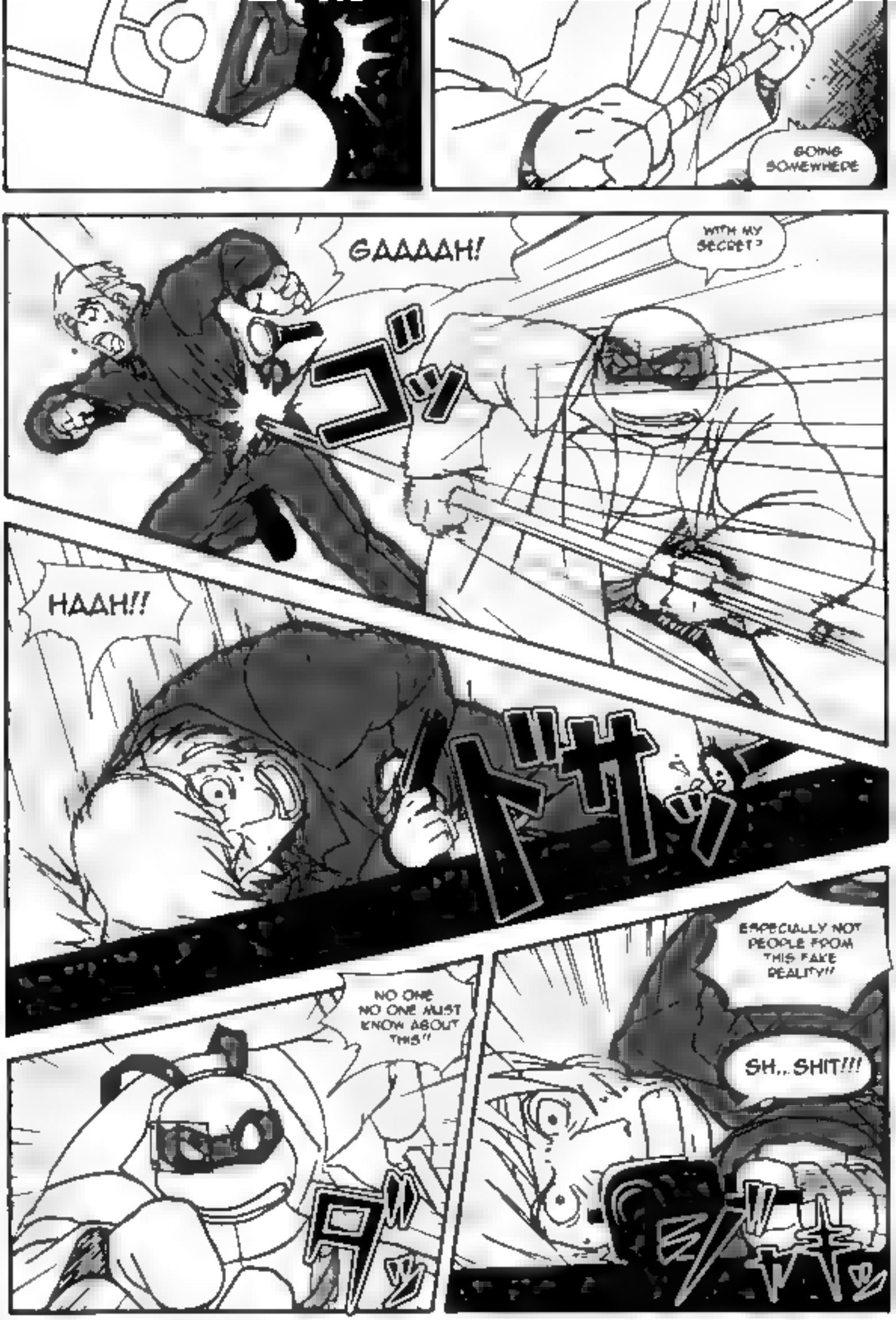

I KNOW SOMEONE BROKE INTO HERE YOU SAW THAT PERSON. DIDN'T YOU?
JUST LIKE THE HYPOCRITE YOU ARE. YOU TALKED HIM INTO HELPING YOU IN YOUR VICIOUS PLANS BY SOUNDING RIGHTEOUS.. AM I RIGHT?


YOU'RE TRYING TO STOP ME FROM RECLAIMING MY REALITY?
HHRR!!!
THE ONE YOU TOOK AWAY FROM ME??


MASTER.. THIS DISGRACEFUL SON.
..MUST BE PUNISHED.. DON'T YOU AGREE?




YES
HASTO
GOOOHHHH!
GGGOOH !!!


GOING SOMEWHERE
GAAAAH!
WITH MY SECRET?
HAAH!!
NO ONE NO ONE MUST KNOW ABOUT THIS!!
ESPECIALLY NOT PEOPLE FROM THIS FAKE REALITY!!
SH,,SHIT!!!

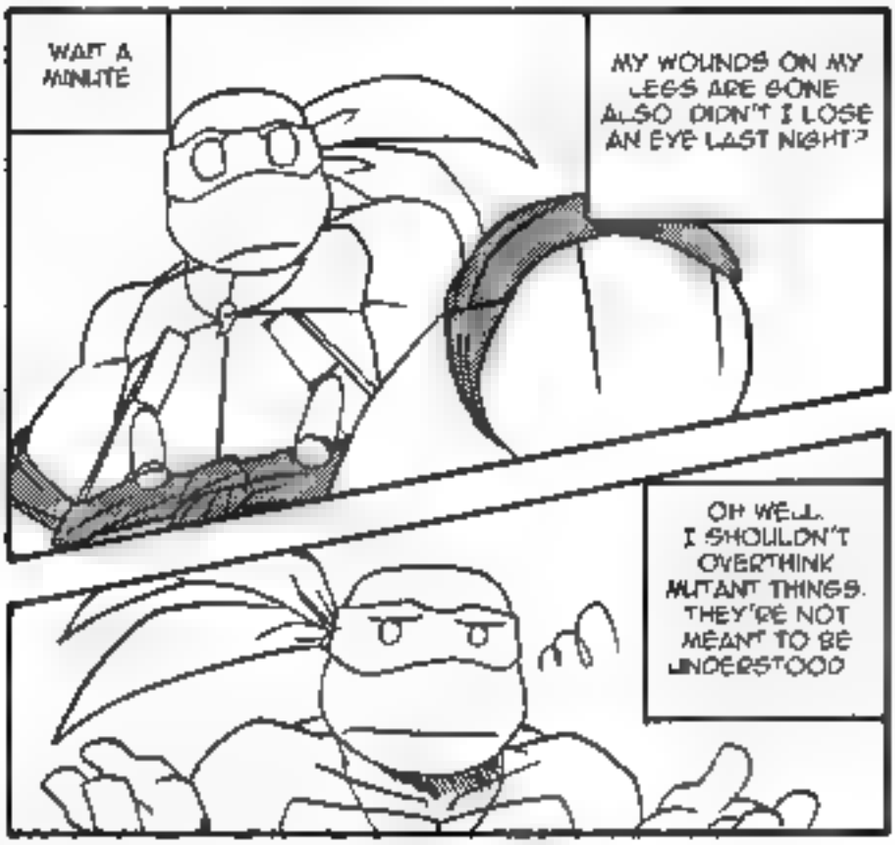

バー
バ
バ
バ
バ
バ
バ
バ
バ


AAAARGH!!!
AAAGH!!


YOU... YOU !!!
TRYING TO RUIN MY LIFE AGAIN??
LEOOOOO!!!


OUCH!!

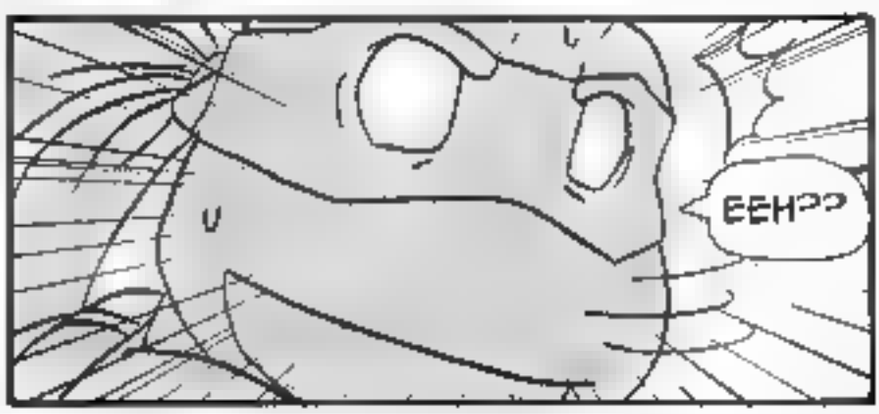

I GUESS WHEN IT COMES TO JUMPING ON ROOFS THERE'S A LOT OF ROOM FOR IMPROVEMENT. THEN AGAIN, THAT NINJA DID SLASH MY LEGS SO
OOOOUCH...


WAIT A MINUTE
MY WOUNDS ON MY LEGS ARE GONE ALSO DIDN'T I LOSE AN EYE LAST NIGHT?
OH WELL. I SHOULDN'T OVERTHINK MUTANT THINGS. THEY'RE NOT MEANT TO BE UNDERSTOOD

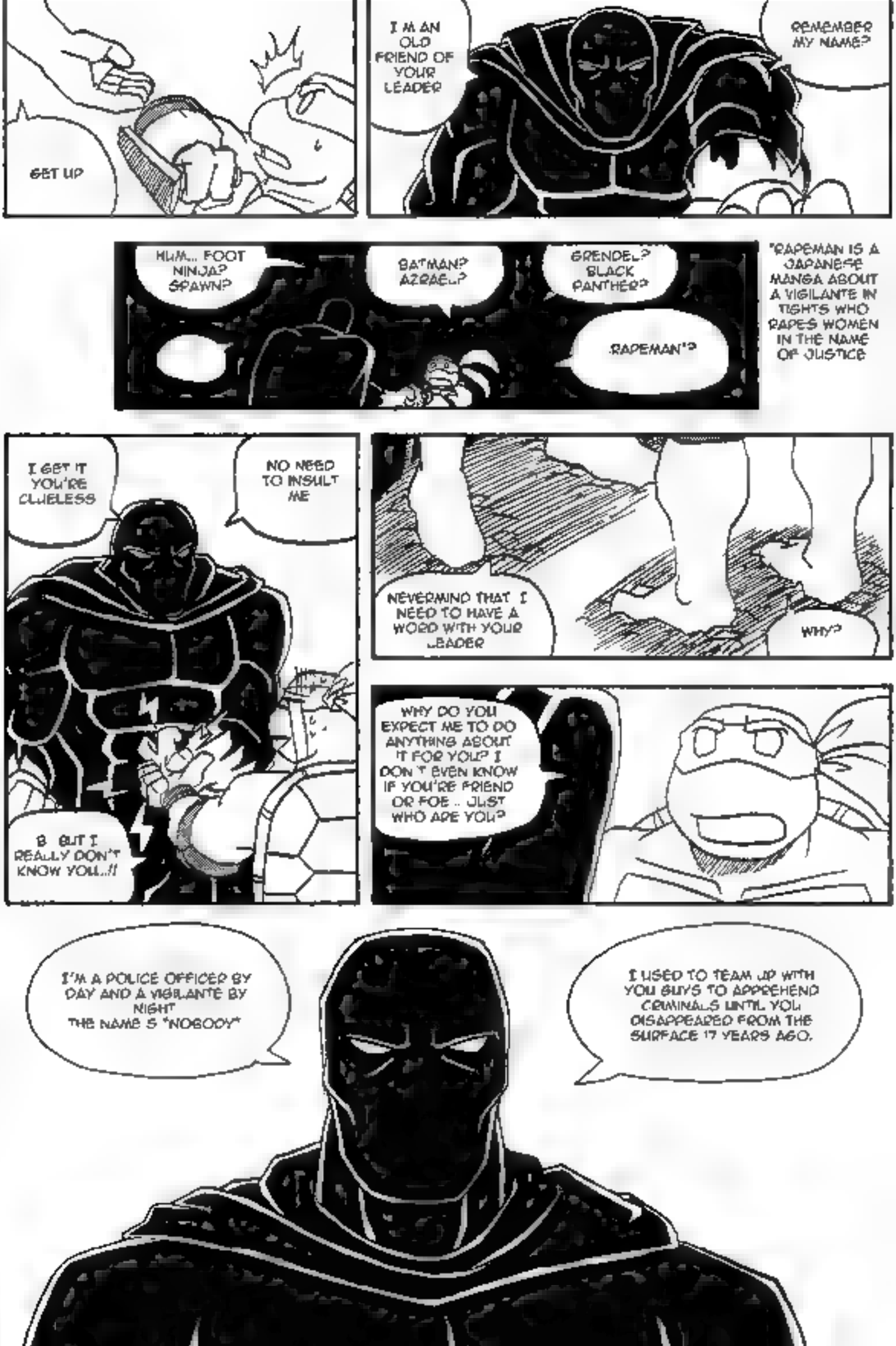

I DON'T SEE ANY POLICE CAR THIS MUST MEAN THAT THEY ARE DONE QUESTIONING HER I'M SURPRISED THAT SHE DECIDED TO COVER UP FOR ALL OF US IN THE END..
I WONDER IF I SHE WAS ABLE TO TALK HER WAY OUT OF TROUBLE ANYWAYS I'LL JUST DROP BY TO SAY "HI"

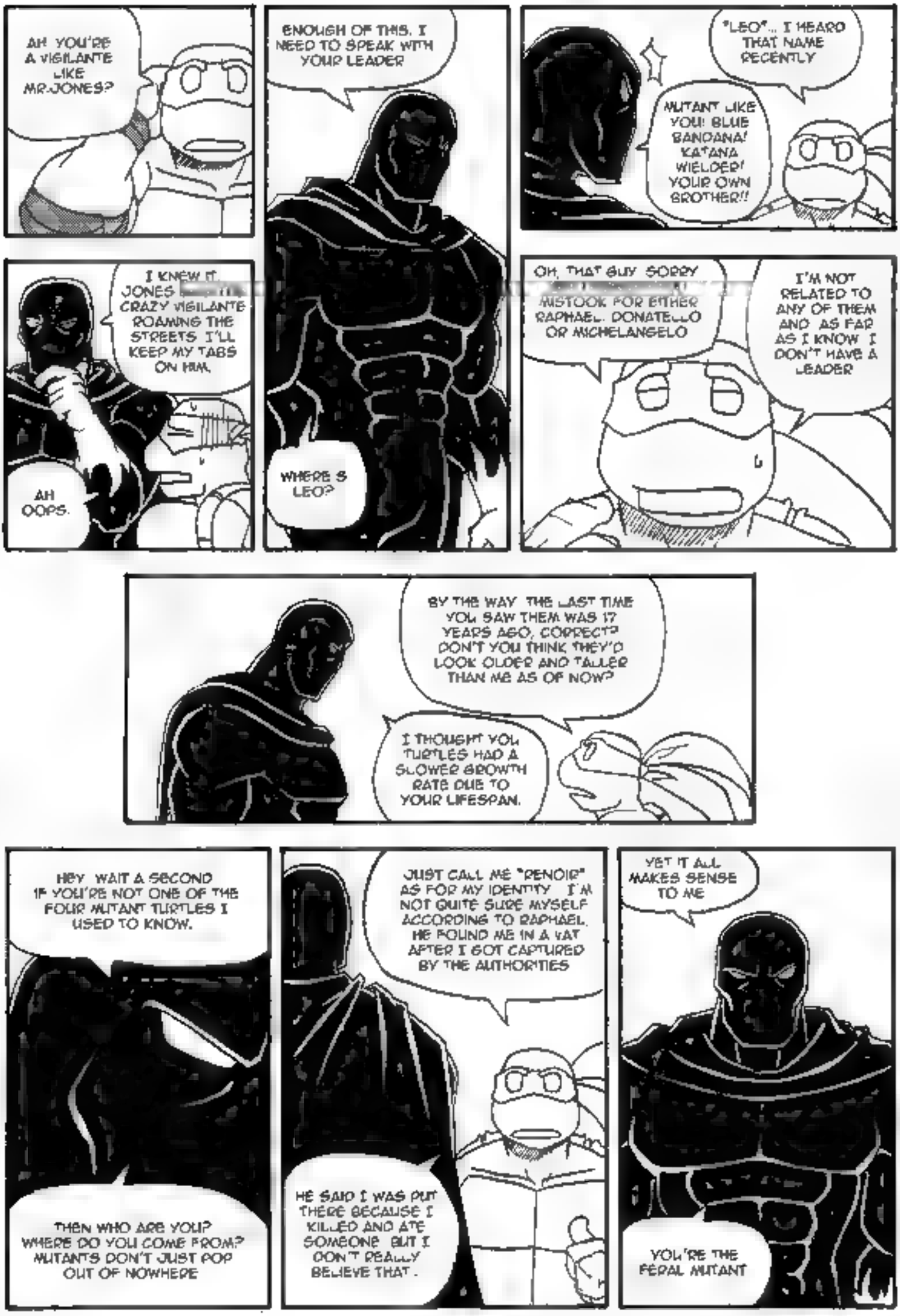

DAVIANNA.


IT'S BEEN A WHILE.. TURTLE


EEH??


TAKE ME TO YOUR LEADER.
F F F F F F F F FOOT NINJAAAA!
BACK TO SILENCE DAVIANNA, HUH?
I WON'T LET YOU!
HUMPF


GET UP
I M AN OLD FRIEND OF YOUR LEADER
REMEMBER MY NAME?
HUM... FOOT NINJA? SPAWN?
BATMAN? AZRAEL?
GRENDEL? BLACK PANTHER?
RAPEMAN'?
"RAPEMAN IS A JAPANESE MANGA ABOUT A VIGILANTE IN TIGHTS WHO RAPES WOMEN IN THE NAME OF JUSTICE
I GET IT YOU'RE CLUELESS
NO NEED TO INSULT ME
B BUT I REALLY DON'T KNOW YOU..!!
NEVERMIND THAT I NEED TO HAVE A WORD WITH YOUR LEADER
WHY?
WHY DO YOU EXPECT ME TO DO ANYTHING ABOUT IT FOR YOU? I DON'T EVEN KNOW IF YOU'RE FRIEND OR FOE .. JUST WHO ARE YOU?
I'M A POLICE OFFICER BY DAY AND A VIGILANTE BY NIGHT
THE NAME S "NOBODY"
I USED TO TEAM UP WITH YOU GUYS TO APPREHEND CRIMINALS UNTIL YOU DISAPPEARED FROM THE SURFACE 17 YEARS AGO.

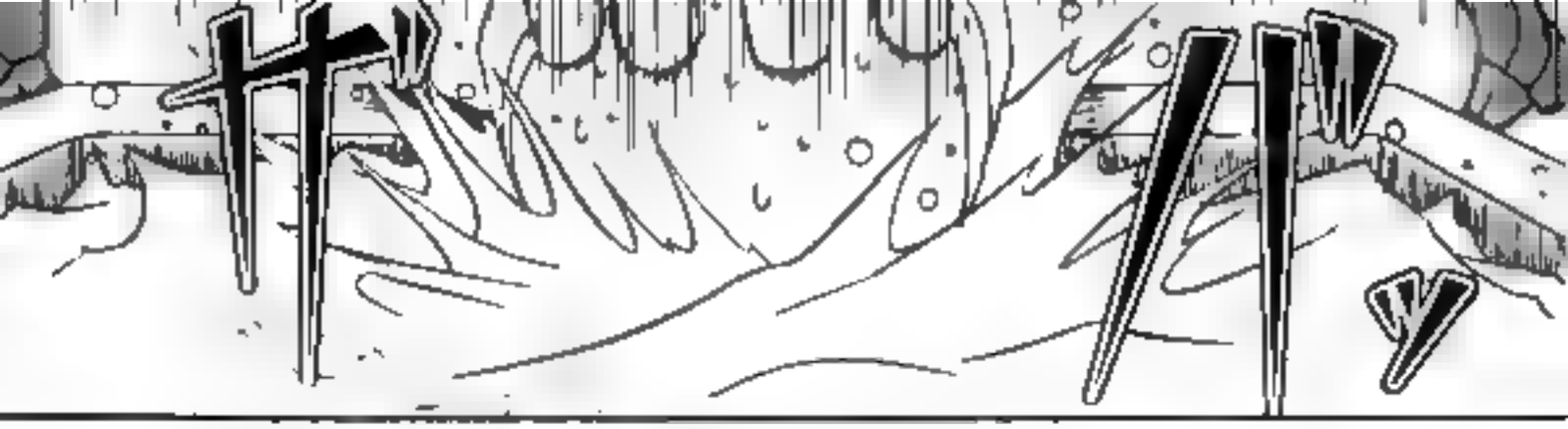

AH YOU'RE A VIGILANTE LIKE MR.JONES?
ENOUGH OF THIS. I NEED TO SPEAK WITH YOUR LEADER
"LEO"... I HEARD THAT NAME RECENTLY
MUTANT LIKE YOU! BLUE BANDANA! KATANA WIELDER! YOUR OWN BROTHER!!
I KNEW IT. JONES CRAZY VIGILANTE ROAMING THE STREETS I'LL KEEP MY TABS ON HIM.
AH OOPS.
WHERE'S LEO?
OH, THAT GUY SORRY MISTOOK FOR EITHER RAPHAEL. DONATELLO OR MICHELANGELO
I'M NOT RELATED TO ANY OF THEM AND AS FAR AS I KNOW I DON'T HAVE A LEADER
BY THE WAY THE LAST TIME YOU SAW THEM WAS 17 YEARS AGO, CORRECT? DON'T YOU THINK THEY'D LOOK OLDER AND TALLER THAN ME AS OF NOW?
I THOUGHT YOU TURTLES HAD A SLOWER GROWTH RATE DUE TO YOUR LIFESPAN.
HEY WAIT A SECOND IF YOU'RE NOT ONE OF THE FOUR MUTANT TURTLES I USED TO KNOW.
THEN WHO ARE YOU? WHERE DO YOU COME FROM? MUTANTS DON'T JUST POP OUT OF NOWHERE
JUST CALL ME "RENOIR" AS FOR MY IDENTITY I'M NOT QUITE SURE MYSELF ACCORDING TO RAPHAEL. HE FOUND ME IN A VAT AFTER I GOT CAPTURED BY THE AUTHORITIES
HE SAID I WAS PUT THERE BECAUSE I KILLED AND ATE SOMEONE BUT I DON'T REALLY BELIEVE THAT.
YET IT ALL MAKES SENSE TO ME
YOU'RE THE FERAL MUTANT

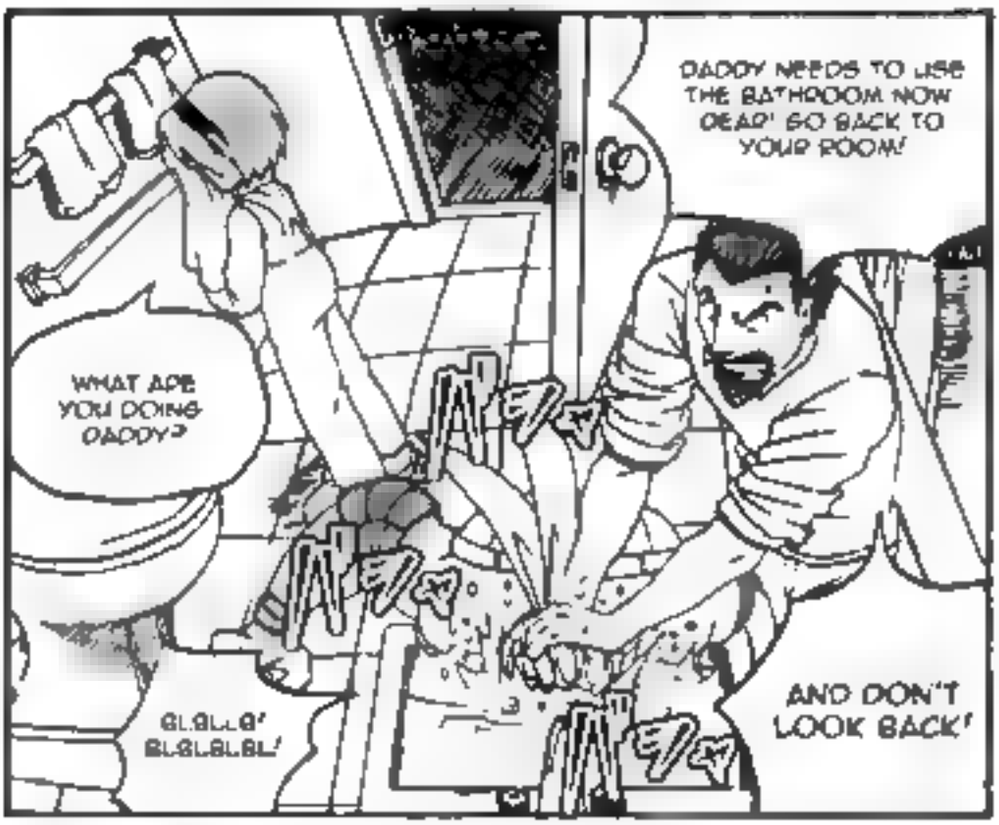

WHATEVER YEAH, IF YOU SAY SO AS LONG AS YOU DON'T HUNT ME DOWN LIKE THOSE COPS AND...
I SEE.
WAIT HE IS A COP.
YOU'RE UNDER ARREST, YOU SCUM!
GWAAAH!
YOU'RE NOT GOING ANYWHERE! I DON'T CARE IF YOU'RE FRIENDS WITH THE MUTANT TURTLES I USED TO KNOW!!
THE SAFETY OF THE CITIZENS OF NEW YORK IS AT STAKE! YOU'RE HEADING BACK TO THAT VAT WHERE YOU BELONG, MONSTER!
NO. I'M.. I'M RENOIR !!
I.. I..!!
I'M. I'M NOT A MONSTER!
I'M THE GUY WHO GOT "KILLED"!!
..
I CAN PROVE IT TO YOU!!


SO?
HOW DO YOU LIKE YOUR CHRISTMAS PRESENTS, CAROLE?
OH, I LOVE THEM, DADDY! THANK YOU VERY MUCH!
OF ALL YOUR PRESENTS, WHICH ONE DO YOU LIKE THE MOST?
THAT'S YOUR OLD DOLL, CAROLE
YES, BUT
FOR CHRISTMAS AUGUSTUS GAVE HIM A MASK
THAT AGAIN. WHY DOES SHE KEEP THINKING HE'S ALIVE?
IS SHE MAKING THINGS UP TO FEEL BETTER?
LOOK DADDY! LOOK, LOOK!
!!!
DEAR GOD!! IT SMELLS LIKE LIKE SEWAGE WASTE!!
THINK OF THE GERMS!!
BUT
OH NO! DADDY PLEASE DON'T THROW HIM AWAY!!
DADDY'S JUST GOING TO GIVE SHAKESPEARE A BATH, MY DEAR!
ドア
ドア
ドア
ドア
バタン
OOOOOH!!


CAROLE. HELP ME..
OH, AUGUSTUS! AUGUSTUS!! MERRY-MERRY CHRISTMAS, AUGUSTUS!
AHAHA.. YOU TOO CAROLE... SAY CAN WE KEEP IT DOWN WHILE I'M HERE?
WHY DO WE HAVE "KEEP IT DOWN"?
UM. WE'RE MIMICKING HORROR MOVIES YOU KNOW WHEN IT'S ALL SILENT AND THEN.
IT S YOU!!
YEAH...
..KABLOUIE!
HEE HEE HEE! I KNOW! I KNOW!
DID SHADOW GIVE YOU MY MESSAGE YESTERDAY?
OH. YOU MEAN THIS BIIIIIG HUG? SURE! YOU WANT SECONDS?
TEEHEE! YOU'RE SILLY!
WE ALSO MADE AMENDS WE RE NOT FIGHTING ANYMORE CAROLE
OOOOOH!! AND? AND? DID YOU KISS HER?
OH GEEZ. NO WAY, CAROLE FOR ALL I KNOW THAT TOMBOY WOULD RATHER WALK DOWN THE AISLE WITH A BASEBALL BAT IN HER ARMS.
BUT I MUST ADMIT SHE DOES HAVE SOME RATHER NICE CURVES
AH, YOU SHOULDN'T HAVE SAID THAT IN FRONT OF YOU!
JUST FORGET WHAT I JUST SAID, OKAY CA ?

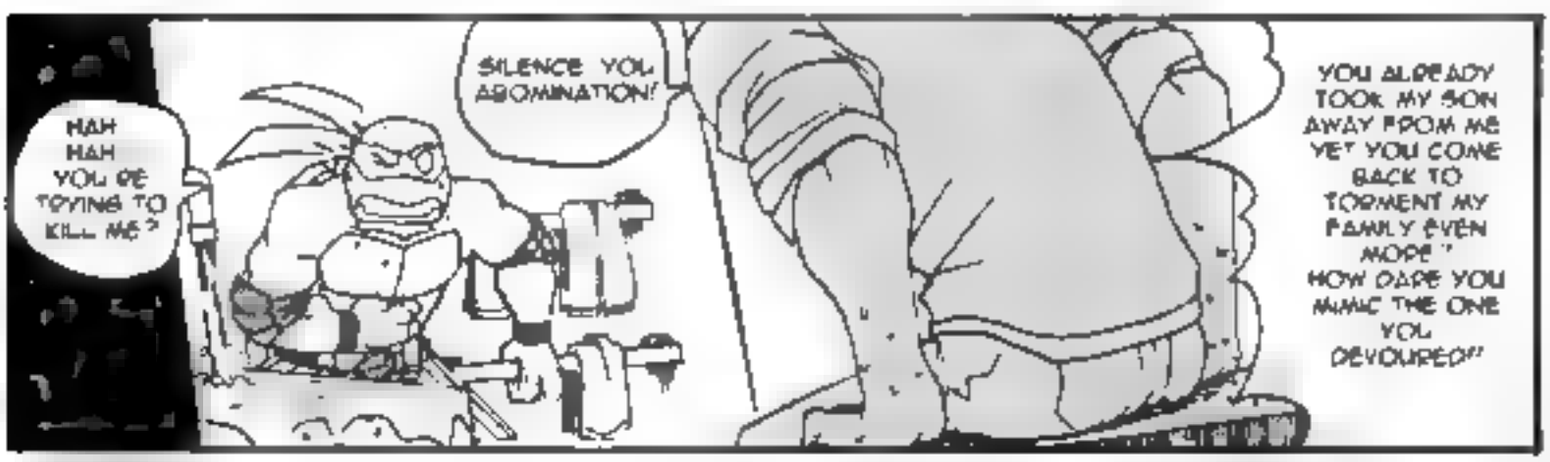

H...HOW DID YOU SNEAK INTO MY HOUSE, YOU MONSTER!
DADDY! LET GO!
OH NO... THIS IS BAD
AH..ER.. I JUST.
LISTEN, I MEAN NO HARM, AND..
CAROLE! NO!!
HERE FOR YOUR BOOBOO!
CAROLE!
EEEW!!! YUCKY TASTE IN MY MOUTH!!!
QUICK! WATER! WATER!!!
RINSE YOUR MOUTH OKAY?
BEEZ BE MORE CAREFUL, CAROLE
YOU HEARD THE EVIL MUTANT CAROLE...
..?




DADDY NEEDS TO USE THE BATHROOM NOW DEAD! GO BACK TO YOUR ROOM!
WHAT APE YOU DOING DADDY?
GLGLLG! GLGLGLGL!
AND DON'T LOOK BACK!


HM. OKAY


"COUGH" "COUGH"
STAY DOWN!!
NO WAY!!!


HAH HAH YOU'RE TRYING TO KILL ME?
SILENCE YOU ABOMINATION!
YOU ALREADY TOOK MY SON AWAY FROM ME YET YOU COME BACK TO TORMENT MY FAMILY EVEN MORE! HOW DARE YOU MIMIC THE ONE YOU DEVOURED!!


I'M NOT MIMICKING ANYONE IT'S ALL I HAVE IN HERE!
I ACT ACCORDING TO WHAT'S IN MY MIND AND RIGHT NOW I KNOW I'M YOUR SON!!
PREPOSTEROUS! MY SON IS DEAD! BODY AND SOUL! YOU KILLED HIM!
NOTHING ABSOLUTELY NOTHING YOU CAN SAY WILL CONVINCE ME THAT HE'S SOMEHOW IN FRONT OF ME!

DAD YOU WERE UNFAITHFUL TO MOM WHEN SHE HAD CAROLE

WHAT? WHERE DID THAT COME FROM!! ARE YOU READING MY MIND, MUTANT?

WHILE SHE WAS IN THE HOSPITAL'S MATERNITY WARD, YOU TOOK DAYS OFF FROM WORK TO VISIT HER LOOK AFTER ME AND MIND THE HOUSE, REMEMBER?

ONE DAY I CAME HOME EARLY FROM SCHOOL AND YOU WEREN'T HOME I LOOKED FOR YOU IN YOUR ROOM AND I FOUND "IT" IN YOUR GARBAGE CAN.

S. SILENCE .!! SHUT UP, SON!!

YOU YOU DEMON!! YOU ENJOY TOYING WITH MY MIND, DON'T YOU??

I I'M BERATING A MUTANT POSING AS MY DEAD SON FOR STICKING HIS NOSE INTO MY PRIVATE LIFE

THIS IS INSANE!! EVERYTHING YOU KNOW EVERYTHING YOU DO... IT ALL REMINDS ME OF MY SON, BUT THIS IS IMPOSSIBLE!! HE'S DEAD! YOU KILLED HIM!! SO.. SO WHAT REALLY HAPPENED, HUH? YOU ATE HIS SOUL AS WELL??

PLEASE, DON'T TRY TO OVERTHINK THIS! IT WILL DO US NO GOOD AT ALL!

WHAT?

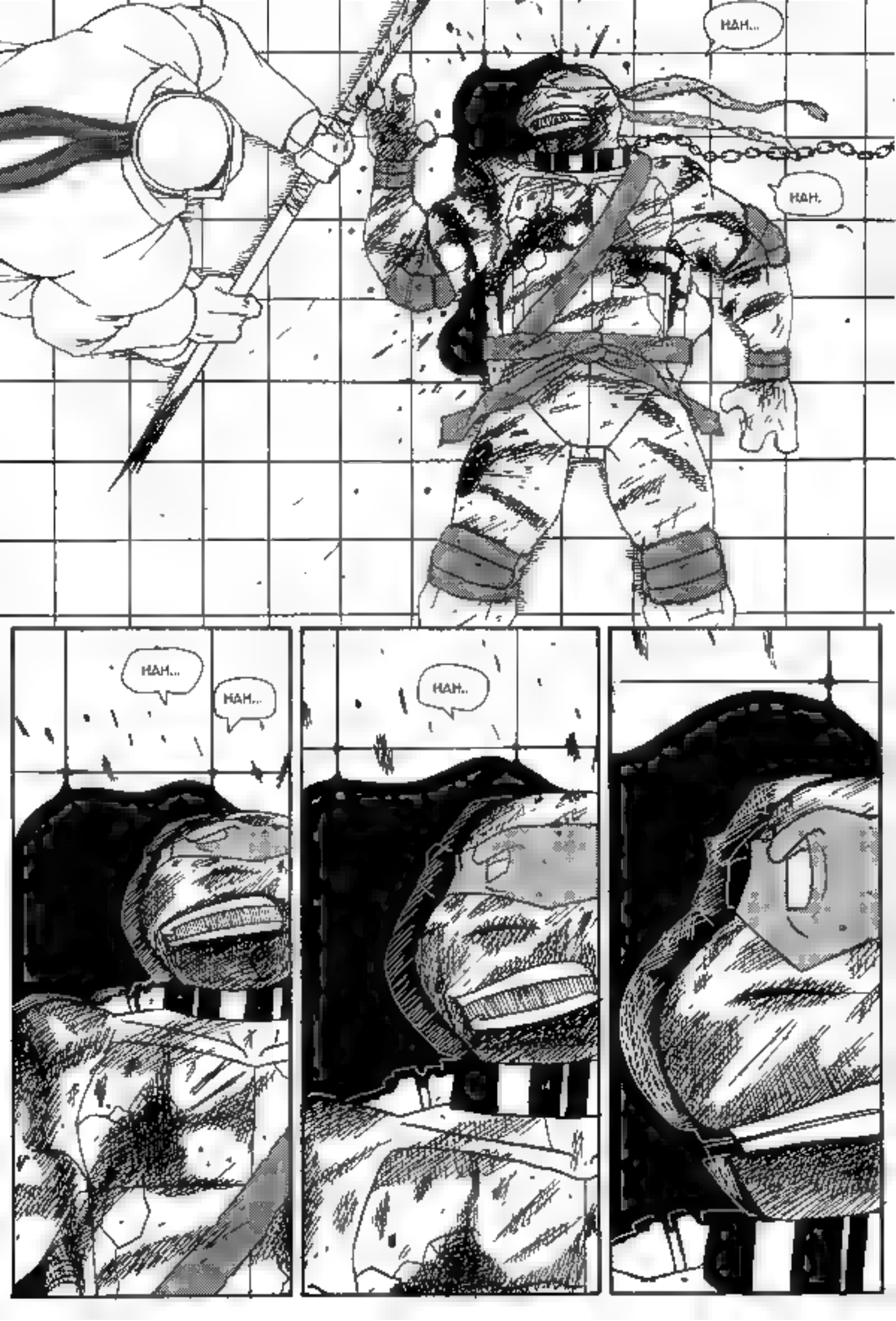
"I ACT EXACTLY LIKE AUGUSTUS"! I JUST PROVED IT TO YOU. THIS MEANS I WON'T HARM YOU BECAUSE YOU'RE "FAMILY" TO ME! THAT'S WHAT YOU REALLY WANTED TO KNOW, RIGHT?

EVEN IF YOU DON'T TRUST ME CAN YOU AT LEAST LET ME LOOK THROUGH MY THINGS? I JUST NEED TO GRAB A FILE . I PROMISE I'LL LEAVE YOU ALONE AS SOON AS FIND IT ALRIGHT?

UNDERSTOOD. MUTANT I'VE HEARD TOO MUCH NONSENSE FOR TODAY THE SOONER YOU LEAVE, THE BETTER


MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
GAIDEN
CHAPTER 19: FRAGMENTS
OF TRUTH INSIDE HIS MIND
2010


HAH... HAH...
YOU SCUM. LOOK WHAT YOU MADE ME DO.. JUST LOOK
THE FLOOR BECAUSE OF YOU... IT'S.., IT'S TAINTED WITH YOUR REPULSIVE BLOOD
MASTER SPLINTER HE'LL HAVE TO STARE AT IT WHILE HE'S STUCK IN THAT POD. RECOVERING
AND THAT'S YOUR FAULT TOO... HE'S IN THAT STATE BECAUSE OF YOU.
THERE'S NO REDEMPTION FOR YOUR SINS BUT DON'T WORRY IF YOU HAVE TOO MUCH REMORSE..
..I CAN ALWAYS PUNISH YOU SOME MORE I KNOW THAT WILL MAKE YOU FEEL LESS GUILTY
EVEN THIS WOULD BE UNFAIR I'D BE DOING THIS OUT OF RESPECT FOR YOUR FEELINGS... YOU DIDN'T EVEN THINK ABOUT OURS WHEN YOU KILLED MASTER SPLINTER DID YOU LEO?
LEO.. LOOK AT ME AND SAY SOMETHING.. IF YOU DARE


HAH...
HAH.
HAH...
HAH...
HAH..


AT LAST .
AT LAST!! AFTER
37 ATTEMPTS ..
A SUCCESSFUL
CLONE!

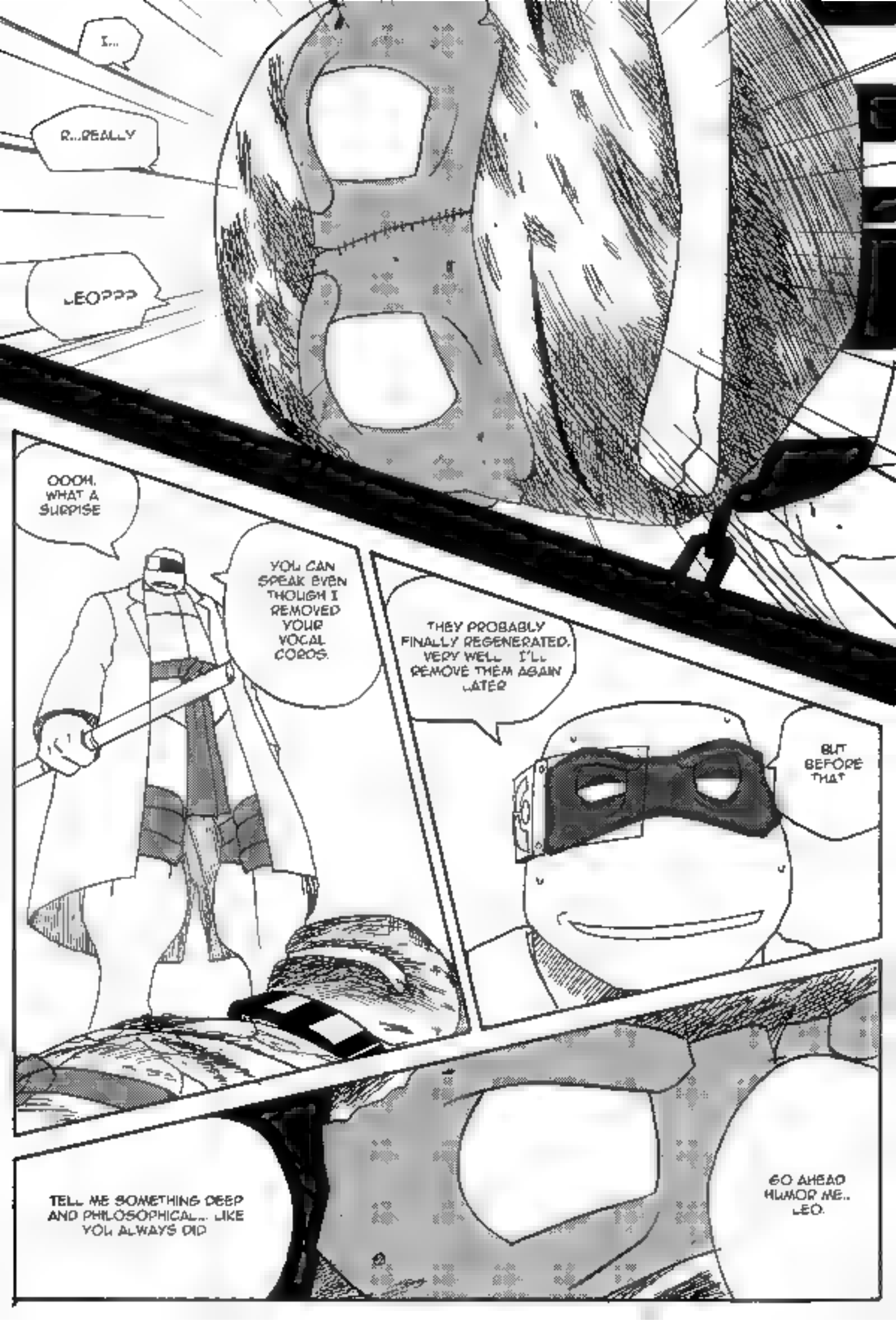

I'M SO RELIEVED. THIS MEANS I CAN BRING HIM BACK!
I I MUST DO A FEW TESTS IMMEDIATELY YES, YES I MUST "TEST THE WATER"
YOU YOU'RE LUCKY TO HAVE MADE IT OUT OF THE CLONING TANK
YOU'LL HAVE THE HONOR OF CONTRIBUTING TO SCIENCE WHILE YOUR SIBLINGS WILL ROT IN THERE
I DON'T LIKE THE WAY YOU LOOK MAKES ME RESTLESS
WAIT HERE I'LL GO FETCH SOME NICE ACCESSORIES FOR YOU
YES, YES... THAT BLUE MASK AND THAT SASH SUIT YOU VERY WELL
NOW I FEEL LIKE I CAN PROCEED WITH THE "TEST"..


NO NO!!!
EVERYTHING WAS PERFECT UP TO THIS POINT ..!!
THAT CLONE AGES FASTER
..BUT THAT DOESN'T AFFECT HIS REGENERATION RATE!! WHY .. WHY??
AT THIS RATE, IT'LL TAKE YEARS TO BRING BACK THE SENSEI!!
AND MY WORLD... IT SEEMS FURTHER FROM MY GRASP THAN EVER!! IT'S NOT FAIR!!
IT'S ALL YOUR FAULT!
IT'S ALL YOUR FAULT!! AGAIN!


OH, I SEE YOU'RE HUNGRY RIGHT, I HAVEN'T FED YOU ANYTHING YET
IT S ALRIGHT I HAVE JUST WHAT YOU NEED.
I HAVE A TANK FULL OF GOODIES LIKE THIS.
BON APPETIT
OH?
TOO PROUD TO EAT THIS EVEN ON THE VERGE OF STARVATION?
COME ON!! DIG IN!!
EAT LIKE THE MONSTER YOU ARE!!


THE RAPH OF THIS WORLD GOT ON MY NERVES TODAY AND YOU'RE THE ONE WHO LANDED ME IN THIS WORLD!!
YOU KNOW WHAT THIS MEANS RIGHT?
NO MATTER HOW HARD I TRY TO REMEMBER THAT THIS WORLD ISN'T REAL . SEEING APRIL WITH THAT CAVEMAN SICKENS ME
YOU YOU ALWAYS WISHED THEM TO BE TOGETHER DIDN'T YOU?
DID YOU ASK THE SENSEI FOR FORGIVENESS TODAY?
YES? THEN IT'S TIME TO REPENT
LEO.
YOUR NAME S LEO. ISN'T IT? HEHEHE

I'M... REALLY LEO?


I...
R...REALLY
LEO???
OOOH. WHAT A SURPISE
YOU CAN SPEAK EVEN THOUGH I REMOVED YOUR VOCAL CORDS.
THEY PROBABLY FINALLY REGENERATED. VERY WELL I'LL REMOVE THEM AGAIN LATER
BUT BEFORE THAT
TELL ME SOMETHING DEEP AND PHILOSOPHICAL.. LIKE YOU ALWAYS DID
GO AHEAD HUMOR ME.. LEO.

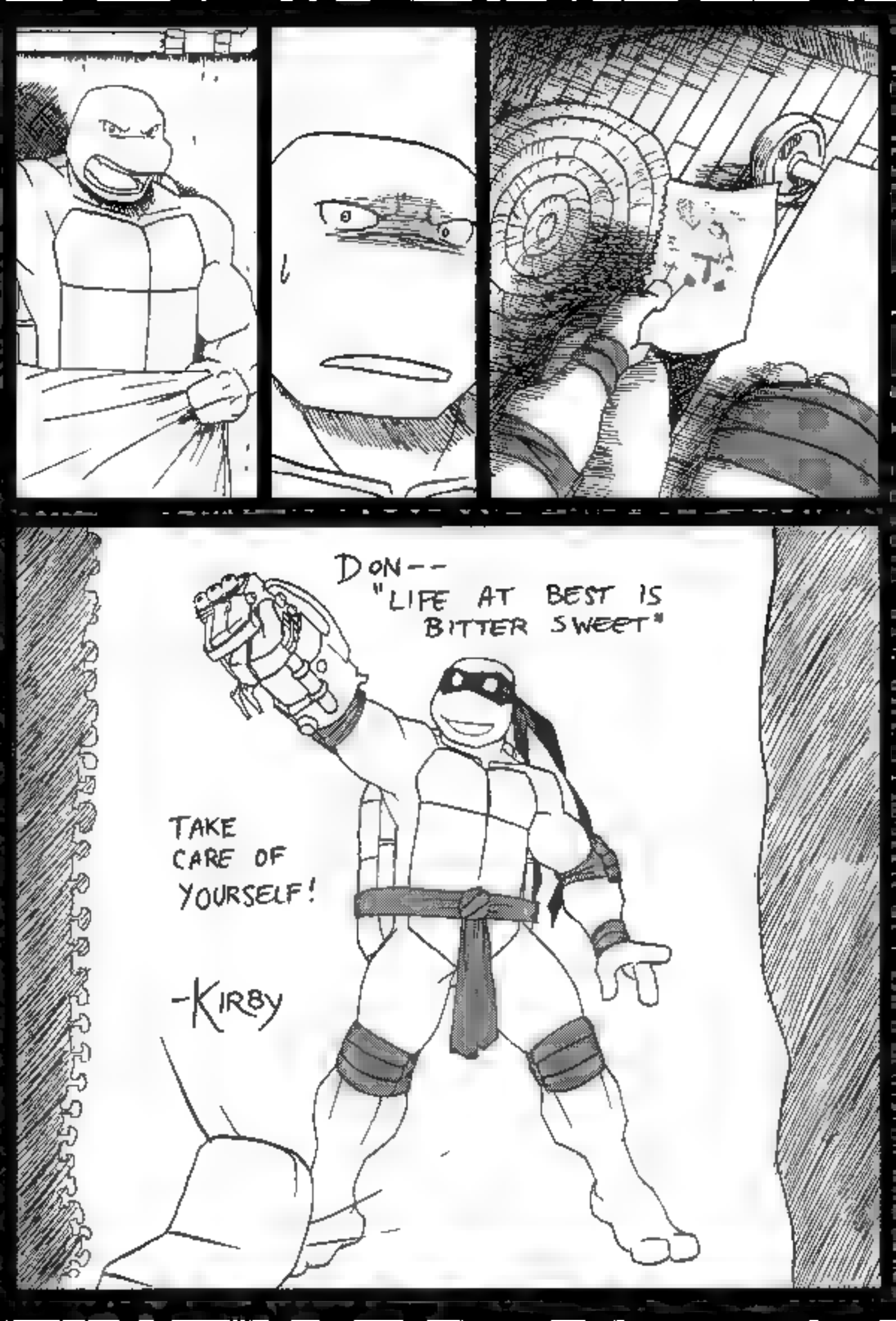




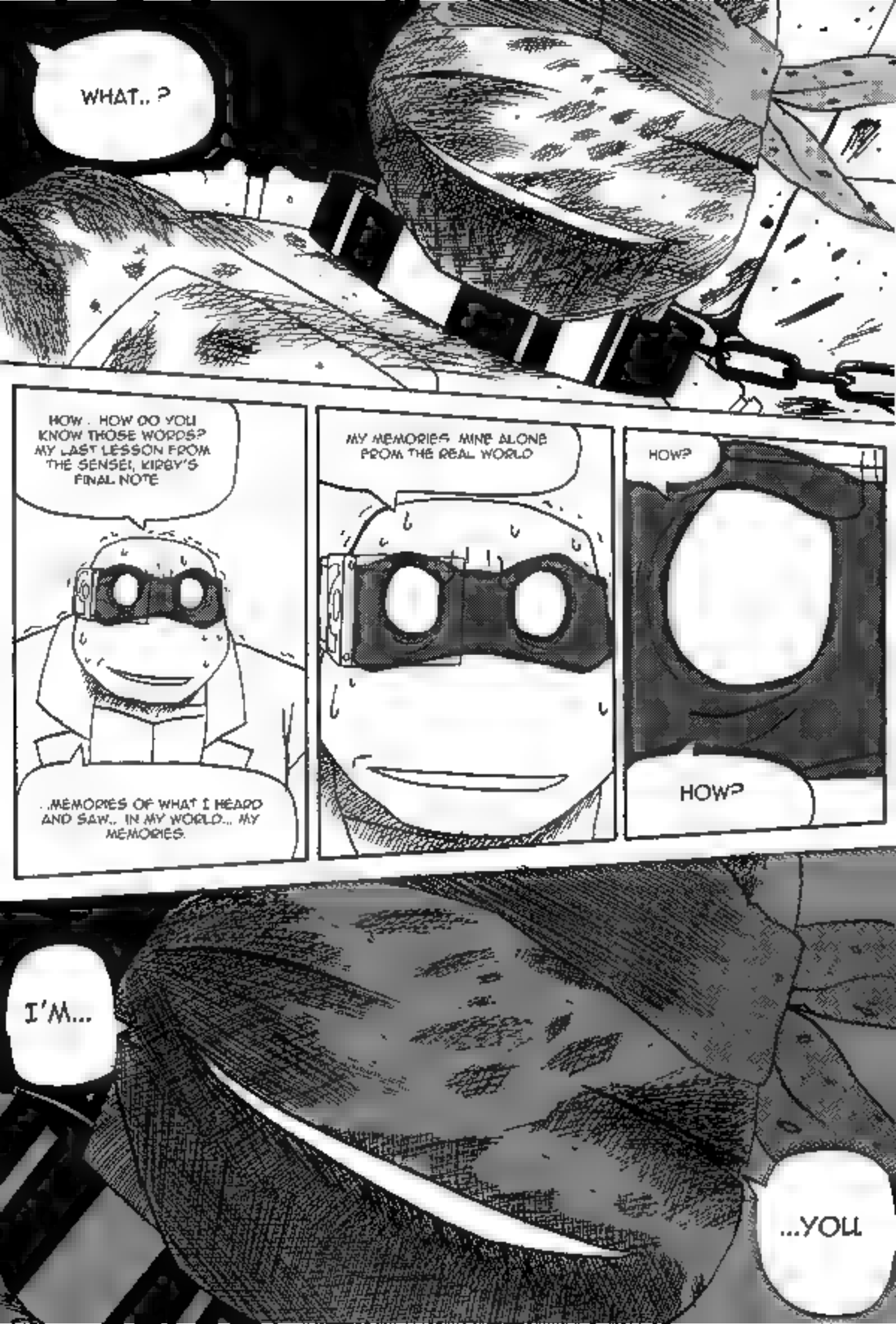


"YOU MUST NOT ALLOW ITS ILLUSIONS TO DISTORT YOUR VISION OF REALITY."

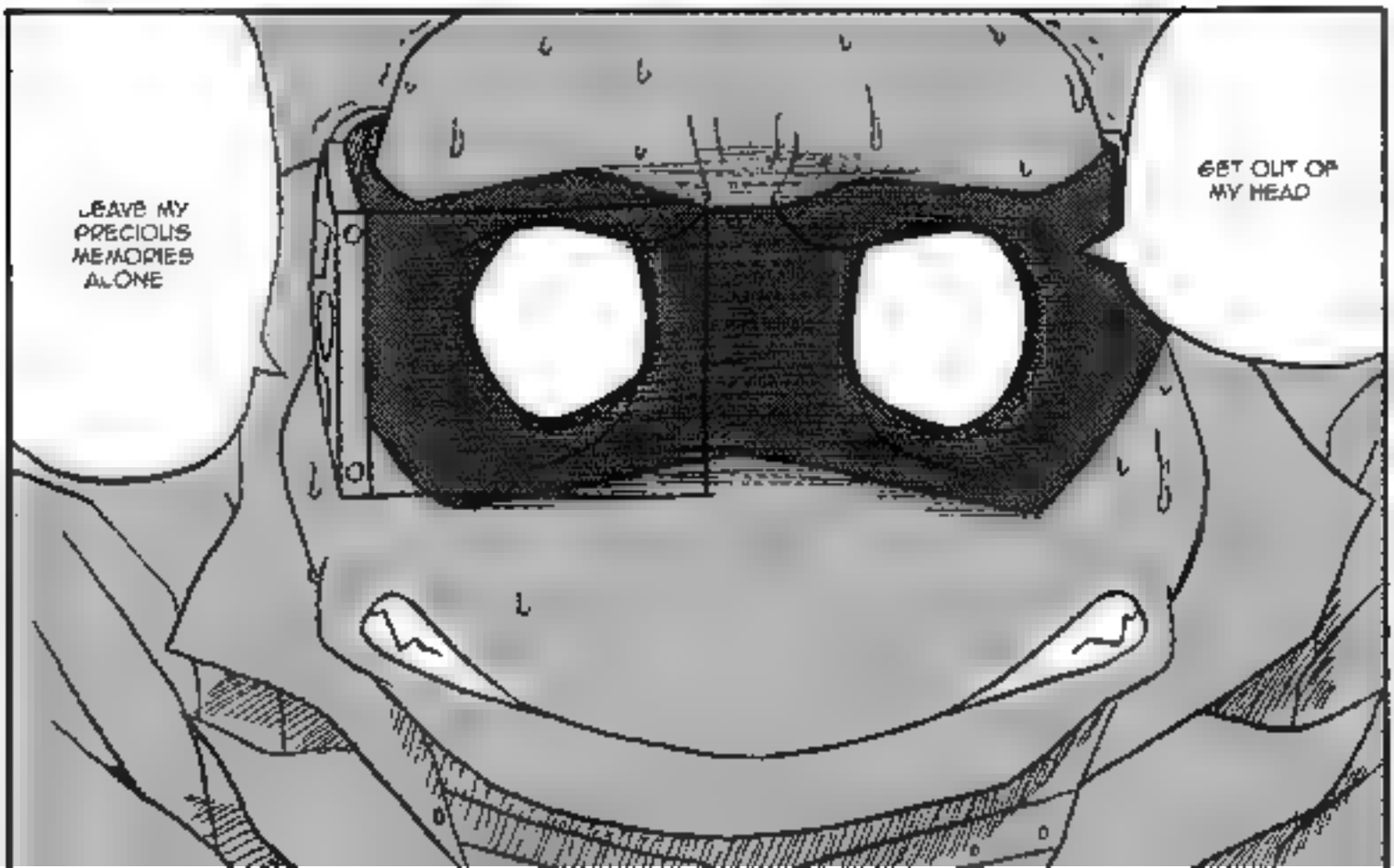

"YOU MUST NEVER DENY REALITY, NO
MATTER HOW HARSH IT MAY BE."


DON--
"LIFE AT BEST IS BITTER SWEET"
TAKE CARE OF YOURSELF!
-KIRBY

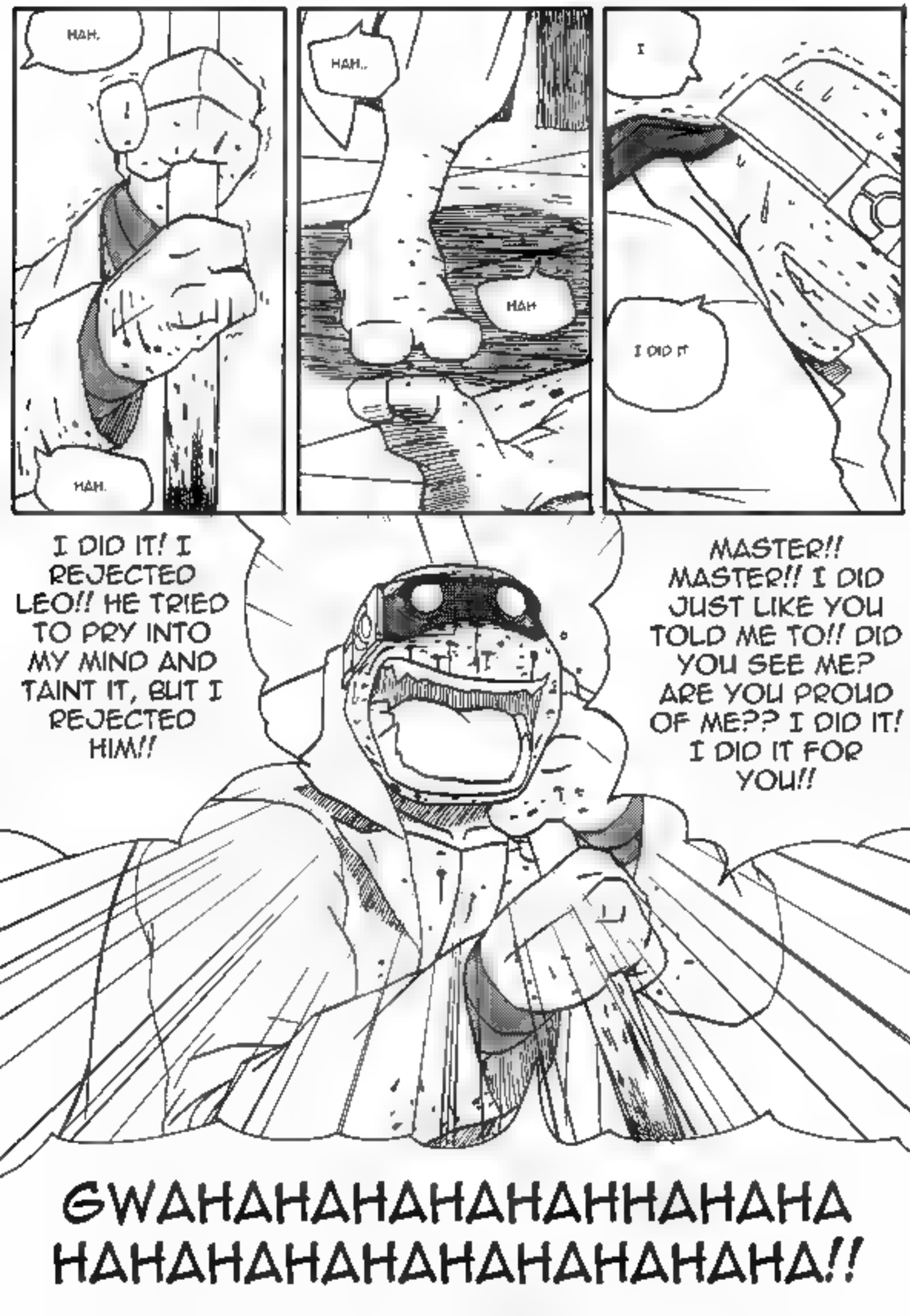



WHAT.. ?
HOW . HOW DO YOU KNOW THOSE WORDS? MY LAST LESSON FROM THE SENSEI, KIRBY'S FINAL NOTE
..MEMORIES OF WHAT I HEARD AND SAW.. IN MY WORLD... MY MEMORIES.
MY MEMORIES MINE ALONE FROM THE REAL WORLD
HOW?
HOW?
I'M...
...YOU




LEAVE MY PRECIOUS MEMORIES ALONE
GET OUT OF MY HEAD


GET OUT OF MY HEAD!
GET OUT OF MY HEAD!
GET OUT OF MY HEAD!
GET OUT OF MY HEAD!
GET OUT OF MY HEAD!
GET OUT OF MY HEAD!
GET OUT OF MY HEAD!
GET OUT!
GET OUT!
GET OUT!
GET OUT!
GET OUT!

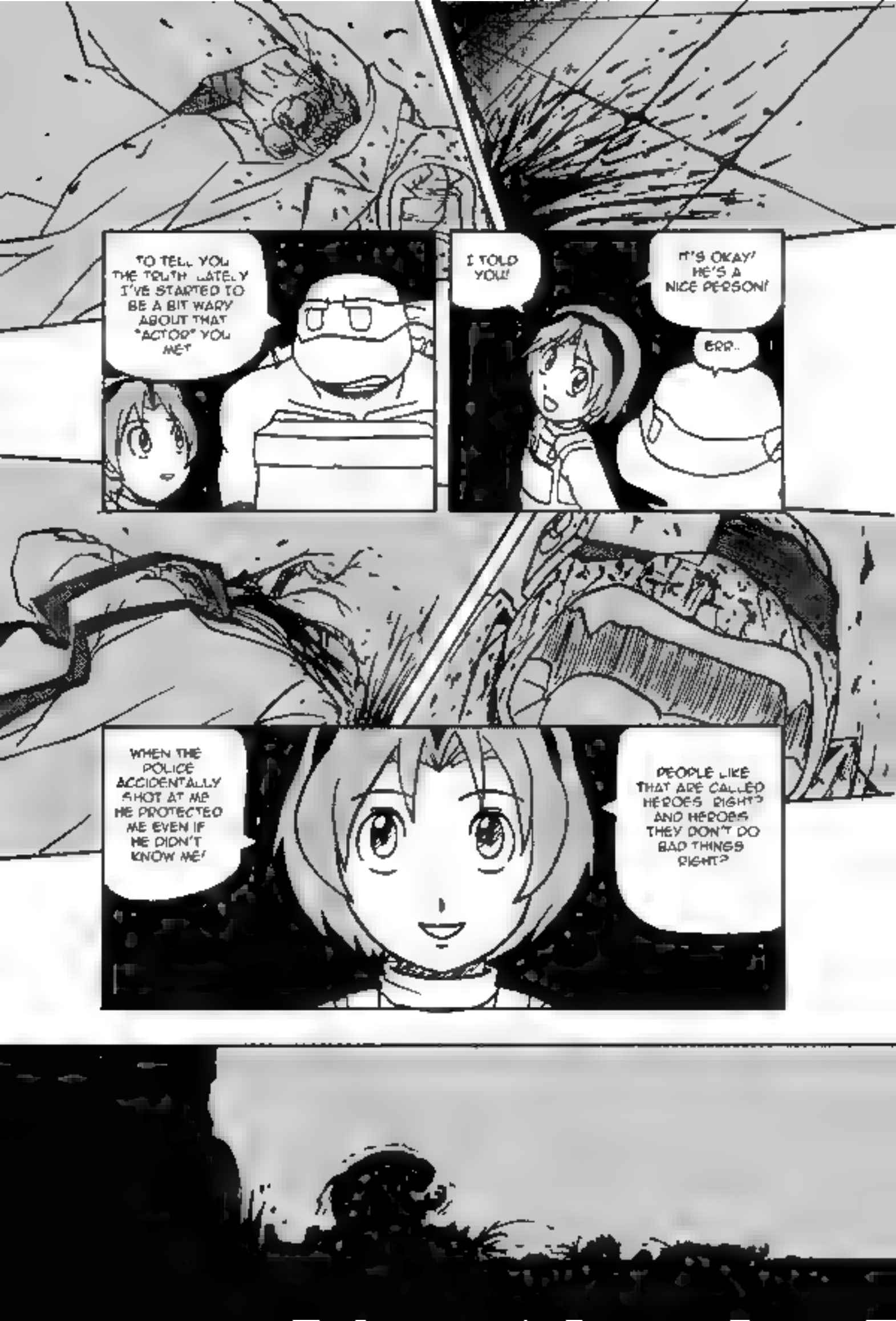

HAH.
HAH.
HAH..
HAH
I
I DID IT
I DID IT! I REJECTED LEO!! HE TRIED TO PRY INTO MY MIND AND TAINT IT, BUT I REJECTED HIM!!
MASTER!! MASTER!! I DID JUST LIKE YOU TOLD ME TO!! DID YOU SEE ME? ARE YOU PROUD OF ME?? I DID IT! I DID IT FOR YOU!!
GWAHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHA HAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA!!


HUH
HUH


HAH. HAH.
IF I M NOT GONNA
LEAVE THIS HELL
HOLE ALIVE
THEN. THEN
NEITHER WILL
THIS .. PIECE
OF CRAP!!
YOU WON'T
GET AWAY
WITH IT
WAIT
WAIT...!!!
YOU
MONSTER



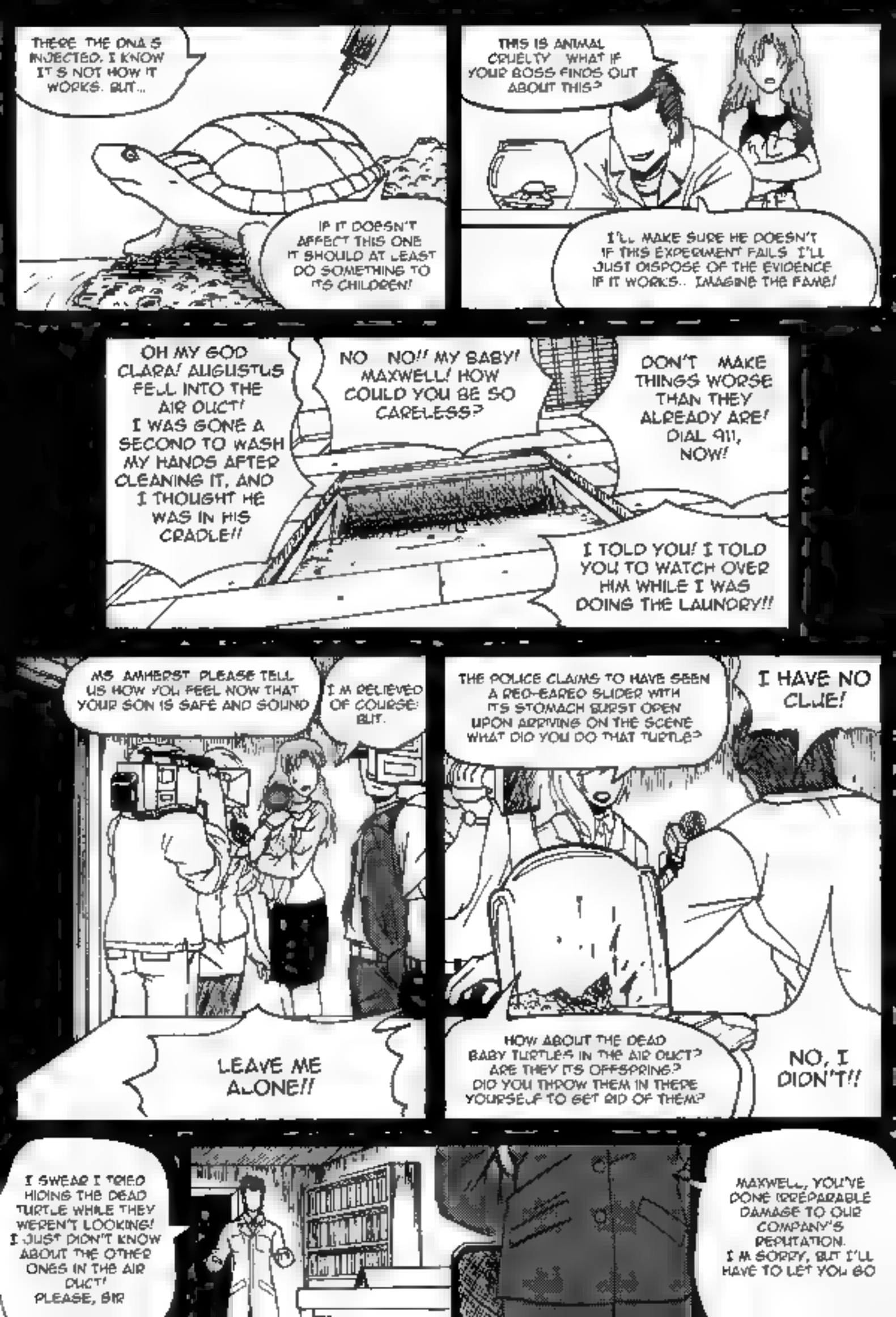

AUGUSTUS, DO YOU NEED HELP?
IT'S OKAY CAROLE! I FOUND THE BOX I WAS LOOKING FOR
COUGH *COUGH*
HMMMM
THAT'S RIGHT YOU DEVELOPED SOME KIND OF ASTHMA. WHAT CAUSED THAT?
DON'T PLAY DUMB. IT WAS ONE OF YOUR FELLOW FREAKS DOING
HE USED MY DAUGHTER AS A HUMAN SHIELD AND DRAGGED HER TO A PLACE HIGHLY CONCENTRATED IN TOXIC GAS
HUMAN SHIELD. SO IT'S THAT DONATELLO GUY!
BUT I TOLD YOU, DADDY! THERE WAS SOMETHING WRONG WHEN THE ACTOR DID HIS WORK! IT WASN'T HIS FAULT!
THE POLICE USED REAL GUNS!
CAROLE DADDY KNOWS BUT
HE DID ALL THAT BECAUSE THE POLICE WERE BOTHERING HIM WHILE HE WAS WORKING! HE'S REALLY NOT A BAD PERSON!
MOM ALWAYS TOLD ME THAT WHEN PEOPLE DO SOMETHING I DON'T LIKE, IT'S OKAY TO DO SOMETHING ABOUT IT SO HE'S OKAY TOO!


TO TELL YOU THE TRUTH LATELY I'VE STARTED TO BE A BIT WARY ABOUT THAT "ACTOR" YOU MET
I TOLD YOU!!
IT'S OKAY! HE'S A NICE PERSON!
ERR..
WHEN THE POLICE ACCIDENTALLY SHOT AT ME HE PROTECTED ME EVEN IF HE DIDN'T KNOW ME!
PEOPLE LIKE THAT ARE CALLED HEROES RIGHT? AND HEROES THEY DON'T DO BAD THINGS RIGHT?


WELL HERE IT IS THE DOCUMENT I MUST GIVE TO THAT GUY
DE'S TRAINING ORDER?
I STILL DON'T UNDERSTAND HOW YOU CAME TO KNOW ABOUT THE EXISTENCE OF THIS DOCUMENT AND ITS LOCATION
HOW I CAN I NOT? THIS IS FROM WHEN SHADOW CALLED THE POLICE ON ME BECAUSE I MISTOOK HER FOR ANOTHER GIRL AND KISSED HER. FUNNY SOUVENIRS GO IN MY FUNNY BOX!
THAT IS NOT WHAT I MEANT AND YOU KNOW IT
DON'T MAKE ME SAY THINGS I'LL REGRET
ESPECIALLY IN FRONT OF MY DAUGHTER
ALRIGHT SIR
NOW THAT MR MUTANT IS DONE. HE WILL QUIETLY GO HOME ALRIGHT?
WAIT!
HE WILL
WHY DOES AUGUSTUS HAVE TO GO? I DON'T WANT HIM TO GO''
I KNOW, I'LL HELP! YOU NEED TO GIVE THOSE PAPERS TO SOMEONE? IF I DO IT FOR YOU YOU'LL STAY HERE WITH US OKAY? OKAY?
YOU DON'T KNOW THE PERSON WHO WANTS THIS DOCUMENT AND WHAT DID MOM TELL YOU ABOUT STRANGERS?
AH
AAW C MERE
WE'LL MEET AGAIN' PROMISE!

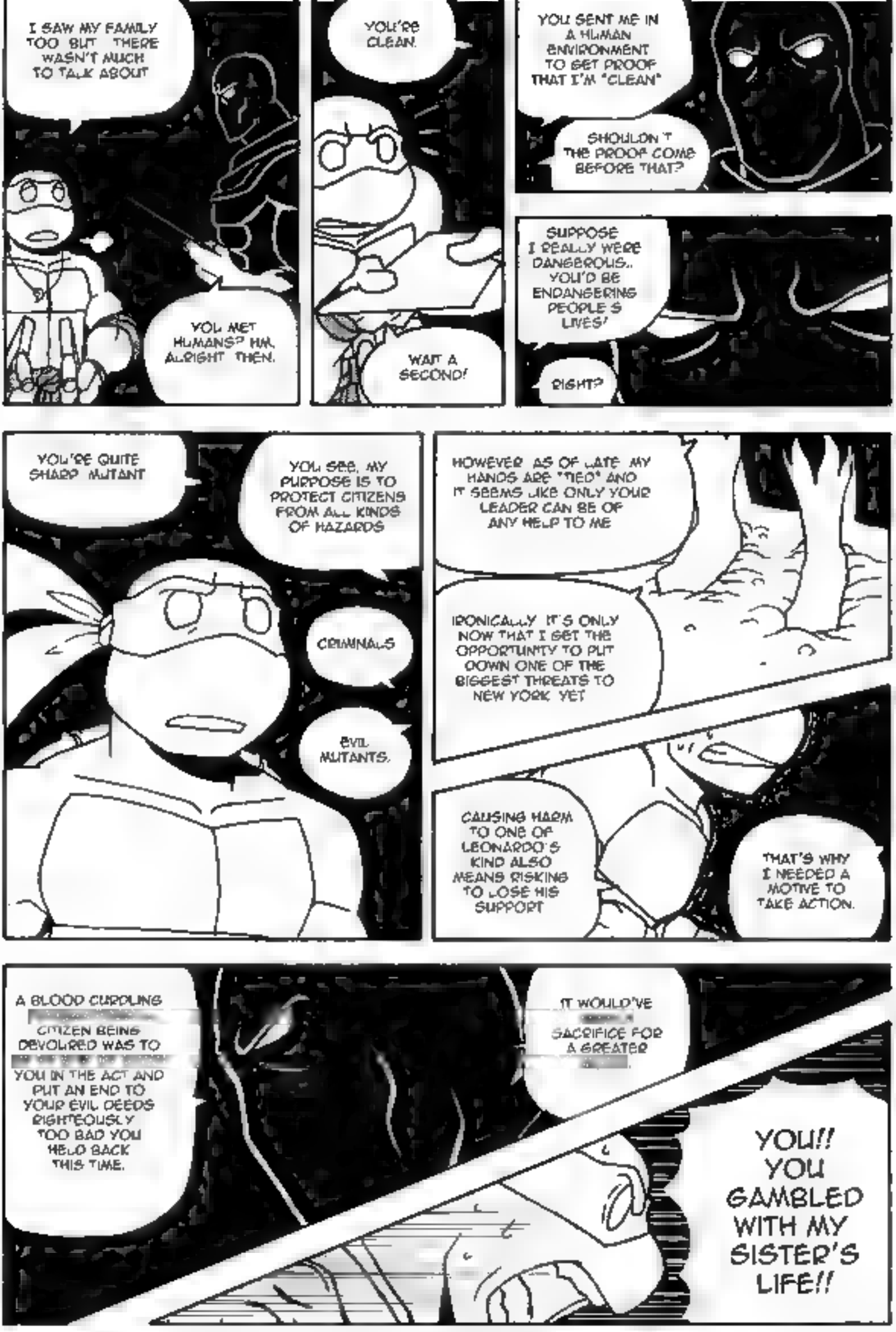

DADDY?
WHY CAN'T HE STAY?
HUH? WHY CAN'T AUGUSTUS STAY?
I MISS HIM ALREADY
CAROLE DADDY NEEDS TO BE LEFT ALONE FOR A LITTLE WHILE
DON'T DISTURB DADDY OKAY?
パタ


THAT THING TORMENTING ME IT CAN'T BE JUST A COINCIDENCE
AM I BEING PUNISHED FOR MY FOOLISH ACT FROM THAT TIME?
EVER HEARD ABOUT THAT SCIENTIST WHO CLAIMED THAT HUMANOID MUTANT REPTILES LIVED IN NEW YORK? WHAT WAS HIS NAME AGAIN. BAXTER STOCKMAN! YEAH, THAT'S HIM!
HE PROBABLY CONCOCTED THAT FAIRY TALE TO GET THE MEDIA'S ATTENTION IN AN EFFORT TO APPEAL HIS SENTENCE HE SHOULD REMAIN IN JAIL, WHERE HE BELONGS! THE SAME THING GOES FOR HIS DELUSIONAL IDEAS
IT'S ALL MY DAMN FAULT!!!!!
THAT SCREAM JUST NOW IT CAME FROM THE SEWERS.
NO ONE'S AROUND. ALRIGHT
THIS BLOOD.. COULD IT BE THE BLOOD OF ONE OF THOSE RUMORED GIANT REPTILES .?
THIS IS FASCINATING.. I HAVE TO RETURN TO MY LAB AND SCAN IT RIGHT AWAY .
THIS MIGHT BE NOT AS GOOD AS A LIVE SPECIMEN, HOWEVER
IF I CAN CREATE MY OWN SPECIMEN FROM THIS SAMPLE . THEN...


THERE THE DNA S INJECTED. I KNOW IT S NOT HOW IT WORKS. BUT...
IF IT DOESN'T AFFECT THIS ONE IT SHOULD AT LEAST DO SOMETHING TO ITS CHILDREN!
THIS IS ANIMAL CRUELTY WHAT IF YOUR BOSS FINDS OUT ABOUT THIS?
I'LL MAKE SURE HE DOESN'T IF THIS EXPERIMENT FAILS I'LL JUST DISPOSE OF THE EVIDENCE IF IT WORKS.. IMAGINE THE FAME!
OH MY GOD CLARA! AUGUSTUS FELL INTO THE AIR DUCT! I WAS GONE A SECOND TO WASH MY HANDS AFTER CLEANING IT, AND I THOUGHT HE WAS IN HIS CRADLE!!
NO NO!! MY BABY! MAXWELL! HOW COULD YOU BE SO CARELESS?
DON'T MAKE THINGS WORSE THAN THEY ALREADY ARE! DIAL 911, NOW!
I TOLD YOU! I TOLD YOU TO WATCH OVER HIM WHILE I WAS DOING THE LAUNDRY!!
MS AMHERST PLEASE TELL US HOW YOU FEEL NOW THAT YOUR SON IS SAFE AND SOUND
I M RELIEVED OF COURSE: BUT.
LEAVE ME ALONE!!
THE POLICE CLAIMS TO HAVE SEEN A RED-EARED SLIDER WITH ITS STOMACH BURST OPEN UPON ARRIVING ON THE SCENE WHAT DID YOU DO THAT TURTLE?
I HAVE NO CLUE!
HOW ABOUT THE DEAD BABY TURTLES IN THE AIR DUCT? ARE THEY ITS OFFSPRING? DID YOU THROW THEM IN THERE YOURSELF TO GET RID OF THEM?
NO, I DIDN'T!!
I SWEAR I TRIED HIDING THE DEAD TURTLE WHILE THEY WEREN'T LOOKING! I JUST DIDN'T KNOW ABOUT THE OTHER ONES IN THE AIR DUCT! PLEASE, SIR
MAXWELL, YOU'VE DONE IRREPARABLE DAMAGE TO OUR COMPANY'S REPUTATION. I M SORRY, BUT I'LL HAVE TO LET YOU GO

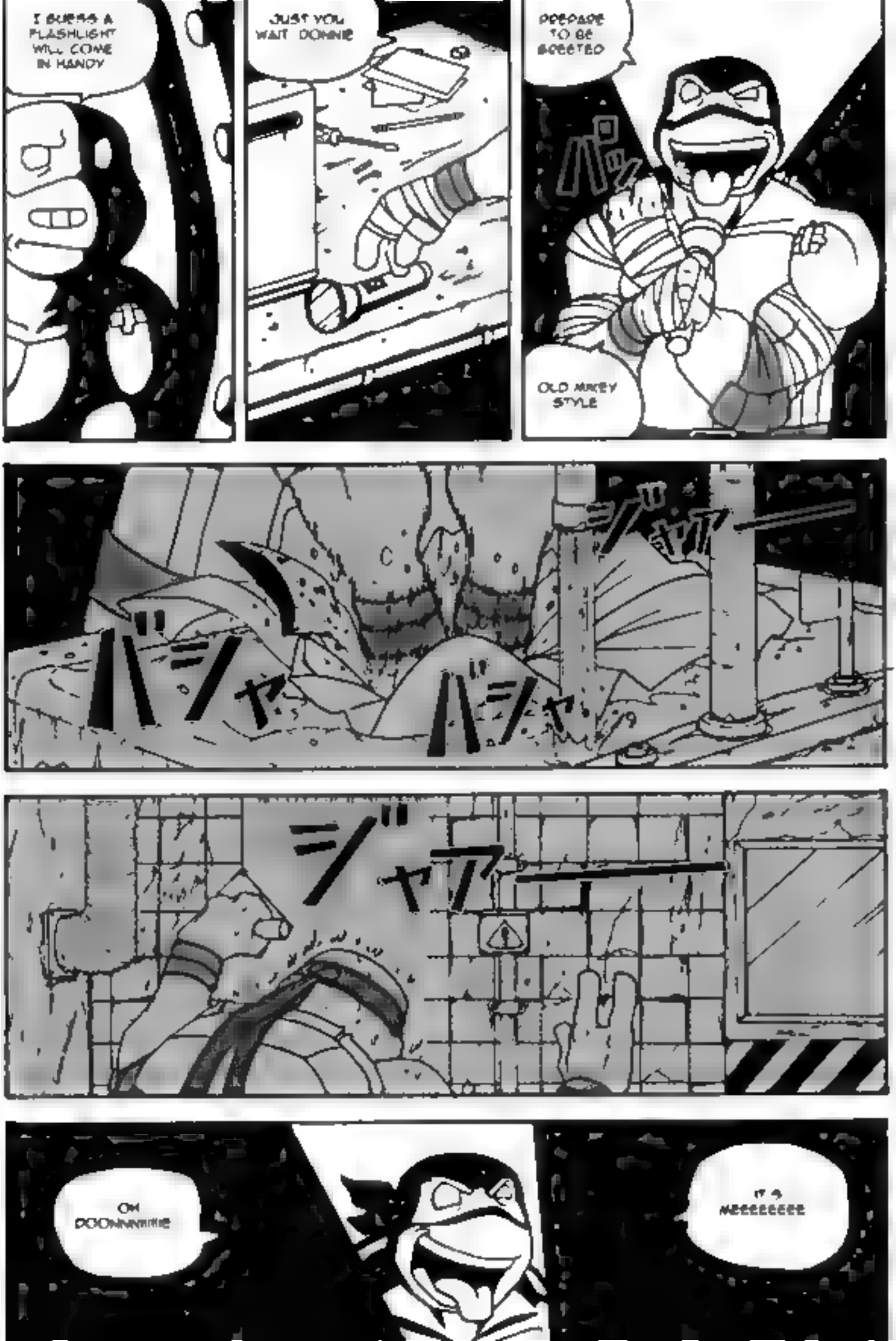

WHAT REALLY HAPPENED TO THAT TURTLE ON THAT DAY?
MAYBE IT'S RELATED TO AUGUSTUS' FATE?
!!!
NO!!
AAAAHHH!
GWAAARRRRR!
L..LOOK..LOOK D..DAD I M WATCHING A BAD MOVIE AND M N..NOT EVEN S SCARED.. JUST LIKE GROWN-UPS
N...NOW THAT I M A..A GROWN-UP I CAN'T TAKE CARE OF AUGUSTUS B. BY MYSELF IF Y..YOU LET HIM STAY SO...SO... AH...
YOU'RE NOT MAKING ANY SENSE, CAROLE!!
I'M SCARED TOO, BTW.
FIRST OF ALL, YOU SHOULDN'T WATCH "ALIENS DO SPORTS ILLUSTRATED'S BABES" PERIOD YOU'RE GOING TO HAVE ALL KINDS OF NIGHTMARES
OH? BUT BUT
SECOND. ABOUT AUGUSTUS.
HUM. I MEAN THAT GREEN PERSON YOU THINK IS AUGUS. TUS?
WAIT?
NO, NO, THIS WOULDN'T MAKE ANY SENSE
WHAT DADDY?


SO. YOU CAME BACK AFTER ALL
WHOA!
ARE YOU REALLY A NORMAL POLICE OFFICER?
HALF THE TIME
NOW WHERE IS IT?
YOUR SO-CALLED PROOF OF IDENTITY?
READ IT IT'S JUST LIKE I TOLD YOU, RIGHT?
YOU CLAIMED YOU ARE "AUGUSTUS AMHERST" WHO GOT ISSUED A RESTRICTION ORDER ON JUNE 17TH OF LAST YEAR AND THIS.. SEEMS AUTHENTIC. THERE IS NO WAY YOU COULD'VE KNOWN ABOUT THIS DOCUMENT UNLESS.
HUM. I M DEALING WITH MUTANTS, SO WHILE I'M AT IT I MIGHT AS WELL BELIEVE YOUR STORY

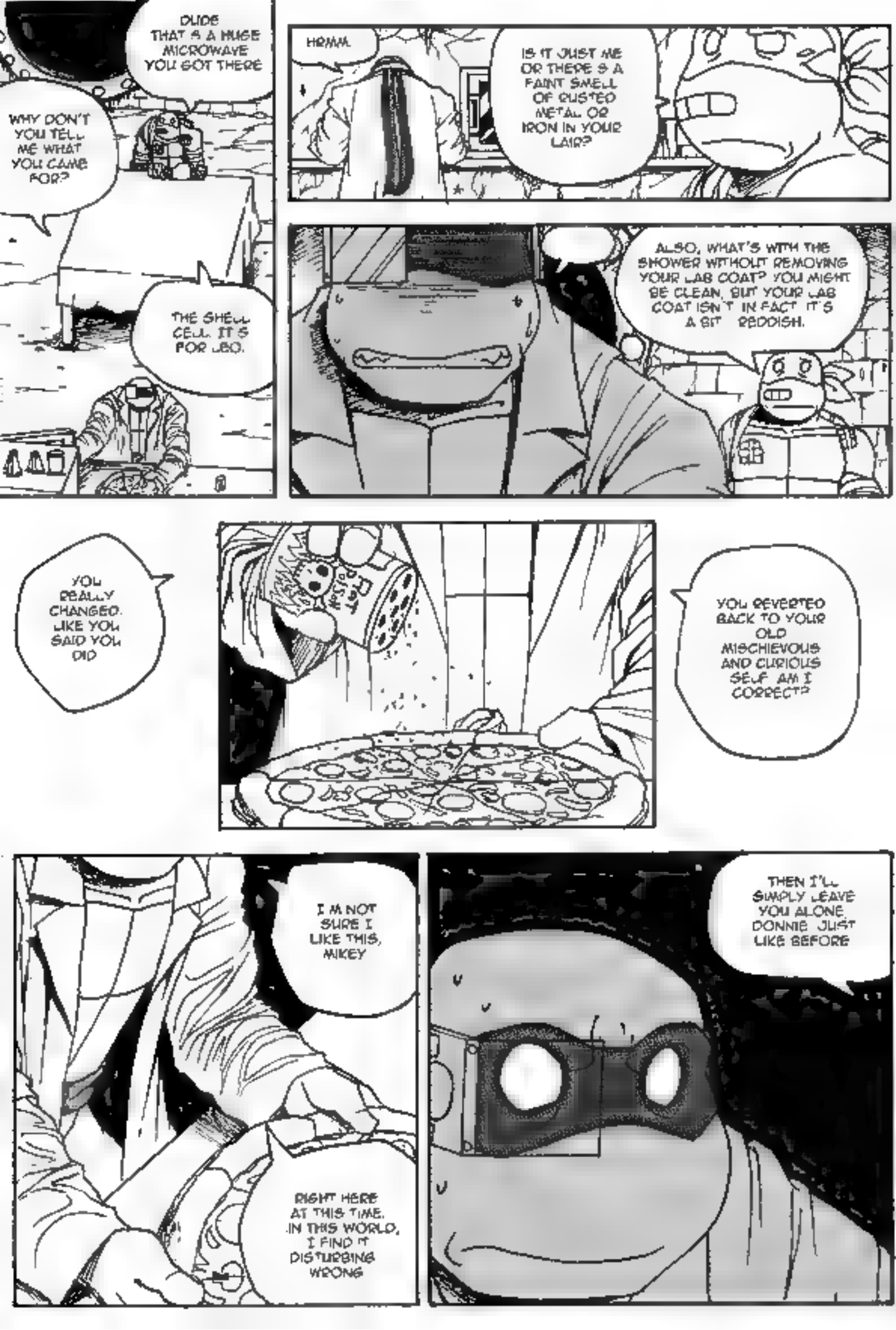

I SAW MY FAMILY TOO BUT THERE WASN'T MUCH TO TALK ABOUT
YOU MET HUMANS? HM. ALRIGHT THEN.
YOU'RE CLEAN.
WAIT A SECOND!
YOU SENT ME IN A HUMAN ENVIRONMENT TO GET PROOF THAT I'M "CLEAN"
SHOULDN'T THE PROOF COME BEFORE THAT?
SUPPOSE I REALLY WERE DANGEROUS.. YOU'D BE ENDANGERING PEOPLE'S LIVES!
RIGHT?
YOU'RE QUITE SHARP MUTANT
YOU SEE, MY PURPOSE IS TO PROTECT CITIZENS FROM ALL KINDS OF HAZARDS
CRIMINALS
EVIL MUTANTS.
HOWEVER AS OF LATE MY HANDS ARE "TIED" AND IT SEEMS LIKE ONLY YOUR LEADER CAN BE OF ANY HELP TO ME
IRONICALLY IT'S ONLY NOW THAT I GET THE OPPORTUNITY TO PUT DOWN ONE OF THE BIGGEST THREATS TO NEW YORK YET
CAUSING HARM TO ONE OF LEONARDO'S KIND ALSO MEANS RISKING TO LOSE HIS SUPPORT
THAT'S WHY I NEEDED A MOTIVE TO TAKE ACTION.
A BLOOD CURDLING [redacted] CITIZEN BEING DEVOURED WAS TO [redacted] YOU IN THE ACT AND PUT AN END TO YOUR EVIL DEEDS RIGHTEOUSLY TOO BAD YOU HELD BACK THIS TIME.
IT WOULD'VE [redacted] SACRIFICE FOR A GREATER [redacted].
YOU!! YOU GAMBLED WITH MY SISTER'S LIFE!!


I SAID YOU WERE CLEAN.
DON'T MAKE ME CHANGE MY MIND
NOW YOU WILL GO AND TELL YOUR LEADER.
WHA...?? SCREW YOU!!
YOU THINK I'M GOING TO DO YOU A FAVOR AFTER THAT??
YOU CAN TAKE YOUR MESSAGE AND SHOVE IT UP WHERE THE SUN DOESN'T SHINE! I M NOT TELLING ANYONE ANYTHING!
HMM, I REMEMBER THEM TO BE TOUGHER THAN THIS.
OR MAYBE I'M THE ONE WHO BECAME A BIT MORE PRAGMATIC OVER THE YEARS.


DOOONNIIIIIIE!
OH DOOONIIIIE!
IT'S ME, MIKEEEEEEY!
DOOONIIIIE! WHERE ARE YOUUUUUUU?
WHEREVER YOU ARE, I M COMING TO SEE YOUUUUUUU!
...OOOOONIIIIE! OOOONNIIIIE:
NO... NONONONO NONONONONO...
THE MIKEY OF THIS FAKE WORLD... HE'S GOING TO MESS UP EVERYTHING!
NOT NOW, MY WORLD, MY SENSEI, MY FATHER. NO ONE MUST KNOW.
I MUST STAY CALM. I MUST STAY CALM. I MUST STAY CALM. I MUST STAY CALM. I MUST STAY CALM. I MUST STAY CALM. I MUST STAY CALM. I MUST STAY CALM.
I MUST BE AS FAKE AS THIS WORLD IS!


I GUESS A FLASHLIGHT WILL COME IN HANDY
JUST YOU WAIT DONNIE
PREPARE TO BE GREETED
パワ
OLD MIKEY STYLE
バシャ
バシャ
ジャア
OH DOONNNNNNE
IT'S MEEEEEEEE


MIKEYYYY WHAT A SURPRISSSSE
GWAAAAH!
YOU MUST BE HUNGRY MIKEY I HAVE PIZZA.
P...PIZZA?
LET'S GO BACK UP HAVE SOME PIZZA
Y YEAH OKAY.

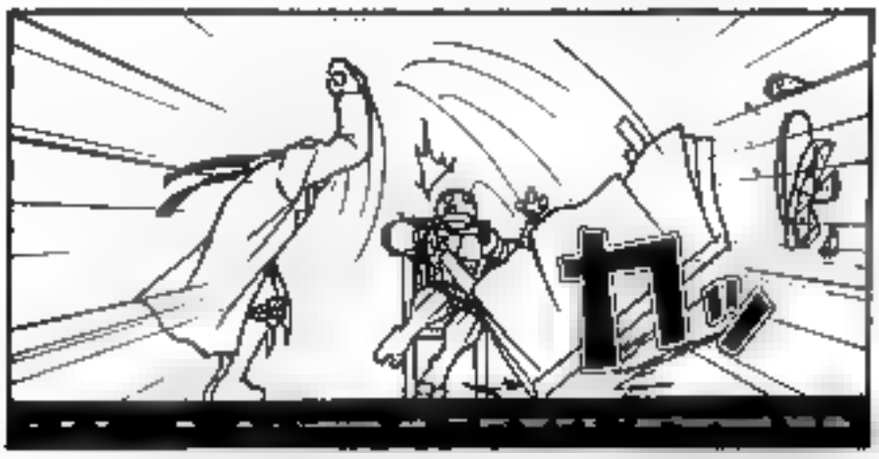

DUDE THAT'S A HUGE MICROWAVE YOU GOT THERE
WHY DON'T YOU TELL ME WHAT YOU CAME FOR?
THE SHELL CELL. IT'S FOR LEO.
HMMM.
IS IT JUST ME OR THERE'S A FAINT SMELL OF RUSTED METAL OR IRON IN YOUR LAIR?
ALSO, WHAT'S WITH THE SHOWER WITHOUT REMOVING YOUR LAB COAT? YOU MIGHT BE CLEAN, BUT YOUR LAB COAT ISN'T IN FACT IT'S A BIT REDDISH.
YOU REALLY CHANGED. LIKE YOU SAID YOU DID
YOU REVERTED BACK TO YOUR OLD MISCHIEVOUS AND CURIOUS SELF AM I CORRECT?
I AM NOT SURE I LIKE THIS, MIKEY
RIGHT HERE AT THIS TIME. IN THIS WORLD, I FIND IT DISTURBING WRONG
THEN I'LL SIMPLY LEAVE YOU ALONE, DONNIE JUST LIKE BEFORE

I MEAN, IT'S BEEN 17 YEARS ALREADY I SHOULD KNOW BETTER

I'VE COME TO REALIZE THAT YOU BECAME SOMEONE WHO NEEDS MORE PRIVACY THAN ANY OF US

SO IF YOU DON'T FEEL LIKE OPENING UP TO ME THAT'S FINE I WON'T PRY

THE LIFE I LIVED FOR THE LAST 17 YEARS GETTING TO KNOW YOU BETTER WAS NO ILLUSION, DONNIE THINGS DON'T NEED TO CHANGE BETWEEN US IF THAT'S HOW YOU WANT THINGS TO BE.



ER..

THAT'S FOR YOUR OWN GOOD YOU MIGHT GET EVEN FATTER

IF YOU WERE JUST A FAKER TRYING TO ACT LIKE MY REAL BROTHER YOU WOULD HAVE DESERVED TO BE DISPOSED OF HOWEVER

I AM NOT RAPH!!!

OF ALL MY FAKE BROTHERS IN THIS FAKE WORLD.. YOU ARE THE ONLY REASONABLE ONE.. THE MORE LIKELY TO UNDERSTAND ME.

MAYBE YOU WILL SUPPORT ME? MAYBE YOU CAN GRANT ME SOME PEACE OF MIND? MAYBE I CAN TRUST YOU?

MASTER, PLEASE ALLOW ME TO INDULGE MYSELF WITH SOME COMFORT FROM THIS WORLD LET ME PRETEND I CAN TRUST HIM


MIKEY TELL ME
IF YOU WANTED TO DO SOMETHING AWFUL BUT YOU WERE THE ONLY PERSON WHO COULD REACH FOR IT
DO YOU THINK IT'S ACCEPTABLE TO USE ANY MEANS NECESSARY?
MIKEY DO YOU THINK I'M DOING THE RIGHT THING?
WHATEVER YOU'RE TALKING ABOUT..
...DO YOU BELIEVE IT'S FOR THE GREATER GOOD AT THE END OF THE LINE?


YES!
OF COURSE. I DO!

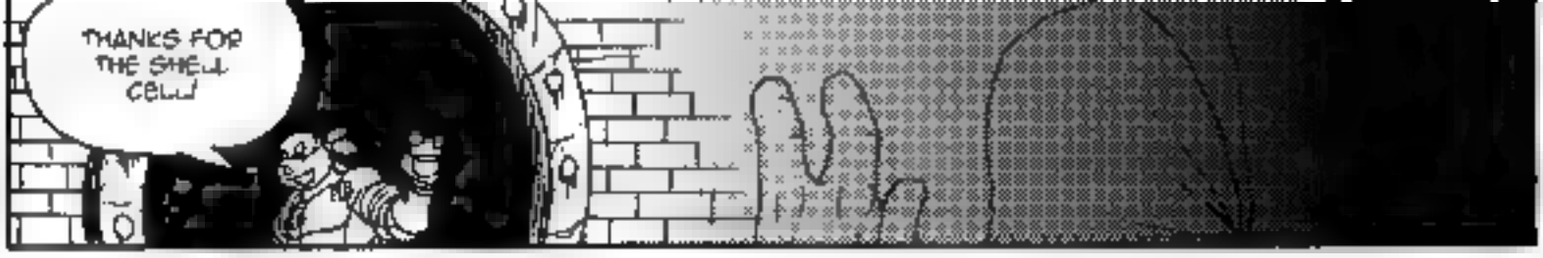

THEN GO FOR IT! DON'T LET ANYTHING GET IN YOUR WAY!
YOU HAVE MY SUPPORT!


BUT I..
NO MATTER WHAT YOU HAVE MY SUPPORT

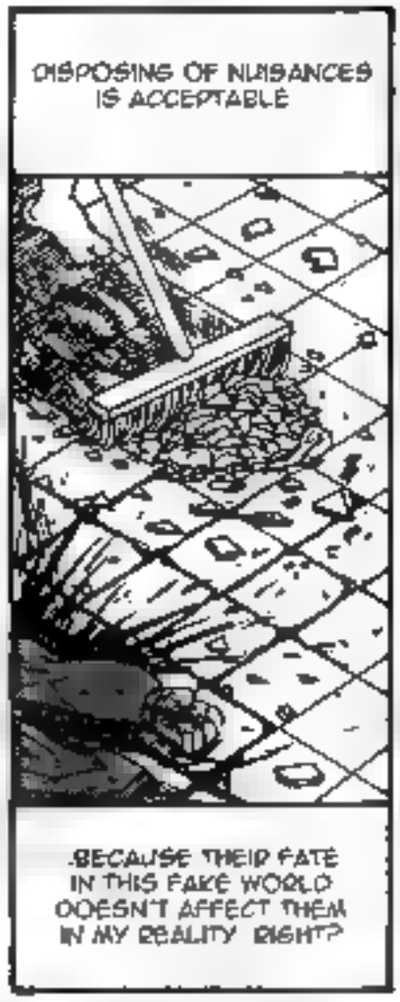

MIKEY YOU REALLY TRUST ME. DON'T YOU?


SURE, WHY NOT? WE'RE BROTHERS, DONNIE! AND IT'S FOR THE GREATER GOOD RIGHT?



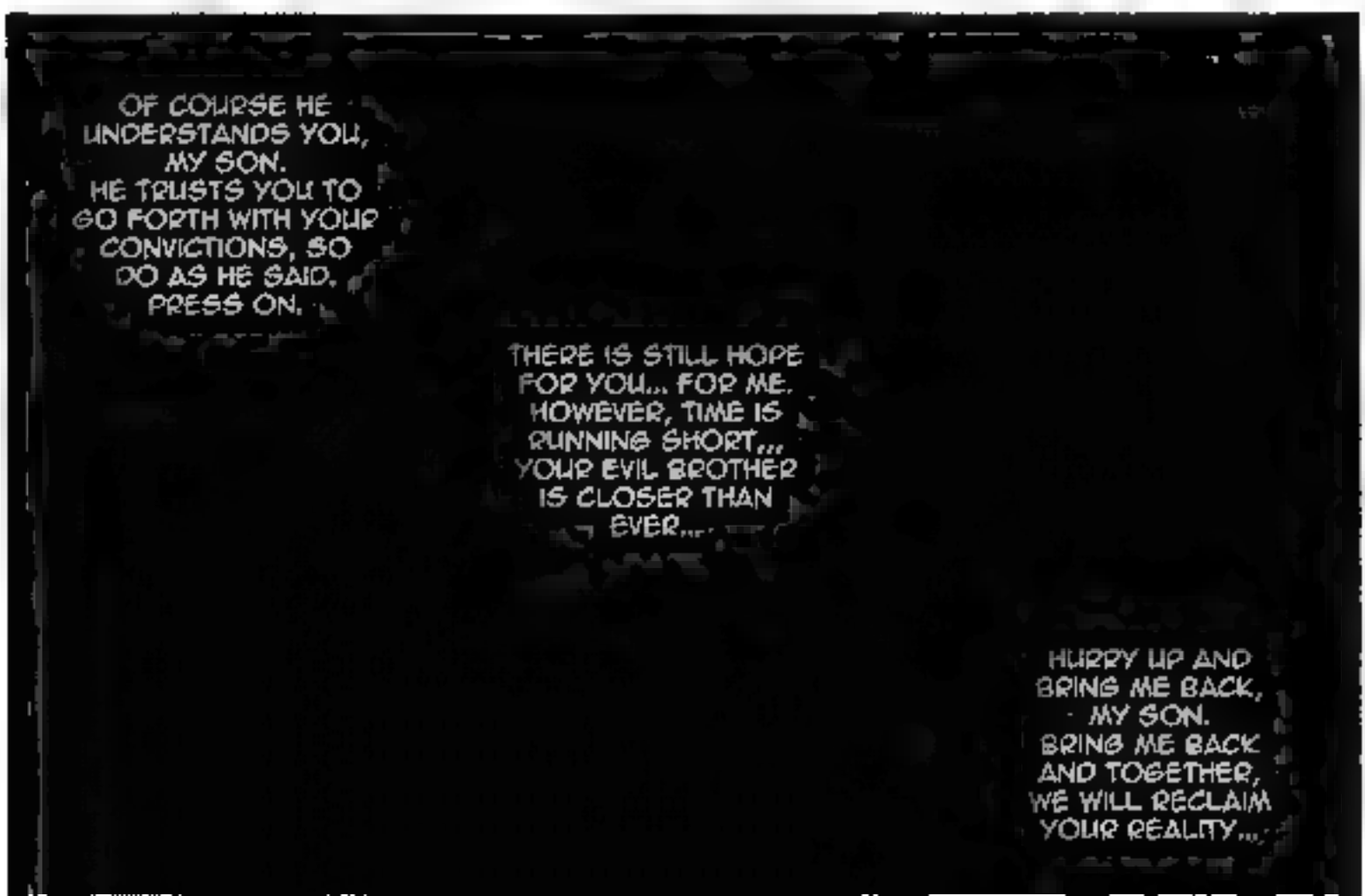

THANKS FOR THE SHELL CELL!


SO IT'S OKAY MIKEY?
TO NEVER GIVE UP MY REALITY?


DISPOSING OF NUISANCES IS ACCEPTABLE
BECAUSE THEIR FATE IN THIS FAKE WORLD DOESN'T AFFECT THEM IN MY REALITY RIGHT?


YOU DO UNDERSTAND OUR SENSEI.
..IS NOT SUPPOSED TO BE DEAD?


YOU'LL AGREE WITH ME..
THAT I'M SIMPLY TRYING TO SET THINGS THE WAY THEY SHOULD BE, MIKEY?


OF COURSE HE UNDERSTANDS YOU, MY SON. HE TRUSTS YOU TO GO FORTH WITH YOUR CONVICTIONS, SO DO AS HE SAID. PRESS ON.
THERE IS STILL HOPE FOR YOU... FOR ME. HOWEVER, TIME IS RUNNING SHORT... YOUR EVIL BROTHER IS CLOSER THAN EVER...
HURRY UP AND BRING ME BACK, MY SON. BRING ME BACK AND TOGETHER, WE WILL RECLAIM YOUR REALITY...


DON'T WORRY, MASTER
I WON'T GIVE UP ON YOU.. EVER


10:00


Mutant Ninja Turtles
Gaiden
Chapter 20: Adjusting
to the Present


I WONDER IF MIKEY'S OKAY..?
WHAT ARE YOU STARING AT ME FOR, RAPH?
I DUNNO IT'S KINDA WEIRD TO SEE THE REAL YOU HERE
WITH YOU BEING GONE FOR 17 YEARS AN' ALL
HAVEN'T CHANGED MUCH, EH? YA CAN SENSE THINGS WITHOUT EVEN LOOKING. IT'S LIKE YA HAVE A THIRD EYE OR SOMETHIN'


WE LIVE IN THE SHADOWS, RAPH. WE CAN'T SOLELY RELY ON WHAT WE CAN SEE WITH OUR EYES
THAT'S JUST ONE PIECE OF THE PUZZLE THAT IS REALITY
YA THINKIN' 'BOUT DONNIE?
YEAH
I EXPECTED HIM TO REACT THAT WAY,
ESPECIALLY AFTER WHAT I DID TO OUR SENSEI.
...
..SORRY, LEO. I WASN'T ALWAYS THERE FOR DONNIE.. OR FOR MIKEY


ESPECIALLY FOR MIKEY
YOU DID YOUR BEST, RAPH I KNOW YOU DID GIVEN THE CIRCUMSTANCES
HEY HOW'D YOU KNOW THAT?
I JUST
"FELT" IT
IT WAS YOU, RIGHT?
YOU LURED THE POLICE AWAY FROM ■S?


YOU WERE WATCHIN' OVER US WHEN WE NEEDED YA THE MOST
JUST LIKE A LEADER
THINK NOTHING OF IT RAPH.
I INTENDED TO LEAVE YOU ALL AGAIN UNTIL YOU GOT ME BACK.
I'M NOT THE LEADER I ONCE WAS.
YOU ARE.

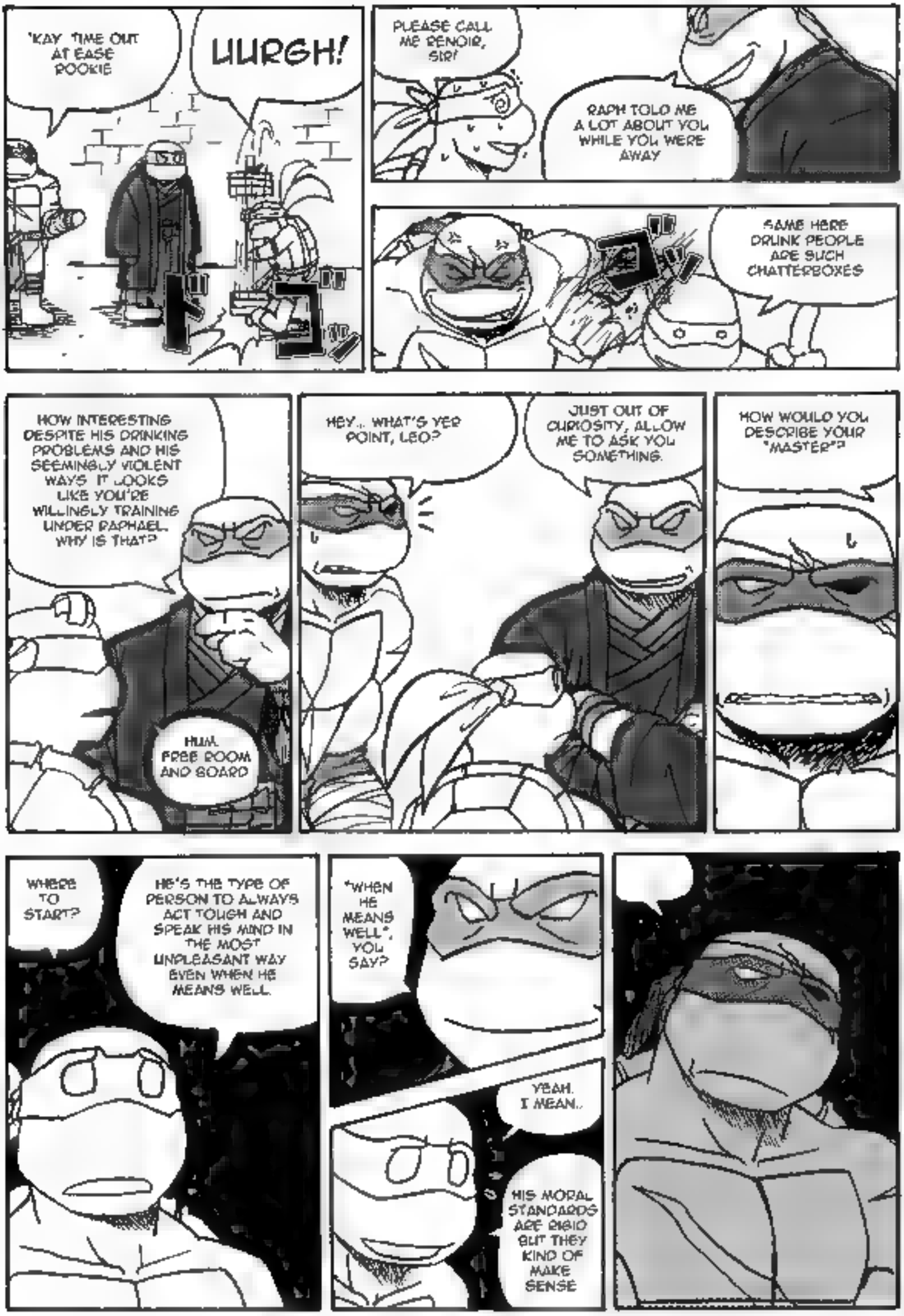

OY, YER OUTTA YER MIND?
IF I WAS A GOOD LEADER, I WOULDN'T HAVE NEEDED TO GET MIKEY BACK IN THE FIRST PLACE -
AND DONNIE WOULDN'T HAVE GONE NUTS!
THAT'S NOT IT, RAPH! YOU STAYED HERE FOR THEM AND YOU DID WHAT YOU COULD TO HELP
I DIDN'T
THAT'S WHY I WANT THEM TO LOOK UP TO YOU AS A ROLE MODEL.
YA DON'T WANT 'EM TO BE ANGRY CHAIN-SMOKING ALCOHOLICS, BELIEVE ME
THAT'S NOT WHAT I MEANT DO YOU REMEMBER OUR FAMILY VALUES RAPH? OUR SENSEI ALWAYS REMINDED US OF THE IMPORTANCE OF STICKING TOGETHER
IRONICALLY I WAS THE FIRST ONE TO SHUN THOSE VALUES AND YOU WERE THE ONE WHO REMINDED ME OF THEM.


OF ALL OF US, I FEEL LIKE YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE WHO HASN'T CHANGED. SURE, YOU SMOKE, DRINK AND CURSE A LOT MORE THAN BEFORE,
BUT I FEEL LIKE EVERYTHING ELSE IS THE SAME WITHIN YOU. INCLUDING THE TEACHINGS OF OUR SENSEI.
GIVE YERSELF MORE CREDIT, LEO
YA LEFT 17 YEARS AGO IN THE WORST CIRCUMSTANCES EVER TO DO WHAT'S BEST FOR US. AT LEAST TRY TO EASE YERSELF IN, YA KNOW WHAT I MEAN?
WE NEED TO REMAIN TOGETHER. THIS IS WHY WE NEED YOU AS A LEADER TO SHOW THE RIGHT EXAMPLE
OUTSIDE OF DONNIE, I KNOW YA HAVEN'T CHANGED IN PEOPLE'S EYES, LEO. AND YA DON'T HAVE TO JUST 'CUZ YOU WERE GONE FOR 17 YEARS. DEEP DOWN INSIDE, YER STILL THE SAME, LEO
AND LIKEWISE, TO US, YER STILL THE PERFECT ICON OF A LEADER

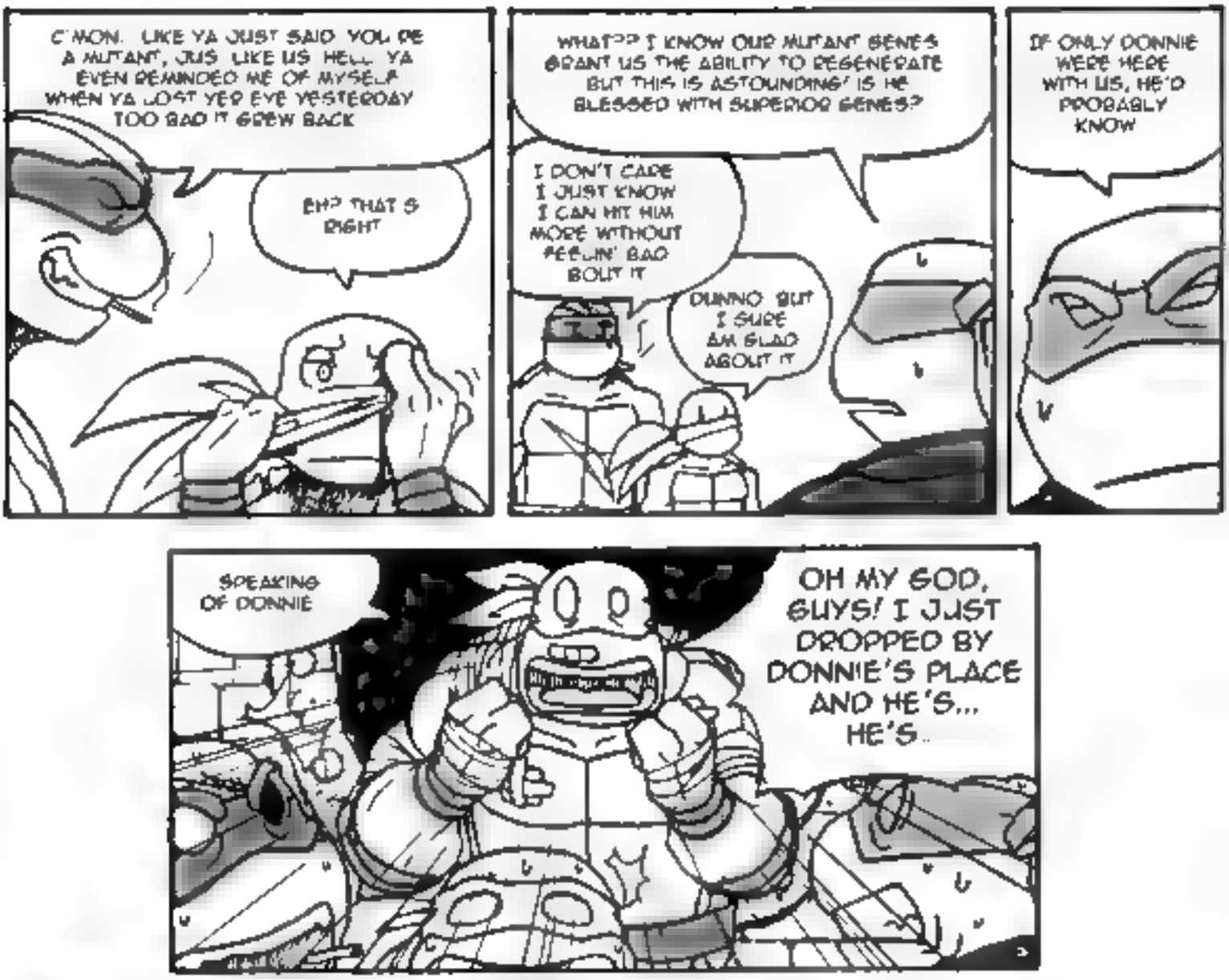

BUT DONNIE, HE
HE'S MAD AT YA, LEO. WE ALL TRIED TO REASON WIT' HIM, BUT HE WOULDN'T LISTEN.
ARE YA GONNA TRY AS WELL OR ARE YA GONNA COWER AWAY?
...
LOOK, I HAD ISSUES WIT MIKEY, BUT WE BOTH TACKLED 'EM FACE ON AND MADE PEACE WITH EACH OTHER
DON'CHA THINK YA SHOULD STRAIGHTEN THINGS OUT WITH DONNIE YERSELF?
YOU'RE RIGHT.. IT'S UNFAIR TO LET YOU DO ALL THE WORK. I'LL DO WHAT I CAN IT'S JUST THAT I DON'T FEEL COMFORTABLE BEING A LEADER ANYMORE
DEAL?
TELL YA WHAT DONNIE'S CASE IS YER CALL. ACT LIKE A LEADER AND TAKE CARE OF HIS CASE. ONCE IT'S SORTED OUT, THEN YA CAN STEP DOWN IF YA WANT


DEAL, RAPH
STRANGE. I'VE ALWAYS THOUGHT YOU WANTED TO BE A LEADER YOURSELF
ADMIRE THE RESULTS, BRO. I'M NO LEADER
I KNOW IT NOW
I'VE WAITED FOR YER RETURN, LEO
I KNOW I SHOULD HAVE SAID THIS EARLIER... BUT...


..ACTIONS SPEAK LOUDER THAN WORDS, RAPH AND THAT HANDSHAKE ON THE ROOFTOP ALREADY TOLD ME EVERYTHING
THANKS FOR TRUSTING ME I'LL DO MY BEST THEREFORE..
HERE'S MY FIRST ACT.
AS YOUR LEADER
HUMPF
HEY YOU! WHO TOLD YA TO TAKE A BREAK? YA KNOW WHY YA GOT YER ASS HANDED OVER BY NINJAS? IT'S CUZ YER TOO DAMN WEAK! NOW GIMME AN ADDITIONAL 100 SQUATS, MAGGOT!!
EEK..
WE DIDN'T GET THE CHANCE TO INTRODUCE OURSELVES PROPERLY, DID WE? THE NAME'S LEONARDO HAMATO YOU ARE...?
HUFF I I ARCK N .NAME W WEHNNNOAAH.. HUFF..HUFF...


'KAY TIME OUT AT EASE ROOKIE
HURGH!
PLEASE CALL ME RENOIR, SIR!
RAPH TOLD ME A LOT ABOUT YOU WHILE YOU WERE AWAY
SAME HERE DRUNK PEOPLE ARE SUCH CHATTERBOXES
HOW INTERESTING DESPITE HIS DRINKING PROBLEMS AND HIS SEEMINGLY VIOLENT WAYS IT LOOKS LIKE YOU'RE WILLINGLY TRAINING UNDER RAPHAEL. WHY IS THAT?
HUM. FREE ROOM AND BOARD
HEY... WHAT'S YER POINT, LEO?
JUST OUT OF CURIOSITY, ALLOW ME TO ASK YOU SOMETHING.
HOW WOULD YOU DESCRIBE YOUR "MASTER"?
WHERE TO START?
HE'S THE TYPE OF PERSON TO ALWAYS ACT TOUGH AND SPEAK HIS MIND IN THE MOST UNPLEASANT WAY EVEN WHEN HE MEANS WELL.
"WHEN HE MEANS WELL", YOU SAY?
YEAH. I MEAN..
HIS MORAL STANDARDS ARE RIGID BUT THEY KIND OF MAKE SENSE


HOWEVER THAT REDEEMING ASPECT OF HIS PERSONALITY IS RENDERED OBSOLETE BY THE FACT THAT HE S A BIPOLAR. VIOLENT EMO, FAT AND ALCOHOLIC DEADBEAT
RENOIR, COME HERE TO YOUR MASTERRRR
NOW NOW.
I HEARD FROM RAPH THAT YOU'RE A WILD MUTANT SAVED BY RAPH)
OH CRAP DON'T BRING THAT UP NOW HE S GONNA..
THERE S PROBABLY MORE TO IT BUT I GUESS THAT'S A FACT... AND PROBABLY THE TRUTH, I GUESS.
EH?
WHAT DO YOU MEAN "PROBABLY THE TRUTH"?
WHO CARES? I SEE A HUGE IMPROVEMENT! YA SEE, JUST YESTERDAY, HE WAS STILL BITCHIN' 'BOUT BEIN' A HUMAN OR SUMTHIN'! I HAD TO SHUT HIM UP, AND.
RAPHAEL FORCING HIM TO MOLD HIS VISION OF REALITY FROM A PARTIAL SET OF FACTS CAN SERIOUSLY MESS UP HIS MIND.
JUST LOOK AT DONNIE
ERR
ANYWAYS, I DON'T SUGGEST YOU TO BOTTLE UP YOUR WORRIES. IF THAT'S WHAT YOU'VE BEEN DOING.
IF YOU SHARED THEM WITH US, WE MIGHT BE ABLE TO HELP YOU FIND SATISFACTORY ANSWERS TO YOUR QUESTIONS.
REALLY? IT S OKAY?
OF COURSE LET'S BRAINSTORM TOGETHER SOME OTHER TIME FOR STARTERS YES?
AFTER ALL, YOU'RE KIND OF PART OF THE "FAMILY" NOW
FAMILY . WITH HIM?
WHUT?
UGLY & FAT
EMO
DRINKS & SMOKES
MAYBE ON STEROIDS


C'MON. LIKE YA JUST SAID YOU'RE A MUTANT, JUS' LIKE US. HELL, YA EVEN REMINDED ME OF MYSELF WHEN YA LOST YER EYE YESTERDAY TOO BAD IT GREW BACK
EH? THAT'S RIGHT
WHAT?? I KNOW OUR MUTANT GENES GRANT US THE ABILITY TO REGENERATE BUT THIS IS ASTOUNDING! IS HE BLESSED WITH SUPERIOR GENES?
I DON'T CARE I JUST KNOW I CAN HIT HIM MORE WITHOUT FEELIN' BAD BOUT IT
DUNNO BUT I SURE AM GLAD ABOUT IT
IF ONLY DONNIE WERE HERE WITH US, HE'D PROBABLY KNOW
SPEAKING OF DONNIE
OH MY GOD, GUYS! I JUST DROPPED BY DONNIE'S PLACE AND HE'S... HE'S..
...
HE'S SUCH A WEIRDO! HE TOOK A SHOWER WITH HIS LAB COAT STILL ON!
AND ALSO UNDER HIS WET COAT I NOTICED HE'S UNUSUALLY RIPPED FOR AN INTROVERTED GEEK. UNLIKE SOME FAT ANGRY MUTANT I KNOW. WHAT KIND OF EXERCISE DO YOU THINK HE DOES TO STAY IN SHAPE LIKE THAT?
...
WHAT KIND OF BUSINESS DID YA HAVE WITH OUR LOCAL NUTCASE?
WELL I HAD TO RECLAIM SOMETHING FROM HIM.


THINK FAST LEO!
?
IT DOESN'T MATTER IF YOU'RE OUR LEADER OR NOT I FEEL SAFER KNOWING WE CAN KEEP IN TOUCH WITH YOU ANYTIME NOW THAT YOU'RE BACK.
'BOUT THAT, HE DECIDED TO LEAD US ONCE AGAIN, MIKEY
REALLY?
A SHELLCELL?
I COUNT ON YOU TO SHOW US THE HONORABLE PATH OF THE NINJA, LEO!
OH.
THE.. HONORABLE PATH... YES
SO LEADER FROM NOW ON, THIS SHELLCELL WILL KEEP YOU CLOSELY CONNECTED TO US ALL.
WHEREVER YOU GO, WE'LL USE IT'S GPS TO TRACK YOU DOWN. EVEN IF YOU VENTURE IN NAUGHTY PLACES.
THAT'S RIGHT BID FAREWELL TO YOUR PRIVACY I'LL STALK YOU FROM NOW ON, DEAR LEADER!
NOW NOW MIKEY
OHOO HOO...
THIS IS ALL TOO COOL! I M OVERFLOWING WITH SO MUCH POSITIVE ENERGY!! THAT I NEED TO VENT IT ALL OUT SOMEWHERE NOW!
WELL, I STILL HAVE OUR OLD TRUSTY "BLINGTENDO" WITH THE GAME "CRACK AND FIELD" IN IT ALSO, THE CONTROLLERS ARE ONLY WORKING HALF THE TIME
C'MON, YOUNG 'UN! I CHALLENGE YOU!
ERGH BUT I HATE VIDEO GAMES


I KIND OF EXPECTED MIKEY TO HAVE MATURED EVEN JUST A BIT. I GUESS SOME THINGS NEVER CHANGE
NONSENSE. HE'S MATURE ALRIGHT
HE'S JUST LETTIN' OUT THE PARTY ANIMAL IN HIM THAT WAS BOTTLED UP ALL THESE YEARS.
YOU MEAN TO SAY THAT HE COPED WITH OUR SENSEI'S DEATH BY REPRESSING ALL JOYFUL EMOTIONS? IT'S ALMOST UNBELIEVABLE..
RAPHAEL... HOW MUCH CATCHING UP IS THERE FOR ME TO DO?
LESS THAN A LIFETIME IF YA DECIDE TO FILL US ON YER ADVENTURES IN JAPAN SOMETIME THIS YEAR
C MON. LET'S JOIN THE OTHERS
OH YEAH. YA SAID YA WANTED PIZZA, RIGHT? I'M GONNA HEAT UP LAST WEEK'S LEFTOVERS.
IT'S LIKE BLUE CHEESE THE MORE MOLDS THERE ARE THE MORE UNIQUE THE TASTE IS
MAY I HAVE SOME PRIVACY?


HAVE SOME
KNOW WHEN TO STOP TALKING.
FOR THE GREATER GOOD. WE MUST PUT ALL THE CHANCES ON OUR SIDE


TURTLES
CHAPTER 21: THE CURSE
OF "YAMATA-NO-OROCHI"

I DIDN'T WANT TO LEAVE. BUT I HAD TO.

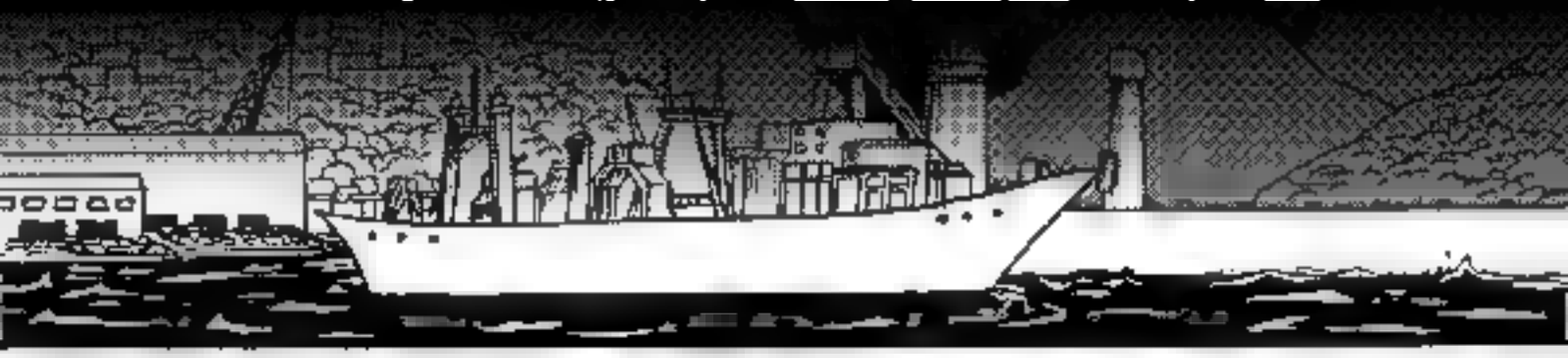
IT'S MY DUTY AS A LEADER TO TAKE RESPONSIBILITY.

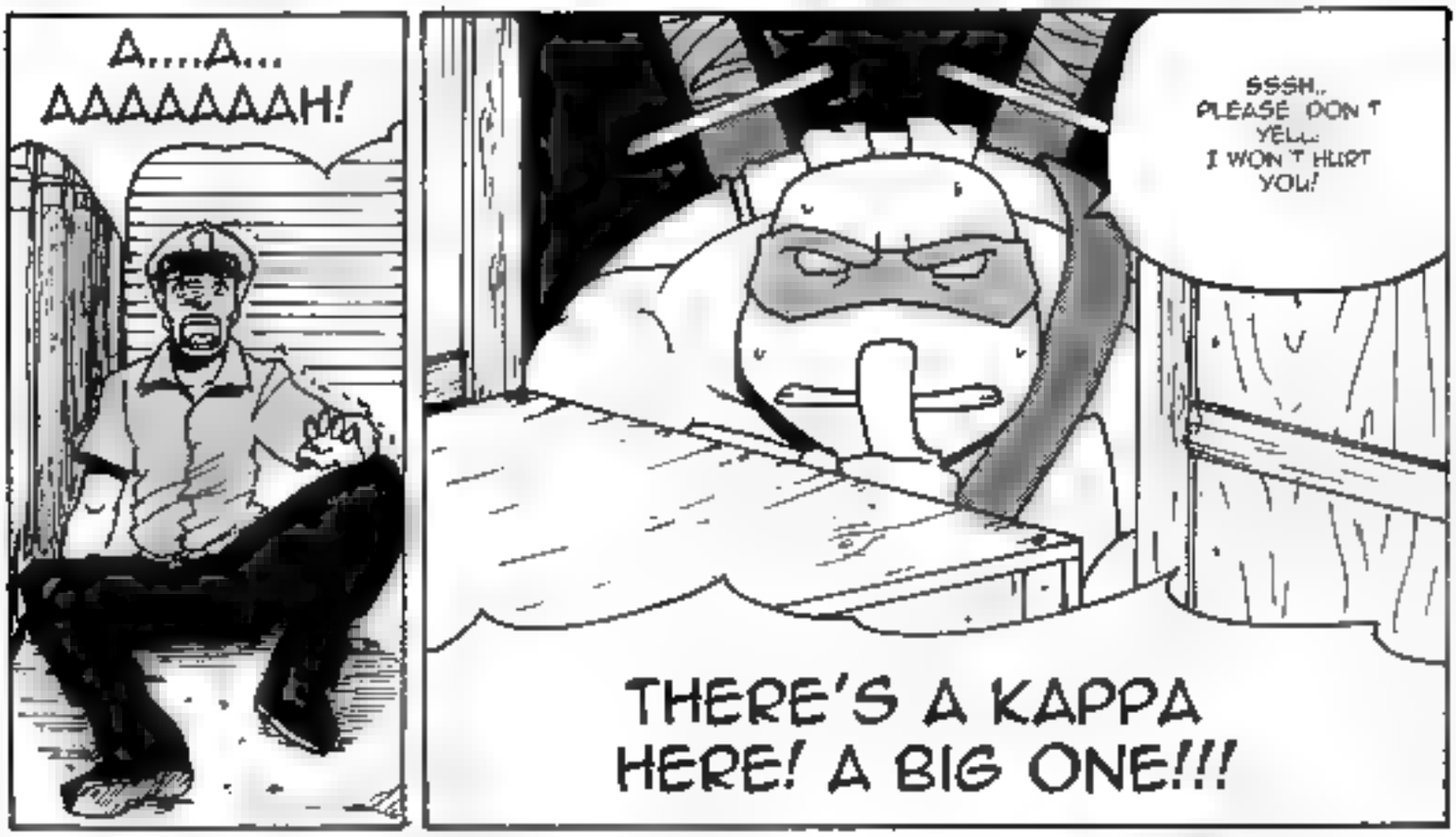
RAPHAEL... MICHELANGELO... DONATELLO...

FORGIVE ME...

FAREWELL... FATHER...






A....A...
AAAAAAAH!
SSSH..
PLEASE DON'T
YELL..
I WON'T HURT
YOU!
THERE'S A KAPPA
HERE! A BIG ONE!!!


SOMEONE,
HEEEELP!!
TH... THE
KAPPA'S
GONNA
GET ME!
HEEELP!
WAIT! SIR,
PLEASE DON'T...
IT'S GONNA
EAT ME! HELP!
YOU'LL
REGRET.
...BLOWING A
NINJA'S
COVER

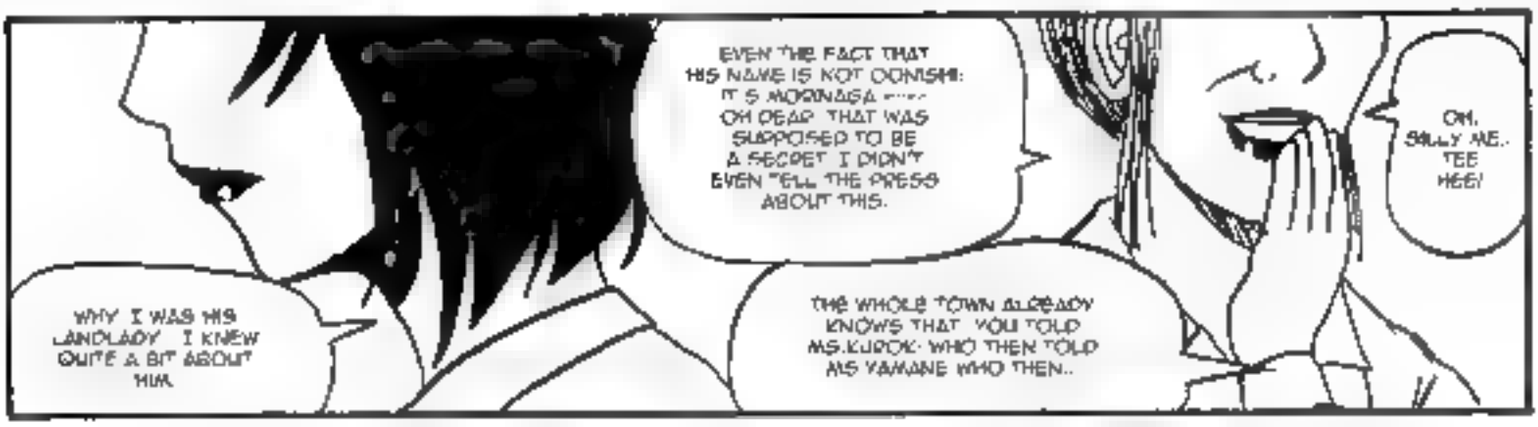



KARAI SPEAKING. I WILL ARRIVE IN KYOTO TOMORROW AT 05:00. GIVE ME A BRIEFING ON YOUR CURRENT STATUS.
"SHUNSUKE SPEAKING. WE FOUND THE TARGET THAT ESCAPED DURING A PREVIOUS OPERATION. AWAITING ORDERS."
FINISH THE JOB AS CLEANLY AS POSSIBLE.
"ROGER THAT. AS SOON AS WE FIND A WINDOW OF OPPORTUNITY, WE'LL STRIKE."


HAH..
HAH..
WHY .
WHY DO YOU HUNT US DOWN?
YOU MURDERED MY WIFE, MY SON AND MY SIBBLINGS! YOU MADE ME LIVE THE LIFE OF A FUGITIVE!!
WHAT HAVE WE DONE TO DESERVE THIS? WHAT HAS THE MORINAGA BLOODLINE DONE TO YOU?
WHY----?


DID YOU READ TODAY'S PAPER? IT SEEMS THAT OUR LOCAL FORTUNE TELLER MOVED TO THE UNITED STATES! HE LEFT LAST NIGHT WITHOUT WARNING!
OH MY YOU MEAN THE ONE THAT GOES TO MAHJONG EVENINGS IN THE HYOGO PREFECTURE EVERY WEEK? DID HE LEAVE AN ADDRESS? I STILL HAVE SO MANY QUESTIONS TO ASK HIM ABOUT MY FUTURE


NO, HE WANTED TO KEEP IT CONFIDENTIAL I THINK BUT MORE IMPORTANTLY MY PICTURE IS IN THIS ARTICLE! SEE? AM I NOT DAZZLING?
MY MY YOU ARE SIMPLY CHARMING, MY DEAR! BUT WHY WERE YOU INTERVIEWED?


WHY I WAS HIS LANDLADY I KNEW QUITE A BIT ABOUT HIM
EVEN THE FACT THAT HIS NAME IS NOT OONISHI IT'S MORINAGA [illegible] OH DEAR THAT WAS SUPPOSED TO BE A SECRET I DIDN'T EVEN TELL THE PRESS ABOUT THIS.
THE WHOLE TOWN ALREADY KNOWS THAT YOU TOLD MS.KUROKI WHO THEN TOLD MS YAMANE WHO THEN..
OH, SILLY ME.. TEE HEE!


MS.KADA. MISSION COMPLETE WE DISPOSED OF THE BODY EMPTIED HIS ROOM, PRODUCED A FORGED FAREWELL LETTER AND MONITORED THE PRESS ACTIVITIES
I CAN SEE THAT WELL DONE


WE GOT A MESSAGE FROM OSAKA. ANOTHER TARGET WAS ELIMINATED OVER THERE
I HOPE YOU TOOK THE NECESSARY MEASURES TO COVER THAT UP AS WELL
KYOUTA KATO SHOUHEI AND HIROAKI ARE IN POSITION. SHOULD ANY PROBLEM ARISE THEY WILL ACT IMMEDIATELY TO CONTAIN THE FLOW OF INFORMATION


I'VE HAD ENOUGH OF IT
I'M AN ANCHORWOMAN. I DON'T TELL LIES


ORDERS FROM ABOVE, SAEKO SORRY
PEOPLE NEED TO KNOW THE TRUTH AND IT'S OUR JOB TO INFORM THEM WITH AS MUCH TRANSPARENCY AS POSSIBLE!
FOR THE LAST FEW MONTHS, PEOPLE WITH THE NAME MORINAGA AS WELL AS THEIR DESCENDANTS DISAPPEAR IN THIN AIR!
WHY DO WE NEED TO COVER IT UP? WHY DO WE TELL PEOPLE THAT THEY MERELY CHANGED THEIR NAMES AND STARTED NEW LIVES ABROAD WHEN WE CAN'T EVEN GET THE FULL PICTURE?
SAEKO. IF YOU WISH TO KEEP YOUR JOB, I SUGGEST YOU.
WHAT JOB? I JUST RESIGNED!
DON'T THINK ANY OTHER NETWORK WILL TAKE YOU IN WITH THAT ATTITUDE! WE'RE ALL IN THE SAME SITUATION. WE ALL HAVE OUR HANDS TIED!
I DON'T NEED THIS JOB I'LL HIT THE STREETS AND WAKE PEOPLE UP! THEY WILL LISTEN TO ME I'M A RENOWNED ANCHORWOMAN!


THANKS FOR FILLING IN, MIK.. WE'RE ON IN THREE, TWO..
GOOD EVENING TONIGHT MORE PEOPLE EMIGRATED FROM OSAKA TO START NEW LIVES ABROAD. THIS MASSIVE EXODUS IS APPRENTLY DUE TO JAPAN'S WEAK ECONOMY ON THEIR REQUEST, WE CANNOT DISCLOSE THEIR NEW IDENTITIES AND..

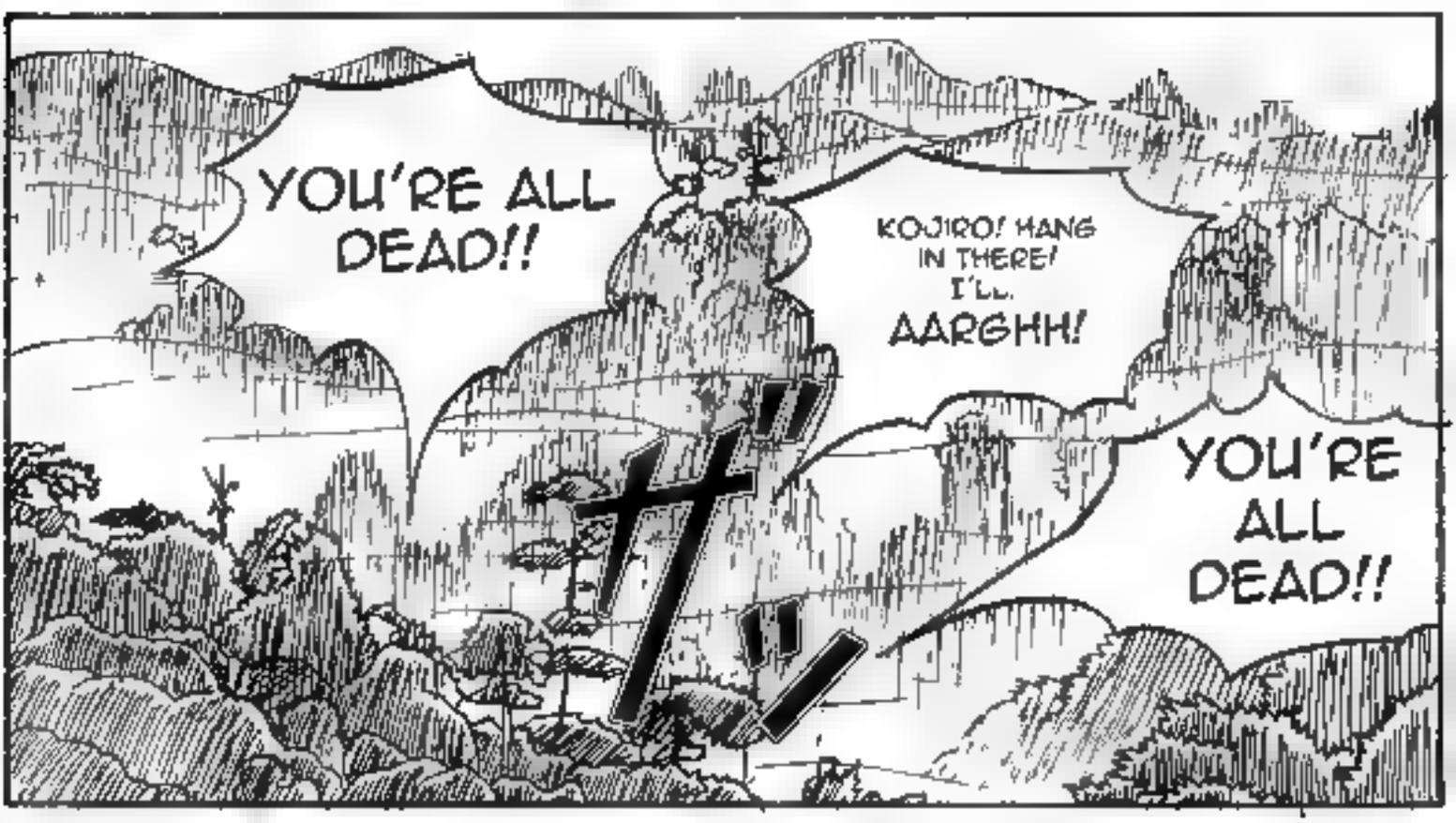




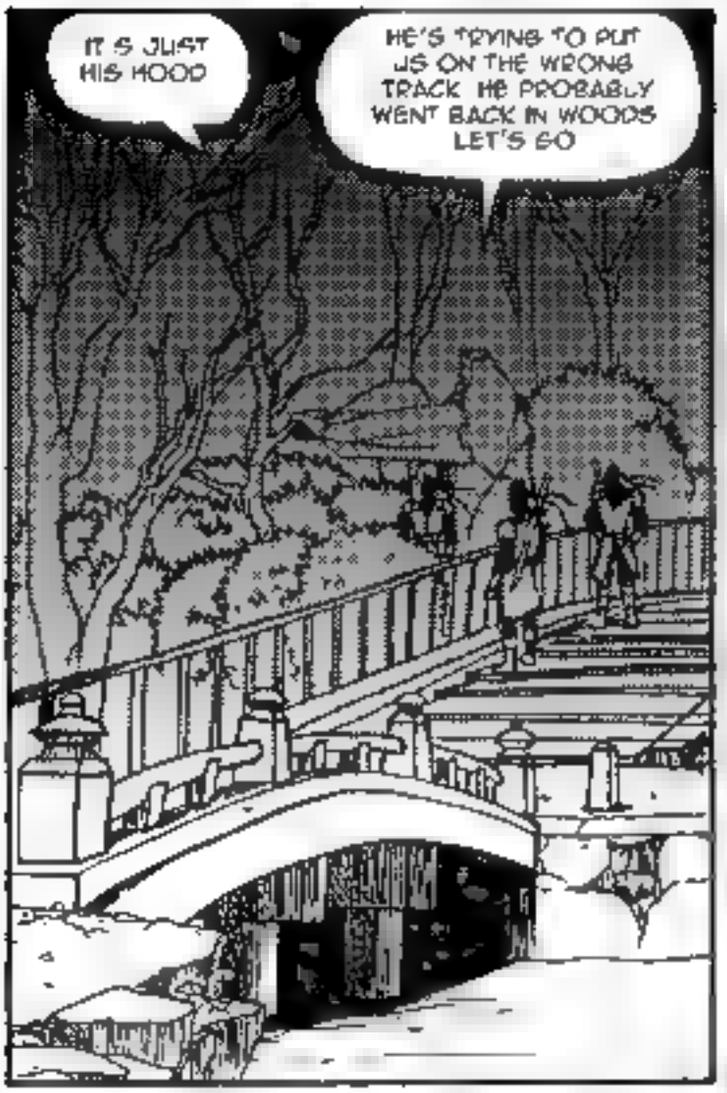

YOU'RE FROM HAMATO'S LINEAGE AREN'T YOU?
WE'D LIKE YOU TO COME WITH US
OF COURSE IF ANYONE SHOULD KNOW ABOUT "HAMATO YOSHI" IT WOULD BE THE PEOPLE WHO SLAYED HIM THE FOOT CLAN MY SENSEI'S MORTAL ENEMIES THAT MAKES THEM MY ENEMIES AS WELL NO MATTER HOW MUCH INFORMATION THEY HAD I HAD TO AVOID THEM THE ODDS WERE AGAINST ME
THEY HAVE PROBABLY BEEN STALKING ME SINCE THE MOMENT I SET FOOT IN JAPAN WAITING FOR ME TO BE WORN OUT FROM TRAVELING TO FINISH ME OFF THEY KNEW I WAS ALONE THEY KNEW I HAD ABSOLUTELY NO RESOURCES OR ALLIES TO BACK ME UP THEY WATCHED ME FROM THE SHADOWS ALL THIS TIME
THIS MEANS THEY KNOW WHY I AM HERE.
WE COME IN PEACE OUR LEADER WANTS TO
WE CAN HELP YOU WITH YOUR MISSION
THEY KNOW THAT I AM INVESTIGATING A MAN THEY KILLED SEVERAL YEARS AGO! NATURALLY THEY DO NOT WANT ME PRYING INTO THEIR BUSINESS!
"HAMATO YOSHI" WAS THEIR ENEMY SO WAS MY SENSEI. AND SO AM I
THIS CAN ONLY MEAN ONE THING.
THEY MUST HAVE BEEN CONSTANTLY ONE STEP AHEAD OF ME AND ERASED ALL TRACES OF "HAMATO YOSHI" TO ENSURE THAT I FAIL MY MISSION!!


I'LL REDEEM MYSELF
PLEASE
COME WITH US.
ALL THOSE INSTRUMENTAL IN DISHONORING THE NAME OF HAMATO..
. WILL FALL BY MY HAND!

DIE!!!
WHAT THE...?

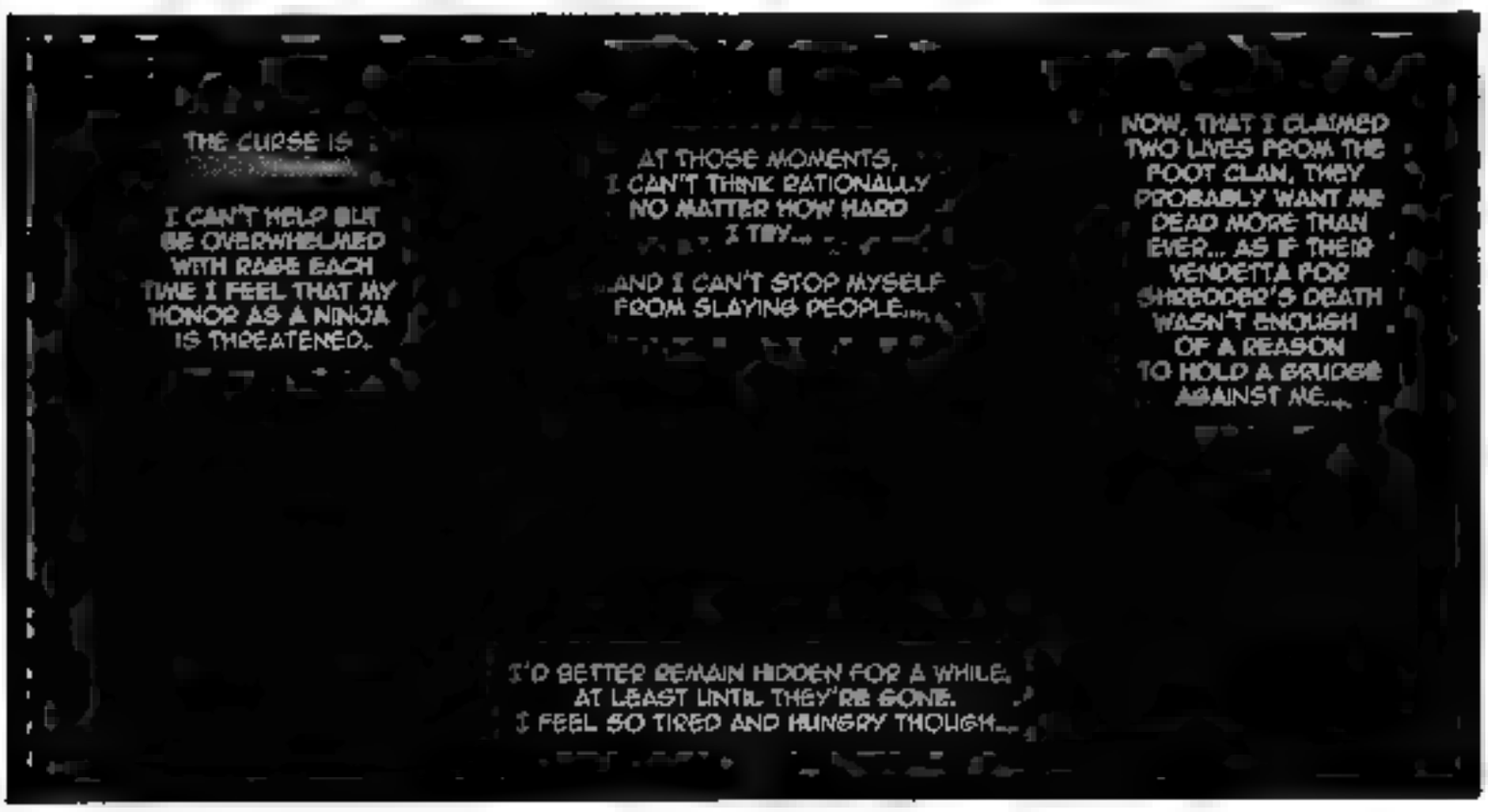

YOU'RE ALL DEAD!!
KOJIRO! HANG IN THERE! I'LL.
AARGHH!
YOU'RE ALL DEAD!!

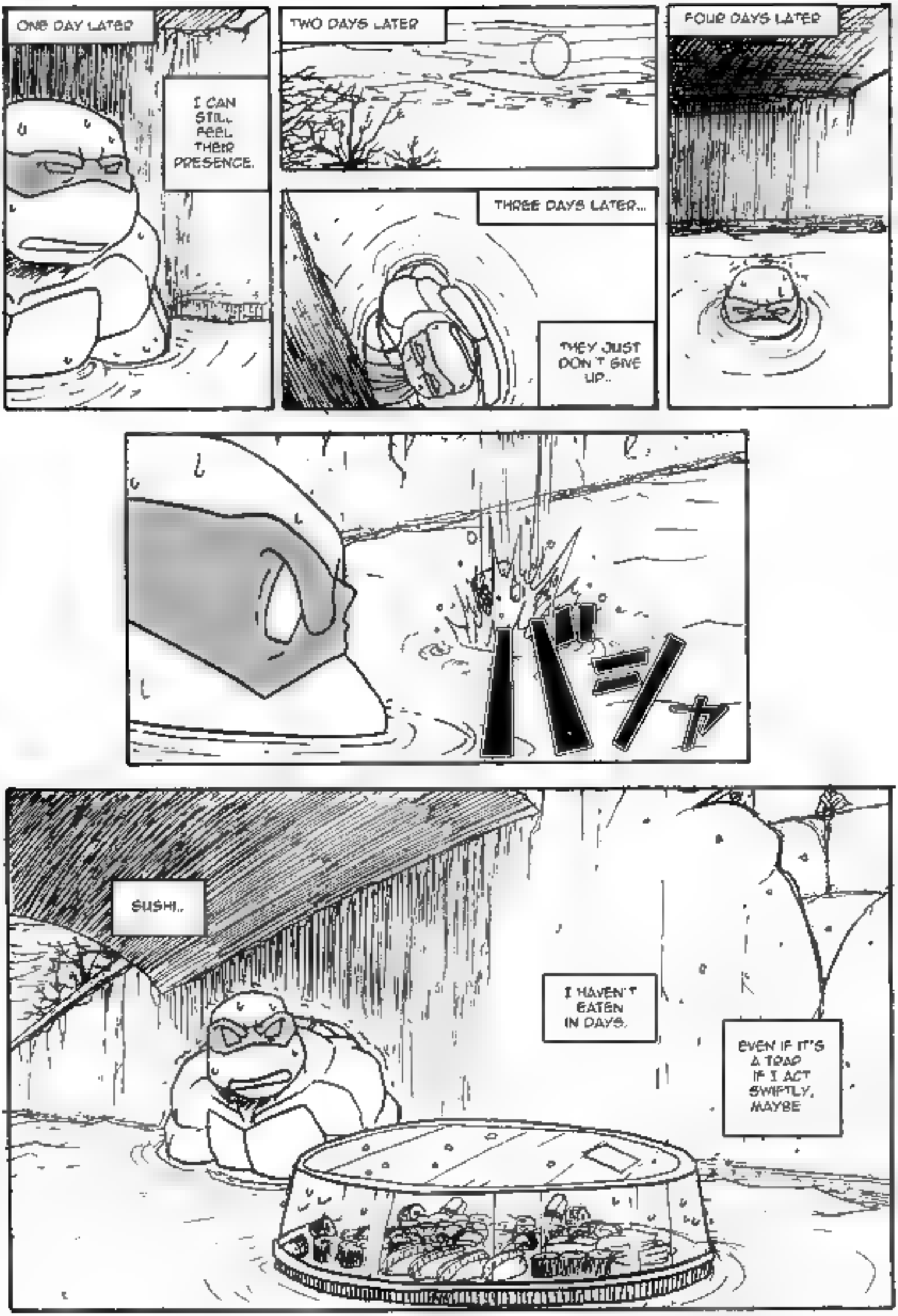



IT S JUST HIS HOOD
HE'S TRYING TO PUT US ON THE WRONG TRACK HE PROBABLY WENT BACK IN WOODS LET'S GO


HUFF
HUFF .


WHY
WHY CAN'T I RESIST ?

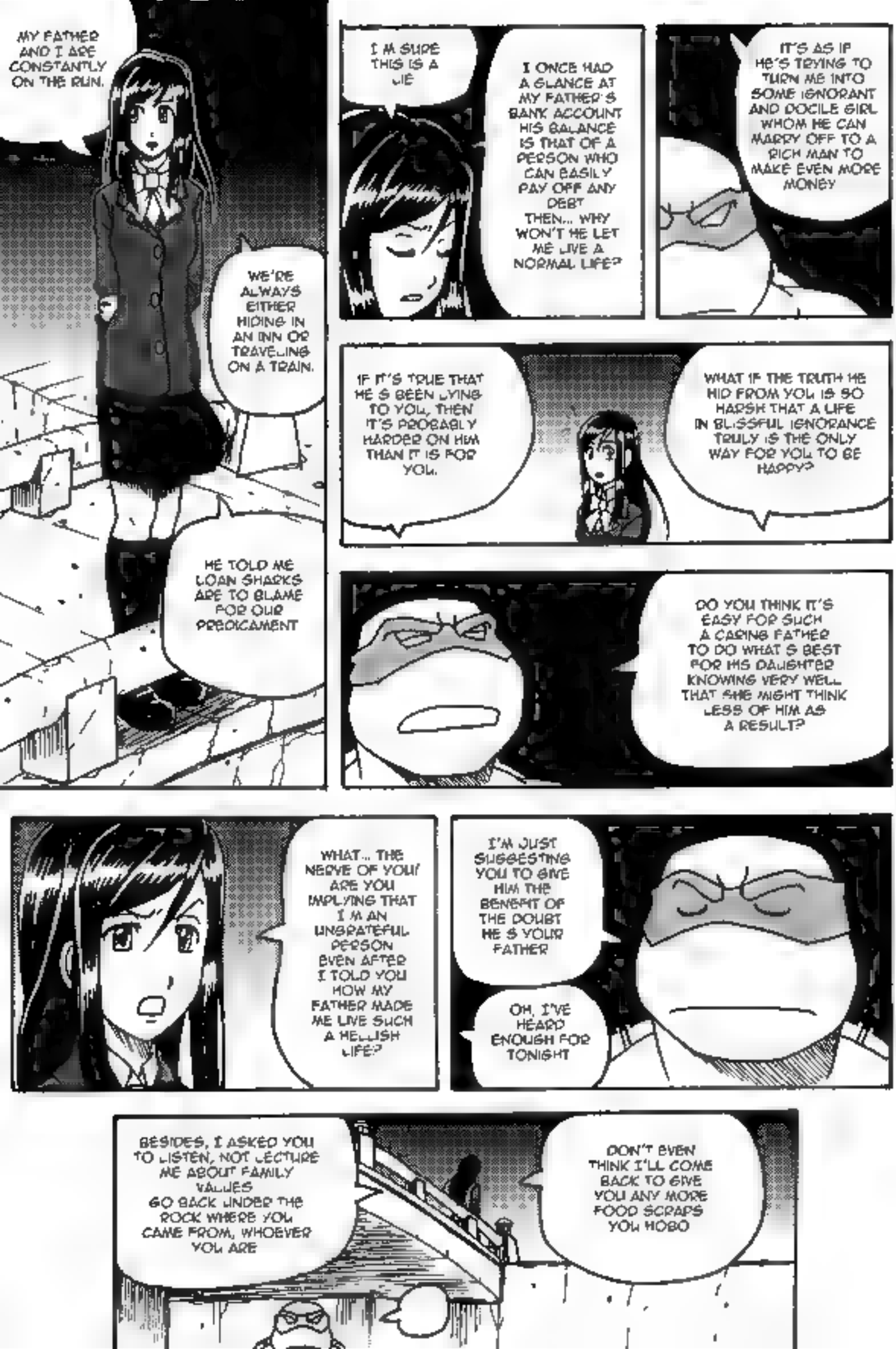

THE CURSE IS
I CAN'T HELP BUT BE OVERWHELMED WITH RAGE EACH TIME I FEEL THAT MY HONOR AS A NINJA IS THREATENED.
AT THOSE MOMENTS, I CAN'T THINK RATIONALLY NO MATTER HOW HARD I TRY...
...AND I CAN'T STOP MYSELF FROM SLAYING PEOPLE...
NOW, THAT I CLAIMED TWO LIVES FROM THE FOOT CLAN, THEY PROBABLY WANT ME DEAD MORE THAN EVER... AS IF THEIR VENDETTA FOR SHREDDER'S DEATH WASN'T ENOUGH OF A REASON TO HOLD A GRUDGE AGAINST ME...
I'D BETTER REMAIN HIDDEN FOR A WHILE, AT LEAST UNTIL THEY'RE GONE. I FEEL SO TIRED AND HUNGRY THOUGH...


ONE DAY LATER
I CAN STILL FEEL THEIR PRESENCE.
TWO DAYS LATER
THREE DAYS LATER...
THEY JUST DON'T GIVE UP..
FOUR DAYS LATER
SUSHI..
I HAVEN'T EATEN IN DAYS.
EVEN IF IT'S A TRAP IF I ACT SWIFTLY, MAYBE


AS IF I WAS GOING TO ACCEPT HIS BRIBE
WHAT WAS HE THINKING. TRYING TO GET ON MY GOOD SIDE BY BUYING ME SUSHI ?
WHAT THE ?
IS SOMEONE HIDING DOWN THERE?
HELLO?
"MUNCH" "MUNCH" "MUNCH"


SO IT DOESN'T
NOW WHY WOULD
AWAY A BOX FULL
OF SUSHI IN A
MS.KARAI. A
GIRL UNWITTINGLY
FED HIM.
APPROACH HIM
SHOULD HAVE
LET HIM STARVE
FOR A FEW MORE
DAYS. I DOUBT
THIS GIRL WILL
COME BACK AND
ON SOME CREATURE
ABOUT
AVOID CONTACT
WITH HIM AT ALL
COSTS. HE S


THE NEXT NIGHT
スタッ
ANYONE DOWN THERE?
GUESS I'LL JUST GET RID OF THIS AND LEAVE
バシュ
PFFFTT!
FILLED WITH WASABI
IT'S NO USE FOOLING ME ANYONE KNOWS SUSHI ROLLS DON'T GROW ARMS AND POP OPEN THEIR BOX TO ESCAPE
WHOEVER YOU ARE I CAN TELL YOU'RE HIDING FROM SOMETHING IN THAT SENSE WE'RE BOTH IN THE SAME SITUATION, YOU KNOW?
EXCEPT YOU PROBABLY KNOW WHAT YOU'RE HIDING FROM I DON'T
I'M NOT GOING TO ASK YOU TO COME OUT OF HIDING
BUT PLEASE, AT LEAST HEAR ME OUT I FEEL LIKE YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE WHO CAN RELATE TO MY PROBLEMS


MY FATHER AND I ARE CONSTANTLY ON THE RUN.
WE'RE ALWAYS EITHER HIDING IN AN INN OR TRAVELING ON A TRAIN.
HE TOLD ME LOAN SHARKS ARE TO BLAME FOR OUR PREDICAMENT
I'M SURE THIS IS A LIE
I ONCE HAD A GLANCE AT MY FATHER'S BANK ACCOUNT HIS BALANCE IS THAT OF A PERSON WHO CAN EASILY PAY OFF ANY DEBT
THEN... WHY WON'T HE LET ME LIVE A NORMAL LIFE?
IT'S AS IF HE'S TRYING TO TURN ME INTO SOME IGNORANT AND DOCILE GIRL WHOM HE CAN MARRY OFF TO A RICH MAN TO MAKE EVEN MORE MONEY
IF IT'S TRUE THAT HE'S BEEN LYING TO YOU, THEN IT'S PROBABLY HARDER ON HIM THAN IT IS FOR YOU.
WHAT IF THE TRUTH HE HID FROM YOU IS SO HARSH THAT A LIFE IN BLISSFUL IGNORANCE TRULY IS THE ONLY WAY FOR YOU TO BE HAPPY?
DO YOU THINK IT'S EASY FOR SUCH A CARING FATHER TO DO WHAT'S BEST FOR HIS DAUGHTER KNOWING VERY WELL THAT SHE MIGHT THINK LESS OF HIM AS A RESULT?
WHAT... THE NERVE OF YOU! ARE YOU IMPLYING THAT I'M AN UNGRATEFUL PERSON EVEN AFTER I TOLD YOU HOW MY FATHER MADE ME LIVE SUCH A HELLISH LIFE?
I'M JUST SUGGESTING YOU TO GIVE HIM THE BENEFIT OF THE DOUBT HE'S YOUR FATHER
OH, I'VE HEARD ENOUGH FOR TONIGHT
BESIDES, I ASKED YOU TO LISTEN, NOT LECTURE ME ABOUT FAMILY VALUES
GO BACK UNDER THE ROCK WHERE YOU CAME FROM, WHOEVER YOU ARE
DON'T EVEN THINK I'LL COME BACK TO GIVE YOU ANY MORE FOOD SCRAPS YOU HOBO


TWO DAYS LATER
I APOLOGIZE FOR YESTERDAY
I ADMIT I WAS WRONG TO LASH OUT AT YOU LIKE I DID BUT MY OPINION ABOUT MY FATHER STANDS.
IT S OKAY I WASN'T VERY CONSIDERATE EITHER.
ANYWAYS. I TOLD YOU THE STORY OF MY PATHETIC LIFE.
WHAT'S YOURS?
I LIVED IN THE SHADOWS ALL MY LIFE JUST LIKE YOU DID.
BUT I WAS HAPPY
MY BROTHERS AND I WERE BROUGHT UP HIDDEN FROM SOCIETY BY OUR SENSEI WHO WAS ALSO OUR FATHER
THOUGH HE TRAINED US ALL OUR LIVES TO EXACT REVENGE ON HIS MASTER'S ENEMIES HE DEEPLY CARED FOR EVERY EACH OF US.
THAT HAPPINESS WAS SHORT LIVED. OUR FATHER WAS ONE DAY STRUCK WITH AN INCURABLE DISEASE I HAD TO PUT AN END TO HIS SUFFERING
THAT'S KILLING TWO BIRDS IN ONE STONE. CORRECT?
YOU EASED YOUR FATHER'S PAIN.
AT THE SAME TIME YOU CAN NOW TO BREAK FREE FROM THE LIFE OF REVENGE HE GAVE YOU.
DON'T INSULT MY HONOR OR THAT OF MY SENSEI!!!
NO.. I'M SORRY I DON'T KNOW WHAT I JUST . PLEASE, LEAVE ME ALONE.
SORRY


ARE YOU FEELING ANY BETTER TODAY?
WHAT KIND OF DISEASE IS IT?
SO YOU'RE HIDING FROM YOUR THERAPISTS?
HOW LONG DO YOU PLAN ON STAYING HIDDEN?
I NEVER SAW ANYBODY PASS THROUGH HERE. BUT WHATEVER YOU SAY
CAN YOU KEEP A SECRET?
I M ALRIGHT SORRY ABOUT YESTERDAY IT WAS MY DISEASE ACTING UP
SOME BIPOLAR DISORDER.
YES, LET S SAY THAT
UNTIL THEY'RE GONE I CAN STILL FEEL THEIR PRESENCE
WHAT IS IT?


MY FATHER MADE ME SWEAR NEVER TO TELL ANYONE BUT I WANT TO TELL YOU HALF OF IT
MY NAME IS. SAYAKO
FINE I'LL DO THE SAME SO WE'LL BE EVEN.
MY NAME IS LEONARDO.


THERE YOU ARE
AH?
I FINISHED WORK AT THE TEMPLE EARLY TODAY TO MY SURPRISE YOU WEREN'T HOME!
NOW WHO WERE YOU TALKING TO?
TO MY NEW IMAGINARY FRIEND ABOUT MY VERY EXCITING LIFE WANT TO SHARE HIM WITH ME?
DON'T USE THAT TONE WITH ME!
WHAT WERE YOU THINKING, LOITERING IN THE FOREST AT NIGHT LIKE THIS?
TOUGH LOVE..
YOU'RE SUPPOSED TO GO STRAIGHT BACK HOME AFTER YOUR LESSONS AT YOUR TUTOR'S HOUSE! I NEVER WANT TO SEE YOU WANDER AROUND AIMLESSLY LIKE SOME DRUGGED RUSTIC WHORE AGAIN! DO I MAKE MYSELF CLEAR?
UNDERSTOOD.


IT HAS BEEN THREE DAYS SINCE THEN.
SAYAKO NEVER CAME BACK. I WAS STARVING
I THINK I FINALLY GET IT. THIS IS NOT A GAME OF HIDE-AND-SEEK I AM PLAYING AGAINST THE FOOT CLAN. IT IS A GAME OF CHESS.
THEY TRAPPED ME HERE AND TRIED TO STARVE ME TO CALL "CHECKMATE" BEFORE I EVEN DO MY LAST MOVE. THOSE SCUMS OF THE EARTH. THOSE DIRTY PLAYERS.
FOOT CLAN!!
I WON'T LET YOU WIN!!!
SEIJI HERE! HE STARTED MOVING!
EVERYONE, PREPARE TO INTERCEPT HIM AND..


EVERYONE, STAY BACK AND TEND TO THE WOUNDED. I CAN HANDLE THIS BY MYSELF


I AM KNOWN AS KARAI.
I'M THE HEAD OF OPERATIONS OF THE FOOT CLAN IN JAPAN
AT LAST
I'LL REDEEM MYSELF.
WE'RE NOT YOUR ENEMIES!
LOWER YOUR WEAPONS AND WE'LL DO THE SAME!!


I VISITED YOUR HOMELAND LAST YEAR!
I CAME TO PURGE IT FROM THE CHAOS THAT RESULTED FROM THE SHREDDER'S DEATH BY YOUR BLADES!
YES THE CITY WAS "AT WAR"!
DESPITE OUR NUMBERS, WE WERE NO MATCH FOR THE SHREDDER'S SKILLED FOLLOWERS
WE WOULD HAVE LOST
IF IT WEREN'T FOR YOUR FELLOW HAMATO NINJAS JOINING OUR CAUSE TO RESTORE PEACE IN NEW YORK! WE MADE A DEAL. THEIR HELP IN EXCHANGE OF A PEACE TREATY!
THAT'S RIGHT!
ALL YOU DISCIPLES OF HAMATO ARE NO LONGER MARKED FOR DEATH BY THE FOOT CLAN! WE ARE NO LONGER ENEMIES!


"YER GOIN' BACK TO JAPAN, AIN' CHA?"
"YES. WHY DO YOU ASK?"
"EXTEND OUR TREATY TO YER OWN COUNTRY THE MOMENT A FOOT NINJA LAYS A FINGER ON ANY OF MY BROS, ANYWHERE "
" YER ALL GONNA BE HEARIN' FROM MY SAIS "
BY SLAYING MY COMRADES TONIGHT YOU HAVE VIOLATED THE PEACE TREATY THAT YOUR ALLIES IN NEW YORK HAVE WORKED SO HARD FOR
HOWEVER OUT OF RESPECT FOR THEM, I'LL GIVE YOU A CHANCE TO JUSTIFY YOUR ACTIONS. WHY DID YOU CHOOSE TO REMAIN HOSTILE DESPITE US TELLING YOU THAT WE CAME IN PEACE?

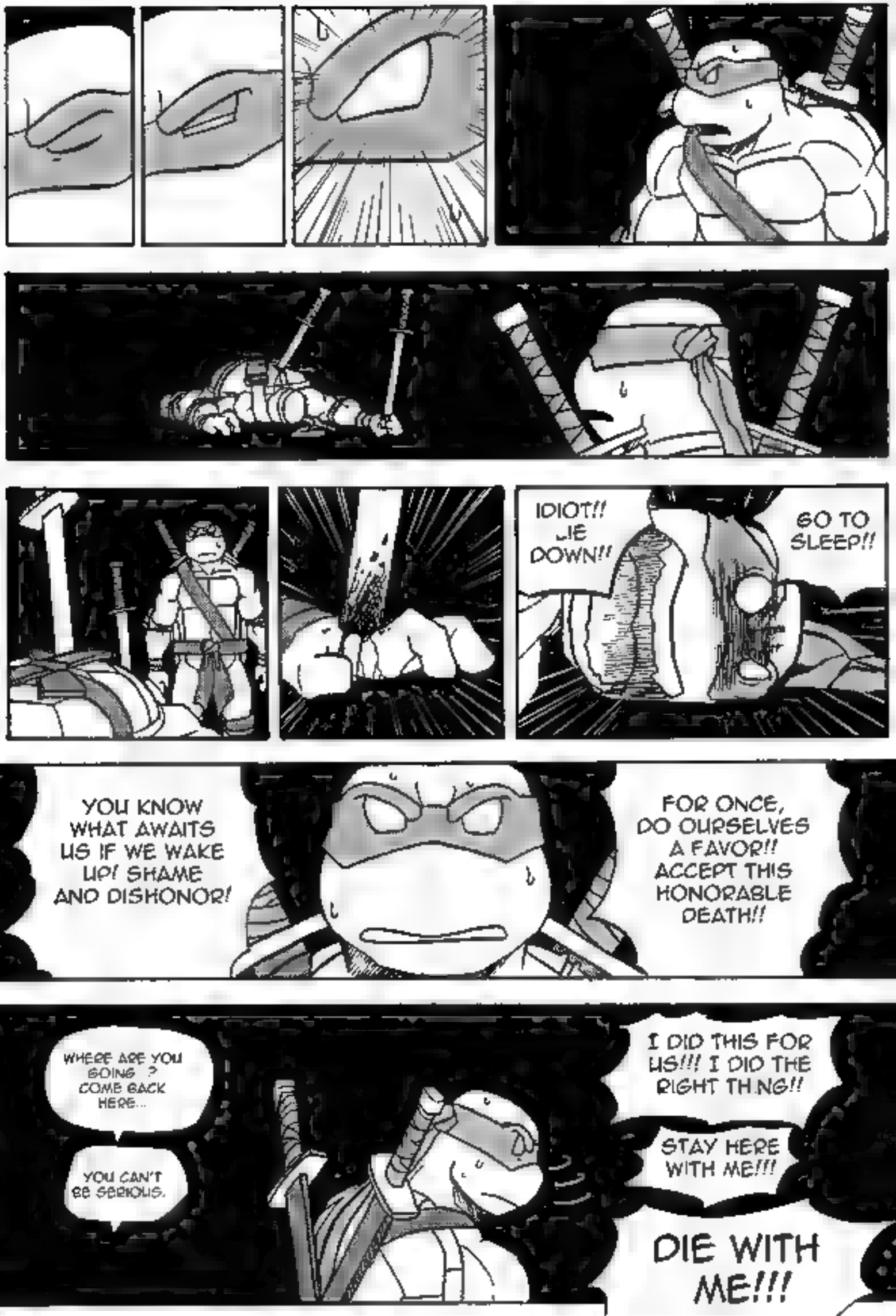

SPEAK
THOSE TRAITORS
THOSE FAKES
I KNEW THEY WERE WORTHLESS
BUT THIS IS A RECORD LOW EVEN FOR THEM!
WHAT THE HELL WERE THEY THINKING?
HELPING THE ENEMY??
IT WAS BAD ENOUGH THAT THEY'RE SORRY EXCUSES FOR NINJAS
NOW THIS?
A PACT?
SOME PEACE TREATY? HA!
HOW DARE THEY TAKE SUCH A DECISION IN THE NAME OF OUR CLAN?
I M THE ONLY WORTHY ONE!! I SHOULD'VE CALLED THE SHOTS.
AND I WOULDN'T HAVE ALLOWED THAT!
NINJAS NEVER BOW BEFORE THEIR ENEMY!!
AH, NOW OUR HONOR IS FOREVER LOST..
MY LIFE.
MY HONOR
..MOMENTARILY SPARED THANKS TO THOSE COWARDS?
NO!!!
I WON'T HAVE IT! NOT BY THEM!!
HAH.. HAH..
I..
I'LL
SHOW THEM!!



THEY TAINTED EVERYTHING IN MY LIFE.
BUT THEY HAVE NO INFLUENCE ON THE WAY I CHOOSE TO LEAVE THIS WORLD.

AT THE VERY LEAST... MY DEATH WILL BE AN HONORABLE ONE.
THAT'S ALL I HAVE LEFT.

SENSEI... I'LL BE BY YOUR SIDE VERY SOON.


IDIOT!! LIE DOWN!!
GO TO SLEEP!!
YOU KNOW WHAT AWAITS US IF WE WAKE UP! SHAME AND DISHONOR!
FOR ONCE, DO OURSELVES A FAVOR!! ACCEPT THIS HONORABLE DEATH!!
WHERE ARE YOU GOING ? COME BACK HERE...
YOU CAN'T BE SERIOUS.
I DID THIS FOR US!!! I DID THE RIGHT THING!!
STAY HERE WITH ME!!!
DIE WITH ME!!!


I WON'T RUN AWAY..
KARA.. I REGRET WHAT I DID
IF IT CAN SOMEHOW REINSTATE THE PEACE TREATY I VIOLATED. PLEASE KILL ME NOW.
I WON'T
I CAN ASSURE YOU THAT DOING SO WILL HAVE ABSOLUTELY NO EFFECT ON THE TREATY
NOW I M STILL EXPECTING AN EXAPLANATION FOR YOUR ACTIONS. AND NOT SOME HATEFUL DRIVEL
I M CURSED.
IT ALL STARTED WITH AN ANCIENT KATANA
SO YOU'RE THE ONE..
..WHO RELEASED IT?


YES! YES! THAT CURSE! THE ONE YOU KNOW ABOUT!
AM I RIGHT?
A WHOLE YEAR OF INVESTIGATION HERE IN JAPAN AND NOTHING CAME OUT OF IT!!
IT WAS YOUR DOING RIGHT?
DID YOU ERASE ALL TRACES OF THE CURSE'S EXISTENCE AND ITS LINK TO HAMATO YOSHI?
YOU'RE MISTAKEN.. YOUR INVESTIGATION YIELDED NOTHING BECAUSE THE EXISTENCE OF THE CURSE IS A SECRET KEPT WITHIN THE FOOT CLAN...
AND SINCE I KNOW ABOUT THE CURSE. I CAN ALSO ASSUME THAT YOU AREN'T COMPLETELY AT FAULT FOR THE DEATH OF MY COMRADES YOUR SPIRIT WAS COURRUPTED BY THE CURSE. WASN'T IT?
..AH. YOU. YOU KNOW ABOUT THAT? ..JUST WHAT DO YOU KNOW ABOUT THE CURSE?
IT ALL STARTED WITH
..YAMATA-NO-OROCHI.

IN THE SHINTO LEGENDS THAT SPOKE OF IT.

THIS DEMON WAS DESCRIBED AS AN EIGHT-HEADED SNAKE WITH EIGHT TAILS AND A CONSTANTLY BLOODY AND INFLAMED BODY THAT EXTENDED OVER EIGHT VALLEYS AND EIGHT HILLS.

ITS REIGN OF TERROR WAS ENDED BY SUSANO-O, THE GOD OF THE SEA AND STORMS BANISHED FROM THE HEAVENS.

AFTER PUTTING EACH OF THE DEMON'S HEADS TO SLEEP WITH SAKE, THE GOD CUT THEM ALL OFF

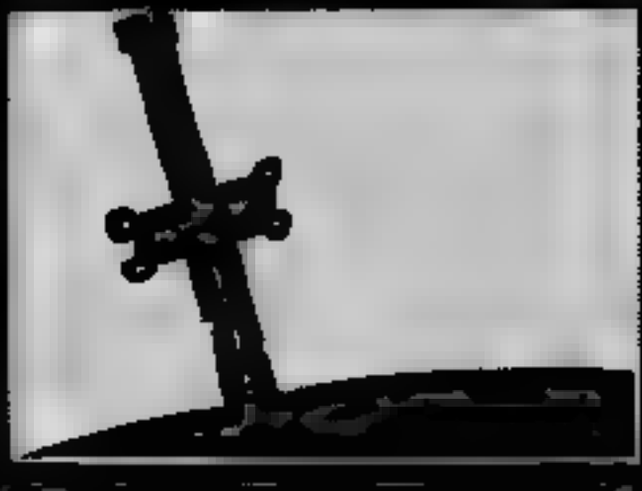
WHILE CHOPPING OFF THE DEMON'S FOURTH TAIL, SUSANO-O'S WEAPON, THE TOTSUKA SWORD GOT SLIGHTLY NOTCHED BY SOMETHING WITHIN THE DEMON'S FLESH

UPON INVESTIGATING THE CAUSE OF THIS THE GOD FOUND THE KUSANAGI SWORD, WHICH HE OFFERED TO HIS SISTER, AMATERASU AS A RECONCILIATION GIFT

THE KUSANAGI SWORD WENT TO BECOME ONE OF THE THREE IMPERIAL REGALIA OF JAPAN.

ON THE OTHER HAND, THE TOTSUKA SWORD BECAME A FORGOTTEN

REMAIN NOTHING BUT A MYTH, DESPITE BEING INSTRUMENTAL IN THE DEMISE OF YAMATA-NO-OROCHI.



THE RESTLESS SOUL OF YAMATA-NO-OROCHI FELT THE ANGER OF THE TOTSUKA SWORD AND USED THIS WEAKNESS TO CORRUPT IT AND

VOWING TO TAKE REVENGE UPON THE WORLD, YAMATO-NO-OROCHI USED THE TOTSUKA SWORD AS A VESSEL TO AWAKEN THE DARKNESS THAT LIES WITHIN THE HEARTS OF PEOPLE.

THE CURSED KATANA...

IS THE TOTSUKA SWORD FROM THAT JAPANESE LEGEND? BUT THAT'S JUST FICTION!

YET IT EXISTS AS MUCH AS THE IMPERIAL REGALIA OF JAPAN DO.

IN FACT, IT WAS THE MOST PRIZED POSSESSION OF THE FOOT CLAN.

ITS EXISTENCE AND ITS POWER IS ONLY KNOWN BY LEADERS OF NINJA CLANS WITH SUCH A FEARSOME ARTIFACT IN OUR ARSENAL, NO ONE DARED TO OPPOSE US



FOR GENERATIONS WE WERE THE MOST POWERFUL CLAN OF NINJA ASSASSINS IN ALL OF JAPAN.

IF THAT RELIC WAS THAT IMPORTANT TO YOUR CLAN, WHY DIDN'T YOU KEEP IT?

IT WAS IN OUR BEST INTEREST TO KEEP IT IT WASN'T OUR CLAN'S WILL TO PART WITH IT

LIKE YOU SAID

WHY DID YOU HAVE TO SEND IT TO HAMATO YOSHI?

WHY DID IT COME TO US SEVENTEEN YEARS AFTER HIS DEATH?

THE ONE WHO STOLE THE TOTSUKA SWORD AND SENT IT ACTED ON HIS OWN. YOU KNOW HIM WELL

OROKU SAKI. THE "SHREDDER".


THE CIRCLE OF HATE IS THE CAUSE OF EVERYTHING..
BACK WHEN HE WAS IN THE FOOT CLAN, HAMATO YOSHI WON THE HEART OF A WOMAN CALLED TANG SHEN
YOSHI'S RIVAL, OROKU NAGI, WAS ALSO INFATUATED WITH HER. WHEN SHE TURNED HIM DOWN, HE ALMOST BEAT HER TO DEATH. YOSHI KILLED HIM IN RETALIATION AND FLED TO NEW YORK WITH HIS BELOVED.
NAGI'S YOUNGER BROTHER OROKU SAKI, ROSE TO POWER WITHIN THE FOOT CLAN, BUT ASSIGNED AS HEAD OF THE NEW YORK DIVISION OF THE CLAN AND EXACTED REVENGE ON BOTH HAMATO YOSHI AND TANG SHEN.
THEN, HAMATO YOSHI'S PET RAT SPLINTER AVENGED HIS MASTER BY SENDING YOU OFF TO KILL OROKU SAKI..
THIS CIRCLE OF HATE ENDED AFTER I MADE A TRUCE WITH YOUR FELLOW KAPPAS IN NEW YORK
LITTLE DID WE KNOW THAT THE BIGGEST PROBLEM STEMMING FROM THESE CONFLICTS HAD YET TO BE TAKEN CARE OF

THAT BIGGEST PROBLEM BEING

THE MISSING TOTSUKA SWORD? WHY DID YOU WAIT SO LONG BEFORE DOING ANYTHING ABOUT IT?

THAT'S HOW LONG IT TOOK US TO NOTICE IT WAS MISSING...

BECAUSE NO ONE HAS EVER LAID THEIR EYES ON IT

THE TOTSUKA SWORD CAN CORRUPT ANYONE BY ITS MERE AURA AND PERMANENTLY CURSE THOSE WHO WIELD IT THEREFORE. IT WAS WRAPPED IN A CLOTH AND KEPT AWAY IN A PLACE ONLY LEADERS OF THE CLAN KNEW ABOUT

AS OROKU SAKI ROSE IN RANK AND BECAME A LEADER HIMSELF, HE LEARNED ABOUT THE SWORD'S CURSE AND DECIDED TO USE IT AGAINST HAMATO YOSHI.

DUE TO THE RISK OF GETTING CORRUPTED OR CURSED, NO ONE EVER DARED TO TAKE THE SWORD OUT OF ITS BUNDLE.

KNOWING THIS OROKU SAKI SWAPPED THE SWORD WITH A BUNDLE CONTAINING A NORMAL SWORD NO ONE FOUND OUT ABOUT IT.. UNTIL NOW

HE DID THAT?

WASN'T HE AFRAID OF THE CURSE?

I DON'T THINK SO. HIS HEART WAS PROBABLY ALREADY SO FULL OF HATRED THAT EVEN THE CURSE WOULDN'T BE ABLE TO CORRUPT HIM ANY MORE THAN HE ALREADY IS HIMSELF

FOR NORMAL PEOPLE THOUGH, IT'S A WHOLE DIFFERENT STORY

AS THE SWORD MADE ITS WAY TO NEW YORK, IT CORRUPTED PEOPLE'S HEARTS.

PEOPLE WERE KILLING EACH OTHER LETTING THEIR INNERMOST DARKNESS TAKE OVER.

WHEN THE SWORD REACHED NEW YORK THE MAILMAN THAT WAS SUPPOSED TO DELIVER IT ALSO GOT CORRUPTED BY ITS AURA AND BECAME A MAIL HOARDER.

THE SWORD REMAINED IN HIS COLLECTION OF UNDELIVERED MAIL AND NEVER REACHED HAMATO YOSHI.

A YEAR LATER OROKU SAKI AGREED TO BE HEAD OF THE NEW YORK DIVISION OF THE FOOT CLAN. HE MOST LIKELY REALIZED THAT HIS PLAN FAILED SINCE THERE WAS NO WORD ABOUT HAMATO YOSHI DYING OF A CURSE OF SOME KIND THEREFORE. HE TOOK MATTERS INTO HIS OWN HANDS

YEARS AFTER THE DEATHS OF BOTH HAMATO YOSHI AND OROKU SAKI, THE HOARDING MAILMAN GOT ARRESTED AND HIS MAIL WAS SENT TO ITS RECIPIENTS

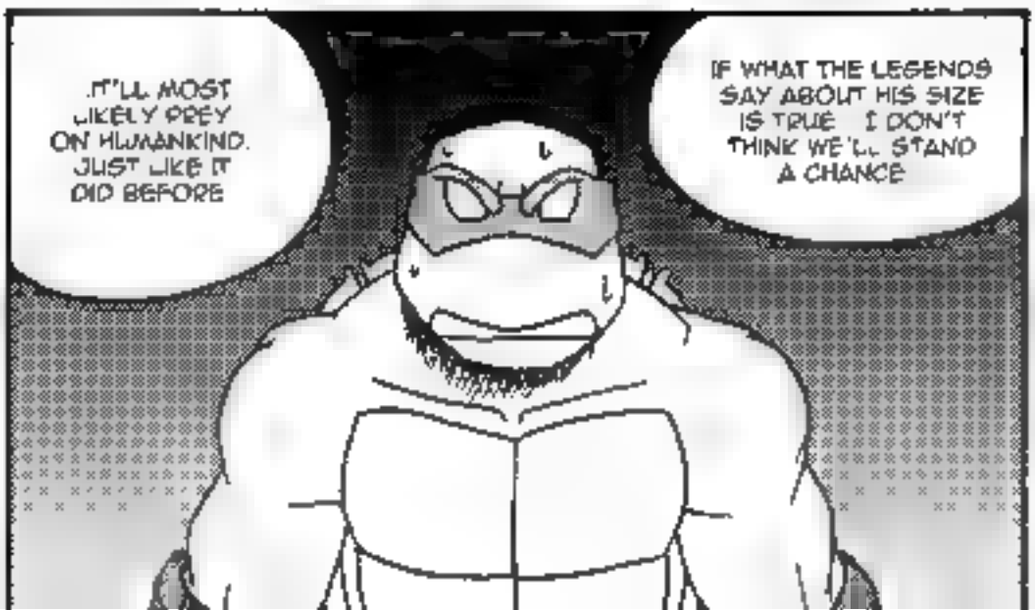
SINCE HAMATO YOSHI WAS DEAD THE SWORD SHOULD'VE BEEN UNCLAIMED.

YET, SOMEONE DID CLAIM IT AND THAT'S THE LAST INFORMATION WE HAVE ABOUT IT

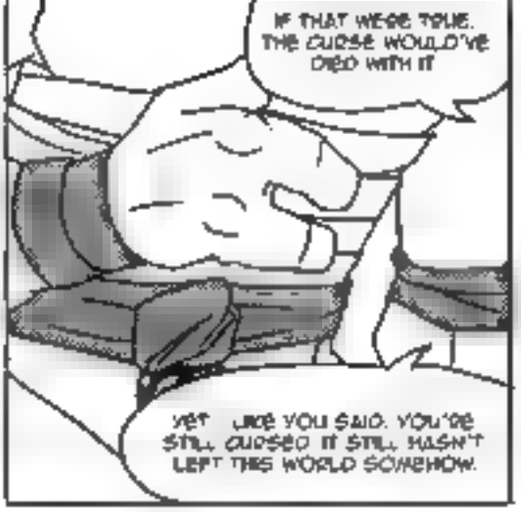

WAIT... IF YOU ALL FEARED THE CURSE
HOW DID YOU FIND OUT THAT THE TOTSUKA SWORD WAS GONE?
WE GOT WORD FROM THE JAPANESE EMPEROR'S ENTOURAGE THAT THE KUSANAGI SWORD SUDDENLY TURNED TO DUST AND WAS BLOWN AWAY BY THE WIND
THE OTHER SWORD FROM THE LEGEND?
WAS THAT AN OMEN?

YES. THE KUSANAGI SWORD WAS A PART OF YAMATA-NO-OROCHI'S BODY. WHEN THE MONSTER DIED, THE SWORD LOST ITS PURPOSE
SO IT SURRENDERED ITSELF TO SUSANO-O.
THE FACT THAT IT DISINTEGRATED MEANS THAT YAMATA-NO-OROCHI IS NO LONGER BOUND TO THE LIFELESS TOTSUKA SWORD AND HAS FOUND AN ORGANIC HOST. SO THE KUSANAGI SWORD IS RETURNING TO ITS MASTER TO HELP IT RECOVER.
IN OTHER WORDS, THIS IS A SIGN THAT YAMATA-NO-OROCHI IS ONE STEP CLOSER TO ITS REBIRTH


WE CANNOT ALLOW THIS TO HAPPEN.
FOR IF THAT MONSTER WERE TO RISE AGAIN...


IT'LL MOST LIKELY PREY ON HUMANKIND. JUST LIKE IT DID BEFORE
IF WHAT THE LEGENDS SAY ABOUT HIS SIZE IS TRUE... I DON'T THINK WE'LL STAND A CHANCE

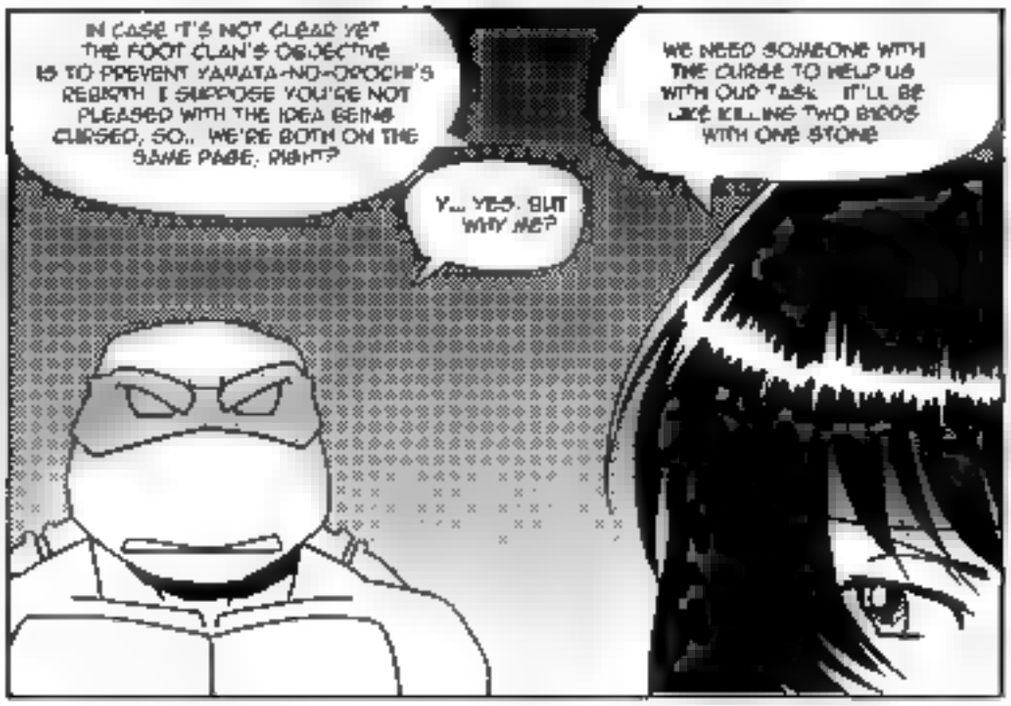

IMPOSSIBLE! THAT MONSTER DOES NOT HAVE ANY ORGANIC VESSEL!!
MY SENSEI ABSORBED IT AND THEN HE BURNED TO ASHES! NOTHING REMAINS OF HIM!!

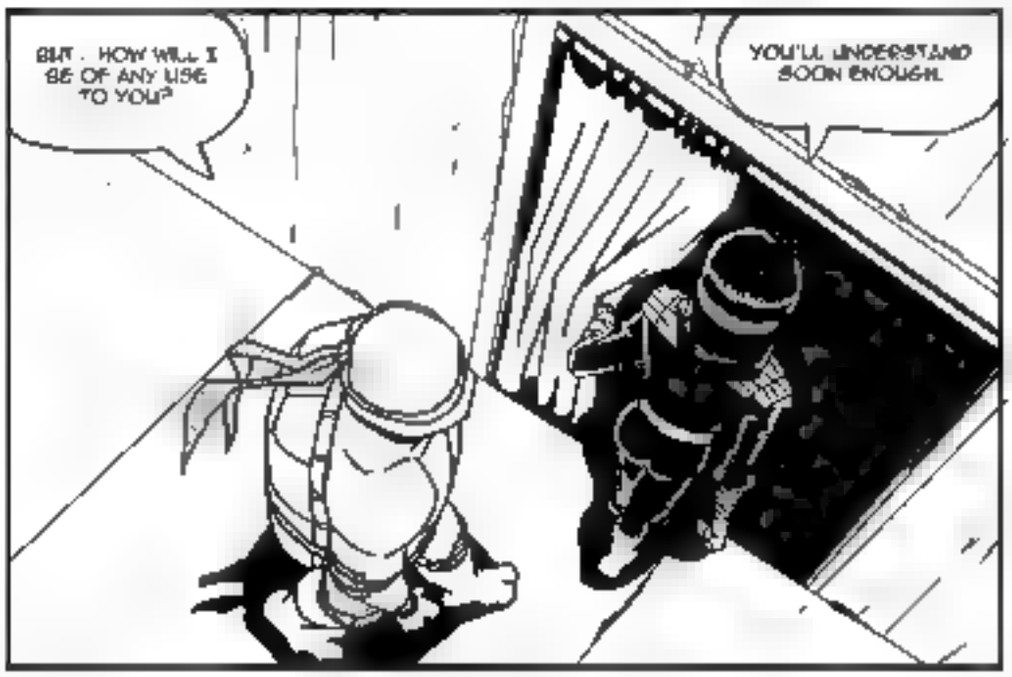

IF THAT WERE TRUE, THE CURSE WOULD'VE DIED WITH IT
YET LIKE YOU SAID, YOU'RE STILL CURSED! IT STILL HASN'T LEFT THIS WORLD SOMEHOW.

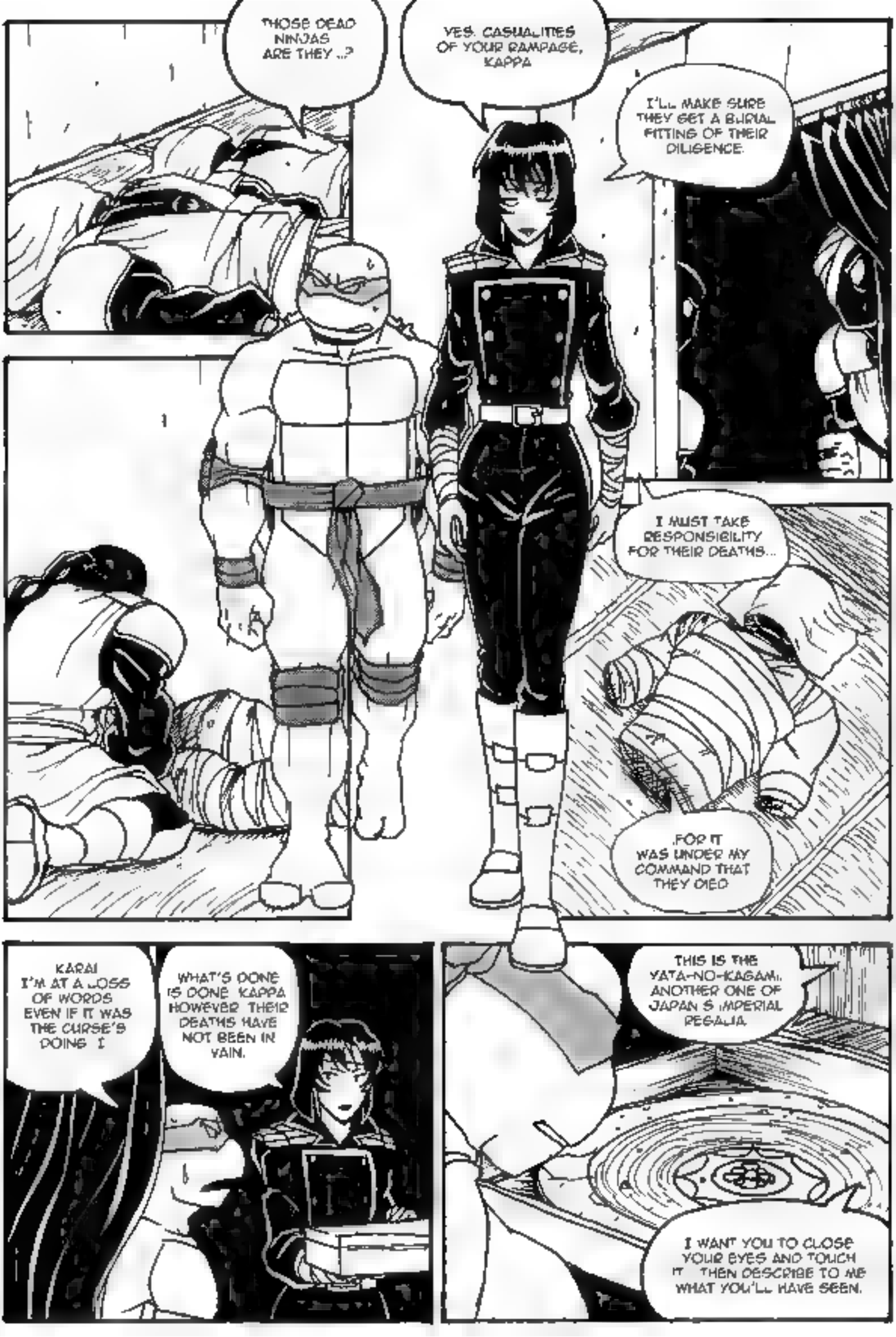

COME WITH ME. I'D LIKE TO SHOW YOU SOMETHING.


FREE HER.
BUT KAPAL..
I CAN HANDLE HIM BY MYSELF IF I HAVE TO.


WHY DO YOU TAKE SUCH RISKS JUST FOR ME? YOU KNOW.. I CAN'T GUARANTEE THAT MY DARK SIDE WON'T TAKE OVER MY BODY AGAIN, EVEN THOUGH IT'S DORMANT RIGHT NOW.
I DON'T HAVE MUCH OF A CHOICE. WE NEED TO ENLIST YOUR HELP, KAPPA. BESIDES, EVER SINCE YOU WOKE UP, YOU HAVEN'T BEEN SHOWING ANY SIGNS OF HOSTILITY. THAT'S GOOD ENOUGH FOR ME.
AND IF YOU DO LOSE CONTROL.. YOU ARE UNARMED. THERE ISN'T MUCH YOU CAN DO.


IN CASE IT'S NOT CLEAR YET, THE FOOT CLAN'S OBJECTIVE IS TO PREVENT YAMATA-NO-OROCHI'S REBIRTH. I SUPPOSE YOU'RE NOT PLEASED WITH THE IDEA BEING CURSED, SO.. WE'RE BOTH ON THE SAME PAGE, RIGHT?
Y... YES. BUT WHY ME?
WE NEED SOMEONE WITH THE CURSE TO HELP US WITH OUR TASK. IT'LL BE LIKE KILLING TWO BIRDS WITH ONE STONE.


BUT.. HOW WILL I BE OF ANY USE TO YOU?
YOU'LL UNDERSTAND SOON ENOUGH.

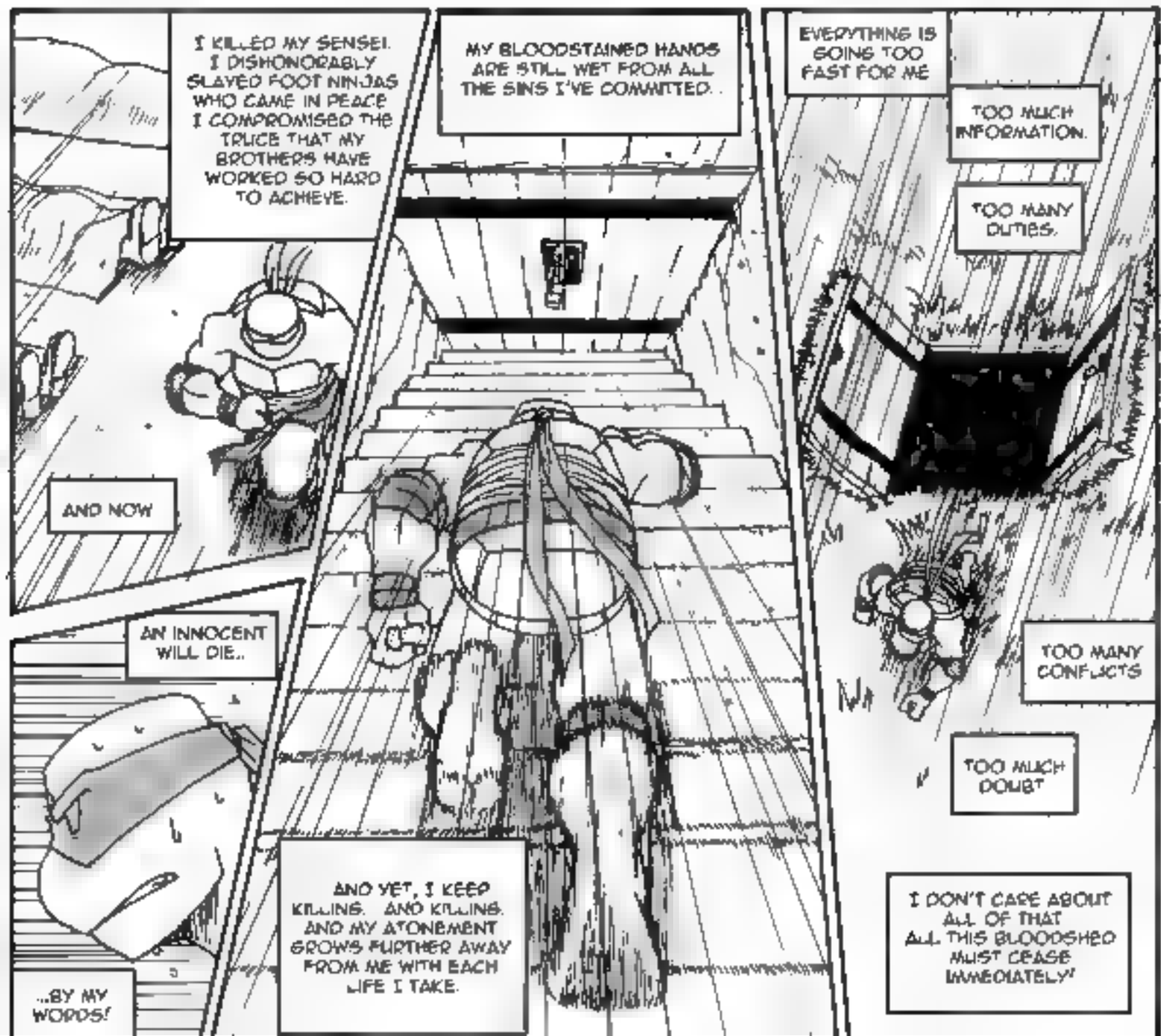

THOSE DEAD NINJAS ARE THEY ..?
YES. CASUALITIES OF YOUR RAMPAGE, KAPPA
I'LL MAKE SURE THEY GET A BURIAL FITTING OF THEIR DILIGENCE.
I MUST TAKE RESPONSIBILITY FOR THEIR DEATHS...
.FOR IT WAS UNDER MY COMMAND THAT THEY DIED
KARA! I'M AT A LOSS OF WORDS EVEN IF IT WAS THE CURSE'S DOING I
WHAT'S DONE IS DONE KAPPA HOWEVER THEIR DEATHS HAVE NOT BEEN IN VAIN.
THIS IS THE YATA-NO-KAGAMI. ANOTHER ONE OF JAPAN'S IMPERIAL REGALIA.
I WANT YOU TO CLOSE YOUR EYES AND TOUCH IT THEN DESCRIBE TO ME WHAT YOU'LL HAVE SEEN.


WHAT'S THIS.. I SEE IMAGES IN MY MIND. PLACES.
SLIDING DOORS, TATAMIS TEMPLES
I I ALSO SEE A WOMAN TRYING ON A WEDDING DRESS.
..A CHILD IN BED CALLING HIS MOTHER
A MIDDLE AGED MAN IN TRADITIONAL JAPANESE CLOTHES HE SEEMS TO BE NEAR A TEMPLE.
STOP THERE FOCUS ON THAT MAN DO YOU RECOGNIZE THAT TEMPLE?
YES. IT'S THE SAME ONE THAT COULD BE SEEN FROM UNDER THE BRIDGE WHERE I HID
KOUSUKE CALL A MEETING IN THE BRIEFING ROOM IMMEDIATELY WE WERE RIGHT ALL ALONG THAT NEW KENDO INSTRUCTOR NEAR THE TEMPLE IS A MORINAGA. HE S TONIGHT'S TARGET
YES, KARAI
WAIT.. WHAT? TARGET? WHAT'S THE MEANING OF THIS?
THE OLD MIRROR YOU TOUCHED IS CONNECTED TO THE CURSED SWORD WHICH USED TO BE THE EMBODIMENT OF YAMATA-NO-OROCHI. HOWEVER ONLY THOSE CURSED BY THAT MONSTER CAN UNLOCK ITS TRUE POTENTIAL.
THAT POWER IS TO TRACK DOWN THE PEOPLE WHOSE BLOODLINE KEEPS THE CURSE ALIVE AND WE NEED THEIR LOCATION TO SUCCEED OUR MISSION
THAT'S RIGHT IN ORDER TO PULL THE PLUG ON YAMATA-NO-OROCHI S EXISTENCE AND ITS CURSE..
..THE ENTIRE BLOODLINE OF MORINAGA HAS TO BE ERADICATED


THIS IS ABSURD
I HAVE THE ABILITY TO SEE RANDOM PEOPLE..
AND YOU PLAN ON KILLING THEM ALL?
WE HAVE NO CHOICE. THIS IS A FAIL-PROOF WAY TO PREVENT THE MONSTER'S REBIRTH.
YOU'RE LYING! WHAT PROOF DO YOU HAVE ABOUT THAT?
WHAT'S THE TRUTH? WHAT'S IN IT FOR YOU?
DON'T INSULT MY HONOR, KAPPA!
IF WE HAD A CHOICE WE WOULDN'T RESORT TO KILLING ENTIRE FAMILIES. BUT THAT'S THE ONLY SOLUTION RECORDED IN THE FOOT CLAN'S ARCHIVES!
WAIT! WAIT! WHAT IF THE FOOT CLAN'S VERSION OF THE LEGENDS WERE NOTHING MORE BUT LIES?
WHAT IF THEY WERE ALL MADE UP BY THE FOUNDERS OF THE CLAN TO HAVE THEIR SUCCESSORS CLEAN UP UNDESIRABLE RIVAL CLANS?
THEN YOUR CURSE WOULD BE A LIE AS WELL NO?
IT WOULD ALSO MEAN THAT YOU MADE UP THAT EXCUSE ABOUT THE CURSE TO KILL MY COMRADES..
NO..
I
SADAO. I'M CALLING AN URGENT MEETING. PULL YOURSELF TOGETHER AND COME WITH ME
I I WOULDN'T STOOP DOWN THAT LOW.

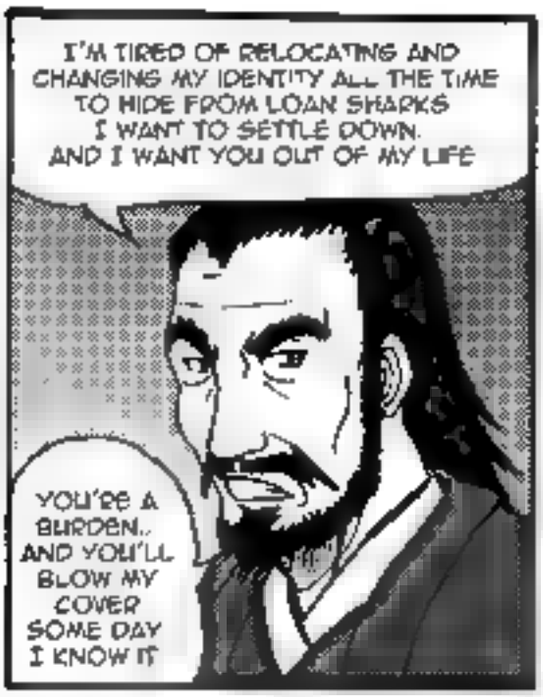

CALM DOWN!!
I... I COME IN PEACE!
I DON'T CARE I DON'T CARE WHAT YOU SAY
RYOTA ALSO CAME IN PEACE.
..YET YOU KILLED HIM, YOU FUCKER!!
SADAO AS A MEMBER OF THE FOOT CLAN, YOU SHOULD KNOW BETTER THAN TO LET YOUR EMOTIONS GET THE BETTER OF YOU!
THERE WILL BE TIME TO MOURN LATER BUT RIGHT NOW I NEED YOU TO BE CALM AND COLLECTED. UNDERSTOOD?
YES KARAI.


I KNOW WHAT YOU HAVE IN MIND KAPPA. GO AHEAD WARN THAT MAN ABOUT OUR IMMINENT ATTACK WHILE WE DEVISE A PLAN.
I WON'T EVEN TRY TO STOP YOU.
IF YOU GET IN THE LINE OF FIRE I WON'T BE ABLE TO GUARANTEE YOUR SAFETY
BUT KNOW THIS WE'RE NINJAS ON A MISSION. FAILURE IS NOT AN OPTION.
SO PLEASE WHEN THE TIME COMES, STAY OUT OF OUR WAY AND LET US DO OUR JOB


I KILLED MY SENSEI. I DISHONORABLY SLAYED FOOT NINJAS WHO CAME IN PEACE I COMPROMISED THE TRUCE THAT MY BROTHERS HAVE WORKED SO HARD TO ACHIEVE.
MY BLOODSTAINED HANDS ARE STILL WET FROM ALL THE SINS I'VE COMMITTED..
AND NOW
AN INNOCENT WILL DIE..
...BY MY WORDS!
AND YET, I KEEP KILLING. AND KILLING. AND MY ATONEMENT GROWS FURTHER AWAY FROM ME WITH EACH LIFE I TAKE.
EVERYTHING IS GOING TOO FAST FOR ME
TOO MUCH INFORMATION.
TOO MANY DUTIES.
TOO MANY CONFLICTS
TOO MUCH DOUBT
I DON'T CARE ABOUT ALL OF THAT ALL THIS BLOODSHED MUST CEASE IMMEDIATELY!


NEAR THE TEMPLE..
A SMALL HOUSE
THIS IS IT!
IF HE SEES A MUTANT LIKE ME HE'LL CREATE A COMMOTION AND HASTEN HIS DEATH AT THE HANDS OF THE FOOT CLAN!
I MUST WARN HIM DISCREETLY
IT'S THE KANJI FOR "ESCAPE" I ENGRAVED ON IT!
COME ON. DON'T YOU GET IT?
FATHER? MAY I HAVE A WORD WITH YOU?
YOU CAME IN JUST IN TIME.
SIT DOWN RIGHT NOW. I'LL DO THE TALKING AND I WANT YOU TO LISTEN TO MY EVERY WORD


WAIT I RECOGNIZE THAT VOICE! IT S SAYAKO SO THE MAN I SAW IN MY VISION.. THIS MAN HERE IS HER FATHER!
THEN SAYAKO'S FULL NAME IS SAYAKO MORINAGA?
SHE'S MARKED FOR DEATH AS WELL?


I'M TIRED OF RELOCATING AND CHANGING MY IDENTITY ALL THE TIME TO HIDE FROM LOAN SHARKS I WANT TO SETTLE DOWN. AND I WANT YOU OUT OF MY LIFE
YOU'RE A BURDEN.. AND YOU'LL BLOW MY COVER SOME DAY I KNOW IT


PACK YOUR BAGS AND GET OUT OF MY HOUSE
YOU HAVE ONE MINUTE


SO IT HAS COME DOWN TO THIS.. AND YOU STILL BRING UP THOSE LOAN SHARKS? DON'T MAKE ME LAUGH
WHY DON'T YOU SAY WHAT REALLY GOES THROUGH YOUR MIND?

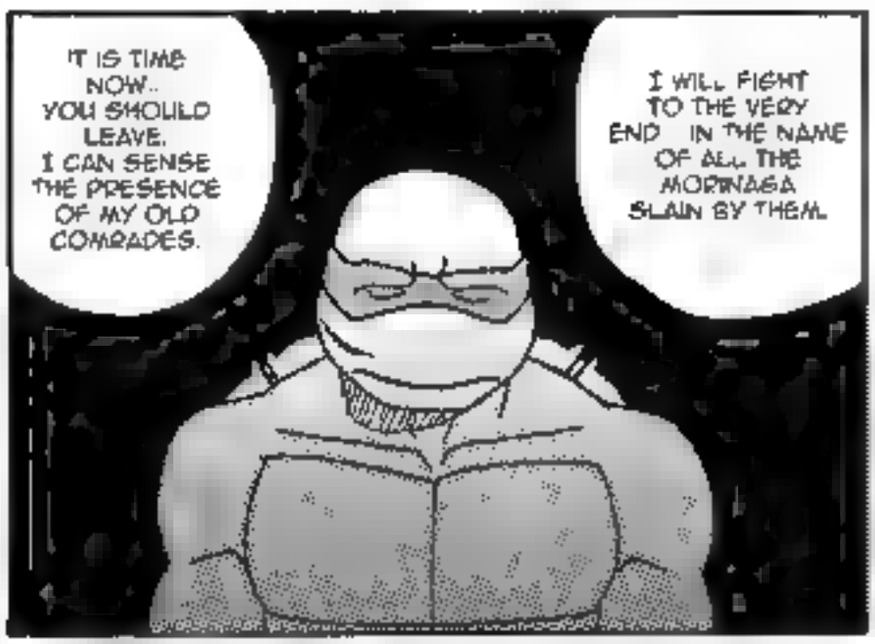

PACK YOUR BAGS
I'M NOT WIFE MATERIAL
WHAT A PITY! ALL THIS TIME AND MONEY INVESTED IN A DAUGHTER WHO ISN'T DOCILE ENOUGH TO SECURE A WEDDING WITH A RICH MAN, DESPITE BEING RAISED IN ISOLATION HER WHOLE LIFE!!
SO YOU DON'T WANT TO BE STUCK WITH ME RIGHT?
HAHAHAHA!
DON'T AVOID MY QUESTION!
HOW MUCH DID YOU HOPE TO GET FOR SELLING ME OFF? 200,000 YEN? 100,000 YEN?
IT HAS ALWAYS BEEN ALL ABOUT MONEY, WASN'T IT?
YES! YES, IT WAS ALL FOR THE MONEY!! HAPPY?
MY "BELONGINGS"? THOSE THINGS THAT FIT IN A SINGLE BACKPACK?
I'M DONE. NO NEED TO SEND ME OFF OR ANYTHING
TAKE THIS UNDERGROUND TUNNEL. IT'LL LEAD YOU TO THE OUTSKIRTS OF THIS TOWN NEAR A TRAIN STATION.
DON'T WORRY THERE'S SO LITTLE OF IT THAT IT WON'T EVEN TAKE ME THIRTY SECONDS.
FOR ONCE WE STAYED LONG ENOUGH AT A LOCATION FOR ME TO KNOW MY WAY AROUND HERE
HURRY!
THAT WON'T DO. I WANT YOU OUT OF MY LIFE... FAR AWAY FROM HERE.
NOW PACK YOUR ALL OF YOUR BELONGINGS! YOU HAVE THIRTY SECONDS!!
THEY'LL BE HERE ANY MINUTE NOW!
HOW AMAZING. IT'S LIKE YOU HAD IT ALL PLANNED AHEAD OF TIME

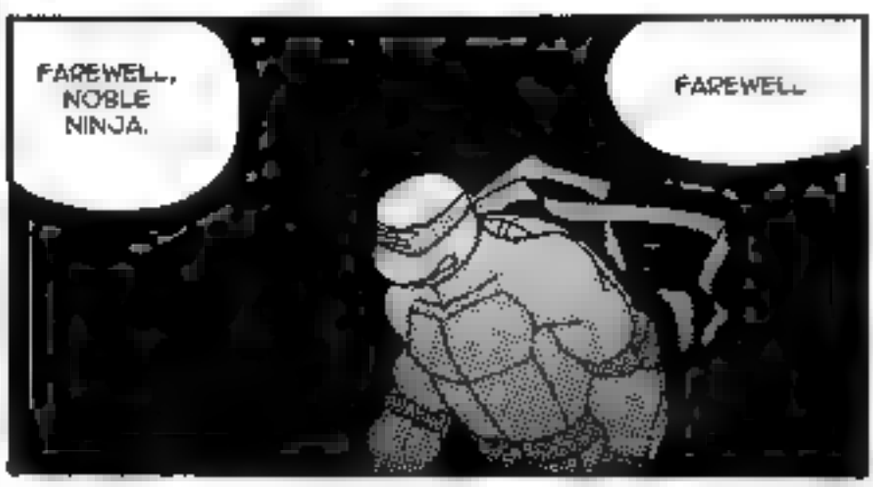

YOU DIDN'T PLAN TO TAKE OFF WITH MY MONEY, DID YOU? LET ME SEE...
AH... HEY!!
EMPTY
EVEN AS A THIEF YOU DON'T HAVE ANY POTENTIAL. NOT THAT I CARE ANYWAYS..
TH THAT DOES IT!!
YOU KNOW, DAD? I USED TO BELIEVE THAT THERE WAS SOME GOOD IN YOU DESPITE EVERYTHING YOU MADE ME DO..
SUT.
...NOW IT'S CRYSTAL-CLEAR TO ME THAT I WAS NAIVE TO BELIEVE THAT/ NAIVE TO THE POINT WHERE I FEEL ASHAMED OF MYSELF!
I KNOW.
YOU DON'T CARE ABOUT ANYONE BUT YOURSELF! SOMEDAY, KARMA WILL STRIKE BACK AND YOU'LL PAY FOR YOUR SELFISHNESS!!
THAT S WHY I WANT YOU TO GET FAR, FAR AWAY FROM ME.

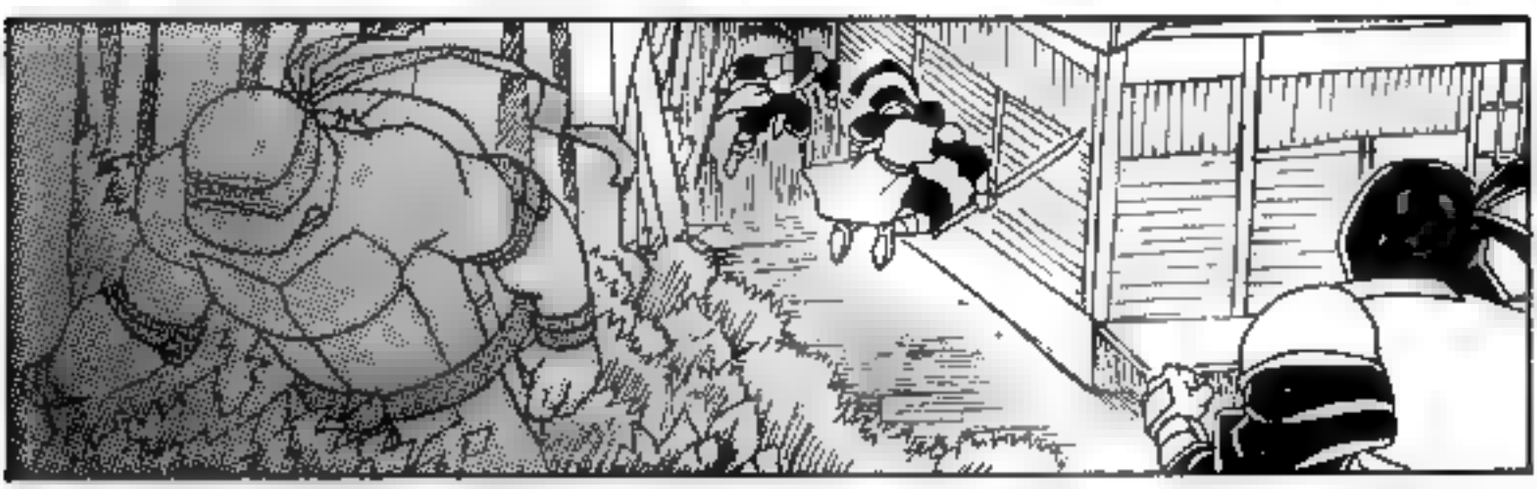

HEY.
WHY THE TEARS?
BECAUSE I THINK OF ALL MY PRECIOUS MONEY WASTED ON YOU.
YOU USELESS DYKE
I HOPE YOU BURN IN HELL!
I I KNOW HOW IT FEELS..
TO BETRAY YOUR OWN HEART..
..FOR THE GOOD OF OTHERS
YES.. I HAD TO ENDURE THIS PAIN FOR THE PAST 18 YEARS.
I WANTED TO LOVE HER YET, I HAD NO CHOICE BUT TO MAKE HER RESENT ME
I HAD TO MAKE SURE THAT WHEN THE TIME COMES FOR HER TO OUTLIVE ME..
...SHE'D BE ABLE TO LEAVE ME BEHIND WITHOUT ANY SECOND THOUGHT AND LIVE OUT THE REST OF HER LIFE AS NORMALLY AS POSSIBLE


AND NOW .. SHE WILL..
THANKS TO YOU.
I DON'T KNOW WHY YOU HELPED ME OR HOW YOU KNEW I WAS A MORINAGA.
BUT YOU HAVE MY GRATITUDE
WHEN I'LL DIE TONIGHT BY THE HANDS OF THE FOOT CLAN...
..SAYAKO WILL NO LONGER BE MARKED FOR DEATH BY THEM.

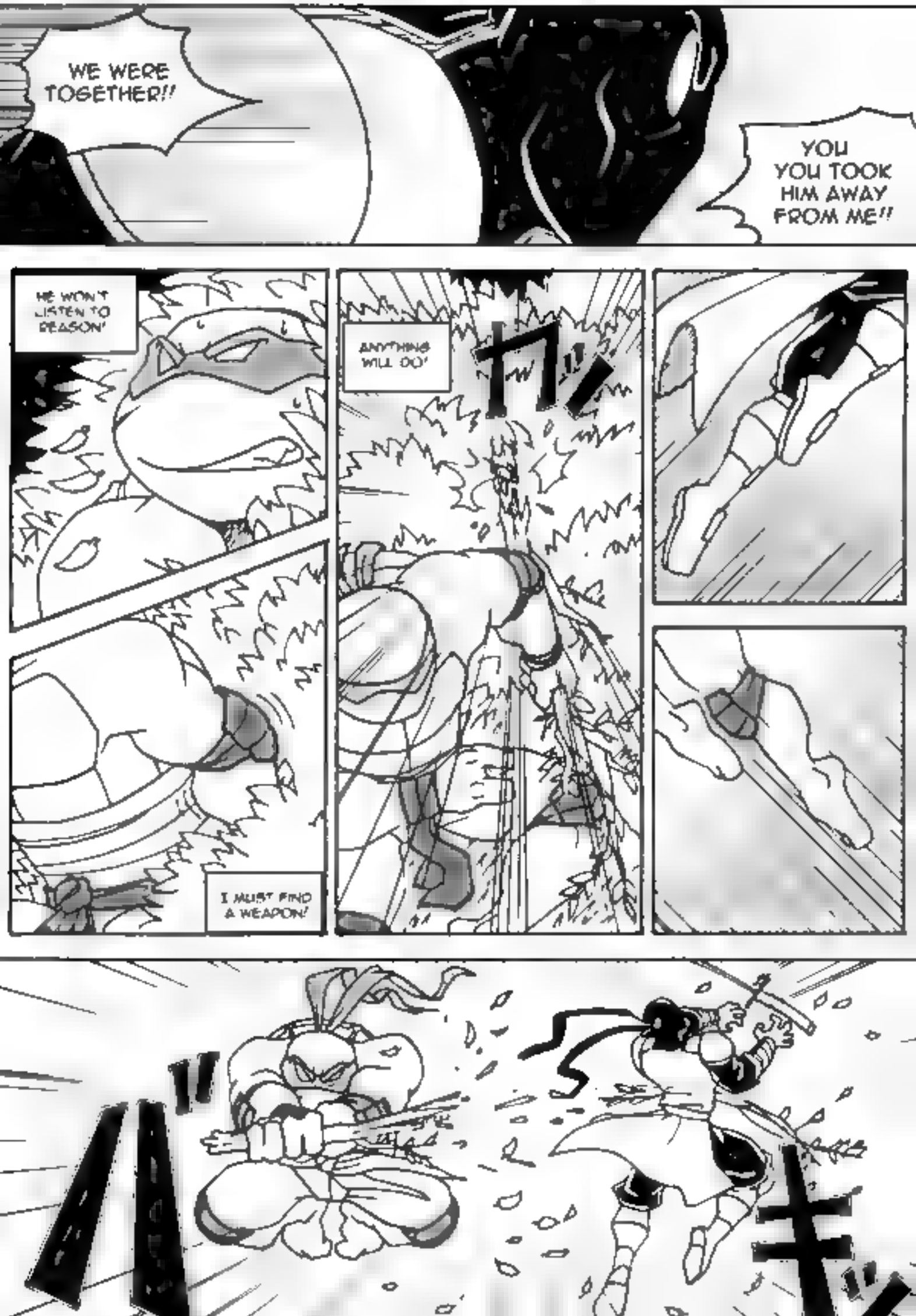

I'M SO HAPPY FOR HER MY DEAR, BELOVED SAYAKO. SHE HAS SUCH A BRIGHT FUTURE NOW
I NEVER GOT THE CHANCE TO SEE HER SMILE FOR ME BUT PERHAPS AFTER HER LONG HAPPY LIFE. WHEN WE MEET AGAIN.. I'LL TELL HER HOW MUCH I LOVED HER . AND THEN.. SHE'LL SMILE BACK


IT IS TIME NOW.. YOU SHOULD LEAVE. I CAN SENSE THE PRESENCE OF MY OLD COMRADES.
I WILL FIGHT TO THE VERY END IN THE NAME OF ALL THE MORINAGA SLAIN BY THEM.


FAREWELL, NOBLE NINJA.
FAREWELL

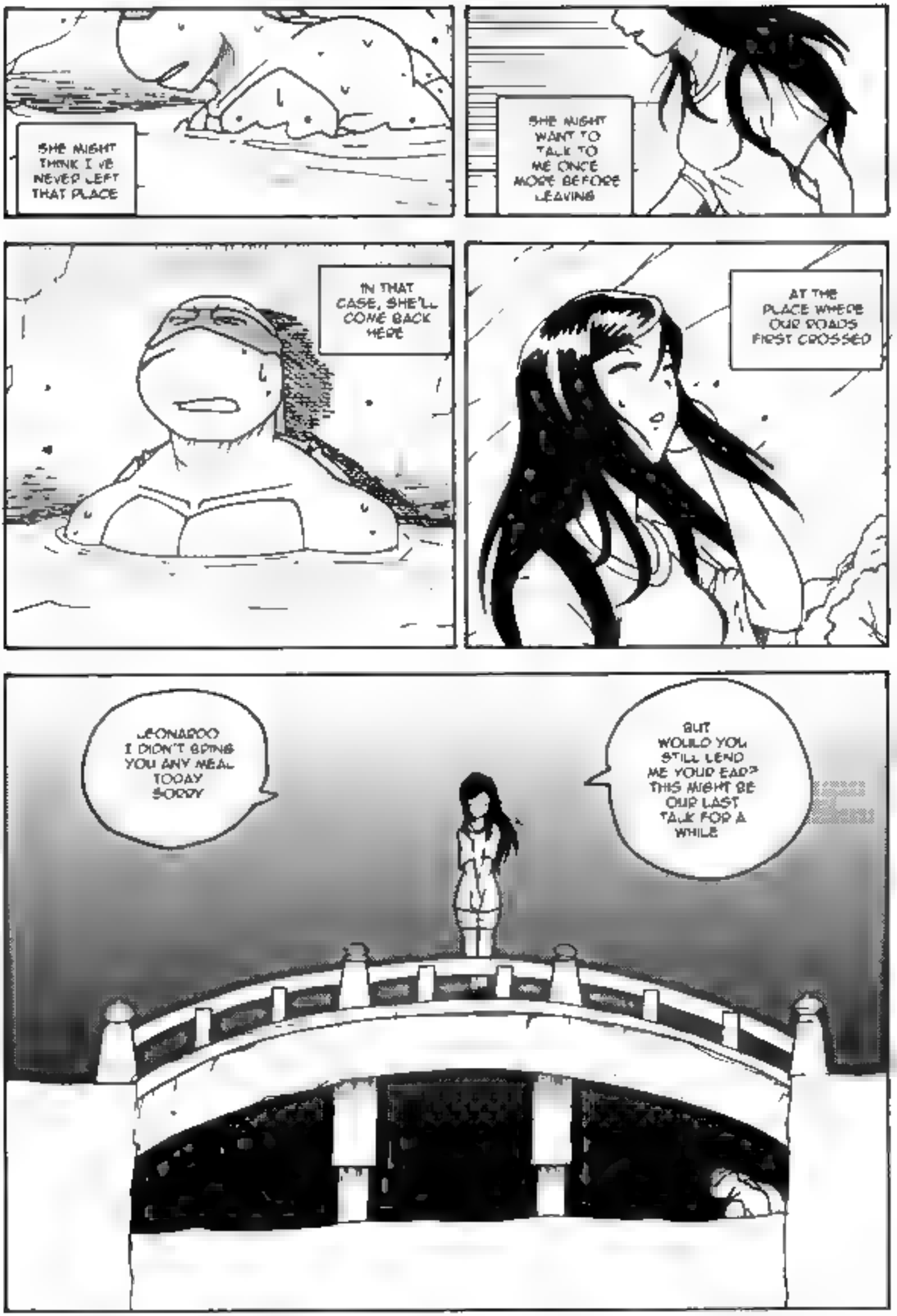



TIME TO DIE KAPPA
WAIT!!
THIS TIME KAPPA WON'T SAVE YOU SHE'S BUSY WITH THE MISSION
I'LL AVENGE RYOTA
LISTEN TO ME! I'M CURSED! I COULDN'T CONTROL MYSELF!
I'M SORRY ABOUT YOUR COMPADE! I REALLY DIDN'T MEAN TO KILL HIM!"
YOU BASTARD
HE WASN'T JUST A COMPADE


WE WERE TOGETHER!!
YOU YOU TOOK HIM AWAY FROM ME!!
HE WON'T LISTEN TO REASON!
I MUST FIND A WEAPON!
ANYTHING WILL DO!
T!!
T!!


ALL FOOT NINJAS MUST DIE...
WHO'S THIS? HOW CAN YOU SPEAK THROUGH MY MIND?
AND SINCE WE CAN'T DIE HONORABLY.
AH AAAAAH!"
WE'LL GO ON LIVING
BY MY RULES


AAH !!
NO NO!!! IT WAS MY TURN TO TAKE CONTROL!!
NO !!
I.. I WON'T GO DOWN WITHOUT AT LEAST OFFING THIS ONE!!
I WON'T LET YOU DO THAT!!
I M SORRY!!
WE'LL SETTLE THIS LATER!
WHY WAS I ABLE TO FIGHT BACK THE CURSE S INFLUENCE SO EASILY?
I DON'T WANT TO BELIEVE IT BUT I HAVE THE FEELING THERE MIGHT BE MORE TRUTH TO KARAI'S WORDS THAN I THOUGHT
WHAT IF. BY NOW SAYAKO'S FATHER HAS PASSED AWAY AND THAT S WHAT WEAKENED THE CURSE'S INFLUENCE AND ALLOWED ME TO SUPRESS IT?
SAYAKO MORINAGA. I NEED TO FIND HER NOW


SHE MIGHT THINK I'VE NEVER LEFT THAT PLACE
SHE MIGHT WANT TO TALK TO ME ONCE MORE BEFORE LEAVING
IN THAT CASE, SHE'LL COME BACK HERE
AT THE PLACE WHERE OUR ROADS FIRST CROSSED
LEONARDO I DIDN'T BRING YOU ANY MEAL TODAY SORRY
BUT WOULD YOU STILL LEND ME YOUR EAR? THIS MIGHT BE OUR LAST TALK FOR A WHILE


I'M ON MY OWN NOW
MY FATHER CHASED ME AWAY
HE SAID HE WANTED ME TO GO SOMEWHERE FAR AWAY FROM HIM.


BUT I CAN'T LEAVE JUST YET NOT AFTER WHAT HE TOLD ME!
HE HURT MY PRIDE. HE SAID THAT ON MY OWN, I'D PROBABLY EARN A LIVING BY STEALING FROM PEOPLE!


I'LL SETTLE HERE IN THIS TOWN AND PROVE HIM WRONG! I'LL GET A JOB, MAKE FRIENDS WITH EVERYONE IN TOWN FIND A BOYFRIEND LIVE A PERFECTLY RESPECTABLE LIFE I'LL DO EVERYTHING MY WAY!
THE DAY HIS LIFE WILL HIT ROCK BOTTOM DUE TO HIS SELFISHNESS I WANT EVERYONE IN TOWN TO LET HIM KNOW HOW MUCH BETTER HIS DAUGHTER IS DOING COMPARED TO HIM.


YOU CAN'T DO THAT!!


YOU DON'T HAVE MUCH TIME SAYAKO MORINAGA.
DO AS YOU WERE TOLD


GET AS FAR AWAY FROM YOUR FATHER AS YOU CAN
AND CUT TIES WITH HIM.


I MET HIM. HE SAID IT'S FOR YOU.
SAYAKO DON'T GO BACK
LEAVE ME ALONE
I WON'T LET YOU PASS
AK KAPPA


S...SO WHAT? YOU THINK YOU'RE SCARING ME?
YOU WISH
MY APPEARANCE STRIKES FEAR IN YOUR HEART I CAN SENSE IT
I SUGGEST YOU FOLLOW YOUR GUT FEELING AND LEAVE NOW.
YET .. IT SEEMS YOUR DESIRE TO GO HOME S STRONGER THAN YOUR FEAR OF ME
WHY IS THAT?
YOU SAID MY FATHER WANTED WHAT S BEST FOR ME I SAY THAT'S NOT TRUE IF YOU CAN *SENSE* THINGS, YOU D KNOW I DON'T BELIEVE YOU.
IN FACT, ALL THIS IS SO ABSURD THAT I WANT TO HUMOR MYSELF AND HAVE A LOOK AT MY FATHER ONE LAST TIME
IF IT TURNS OUT HE WAS BEING SINCERE, THEN THERE S A GOOD REASON WHY YOU SHOULDN'T COME BACK IN THE FIRST PLACE
AND IF IT TURNS OUT HE LIED ABOUT IT LIKE YOU SAID THEN YOU'RE THE ONE WHO'LL HUMOR HIM BECAUSE YOU LEFT UPON HIS REQUEST
NOTHING GOOD WILL COME OUT OF THIS, CAN'T YOU SEE?
NOW LEAVE THIS TOWN!
I DON'T WANT TO


LET GO
NO.
I CAN'T ALLOW YOU TO SEE YOUR FATHER
"ALLOW"? MY ASS!
MY FAMILY IS NONE OF YOUR BUSINESS YOU FREAK!
LEAVE ME ALONE!
DON'T SCREAM!
YOU'RE PUTTING YOURSELF IN DANGER! LISTEN YOU MUST..
HELP! HELP!
SHHHHH! CALM DOWN. SAYAKO!!
HELP!
SOMEBODY HEEELP!


YOUR FATHER IS DEAD.
I DIDN'T WANT HER TO KNOW
BUT THERE WAS NO OTHER WAY TIME WAS RUNNING SHORT

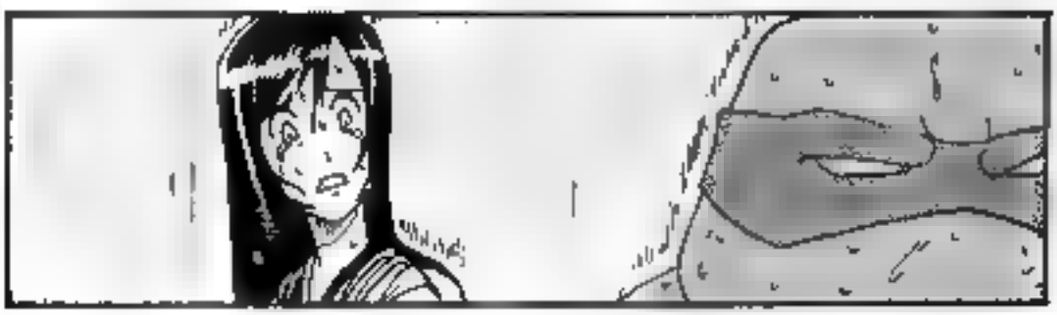

COME ON.
YOUR FATHER WANTED YOU TO SURVIVE, SAYAKO
YOU MUST LEAVE, NOW
I M SO CLOSE TO HOME.
I I CAN MAKE IT IN LESS THAN FIVE MINUTES IT S THAT CLOSE.
HE'S STILL THERE, ISN'T HE? THEN I I
I WANT TO SEE HIM ONE LAST TIME PLEASE..
SORRY I CAN'T LET YOU DO THAT

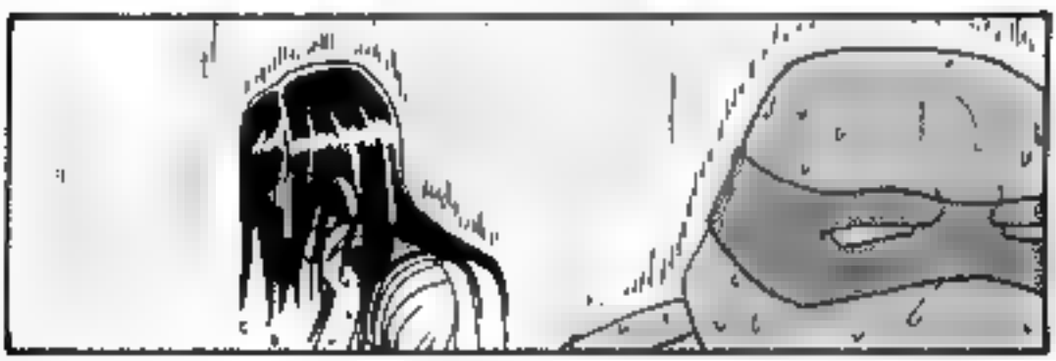

GO AWAAAY!!
YOU'RE LYING! YOU'RE LYING!
LET GO OF ME!!
I I WANT TO SEE HIM. I WANT TO SEE MY DAD..
THIS... THIS CAN'T BE TRUE I... I WAS SO MEAN TO HIM..
WHO MARKED US FOR DEATH? WHO CHOSE US?
BUT WHY US? WHAT DID WE DO TO THEM?
WHY DO WE HAVE TO DIE??
PEOPLE HAVE BEEN DISAPPEARING ALL OVER JAPAN AS YOU PROBABLY SAW ON THE NEWS IT'S NOT A MASSIVE EXODUS IT'S THE ERADICATION OF YOUR BLOODLINE BY A SECRET ORGANIZATION
I M NOT LYING SAYAKO.
YOU WERE NEXT UP ON THEIR LIST BUT YOUR FATHER SAW IT COMING, SO HE MANAGED TO HELP YOU ESCAPE
IF YOU DON'T ESCAPE NOW YOUR FATHER S DEATH WILL BE IN VAIN: IS THAT WHAT YOU WANT?
YOU SHOULDN'T BE WASTING TIME WITH THOSE DETAILS RIGHT NOW, SAYAKO

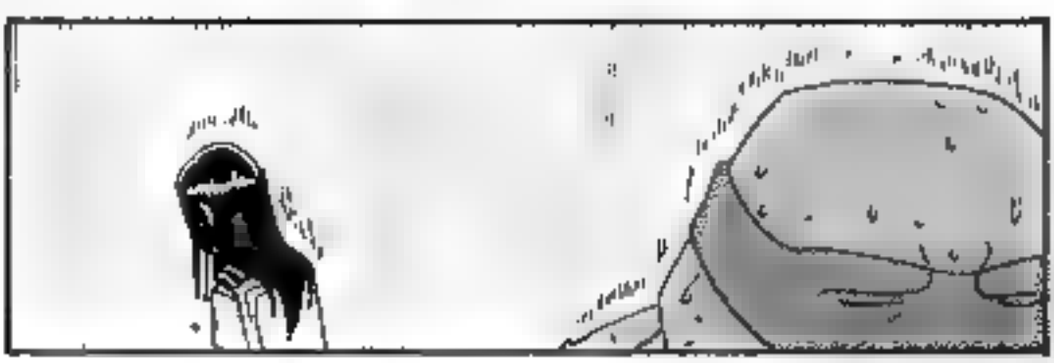

NO. I. DON'T WANT THAT. BUT..
YOU'LL CHANGE YOUR NAME AND GO ON WITH YOUR LIFE WHILE KEEPING A LOW PROFILE - JUST LIKE YOUR FATHER DID.
AND DON'T TRUST ANYONE THAT ORGANIZATION HAS TIES EVERYWHERE EVEN WITHIN THE JAPANESE GOVERNMENT
NOW GO ON.
I CAN'T GO WITH YOU.
I TOLD YOU BEFORE I CARRY A DISEASE
IF WE STAY TOGETHER, YOU'LL END UP GETTING HURT
I DON'T CARE
I.. I JUST DON'T WANT TO BE ON MY OWN OUT THERE I.. I M SO SCARED.
PLEASE I WANT TO BE WITH YOU..
I TOLD YOU NOT TO TRUST ANYONE
DON'T GIVE ANYONE THE CHANCE TO BETRAY YOU. NOT EVEN ME



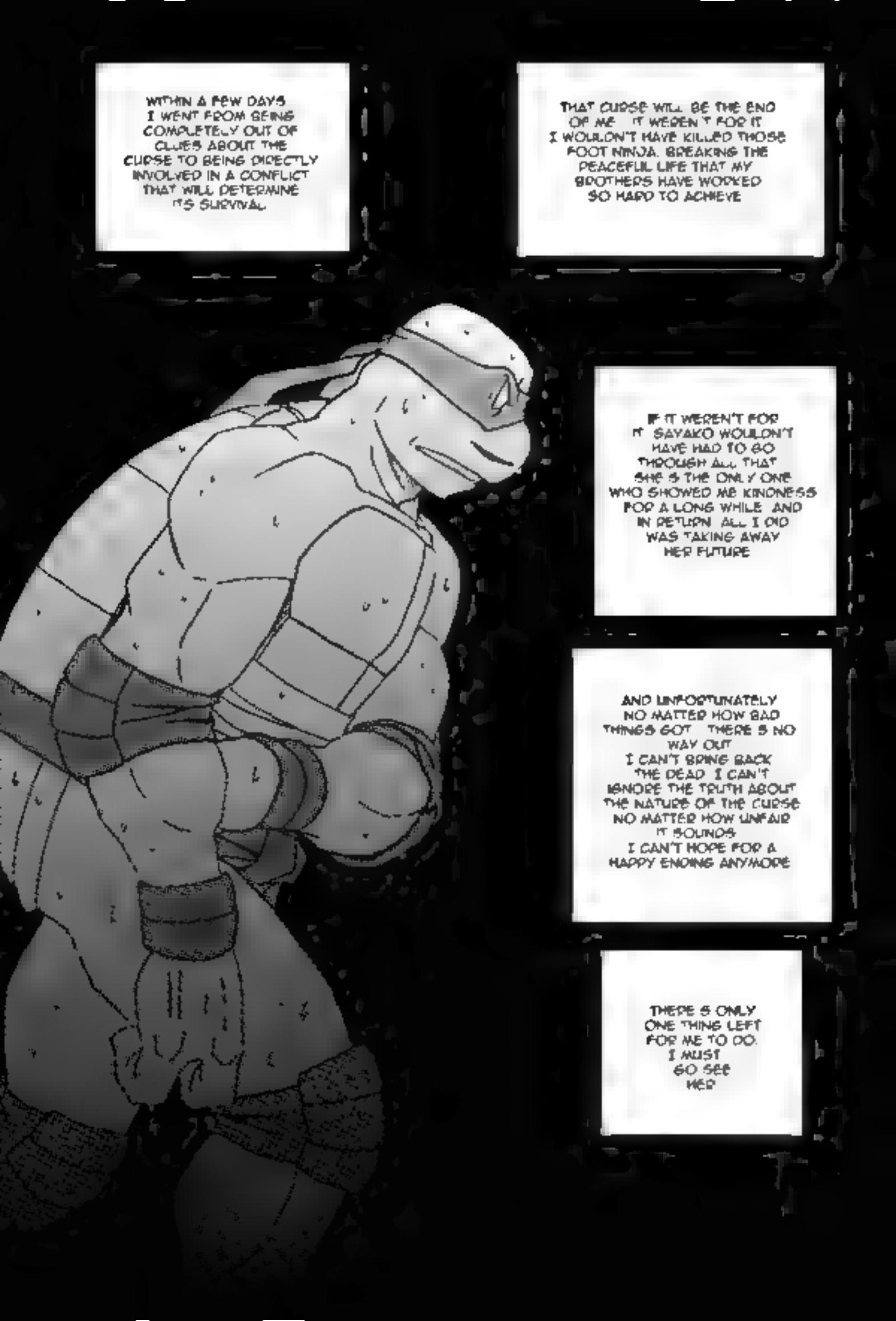

WAIT...
PLEASE.. NO..
THIS IS GOODBYE SAYAKO.

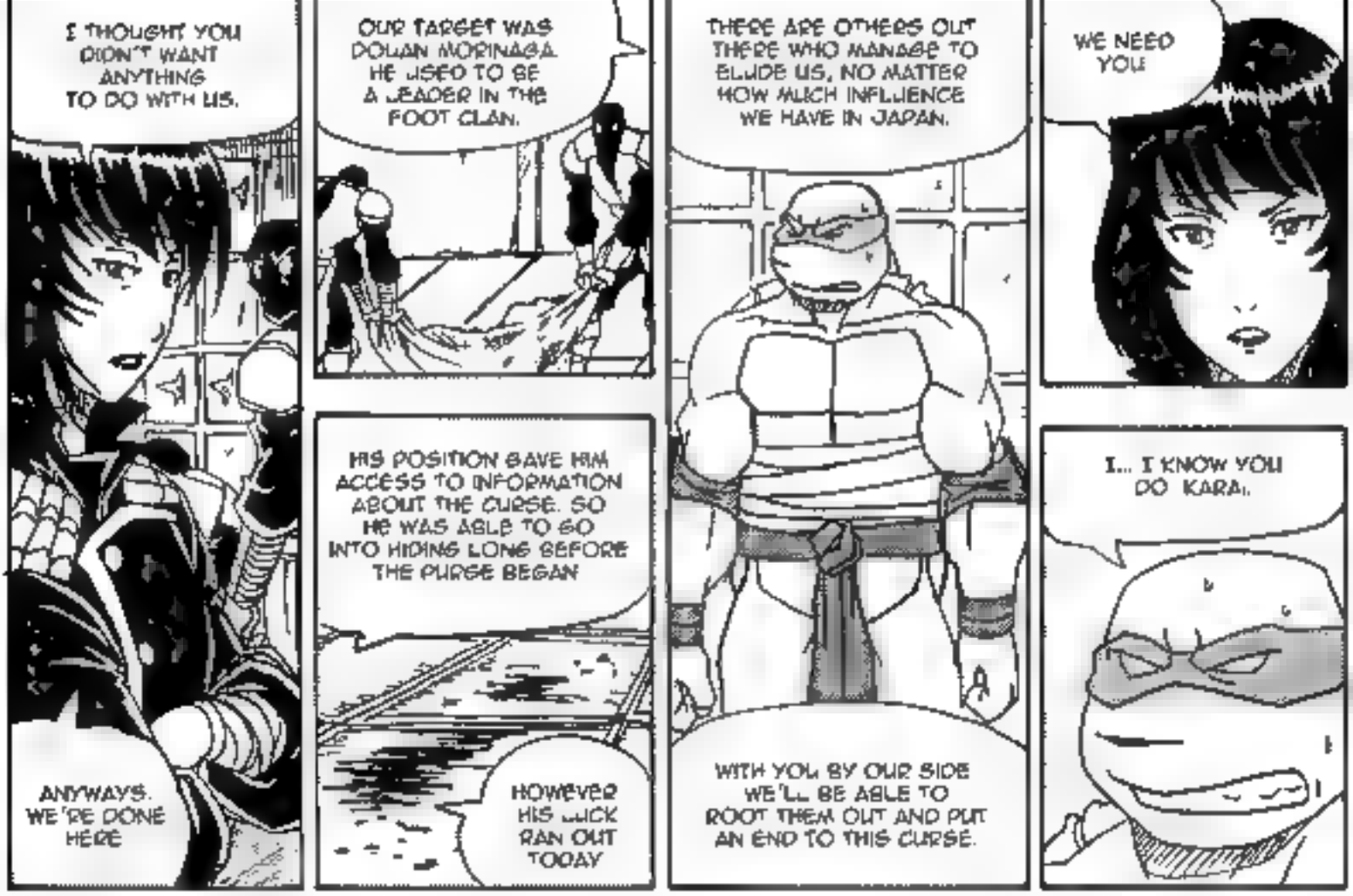


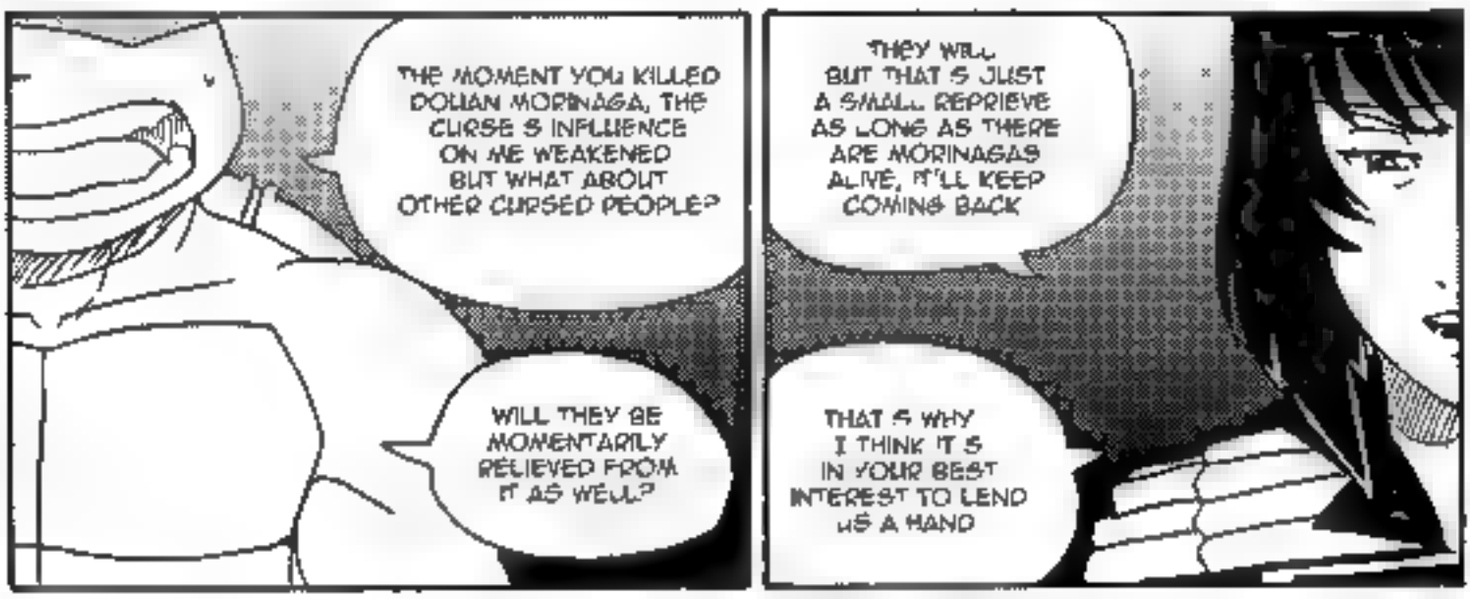


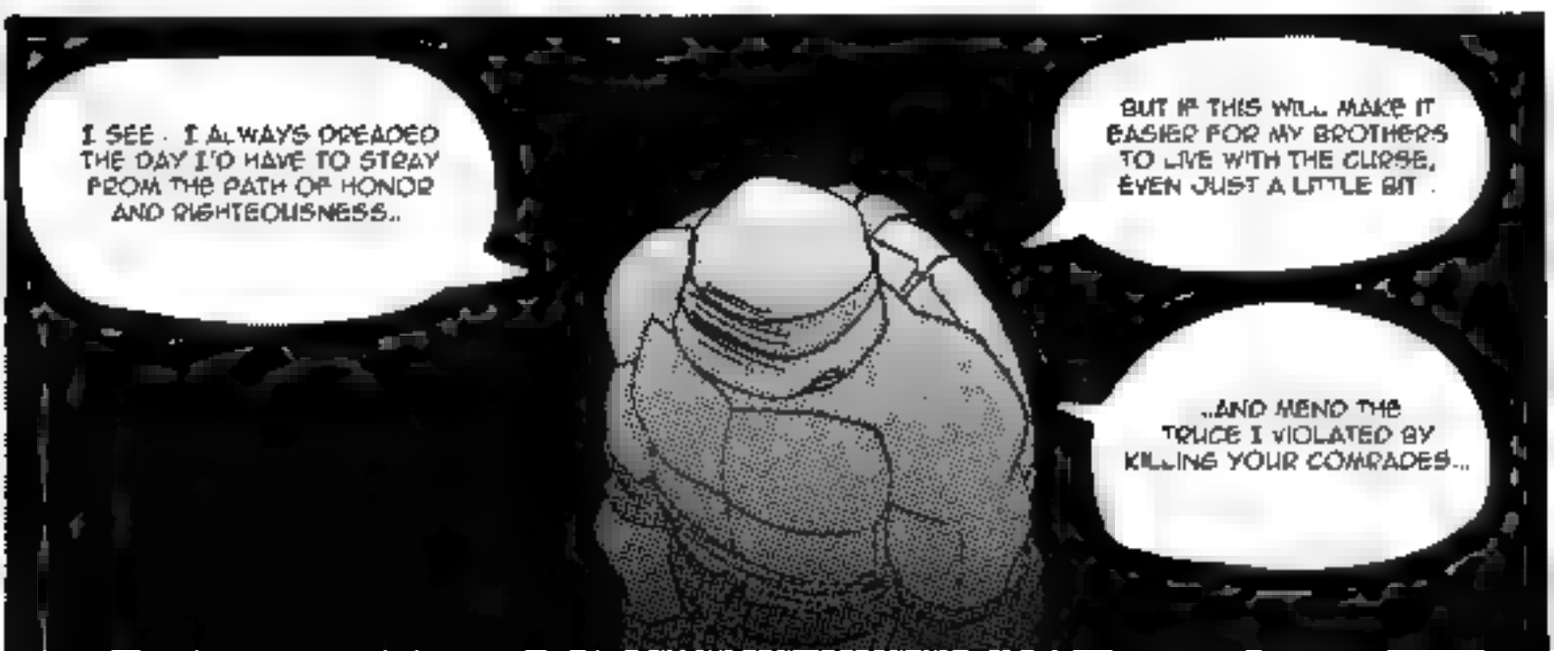



I M SORRY


WITHIN A FEW DAYS I WENT FROM BEING COMPLETELY OUT OF CLUES ABOUT THE CURSE TO BEING DIRECTLY INVOLVED IN A CONFLICT THAT WILL DETERMINE IT'S SURVIVAL
THAT CURSE WILL BE THE END OF ME IT WEREN'T FOR IT I WOULDN'T HAVE KILLED THOSE FOOT NINJA. BREAKING THE PEACEFUL LIFE THAT MY BROTHERS HAVE WORKED SO HARD TO ACHIEVE
IF IT WEREN'T FOR IT SAYAKO WOULDN'T HAVE HAD TO GO THROUGH ALL THAT SHE'S THE ONLY ONE WHO SHOWED ME KINDNESS FOR A LONG WHILE AND IN RETURN ALL I DID WAS TAKING AWAY HER FUTURE
AND UNFORTUNATELY NO MATTER HOW BAD THINGS GOT THERE'S NO WAY OUT I CAN'T BRING BACK THE DEAD I CAN'T IGNORE THE TRUTH ABOUT THE NATURE OF THE CURSE NO MATTER HOW UNFAIR IT SOUNDS I CAN'T HOPE FOR A HAPPY ENDING ANYMORE
THERE'S ONLY ONE THING LEFT FOR ME TO DO. I MUST GO SEE HER


I THOUGHT YOU DIDN'T WANT ANYTHING TO DO WITH US.
OUR TARGET WAS DOJIAN MORINAGA. HE USED TO BE A LEADER IN THE FOOT CLAN.
THERE ARE OTHERS OUT THERE WHO MANAGE TO ELUDE US, NO MATTER HOW MUCH INFLUENCE WE HAVE IN JAPAN.
WE NEED YOU!
ANYWAYS. WE'RE DONE HERE
HIS POSITION GAVE HIM ACCESS TO INFORMATION ABOUT THE CURSE. SO HE WAS ABLE TO GO INTO HIDING LONG BEFORE THE PURGE BEGAN
HOWEVER HIS LUCK RAN OUT TODAY
WITH YOU BY OUR SIDE WE'LL BE ABLE TO ROOT THEM OUT AND PUT AN END TO THIS CURSE.
I... I KNOW YOU DO KARAI.


THE MOMENT YOU KILLED DOJIAN MORINAGA, THE CURSE'S INFLUENCE ON ME WEAKENED BUT WHAT ABOUT OTHER CURSED PEOPLE?
WILL THEY BE MOMENTARILY RELIEVED FROM IT AS WELL?
THEY WILL BUT THAT'S JUST A SMALL REPRIEVE AS LONG AS THERE ARE MORINAGAS ALIVE, IT'LL KEEP COMING BACK
THAT'S WHY I THINK IT'S IN YOUR BEST INTEREST TO LEND US A HAND


I SEE. I ALWAYS DREADED THE DAY I'D HAVE TO STRAY FROM THE PATH OF HONOR AND RIGHTEOUSNESS..
BUT IF THIS WILL MAKE IT EASIER FOR MY BROTHERS TO LIVE WITH THE CURSE, EVEN JUST A LITTLE BIT.
..AND MEND THE TRUCE I VIOLATED BY KILLING YOUR COMRADES...


...THEN I PLEDGE ALLEGIANCE TO THE FOOT CLAN IN THEIR MISS ON TO ERADICATE THE CURSE THROUGH THE ONLY POSSIBLE METHOD THE EXECUTION OF ALL MORINAGAS
I'M SORRY, SAYAKO THIS IS THE PATH I CHOSE... I MUST PROTECT MY FAMILY
MAY YOU LIVE HAPPILY UNTIL YOUR TIME IS UP...


LEO?
LEO?


HUH?


STOP STARIN' INTO SPACE AND TELL US 'BOUT YER TIME IN JAPAN ALREADY!
C'MON. YOU CAN TELL US ANYTHING. YOUR GOOD LOOKS GOT YOU HOOKED UP WITH A CHICK? IT'S OKAY!


THAT'S RIGHT. TELL THEM THE TRUTH. ALL OF IT. THAT'S WHAT YOU SET OUT TO DO, RIGHT?
ABOUT OUR ALLIANCE WITH THE FOOT CLAN... ABOUT HOW WE BETRAYED SAYAKO AND HER OLD CLAN...
THEN LET THEM KNOW WE DID IT ALL FOR THEM.
YOU'LL SEE... THEY'LL BLAME US INSTEAD OF SHOWING US A SHRED OF GRATITUDE. THAT'S THE TRUE FACE OF THOSE IGNORANT SAITAMA... THOSE WORTHLESS NINJA...


NO... THAT'S WRONG. I BELIEVE IN THEM. I WANT TO PROTECT THEM.
ACTUALLY MIKEY, I MOSTLY KEPT TO MYSELF IN JAPAN.
FOR THE LAST 17 YEARS, I JUST FOCUSED ON GATHERING INFORMATION TO ELIMINATE THE CURSE.
THAT'S WHY I'LL CARRY THIS BURDEN BY MYSELF AFTER ALL. I CAN'T SHARE IT WITH THEM.


I TOLD THEM EVERYTHING I KNEW ABOUT THE CURSE OF YAMATA-NO-OROCHI.
EVERYTHING EXCEPT THE MORINAGA BLOODLINE AND MY INVOLVEMENT WITH THE FOOT CLAN.
INSTEAD, I MADE UP A STORY ABOUT ANCIENT RELICS WE NEEDED TO FIND AND DESTROY TO PUT AN END TO THE CURSE.


AS I SPUN MY WEB OF LIES RAPHAEL PAID ATTENTION TO EVERY SINGLE WORD THAT CAME OUT OF MY MOUTH.
RAPHAEL, THE MOST REBELLIOUS AND HOT-HEADED OF US ALL IS FOR ONCE CALM AND COLLECTED. BELIEVING MY LIES.


IT HURT ME JUST TO SEE THEM SO EAGER TO HELP ME.
BUT I KNEW THIS PAIN WAS THE PRICE TO PAY TO PROTECT THEM.


HE COULD'VE CHOSEN A LESS COMPLICATED LIE
WE'LL HAVE TO PLAY ALONG TO COVER FOR HIM..
LET'S GET BACK TO YOU. YOU'RE THE LAST OF OROKU SAKI'S ELITE NINJAS. EIKICHI GOTOU WE'VE COLLECTED A LOT OF INFORMATION ABOUT YOU OVER THE YEARS.
YOU'RE THE ONE WHO DROPPED THE TOTSUKA SWORD INTO THE SEWERS AS AN ACT OF REVENGE AGAINST THE TURTLES
ARGGH!
YOU THEN TRAVELED TO JAPAN TO LOOK FOR YOUR TWIN BROTHER RYOTA. SINCE HE PASSED AWAY, YOU RETURNED TO NEW YORK TO PERSUE YOUR AMBITIONS
LET'S SEE IF YOU CAN TELL US SOMETHING WE DON'T KNOW YET FOR INSTANCE WHAT ELSE YOU DID WHILE YOU WERE IN JAPAN.
BE GENEROUS WITH WORDS OR WE'LL HAVE TO BE GENEROUS WITH THE TASER
F.. FUCK OFF...
...BITCH!

YOU DOGS OF THE FOOT CLAN..

...WON'T GET ANYTHING OUT OF ME!

IT WAS ONE OF MY MOMENTS OF WEAKNESS... I WANT TO KEEP IT TO MYSELF

16 YEARS AGO AFTER SURVIVING KARAI'S ATTEMPT TO RID NEW YORK CITY OF US SHREDDER SUPPORTERS...

I WANTED TO BUILD AN INDEPENDENT FACTION OF FOOT NINJAS. THE FIRST PERSON I CONSIDERED RECRUITING WAS MY BROTHER RYOTA.

A MOLE TOLD ME HE WAS ASSIGNED TO WORK UNDER KARAI AND WAS DISPATCHED TO HOKKAIDO SO I WENT TO LOOK FOR HIM.

UNFORTUNATELY I FOUND OUT THAT HE RECENTLY PASSED AWAY

SO I TOOK A TRAIN BACK TO THE NEAREST URBAN CITY

UH.. UH... SNIF . SNIF...

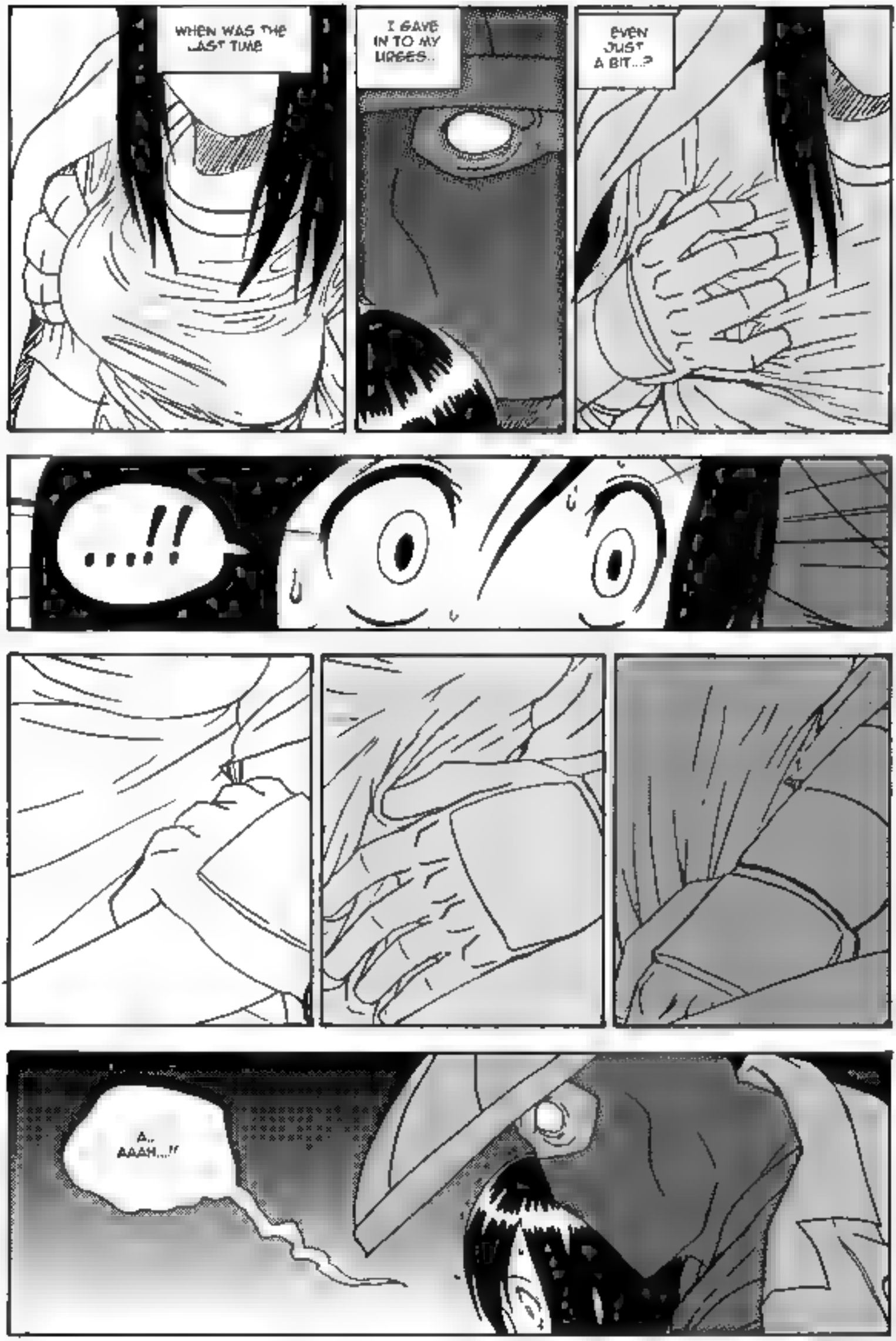
THIS ONE GIRL WAS THE ONLY OTHER PASSENGER ABOARD AT THIS TIME OF THE NIGHT

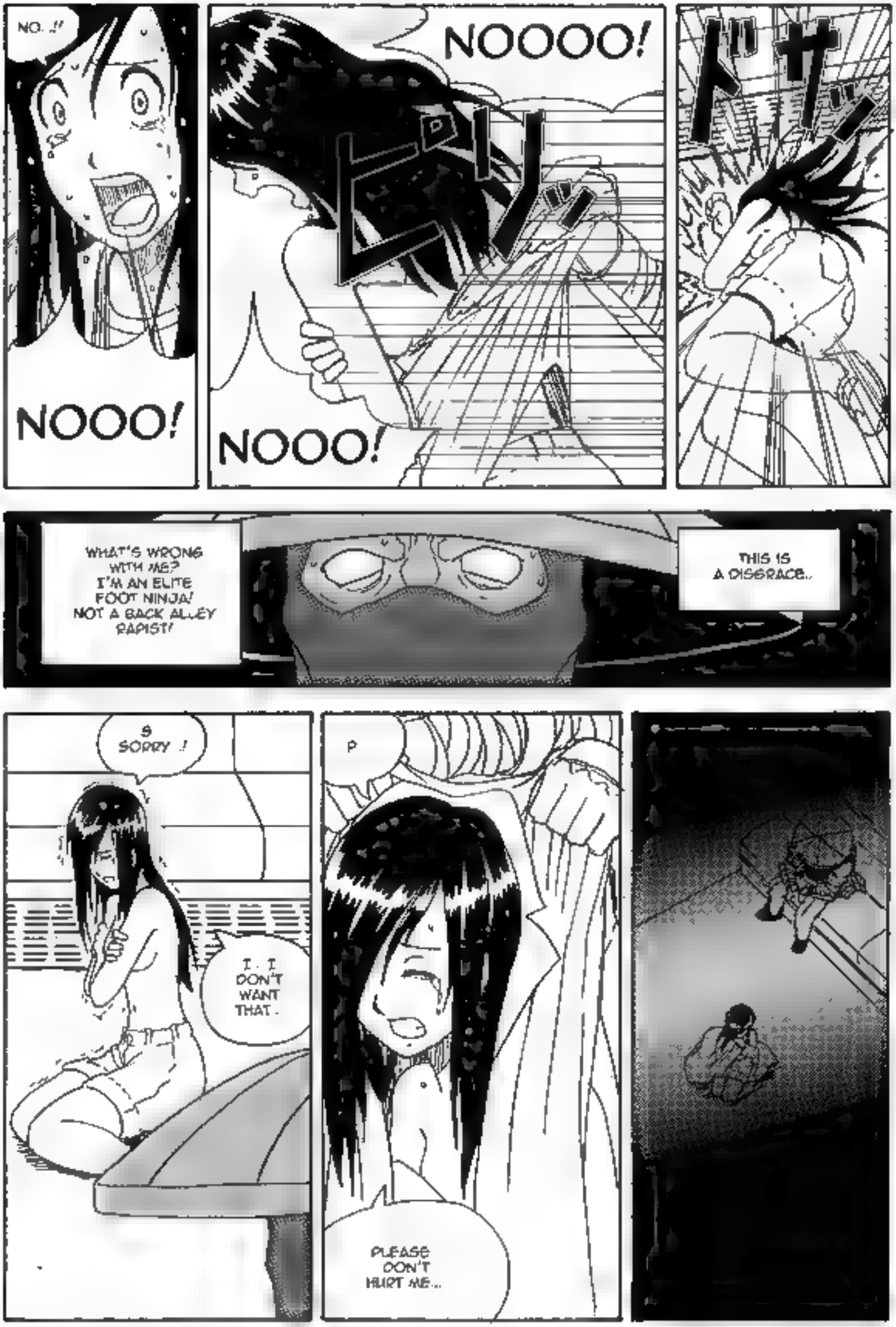
SHE WAS DRENCHED TO THE BONE AND SEEMED HYSTERICAL

NORMALLY I'D RATHER IGNORE *NORMAL* PEOPLE..

BUT IT WAS A LONG RIDE AND HER CONSTANT SOBBING STARTED GETTING ON MY NERVES.


HEY
KEEP IT DOWN.
SNIF
I
I'M SORRY
UH..
UHHH.
SNIF..
SNIF..
BITCH JUST WOULDN'T GIVE IT A REST
(HIC)
SNIF . SNIF
I WAS PLANNING ON TOSSING HER OUTSIDE SINCE WE WERE ALONE THERE WOULD BE NO WITNESS.
THEN I REALIZED: WE WERE INDEED COMPLETELY ALONE
MAYBE THAT'S WHY AS I GOT CLOSER MY FRUSTRATION SUBSIDED AND I WAS OVERCOME BY AN UNFAMILIAR FEELING.
INSTEAD OF YANKING HER ARM...
I FOUND MYSELF PULLING HER TOWARDS ME
SHE STOPPED CRYING AND HUDDLED AGAINST ME
SILENCE FILLED THE ROOM. ALL I COULD HEAR WAS THE TRAIN'S ENGINE
THAT'S WHEN I REMEMBERED THIS FEELING: IT WAS SUPPRESSED A LONG TIME AGO BY MY DEDICATION TO MY POSITION AS AN ELITE NINJA.
WHEN WAS THE LAST TIME I HAD A PRIVATE MOMENT WITH A WOMAN?


WHEN WAS THE LAST TIME
I GAVE IN TO MY URGES..
EVEN JUST A BIT...?
...!!
A.. AAAH...!!


NO..!!
NOOO!
NOOO!
NOOO!
WHAT'S WRONG WITH ME? I'M AN ELITE FOOT NINJA! NOT A BACK ALLEY RAPIST!
THIS IS A DISGRACE..
S SORRY ..!
I..I DON'T WANT THAT..
P
PLEASE DON'T HURT ME..

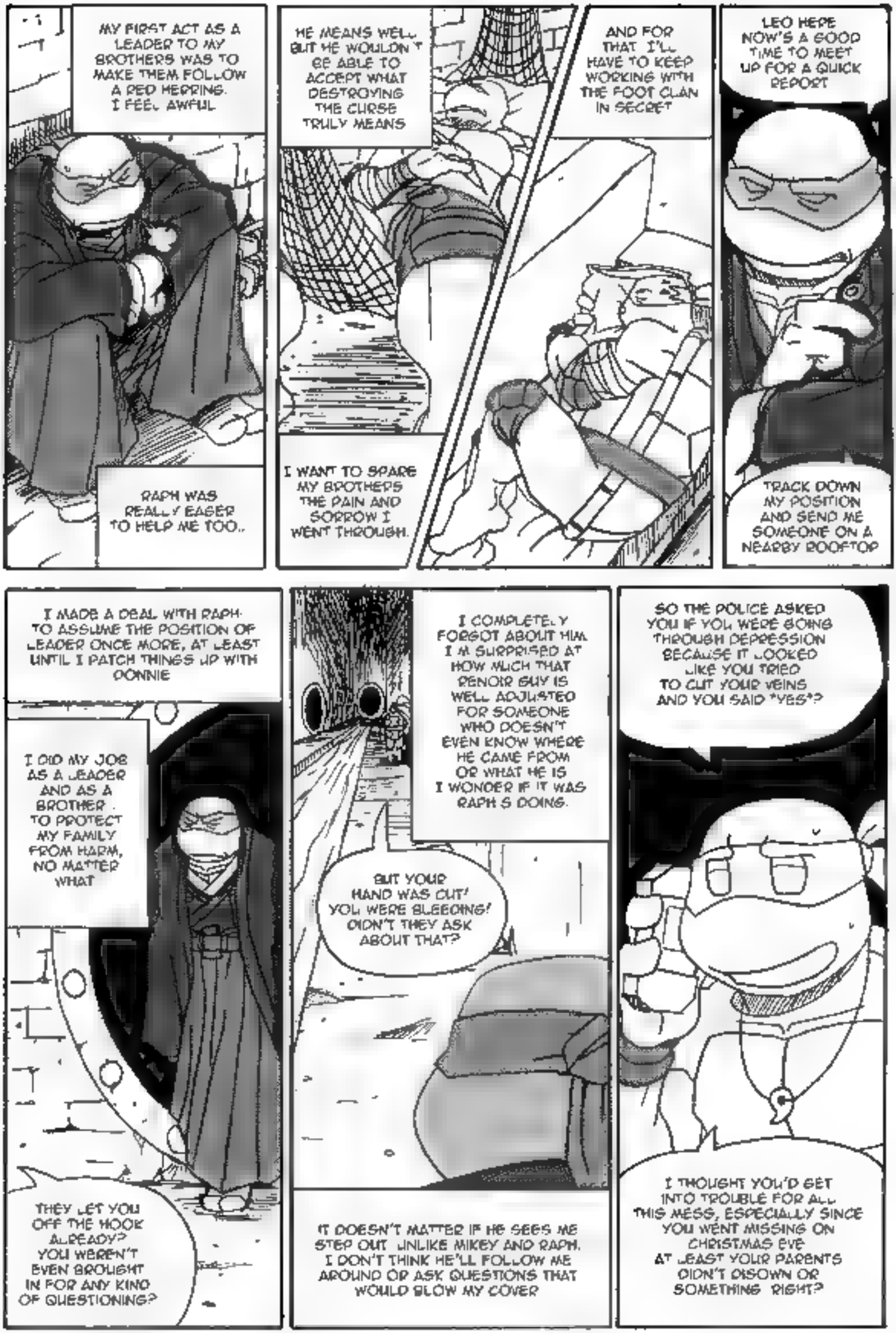

I GOT OFF AT THE NEXT STOP
THE LONGER I STAYED NEAR THIS GIRL THE MORE I FELT I'D LOSE CONTROL OF MYSELF
WAIT
DON'T LEAVE ME ALONE
PLEASE STAY WITH ME



MUTANT NINJA TURTLES GAIDEN

CHAPTER 22:
THE WITCH-HUNT OF A BLOODLINE




MY FIRST ACT AS A LEADER TO MY BROTHERS WAS TO MAKE THEM FOLLOW A RED HERRING. I FEEL AWFUL
RAPH WAS REALLY EAGER TO HELP ME TOO..
HE MEANS WELL BUT HE WOULDN'T BE ABLE TO ACCEPT WHAT DESTROYING THE CURSE TRULY MEANS
I WANT TO SPARE MY BROTHERS THE PAIN AND SORROW I WENT THROUGH.
AND FOR THAT I'LL HAVE TO KEEP WORKING WITH THE FOOT CLAN IN SECRET
LEO HERE NOW'S A GOOD TIME TO MEET UP FOR A QUICK REPORT
TRACK DOWN MY POSITION AND SEND ME SOMEONE ON A NEARBY ROOFTOP
I MADE A DEAL WITH RAPH TO ASSUME THE POSITION OF LEADER ONCE MORE, AT LEAST UNTIL I PATCH THINGS UP WITH DONNIE
I DID MY JOB AS A LEADER AND AS A BROTHER . TO PROTECT MY FAMILY FROM HARM, NO MATTER WHAT
THEY LET YOU OFF THE HOOK ALREADY? YOU WEREN'T EVEN BROUGHT IN FOR ANY KIND OF QUESTIONING?
I COMPLETELY FORGOT ABOUT HIM. I M SURPRISED AT HOW MUCH THAT RENOIR GUY IS WELL ADJUSTED FOR SOMEONE WHO DOESN'T EVEN KNOW WHERE HE CAME FROM OR WHAT HE IS I WONDER IF IT WAS RAPH S DOING.
BUT YOUR HAND WAS CUT! YOU WERE BLEEDING! DIDN'T THEY ASK ABOUT THAT?
IT DOESN'T MATTER IF HE SEES ME STEP OUT UNLIKE MIKEY AND RAPH. I DON'T THINK HE'LL FOLLOW ME AROUND OR ASK QUESTIONS THAT WOULD BLOW MY COVER
SO THE POLICE ASKED YOU IF YOU WERE GOING THROUGH DEPRESSION BECAUSE IT LOOKED LIKE YOU TRIED TO CUT YOUR VEINS AND YOU SAID "YES"?
I THOUGHT YOU'D GET INTO TROUBLE FOR ALL THIS MESS, ESPECIALLY SINCE YOU WENT MISSING ON CHRISTMAS EVE AT LEAST YOUR PARENTS DIDN'T DISOWN OR SOMETHING RIGHT?


NO, NOT AT ALL, BUT ..
INSTEAD THEY TRIED TO FIND REASONS THAT COULD'VE CAUSED MY SO-CALLED DEPRESSION. THEY EVEN THOUGHT THAT I WAS ASHAMED OF BEING ADOPTED! REALLY!
I'M GLAD TO THEM AS PARENTS..
BY THE WAY, I PAID SHADOW A VISIT THIS EVENING
I HEARD YOU DIDN'T EXACTLY LEAVE EMPTY-HANDED.
GUESS WHAT I M WEARING ON MY BALD HEAD RIGHT NOW!
OHOHO!
YOU IDIOT


YOU KNOW, YESTERDAY WHEN I TOLD YOU I DIDN'T FIND MY TRUE SELF YET. IT'S BECAUSE I DON'T REMEMBER MUCH ABOUT THE TIME I SPENT IN JAPAN BEFORE I WAS ADOPTED
IT'S ONE THING TO SAY THAT WHO I AM AS A PERSON IS MY "TRUE SELF" BUT IN MY HEART I KNOW THAT THE PICTURE'S NOT COMPLETE UNTIL I PIECE OUT MY CHILDHOOD FROM COLD HARD FACTS ABOUT MY ORIGINS.


I SEE WHAT YOU'RE GETTING AT . LET'S BOTH DO OUR BEST IN OUR QUESTS FOR OUR TRUTHS
UNTIL THEN I M JUST GLAD THAT EVEN IF I M "RENOIR" TO YOU. WE CAN TALK AS IF... THINGS WERE THE SAME AS THEY ALWAYS WERE IN OUR MEMORIES

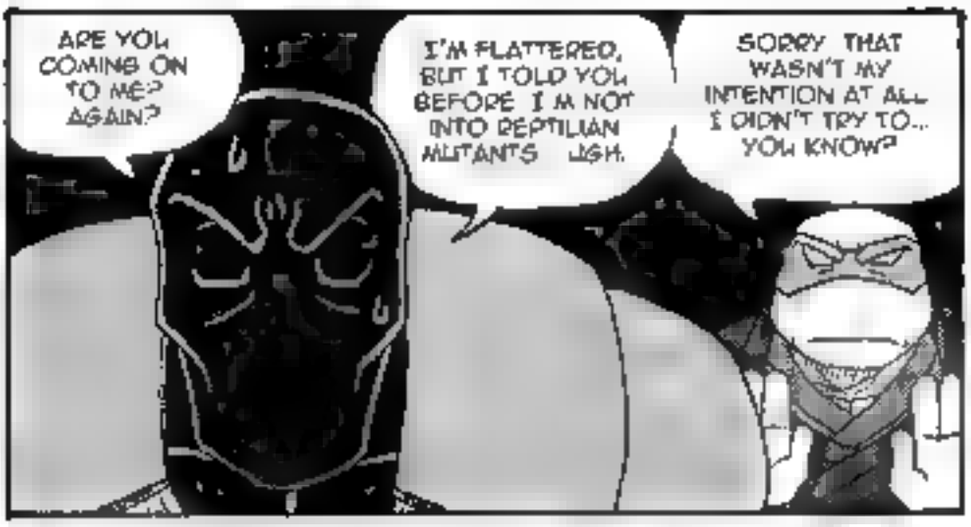

OH, BY THE WAY CAN YOU TELL ME HOW YOUR OTHER FRIENDS ARE YOU DOING? LIKE THE ONE WITH THE ORANGE MASK? HE SAVED ME BUT GOT HURT BADLY
AND THAT OTHER ONE TOO HE WAS AT THE FACTORY AS WELL YOU KNOW THE HUGE GUY WHO TALKS LIKE A GANGSTER? THE ONE WHO LIED TO ME AND ALMOST K KISSED ME?
WHY DO YOU BRING THAT UP AGAIN? DON'T TELL ME GOT A THING FOR THAT STINKY VIOLENT FATSO! PLEASE PLEASE PLEASE!
Y .YOU DON'T? S...SORRY
IT'S JUST I M UGLY ENOUGH AS I AM, BUT HE S EVEN UGLIER
IF YOU LIKE HIM MORE THAN ME THEN. SNIF
BUT SINCE YOU'RE ASKING, THEY'RE DOING VERY WELL THEY'RE ACTUALLY NICE PEOPLE WHEN YOU LOOK PAST THEIR APPEARANCE
I'VE ONLY BEEN WITH THEM FOR A FEW MONTHS SINCE I.. TURNED INTO THIS HOWEVER, WE'VE BEEN THROUGH A LOT THEY ARE ALMOST LIKE A SURROGATE FAMILY TO ME
I'VE ONCE BEEN CLOSE TO THEM AS WELL. I'VE GONE THROUGH A LOT WITH THEM. BUT THAT WAS 17 YEARS AGO.
HOW IRONIC I SPENT 17 YEARS OF MY LIFE WITH MY BROTHERS, YET I FEEL LIKE MORE OF AN OUTSIDER THAN THIS GUY WHO ONLY KNEW THEM FOR A FEW MONTHS
WHO AM I KIDDING.. IT'S OBVIOUS THAT I M THE ONE WHO SET UP A BARRIER BETWEEN MY FAMILY AND I ONCE THIS IS ALL OVER THEN MAYBE... JUST MAYBE THEY WILL FORGIVE ME MAYBE I'LL FEEL LIKE PART OF THE FAMILY AGAIN
AND THERE S A LONG LOST BROTHER IN THEIR FAMILY
JUST BETWEEN YOU AND ME HE S VERY KIND BUT HE ACTS SO ZEN IT MAKES ME FEEL UNCOMFORTABLE. HE'S LIKE A A MONK WITH A METAL POLE UP HIS ASS.
ERGL
HIS NAME'S LEONARDO.
HI, RENOIR
AH.


GWAAAAH!!
W WHAT? SOMETHING S ON MY FACE?
CLICK!
HUH? RENOIR? HELLO? HELLO?
PFF
WH. WHAT A SURPRISE, SIR! I THOUGHT I WAS THE ONLY ONE STILL AWAKE! WEREN'T YOU SLEEPING?
I WISH I COULD. BUT IT TAKES MORE THAN A DAY FOR ME TO OVERCOME THE JET LAG.. AND YOU?
I REALLY CAN'T .. I M A LIGHT SLEEPER AND THERE S A SNORING CONCERTO GOING ON IN THAT LAIR
JUST WHEN I THOUGHT I GOT USED TO MASTER RAPHAEL'S SNORING ME NICHELANGELO COMES IN THE PICTURE AND ADDS TO THIS UNHOLY WHITE NOISE.
SEE WHAT SLEEP DEPRIVATION HAS DONE TO MY STILL RELATIVELY BEAUTIFUL FACE?
HMM..
IS THAT A MAGATAMA HANGING ON YOUR NECK?
OH, THIS PENDANT?
MY CHILDHOOD FRIEND DAVIANNA GAVE IT TO ME FOR CHRISTMAS. IT'S SUPPOSED TO BE SOME KIND OF A PROTECTIVE LUCKY CHARM.
I M GUESSING SHE S JAPANESE THEN. SAY DO YOU HAVE ANY PHOTOS OF HER YOU COULD SHARE WITH ME?
S. SIR .. SHE'S A MINOR ARE YOU SERIOUS?
NO, NOT THAT KIND OF PHOTOS! I MEAN. . NEVERMIND
I M GOING FOR A STROLL OUTSIDE.
TAKE IT EASY SIR
I'D BETTER BE CAREFUL WHAT I SAY
WEIRD.


IT STOPPED SNOWING..
LEONARDO. REPORTING FOR DUTY
OH. IT'S YOU. WHO ELSE WOULD THEY SEND OTHER THAN MY USUAL PARTNER.
I'M AS THRILLED AS YOU ARE TO TO BE HERE FOR YOU. FREAK
. GAYWAD.
I NEVER THOUGHT I'D SEE A 34 YEAR OLD NINJA RUNNING HOME CRYING TO HIS FAMILY IN THE MIDDLE OF HIS MISSION. SUCH A DISPLAY OF SELF CONTROL.
WELL I.
.AND I DON'T BLAME YOU. YOU'VE BEEN THROUGH A LOT
THANKS. SADAO


YOU SAW YOUR BROTHERS ARE YOU SATISFIED?
YES I AM. THEY ARE BETTER OFF THAN I IMAGINED THEY'D BE, CONSIDERING HOW I DROPPED THE BALL ON THEM WHEN THEY NEEDED ME THE MOST 17 YEARS AGO.
YOU'RE DOING WHAT'S BEST FOR THEM RIGHT NOW YOU'RE A GOOD BROTHER
(SIGH)
HEY ABOUT THE ROGUE FOOT NINJAS IN NEW YORK..
IT'S ALL UNDER CONTROL WE ALSO CAPTURED THEIR LEADER
I HEARD HE'S THE LAST OF SHREDDER'S ELITE NINJAS.. WHAT'S HIS NAME?
EIKICHI GOTOH HE'S RYOTA'S OLDER BROTHER
I'M FINE JUST LET GO OF IT IT COULDN'T BE HELPED.
I... I SEE HEY I DIDN'T MEAN TO BRING HIM UP I
NOW WHAT?

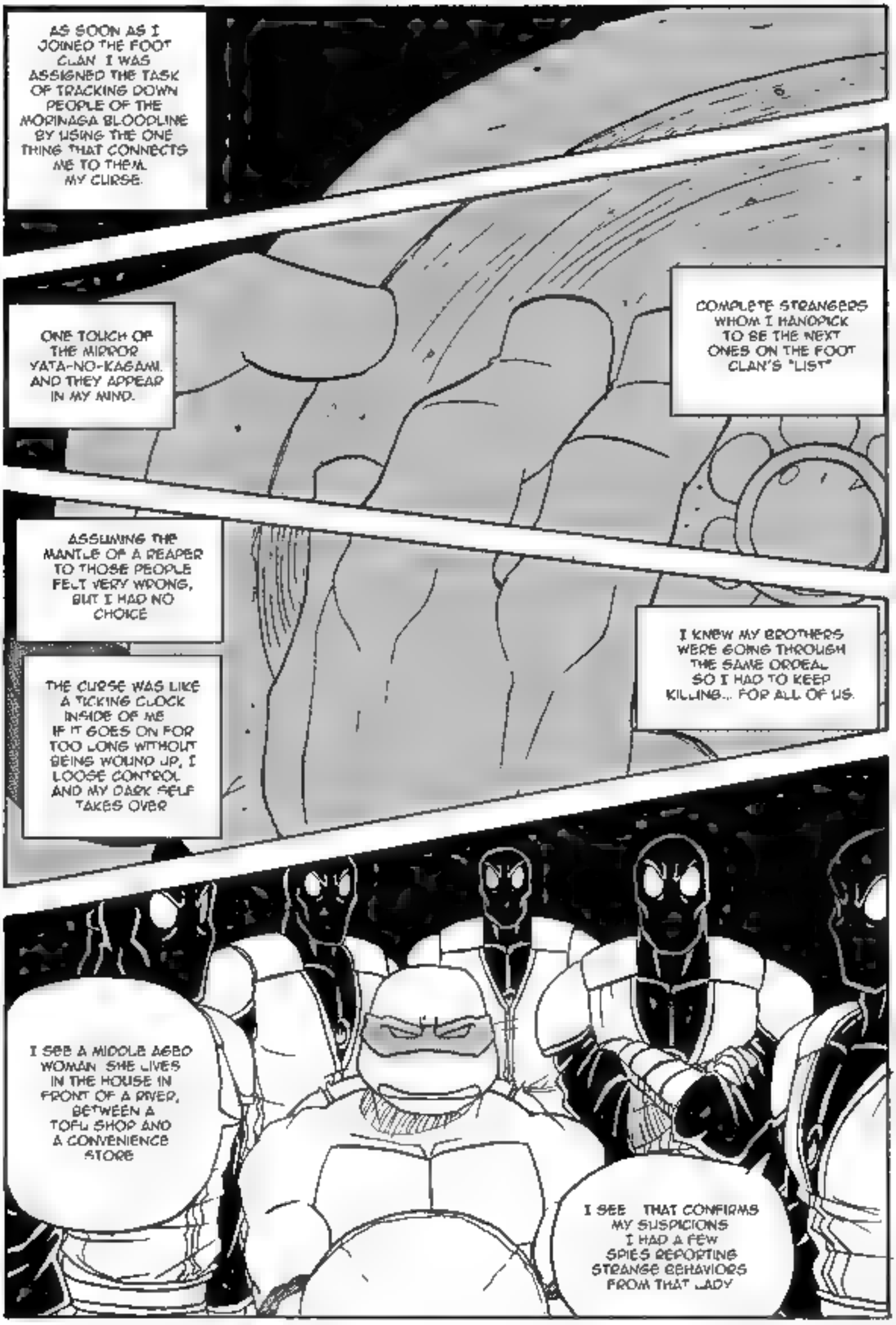


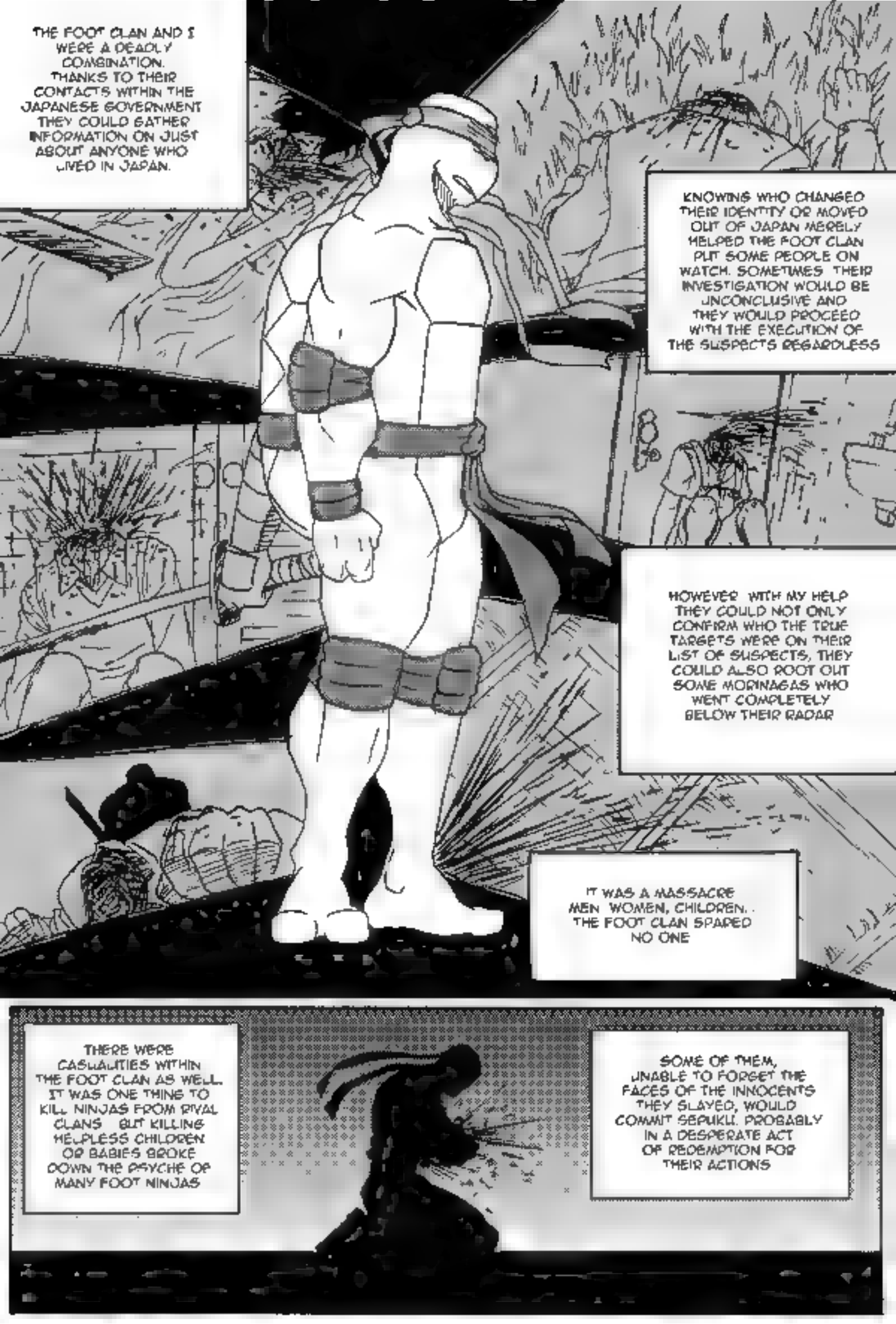

ARE YOU COMING ON TO ME? AGAIN?
I'M FLATTERED, BUT I TOLD YOU BEFORE I M NOT INTO REPTILIAN MUTANTS UGH.
SORRY THAT WASN'T MY INTENTION AT ALL I DIDN'T TRY TO... YOU KNOW?


MAN.. YOU'RE SO UPTIGHT, TALKING TO YOU IS A SURE WAY TO FEEL AWKWARD
OH COME ON AND CAN YOU LOOK ME IN THE FACE WHEN WE TALK?
THERE YOU GO AGAIN. SOMETIMES I WONDER IF YOU BE DOING IT ON PURPOSE


WHATEVER YOU SAY BUT YOU KNOW A LONG TIME AGO, I D NEVER HAVE IMAGINED THAT WE'D BE ON SPEAKING TERMS ONE DAY
FATE IS A CRUEL, BIPOLAR MISTRESS RIGHT?
IT'S ALMOST A MIRACLE THAT THE BOTH OF US ARE STILL ALIVE RIGHT HERE, RIGHT NOW


MISTRESS HUH? I'D SAY BITCH TO BE HONEST BUT I AGREE BACK THEN, I THOUGHT ONLY ONE OF US WOULD BE LEFT STANDING TODAY


AS SOON AS I JOINED THE FOOT CLAN I WAS ASSIGNED THE TASK OF TRACKING DOWN PEOPLE OF THE MORINAGA BLOODLINE BY USING THE ONE THING THAT CONNECTS ME TO THEM. MY CURSE.
ONE TOUCH OF THE MIRROR YATA-NO-KAGAMI. AND THEY APPEAR IN MY MIND.
COMPLETE STRANGERS WHOM I HANDPICK TO BE THE NEXT ONES ON THE FOOT CLAN'S "LIST"
ASSUMING THE MANTLE OF A REAPER TO THOSE PEOPLE FELT VERY WRONG, BUT I HAD NO CHOICE
THE CURSE WAS LIKE A TICKING CLOCK INSIDE OF ME IF IT GOES ON FOR TOO LONG WITHOUT BEING WOUND UP, I LOOSE CONTROL AND MY DARK SELF TAKES OVER
I KNEW MY BROTHERS WERE GOING THROUGH THE SAME ORDEAL SO I HAD TO KEEP KILLING... FOR ALL OF US.
I SEE A MIDDLE AGED WOMAN SHE LIVES IN THE HOUSE IN FRONT OF A RIVER, BETWEEN A TOFU SHOP AND A CONVENIENCE STORE
I SEE THAT CONFIRMS MY SUSPICIONS I HAD A FEW SPIES REPORTING STRANGE BEHAVIORS FROM THAT LADY


THE FOOT CLAN AND I WERE A DEADLY COMBINATION. THANKS TO THEIR CONTACTS WITHIN THE JAPANESE GOVERNMENT THEY COULD GATHER INFORMATION ON JUST ABOUT ANYONE WHO LIVED IN JAPAN.
KNOWING WHO CHANGED THEIR IDENTITY OR MOVED OUT OF JAPAN MERELY HELPED THE FOOT CLAN PUT SOME PEOPLE ON WATCH. SOMETIMES THEIR INVESTIGATION WOULD BE UNCONCLUSIVE AND THEY WOULD PROCEED WITH THE EXECUTION OF THE SUSPECTS REGARDLESS
HOWEVER WITH MY HELP THEY COULD NOT ONLY CONFIRM WHO THE TRUE TARGETS WERE ON THEIR LIST OF SUSPECTS, THEY COULD ALSO ROOT OUT SOME MORINAGAS WHO WENT COMPLETELY BELOW THEIR RADAR
IT WAS A MASSACRE MEN WOMEN, CHILDREN.. THE FOOT CLAN SPARED NO ONE
THERE WERE CASUALITIES WITHIN THE FOOT CLAN AS WELL. IT WAS ONE THING TO KILL NINJAS FROM RIVAL CLANS BUT KILLING HELPLESS CHILDREN OR BABIES BROKE DOWN THE PSYCHE OF MANY FOOT NINJAS
SOME OF THEM, UNABLE TO FORGET THE FACES OF THE INNOCENTS THEY SLAYED, WOULD COMMIT SEPUKU. PROBABLY IN A DESPERATE ACT OF REDEMPTION FOR THEIR ACTIONS

KARAI FREQUENTLY MET WITH INFLUENCIAL PEOPLE THROUGHOUT JAPAN TO REMIND THEM OF THE IMPORTANCE TO KEEP OUR MISSION SECRET

IN HER ABSENCE I WAS IN CHARGE OF OPERATIONS IN THE FOOT CLAN BECAUSE OF MY AFFINITY WITH THE CURSE

SHE GAVE ME ACCESS TO ALL DOCUMENTS ABOUT POTENTIAL TARGETS AS WELL AS INFORMATION ABOUT THE CURSE THAT WAS PASSED ON FOR GENERATIONS WITHIN THE CLAN

ACCORDING TO THE CLAN'S RECORDS THE FIRST PERSON WHO TOUCHED THE CURSED TOTSUKA SWORD WAS A MORINAGA

YAMATA-NO-OROCHI TRIED TO CORRUPT HIM, BUT COULDN'T JUST LIKE HIS NAME SUGGESTED, MORINAGA WAS BLESSED WITH THE "ETERNAL PROTECTION"

守永

MORINAGA IMMEDIATELY TRIED TO EXORCISE THE MONSTER BUT THE RITUAL FAILED AND AS A RESULT, IT WAS ABLE TO MIX PART OF ITS SOUL WITH MORINAGA'S.

THUS YAMATA-NO-OROCHI SHARES THE MORINAGA'S "ETERNAL PROTECTION" AS LONG AS THE MORINAGAS ARE ALIVE. SO IS THE MONSTER

I THOUGHT YOU'D BE HERE AS USUAL KAPPA

JUST BECAUSE KARAI PUT YOU IN COMMAND IN HER ABSENCE DOESN'T MEAN YOU CAN SLACK OFF

SADAO, I'M DOING SOME RESEARCH ABOUT THE CURSE I NEED TO KNOW MORE ABOUT THE ENEMY THAT WE'RE FIGHTING

ANYTHING TO REPORT?

YES! WE KILLED ANOTHER FAMILY TONIGHT! AND ONE OF MY COMRADES KILLED HIMSELF RIGHT AFTER THAT!!

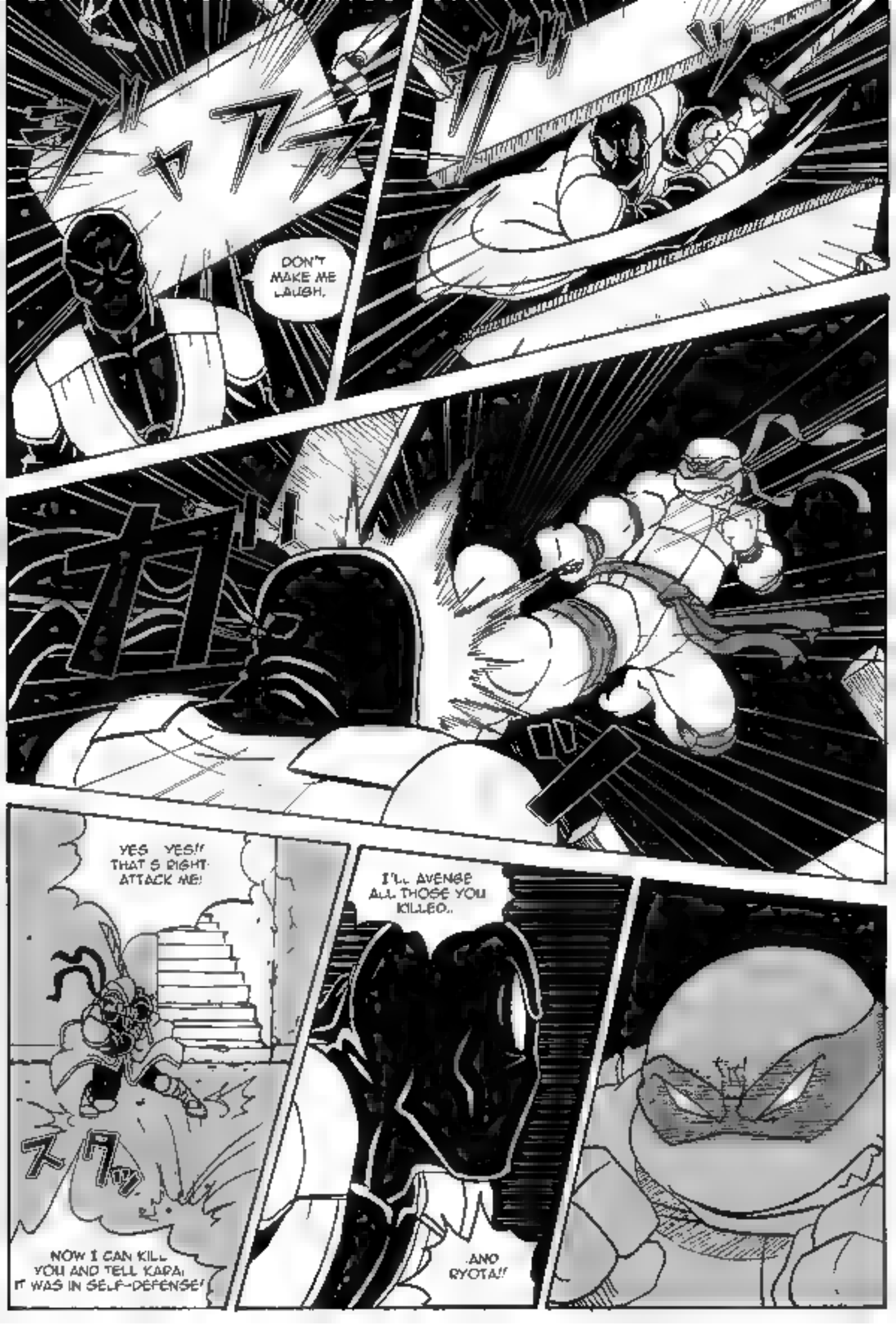
BUT YOU CAN'T RELATE TO THAT AT ALL, CAN YOU? YOU HYPOCRITE!!

DON'T YOU DARE SAY THAT YOU'RE "FIGHTING" ANYTHING AT ALL! EVER SINCE KARAI TOOK YOU IN, ALL YOU DID WAS TELL US WHO TO KILL AND STAY COOPED IN HERE READING SCROLLS WHILE WE TAINT OUR HANDS AND SOULS ON YOUR ORDERS!

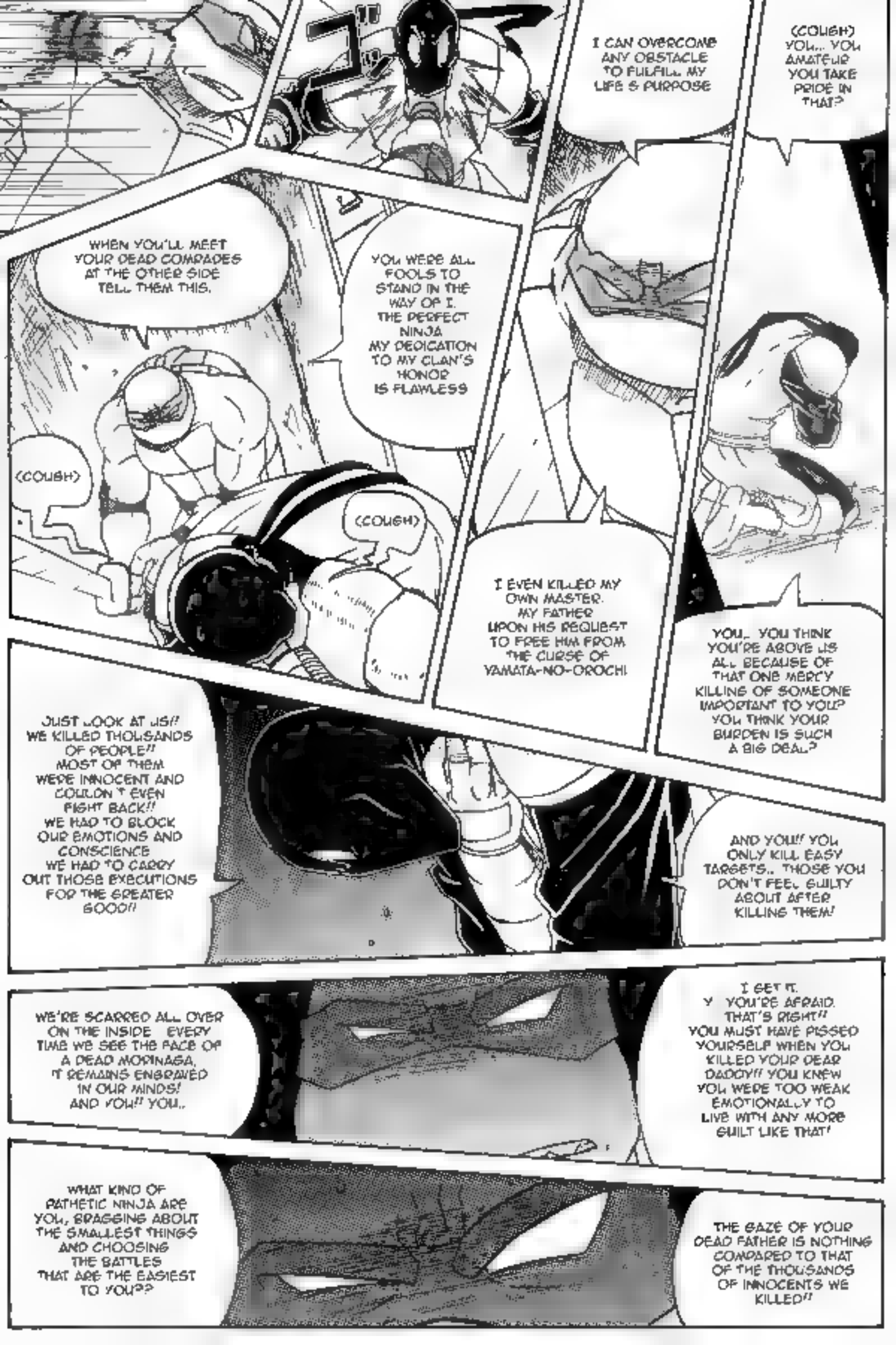
WHY SHOULD YOU, OF ALL PEOPLE, GET TO TURN A BLIND EYE TO THE HORRORS OF OUR MISSION?

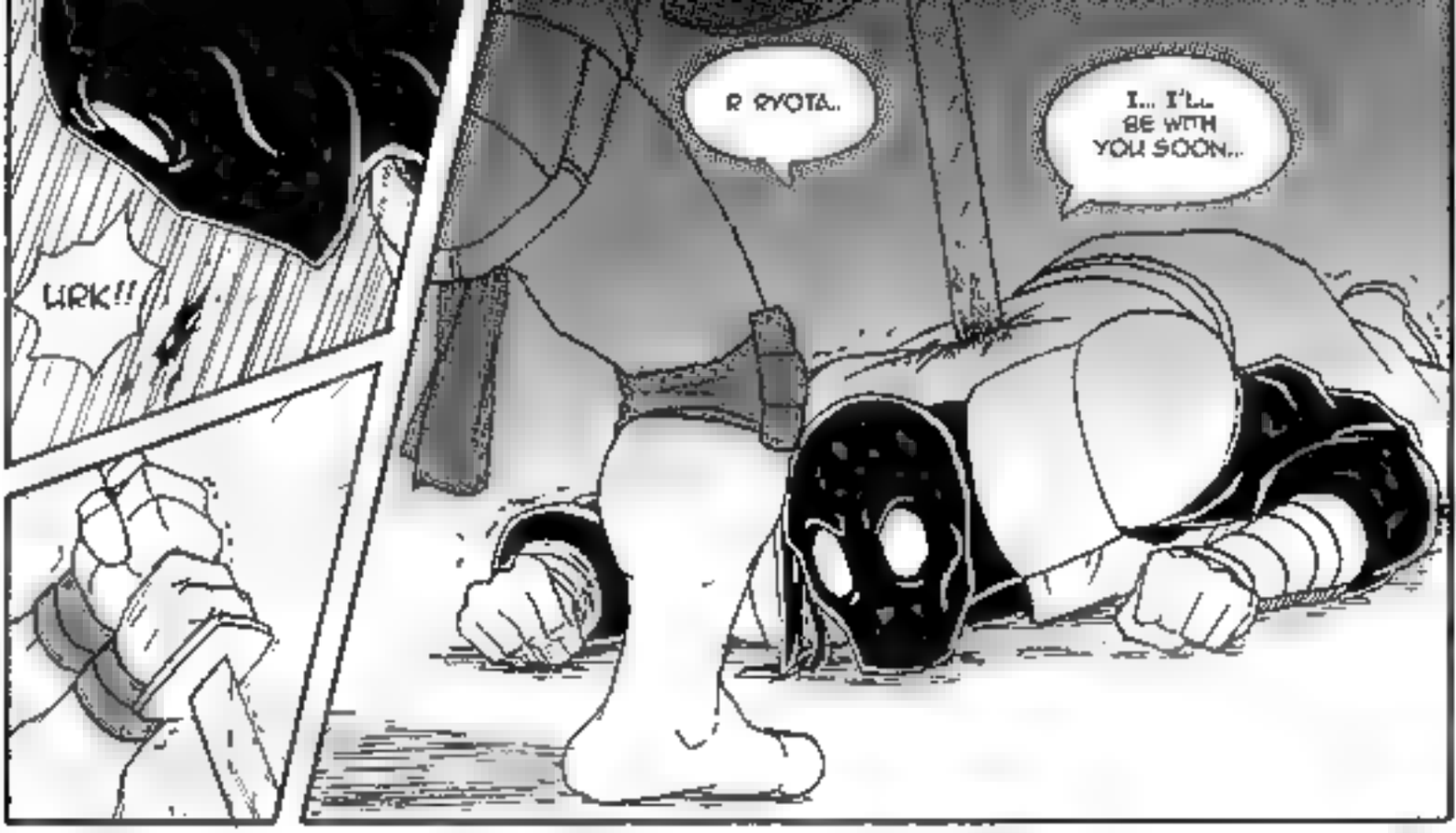
YOU'VE ALREADY KILLED SO MANY .. YOU'VE ALREADY KILLED RYOTA!! WHAT DIFFERENCE DOES IT MAKE FOR YOU TO STOP KILLING NOW? YOU'RE STILL GOING TO HELL.. WE ALL ARE!


NOW WHAT DO YOU HAVE TO SAY FOR YOURSELF?
WELL?
I.. I'VE BEEN THROUGH A LOT TOO THE CURSE MADE ME DO UNSPEAKABLE THINGS TO THOSE DEAR TO ME
THINGS SO HORRIBLE I'D RATHER NOT TALK OR THINK ABOUT IT RIGHT NOW
PLAYING THE PITY CARD, ARE YOU? YOU WON'T BE GETTING ANY SYMPATHY FROM ME.. YOU REALLY HAVE NO SELF-RESPECT
JUST LOOK AT YOU: A HAMATO NINJA WORKING AS A SUBORDINATE TO THE FOOT CLAN, YOUR ENEMY HOW IRONIC
HAMATO YOSHI IS PROBABLY TURNING IN HIS GRAVE RIGHT NOW
YOU'RE LIKE A WILD BOAR THAT DECIDED TO BASK IN CAPTIVITY SO IT CAN BE USED TO DIG UP TRUFFLES FOR HUMANS... EVER SO SLIGHTLY USEFUL, YET SO SADLY PATHETIC.
HOW DARE YOU INSULT MY HONOR?
YOU. A SCUMMY FOOT NINJA LIKE YOU.
BUT BECAUSE OF YOU,.. MY TURN CAME UP AT LAST
I COULDN'T FINISH YOU OFF LAST TIME.
THIS TIME I'LL MAKE SURE YOU DIE LIKE THE DOG YOU ARE.

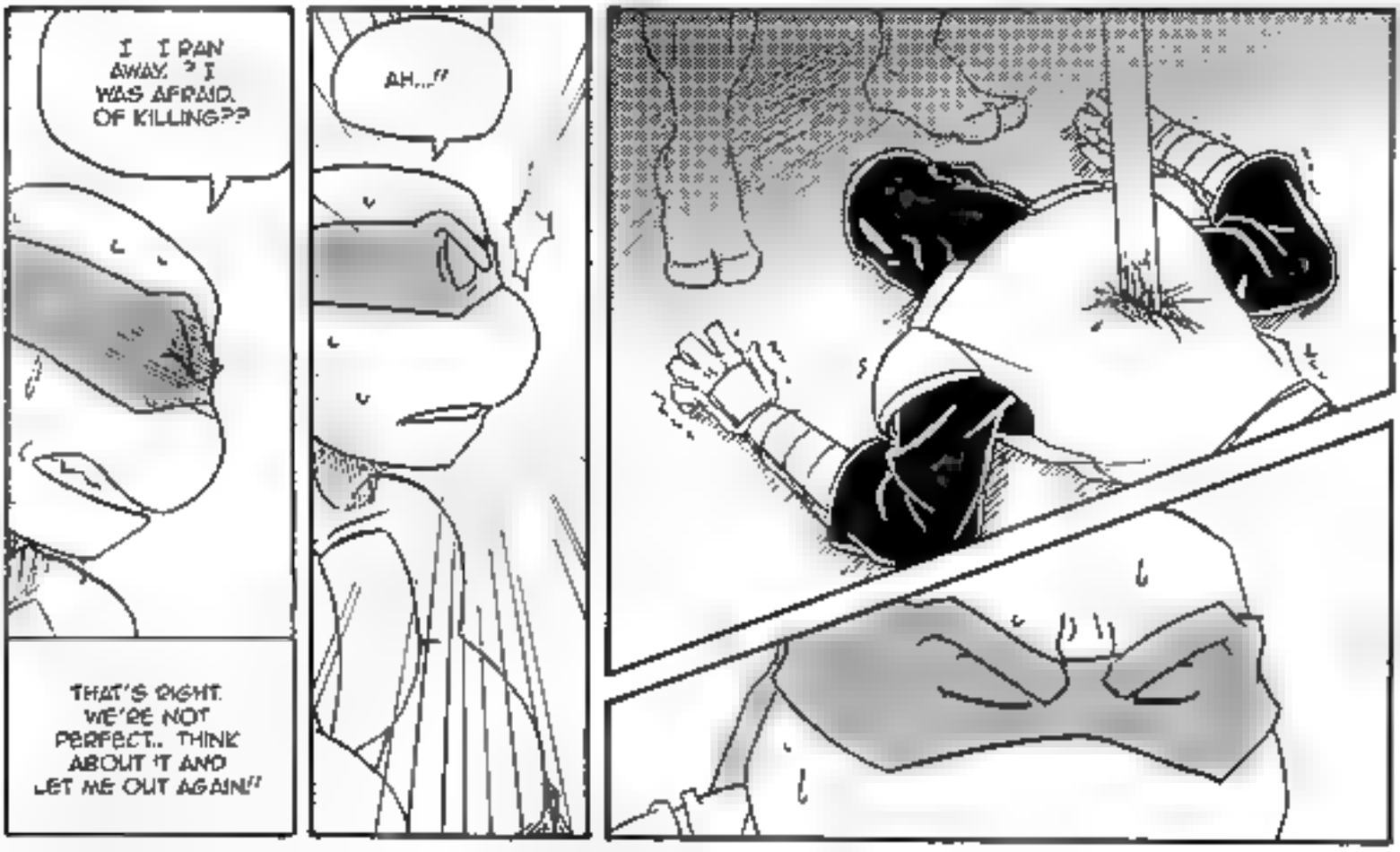

DON'T MAKE ME LAUGH.
YES YES!! THAT'S RIGHT ATTACK ME!
I'LL AVENGE ALL THOSE YOU KILLED..
NOW I CAN KILL YOU AND TELL KARAI IT WAS IN SELF-DEFENSE!
ANO RYOTA!!

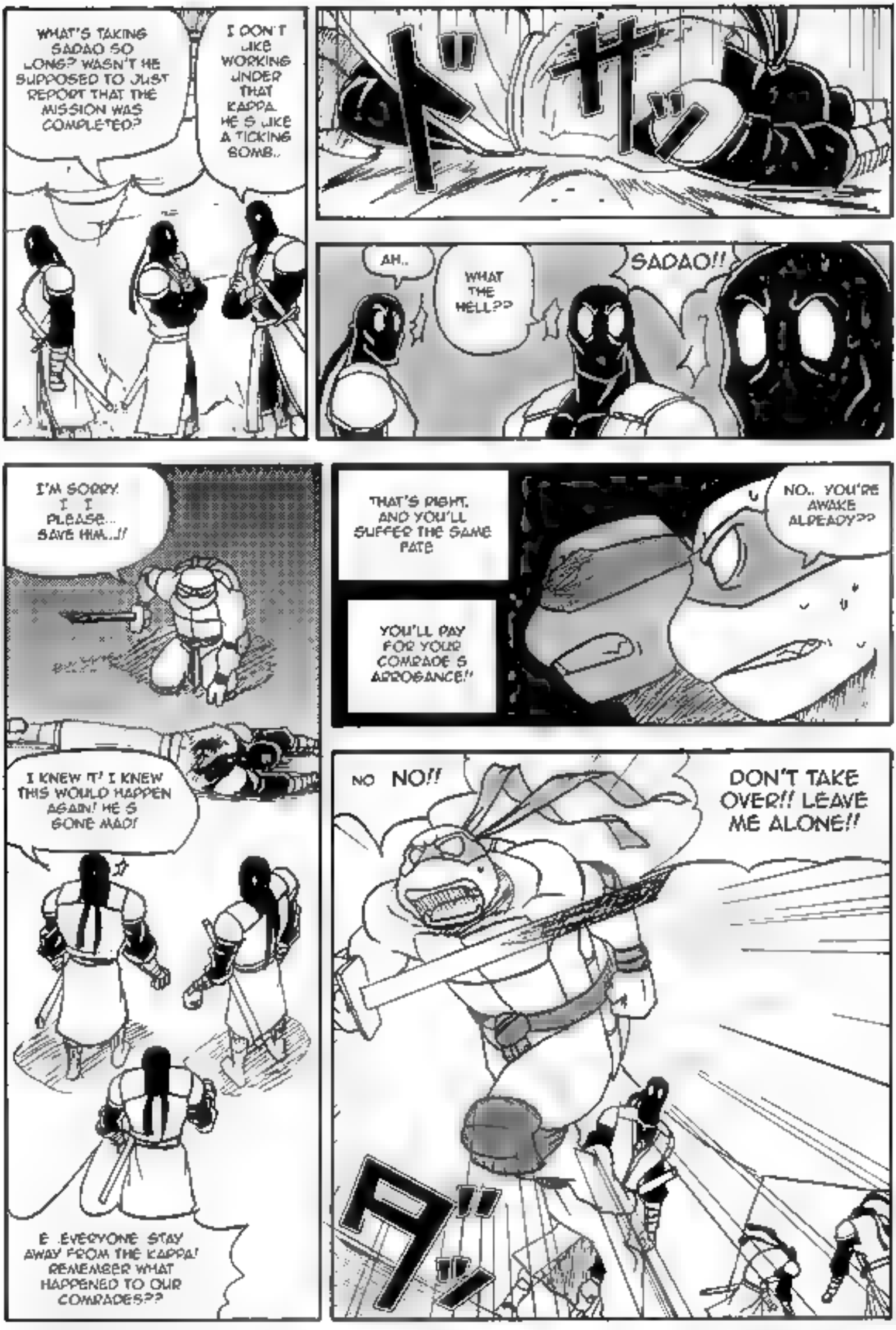

ﾀｯ
DIE!!!
ﾆﾔﾘ
ﾅﾞ
ﾆﾔﾘ
ｺﾞ


I CAN OVERCOME ANY OBSTACLE TO FULFILL MY LIFE'S PURPOSE
(COUGH) YOU... YOU AMATEUR YOU TAKE PRIDE IN THAT?
WHEN YOU'LL MEET YOUR DEAD COMRADES AT THE OTHER SIDE TELL THEM THIS.
YOU WERE ALL FOOLS TO STAND IN THE WAY OF I. THE PERFECT NINJA MY DEDICATION TO MY CLAN'S HONOR IS FLAWLESS
(COUGH)
(COUGH)
I EVEN KILLED MY OWN MASTER. MY FATHER UPON HIS REQUEST TO FREE HIM FROM THE CURSE OF YAMATA-NO-OROCHI
YOU... YOU THINK YOU'RE ABOVE US ALL BECAUSE OF THAT ONE MERCY KILLING OF SOMEONE IMPORTANT TO YOU? YOU THINK YOUR BURDEN IS SUCH A BIG DEAL?
JUST LOOK AT US!! WE KILLED THOUSANDS OF PEOPLE!! MOST OF THEM WERE INNOCENT AND COULDN'T EVEN FIGHT BACK!! WE HAD TO BLOCK OUR EMOTIONS AND CONSCIENCE WE HAD TO CARRY OUT THOSE EXECUTIONS FOR THE GREATER GOOD!!
AND YOU!! YOU ONLY KILL EASY TARGETS.. THOSE YOU DON'T FEEL GUILTY ABOUT AFTER KILLING THEM!
WE'RE SCARRED ALL OVER ON THE INSIDE EVERY TIME WE SEE THE FACE OF A DEAD MOPINAGA, IT REMAINS ENGRAVED IN OUR MINDS! AND YOU!! YOU..
I GET IT. Y YOU'RE AFRAID. THAT'S RIGHT!! YOU MUST HAVE PISSED YOURSELF WHEN YOU KILLED YOUR DEAR DADDY!! YOU KNEW YOU WERE TOO WEAK EMOTIONALLY TO LIVE WITH ANY MORE GUILT LIKE THAT!
WHAT KIND OF PATHETIC NINJA ARE YOU, BRAGGING ABOUT THE SMALLEST THINGS AND CHOOSING THE BATTLES THAT ARE THE EASIEST TO YOU??
THE GAZE OF YOUR DEAD FATHER IS NOTHING COMPARED TO THAT OF THE THOUSANDS OF INNOCENTS WE KILLED!!


URK!!
R RYOTA..
I... I'LL BE WITH YOU SOON...


STOP SPEAKING NONSENSE YOU WORTHLESS INSECT!!
I I'M LOOKING AT YOU DIE. I CAN DO THE SAME FOR ANYONE WHO FALLS BY MY BLADE!
EXCEPT FOR OUR MASTER FACE IT.. WE AVERTED OUR EYES FROM HIM FROM THE MOMENT HE ASKED US TO KILL HIM.
BECAUSE WE WERE AFRAID.. WE KNEW LOOKING AT HIM WOULD UPSET US AND STOP US FROM CARRYING OUT HIS ORDERS

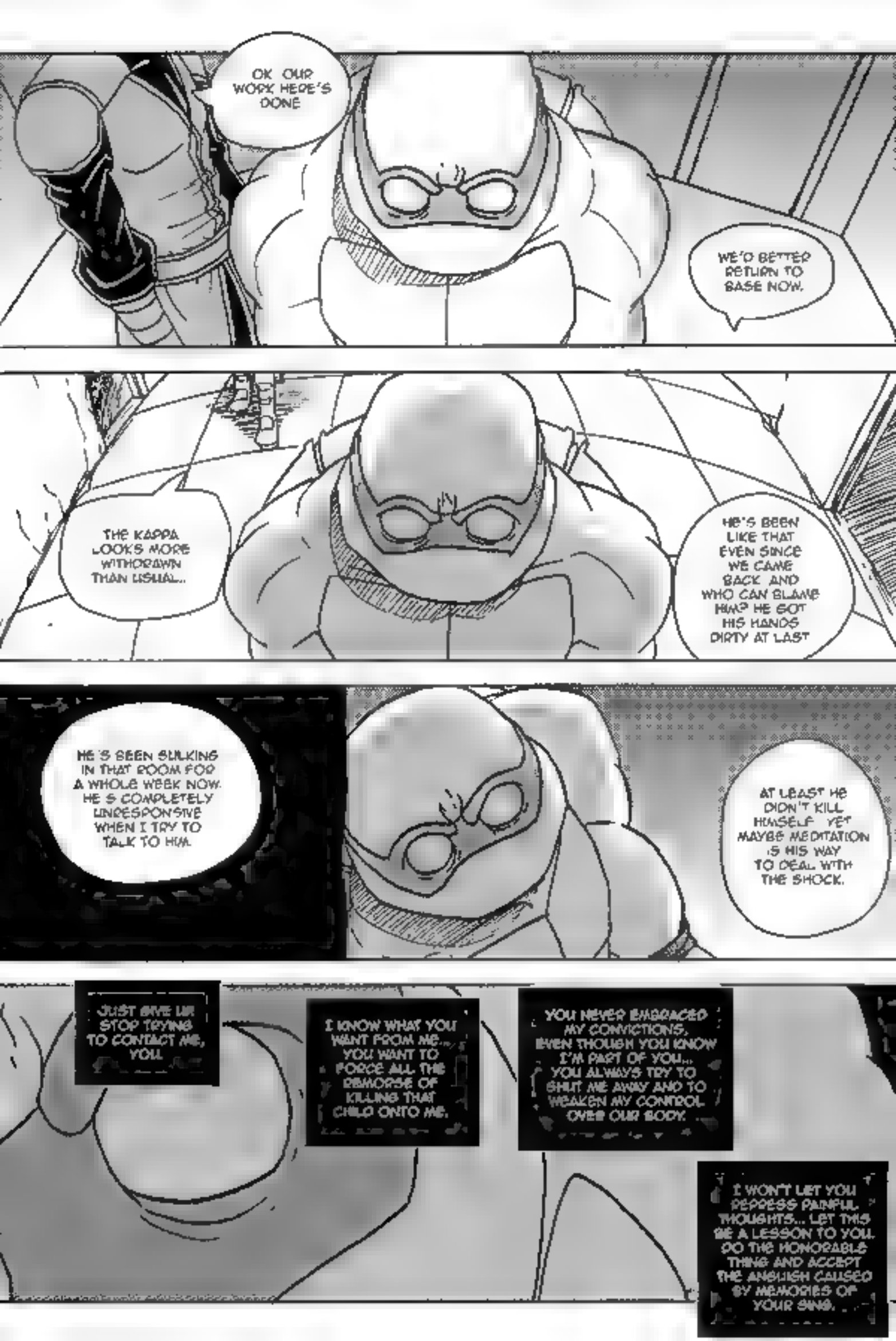

I I RAN AWAY. ? I WAS AFRAID. OF KILLING??
THAT'S RIGHT. WE'RE NOT PERFECT.. THINK ABOUT IT AND LET ME OUT AGAIN!!
AH...!!


WHAT'S TAKING SADAO SO LONG? WASN'T HE SUPPOSED TO JUST REPORT THAT THE MISSION WAS COMPLETED?
I DON'T LIKE WORKING UNDER THAT KAPPA. HE'S LIKE A TICKING BOMB..
AH..
WHAT THE HELL??
SADAO!!
I'M SORRY. I I PLEASE... SAVE HIM..!!
THAT'S RIGHT. AND YOU'LL SUFFER THE SAME FATE
YOU'LL PAY FOR YOUR COMRADE'S ARROGANCE!!
NO.. YOU'RE AWAKE ALREADY??
I KNEW IT! I KNEW THIS WOULD HAPPEN AGAIN! HE'S GONE MAD!
E .EVERYONE STAY AWAY FROM THE KAPPA! REMEMBER WHAT HAPPENED TO OUR COMRADES??
NO NO!!
DON'T TAKE OVER!! LEAVE ME ALONE!!

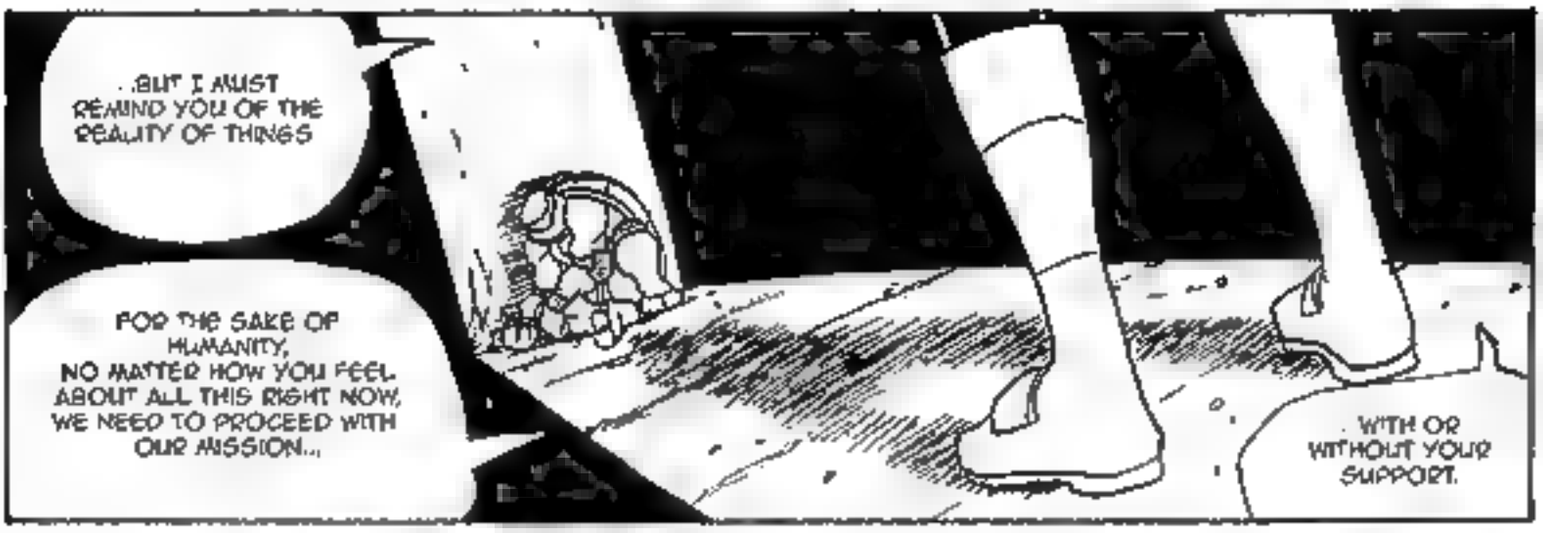

THE MERE PRESENCE OF THOSE NINJAS TRIGGER MY DARK SELF!
EVEN AS WEAKENED AS IT WAS IT WAS STILL ABLE TO AWAKEN QUICKLY! WITH ALL THOSE NINJAS AROUND ME I CAN'T CONTAIN IT!
I CAN'T KEEP KILLING THEM. THEY ARE MY ALLIES IN MY MISSION...
EVEN WHEN THEY KNEW HOW POTENTIALLY DANGEROUS I COULD BE THEY PUT UP WITH ME TO FIGHT THE CURSE
I CAN'T RUN AWAY EITHER EVEN IF IT WERE TO SAVE THEIR LIVES! WITHOUT MY POWERS THEY CAN'T DETECT WHO THE TARGETS ARE!
I MUST WEAKEN THE CURSE'S INFLUENCE ON ME


THERE IS NO WAY I CAN BACK DOWN.
I HAVE COME THIS FAR IN MY INVESTIGATION. AND NOW IT HAS ALL COME DOWN TO THIS.
AS MUCH AS I FEEL HORRIBLE ABOUT IT I NOW KNOW THAT THERE IS NO OTHER WAY
A SINGLE THOUGHT..
HAS KEPT ME MOVING FORWARD
HERE I AM.
STRUGGLING TO DEAL WITH THE CURSE'S INFLUENCE ON ME.
BUT WHAT OF THE OTHER PEOPLE WHO ARE CURSED AS WELL?
WHAT ABOUT RAPHAEL?
HE MUST BE SUFFERING AS WELL.
..AND ONLY I CAN HELP HIM RIGHT NOW.
HIS LIFE DEPENDS ON ME!!




OK. OUR WORK HERE'S DONE
WE'D BETTER RETURN TO BASE NOW.
THE KAPPA LOOKS MORE WITHDRAWN THAN USUAL...
HE'S BEEN LIKE THAT EVEN SINCE WE CAME BACK. AND WHO CAN BLAME HIM? HE GOT HIS HANDS DIRTY AT LAST
HE'S BEEN SULKING IN THAT ROOM FOR A WHOLE WEEK NOW. HE'S COMPLETELY UNRESPONSIVE WHEN I TRY TO TALK TO HIM.
AT LEAST HE DIDN'T KILL HIMSELF. YET MAYBE MEDITATION IS HIS WAY TO DEAL WITH THE SHOCK.
JUST GIVE UP. STOP TRYING TO CONTACT ME, YOU...
I KNOW WHAT YOU WANT FROM ME... YOU WANT TO FORCE ALL THE REMORSE OF KILLING THAT CHILD ONTO ME.
YOU NEVER EMBRACED MY CONVICTIONS, EVEN THOUGH YOU KNOW I'M PART OF YOU... YOU ALWAYS TRY TO SHUT ME AWAY AND TO WEAKEN MY CONTROL OVER OUR BODY.
I WON'T LET YOU REPOSSESS PAINFUL THOUGHTS... LET THIS BE A LESSON TO YOU. DO THE HONORABLE THING AND ACCEPT THE ANGUISH CAUSED BY MEMORIES OF YOUR SINS.

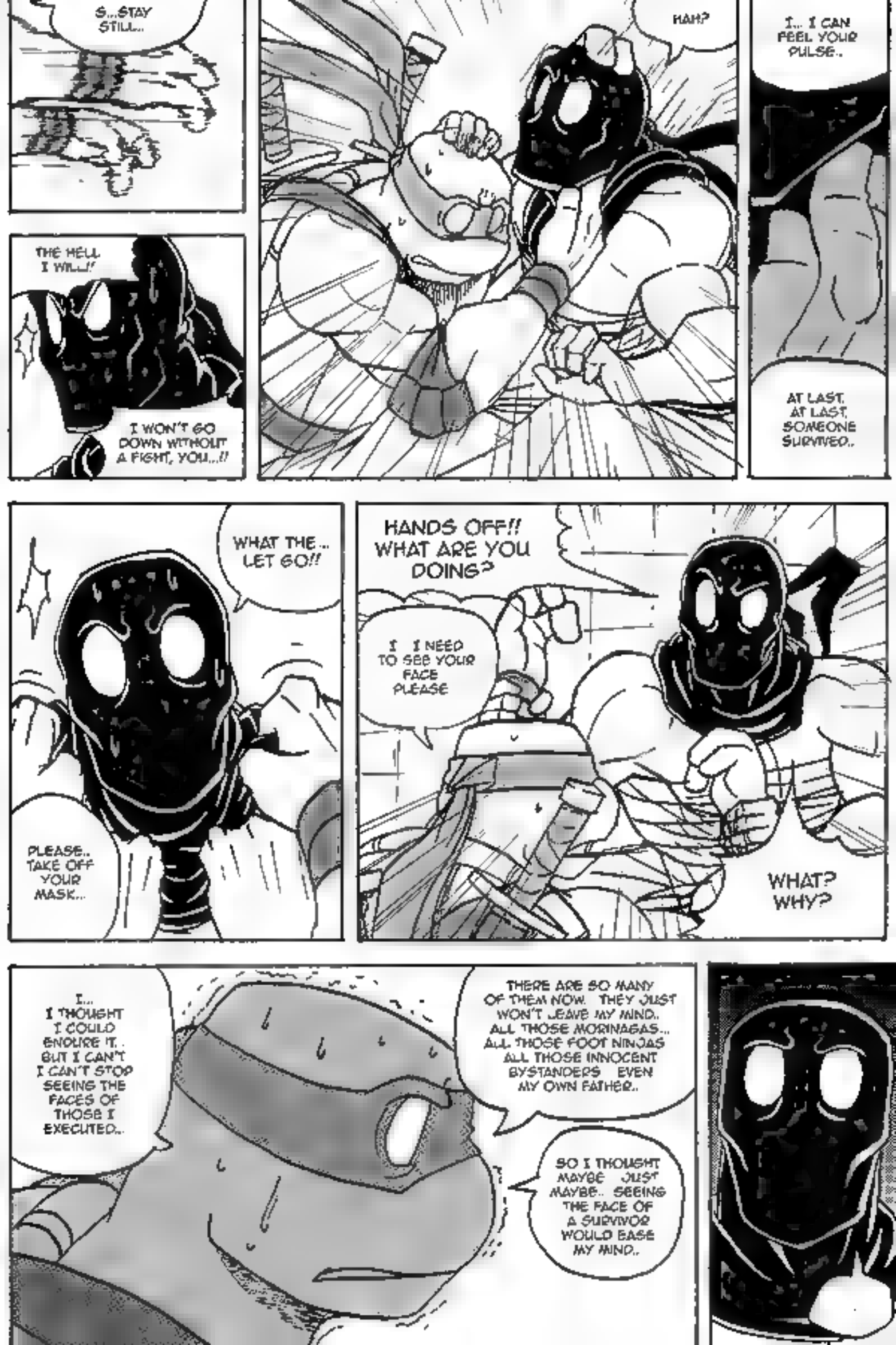

HAMATO.
I'M NOT HERE TO CONSOLE YOU OR TO GIVE YOU ORDERS
HE'S IN HERE..
..FOR A WHOLE WEEK...?


..BUT I MUST REMIND YOU OF THE REALITY OF THINGS
FOR THE SAKE OF HUMANITY, NO MATTER HOW YOU FEEL ABOUT ALL THIS RIGHT NOW, WE NEED TO PROCEED WITH OUR MISSION...
..WITH OR WITHOUT YOUR SUPPORT.

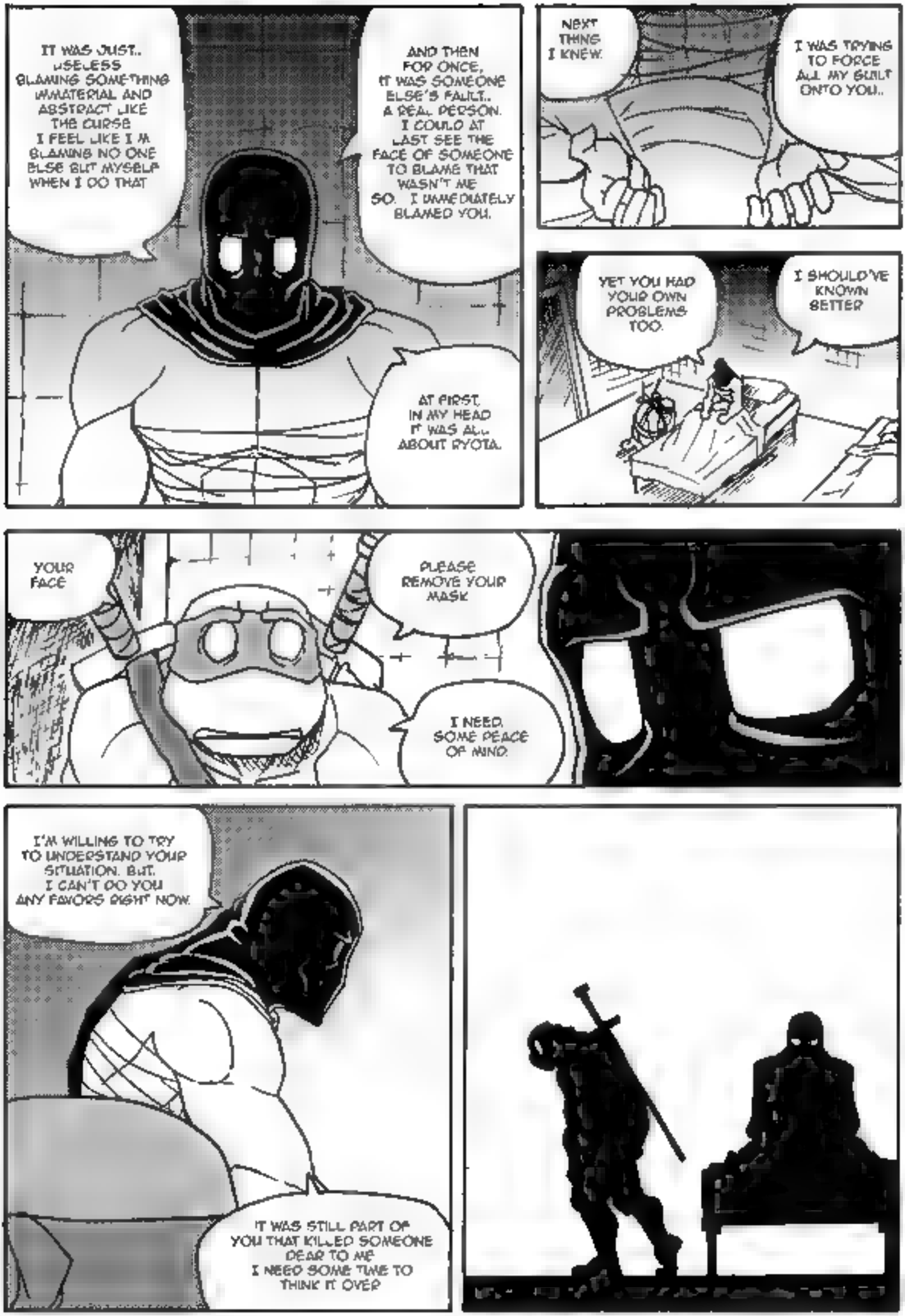

IN THE LATTER CASE WE'LL GO BACK TO RELYING ON OUR CONTACTS TO TRACK DOWN PEOPLE OF THE MORINAGA BLOODLINE.
THOUGH BY DOING THIS WE MIGHT END UP HUNTING THE WRONG PEOPLE.. WE CANNOT LET THIS STOP US
I WON'T GIVE UP, KARA.
IT WAS JUST MY FIRST TIME KILLING A CHILD. I NEEDED SOME TIME I.. I NOW UNDERSTAND WHAT THE OTHER NINJAS ARE GOING THROUGH...


AND I THINK I CAN LIVE WITH THE GUILT. I REALIZED THAT I WAS ALREADY USED TO IT ANYWAYS.. IF I BLOCK PART OF MY EMOTIONS AND CONSCIENCE, I CAN REMAIN FUNCTIONAL.. JUST LIKE SADAO SAID..
SO.. FROM NOW ON, I'LL DO OWN SHARE OF THE DIRTY WORK. I'LL KILL THE TARGETS MYSELF..


AND SO, THE HAMATO NINJA IS NOW WORKING ON THE FIELD.
IT WAS A DECISION HE TOOK HIMSELF A MONTH AGO. RIGHT AFTER HE INCAPACIATED YOU IN THAT INCIDENT
THANKS TO HIS SKILLS WE'RE MAKING A LOT OF PROGRESS IN OUR MISSION.
AS A RESULT, THE CURSE WAS CONTINUOUSLY IN A WEAKENED STATE THIS KEPT HIS "OTHER SELF" AT BAY.
THAT'S IT FOR THE BRIEFING
SORRY I CAN'T BE OF ANY HELP, KARAI...
REST WELL, SADAO. EVERYTHING IS UNDER CONTROL..
HEY. YOU.
I HEARD EVERYTHING FROM KARAI.
YOU THINK BY DOING ALL THAT SOMEONE'S GOING TO PITY YOU? YOU THINK YOU'RE DOING ENOUGH TO REDEEM YOURSELF?
YOU WON'T BE GETTING ANY SYMPATHY FROM ANYONE. FREAK I HOPE YOU DIE, AND..
SA..DAO..!
YOU'RE ALIVE. !!!


S...STAY STILL...
HAH?
I... I CAN FEEL YOUR PULSE..
AT LAST, AT LAST, SOMEONE SURVIVED..
THE HELL I WILL!!
I WON'T GO DOWN WITHOUT A FIGHT, YOU...!!
WHAT THE... LET GO!!
PLEASE.. TAKE OFF YOUR MASK...
HANDS OFF!! WHAT ARE YOU DOING?
I I NEED TO SEE YOUR FACE PLEASE
WHAT? WHY?
I... I THOUGHT I COULD ENDURE IT.. BUT I CAN'T I CAN'T STOP SEEING THE FACES OF THOSE I EXECUTED..
THERE ARE SO MANY OF THEM NOW. THEY JUST WON'T LEAVE MY MIND.. ALL THOSE MORINAGAS... ALL THOSE FOOT NINJAS ALL THOSE INNOCENT BYSTANDERS EVEN MY OWN FATHER..
SO I THOUGHT MAYBE JUST MAYBE.. SEEING THE FACE OF A SURVIVOR WOULD EASE MY MIND..


YOU KILLED YOUR OWN FATHER ?
YOU'RE NOT LYING ARE YOU?
I GUESS NOT...
YOU REALLY HAVE IT BAD, DON'T YOU.
LISTEN I KNOW VERY WELL ABOUT THE CURSE AND IT'S EFFECTS.
I KNOW THAT YOU'RE STUCK WITH IT. AND THAT YOU'RE NOT ALWAYS IN CONTROL OF YOURSELF
THEREFORE THE "YOU" THAT I SEE MOST OF THE TIME IS NOT NECESSARILY THE ONE WHO KILLED RYOTA.
I SHOULD'VE JUST ACCEPTED HIS DEATH AS ANOTHER CASUALITY OF THE CURSE BUT...
I DON'T KNOW WHY, I COULDN'T BRING MYSELF TO BELIEVE THAT. I HAD A LOT ON MY MIND, JUST LIKE YOU.
EVERY TIME I SEE YOU, ALL I CAN SEE IS YOUR OTHER SELF I CAN'T HELP IT. I I JUST COULDN'T TAKE IT ANYMORE


IT WAS JUST.. USELESS BLAMING SOMETHING IMMATERIAL AND ABSTRACT LIKE THE CURSE I FEEL LIKE I M BLAMING NO ONE ELSE BUT MYSELF WHEN I DO THAT
AND THEN FOR ONCE, IT WAS SOMEONE ELSE'S FAULT.. A REAL PERSON. I COULD AT LAST SEE THE FACE OF SOMEONE TO BLAME THAT WASN'T ME SO. I IMMEDIATELY BLAMED YOU.
AT FIRST, IN MY HEAD IT WAS AL.. ABOUT RYOTA.
NEXT THING I KNEW.
I WAS TRYING TO FORCE ALL MY GUILT ONTO YOU..
YET YOU HAD YOUR OWN PROBLEMS TOO.
I SHOULD'VE KNOWN BETTER
YOUR FACE
PLEASE REMOVE YOUR MASK
I NEED SOME PEACE OF MIND.
I'M WILLING TO TRY TO UNDERSTAND YOUR SITUATION. BUT. I CAN'T DO YOU ANY FAVORS RIGHT NOW.
IT WAS STILL PART OF YOU THAT KILLED SOMEONE DEAR TO ME I NEED SOME TIME TO THINK IT OVER


ONE WEEK LATER
ANOTHER NIGHT..
ANOTHER TARGET TO ELIMINATE
I'M SORRY.. MORINAGA.
LEAVE THE REST TO THOSE ASSIGNED TO THE CLEANING TEAM TONIGHT.
FIRST THING WE DO WHEN WE GET BACK IS TO PUT SOME CLOTHES ON YOU. PEOPLE ARE MORE LIKELY TO SCREAM IF THEY SEE A NAKED KAPPA TRYING TO KILL THEM.


AND SO FOR THE FOLLOWING FOUR YEARS SADAO REMAINED BY MY SIDE THROUGHOUT MY MISSIONS
WE WOULD TAKE TURNS EXECUTING OUR TARGETS IT WASN'T LIKE THE OTHER NINJAS DIDN'T ALSO DO THEIR SHARE OF THE WORK BUT JUST BY INTERACTING DIRECTLY WITH ME THE WAY HE DID I FELT LIKE I WAS NO LONGER ALONE CARRYING MY BURDEN
I STOPPED REACTING TO HEADS ROLLING AT MY FEET THE SMELL OF DUST NO LONGER MADE ME UNEASY WHENEVER I LOOKED AT MY BLADE AT NIGHT THEY ALWAYS SHOWED ME THE SAME CRIMSON MOON AND THAT LEFT ME UNFAZED
I LEARNED TO BLOCK MY EMOTIONS

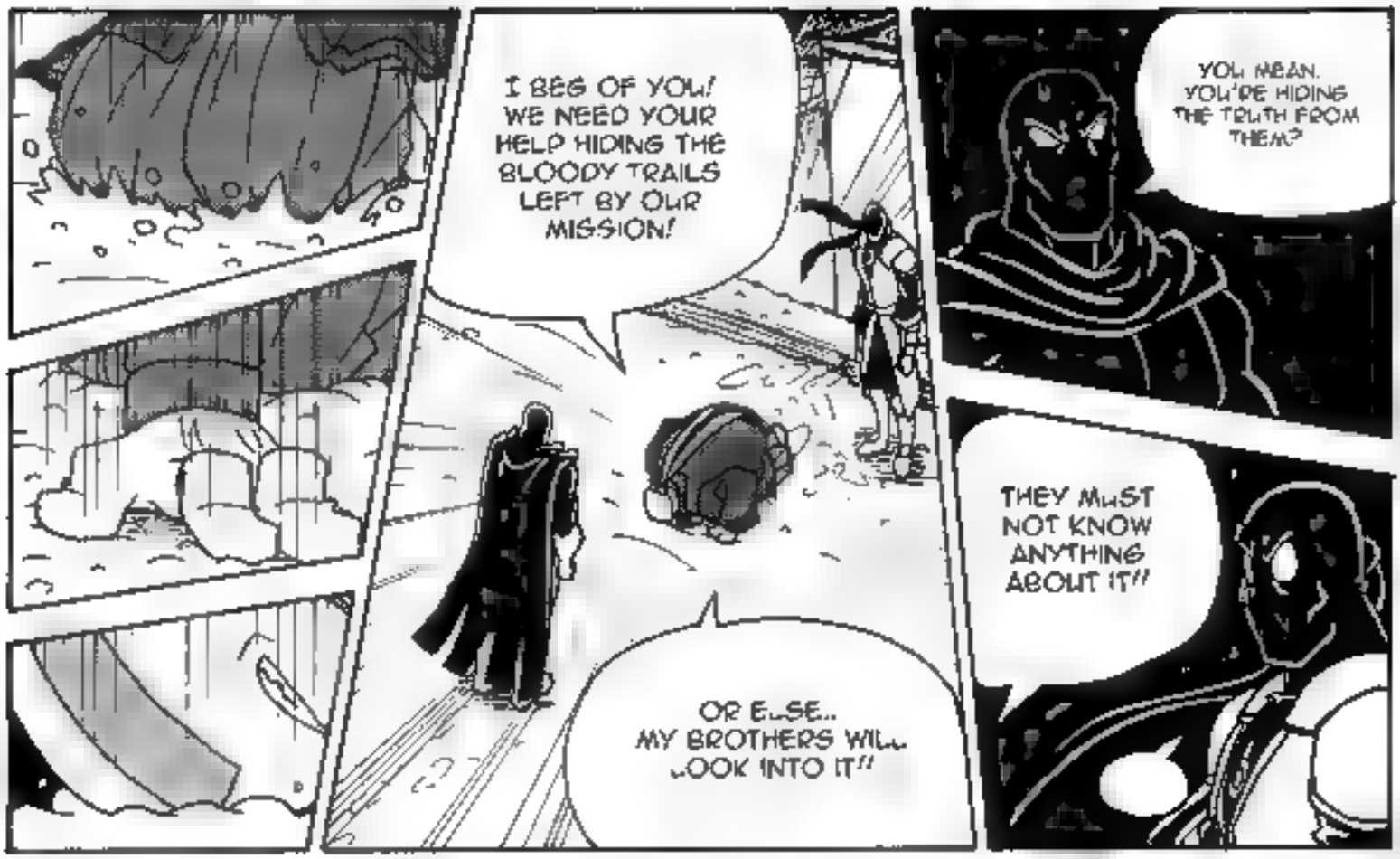

FOUR YEARS LATER.
OUR OPERATIONS WERE MOVED TO SENDAI.
HEY KAPPA, FEELING A BIT RESTLESS, TOO?
SADAO. ?
IT CAN'T BE HELPED. IT'S BEEN A WHILE SINCE WE'VE HAD A NIGHT THIS AWFUL
TWO FAMILIES KILLED, INCLUDING A FEW WINESSES.
A GROUP SUICIDE IN OUR SQUAD RIGHT AFTER THE OPERATION.
AND TO TOP IT OFF, A SUICIDE NOTE BLAMING YOU FOR EVERYTHING
I WISH THEY'D VENT OUT ON ME WHILE STILL ALIVE INSTEAD OF CHOOSING THAT KIND OF "WAY OUT" THAT'S WHAT I M HERE FOR.
I DON'T MIND BEING EVERYONE S SCAPEGOAT. SINCE NOTHING REALLY AFFECTS ME ANYMORE..
BESIDES.
I KNOW HOW PROPERLY TO CHANNEL MY THOUGHTS.
TO NEVER GIVE UP AND PRESS ONWARDS NO MATTER WHAT
IT WAS SO SIMPLE .


IS THAT SO?
MAY I SEE IT NOW, ACTUALLY?
YOUR IMAGE IS ACTUALLY PART OF MY THOUGHT PROCESS WHEN I MEDITATE LIKE THIS.
I THOUGHT YOU GAVE UP THAT STRANGE IDEA.
WHY WOULD YOU NEED TO DO THAT NOW, ANYWAY? DIDN'T YOU JUST SAY YOU WERE COPING WELL ALREADY?
EVERY LITTLE BIT HELPS ALSO, I WANT TO GET TO KNOW YOU BETTER.
WE'RE ALLIES.
YOU DIDN'T NEED TO SEE MY FACE AFTER ALL...
WHAT'S WRONG? ARE YOU SHY?
WE'RE ALONE HERE IT'S OKAY
ALRIGHT STOP IT THERE LEONARDO ARE YOU COMING ON TO ME?
NO BUT
HUH? ERR
RIIIIGHT. I GET THAT, FOR YOU, "TAKING MY PULSE" MEANS TO GROPE ME SO I HAVE AN IDEA WHAT THAT MASK THING IMPLIES. LOOK REPTILIAN MUTANTS ARE NOT MY TYPE
Eww...
OH, HEY. FOR THE FIRST TIME, IT'S "LEONARDO" INSTEAD OF "KAPPA"...
IS IT SAFE TO ASSUME THAT YOU HATE ME A BIT LESS?
JUST A BIT
IT SEEMED ABSURD TO TALK CASUALLY THE WAY WE DID, RIGHT AFTER SO MANY LIVES WERE LOST AROUND US...
BUT IT SEEMED A LOT LESS ABSURD WHEN I WASN'T THE ONLY ONE DOING IT. I FELT RELIEVED.
HAD I BEEN ALONE... I WOULD'VE BEEN LOCKED IN A STATE OF EMOTION BLOCKING PERMANENTLY. I WOULD'VE TURNED INTO NOTHING MORE BUT A MINDLESS KILLING MACHINE.
ULTIMATELY, BY FINALLY OPENING UP TO SADAO, I FOUND A KINDRED SPIRIT IN HIM, WITHIN ALL THE ABSURDITY AROUND US... A PRESENCE THAT KEPT THE HUMANE SIDE OF ME ALIVE, DURING ALL THOSE YEARS.


WE'VE COME A LONG WAY, HAVEN'T WE
THE LAST MORINDAS ARE HERE IN NEW YORK. JUST A FEW MORE AND AFTER THAT, WE'LL NO LONGER HAVE TO KILL
BY THE WAY, SOMEONE'S BEEN EAVESDROPPING ON US ALL THIS TIME. I WAS WAITING FOR YOU TO REACT, BUT YOU JUST IGNORED HIM. WHY?
IT'S ALRIGHT I KNOW HIM.. HE'S SUPPOSED TO BE ON OUR SIDE
I ASKED KARAI TO WORK OUT A DEAL WITH HIM, SINCE HE'S IN THE POLICE FORCE
THOUGH KNOWING HER METHODS I EXPECTED HIM TO SHOW UP AND ASK ME QUESTIONS
WELL.. OUR DISCUSSION CERTAINLY FILLED HIM IN ON SOME DETAILS.
GO ON, NOW, YOU HANDLE HIM.


THIS IS MADNESS
DO YOU EXPECT ME TO OVERLOOK ALL OF THAT?
NOBODY.
IT'S BEEN A WHILE HASN'T IT?
THE DEAL I MADE WITH THAT OLD HAG WAS TO OVERLOOK THE INCIDENT ON CHRISTMAS EVE!
BUT THIS... THIS IS TOO MUCH!
WE NEED YOUR HELP. WE NEED YOU TO COVER UP OUR ACTS DURING OUR STAY HERE..
WE'RE TALKING ABOUT ASSASSINATIONS!!
IT'S BAD ENOUGH THAT I'M STUCK UNDER SOME NINJA CLAN'S THUMB..
AND NOW THIS? IS THIS WHAT YOU REALLY WANT, LEONARDO?
DON'T THINK FOR A SECOND THAT I'M BUYING INTO ALL THIS "CURSE" BULLSHIT! SEEMS TO ME LIKE YOU AND YOUR NEW LITTLE FRIENDS HAVE BEEN KILLING UNDER THE GUISE OF SOME SICK FAIRY TALE!
WHAT HAPPENED TO YOUR SENSE OF JUSTICE?
HAVE YOU EVER ASKED YOURSELF WHO THE TRUE ENEMY WAS?
T. THE ENEMY...??


MY ENEMIES.
ALL THOSE NOT WORTHY OF BREATHING THE SAME AIR I DO. !!
WHAT DID YOU SAY?
...!!
ADMIT IT YOU'RE ANGRY BECAUSE YOU HAVE TO STOOP DOWN TO HIS LEVEL TO NEGOCIATE.
HE'S NOTHING BUT A SLAVE TO SOME VAIN AND CORRUPT SYSTEM...
NOBODY... I KNOW I M ASKING A LOT OF YOU, BUT..
YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE IN THE POLICE FORCE OF NEW YORK I CAN TRUST.
YET YOU FEEL RELIEVED BECAUSE THIS BUFFOON IS THE FIRST "FRIEND" FROM THE PAST TO WHOM YOU COULD REVEAL THE TRUTH BEHIND YOUR ABSENCE..
OR WAS IT MORE LIKE A CONFESSION...?
PLEASE YOU MUST COVER UP OUR ACTS!
YOU DON'T EVEN TRUST HIM... AFTER SEVENTEEN YEARS, HE S JUST A VAGUE MEMORY TO YOU... BUT. YOU'RE SO DESPERATE FOR ACCEPTANCE..
YOU'RE NINJAS.. EVEN IF THE WOOLD FOUND OUT ABOUT YOUR "MISSION", YOU'D STILL BE ABLE TO STEALTHILY CARRY ON WITH IT.
YOU NEED MY INTERVENTION FOR SOMETHING ELSE I WANT TO KNOW WHAT IT IS LEONARDO..
HE'S PLAYING WITH YOU.
HE ENJOYS SEEING YOU AT HIS MERCY !


I BEG OF YOU! WE NEED YOUR HELP HIDING THE BLOODY TRAILS LEFT BY OUR MISSION!
OR ELSE.. MY BROTHERS WILL LOOK INTO IT!!
YOU MEAN. YOU'RE HIDING THE TRUTH FROM THEM?
THEY MUST NOT KNOW ANYTHING ABOUT IT!!


HOW CAN YOU BOW DOWN BEFORE THIS INSECT??
AND WHAT FOR? THOSE THREE DISHONORABLE FOOLS YOU CALL YOUR SIBLINGS?
THE INNOCENT LIVES BOUND TO IT, THE PURGE I'VE BEEN CARRYING OUT TO STOP THE TICKING TIME BOMBS INSIDE THOSE OF US WHO ARE CURSED...!
CAN YOU IMAGINE WHAT THEY'LL THINK ABOUT THEIR CONDITION? ABOUT ME??


YOUR DEDICATION TO YOUR BROTHERS IS ADMIRABLE LEONARDO. HOWEVER.
I'M STILL NOT BUYING IT EVERYTHING YOU SAY REVOLVES AROUND THE CURSE WHAT IF YOU WERE FOOLED..?


. BY THEM!
THERE IS A CURSE!!
THEY'RE ASSASSINS!
S...STOP IT!
DON'T WAKE UR..!!
BE ON THE S DE OF JUSTICE!
REALLY..?
THEY MUST BE LYING!
THE FOOT CLAN IS MY.. MY..!!
DO THE RIGHT THING!
THERE IS NO CURSE!
LEO..!
YOU ASKED FOR IT!!
PERMANENTLY SHUTTING YOU UR
THAT'S THE RIGHT THING..

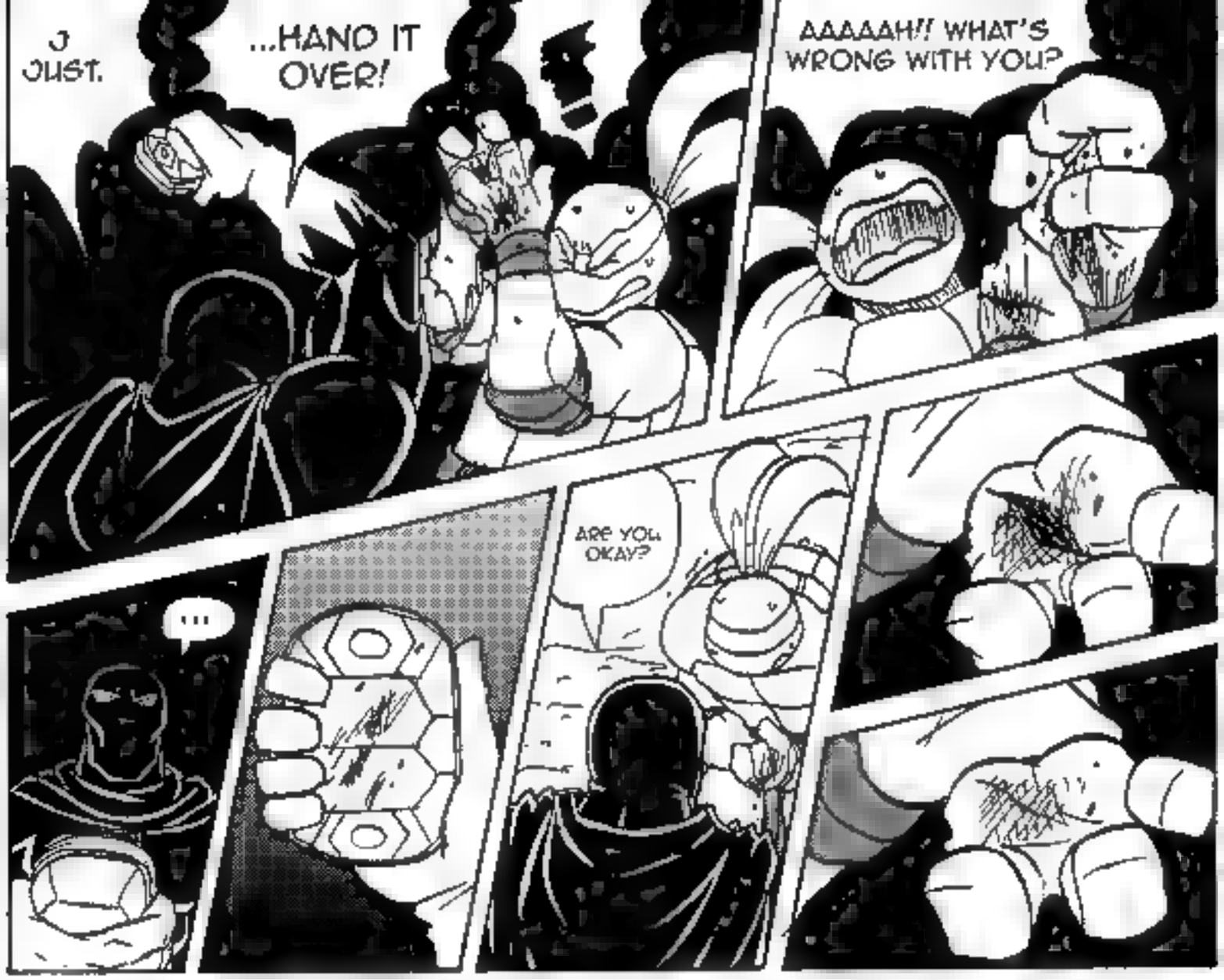

ERGH!
!!!
NO!! YOUR FRIEND'S ON HIS OWN!!
NOBODY!! YOU LIAR!
YOU WERE GOING TO HELP THIS NINJA KILL LEO!!
YOU'RE ONE OF THEM!!
WHAT?? NO, NO, NO!!
YOU GOT IT WRONG AGAIN, YOU STUPID MUTANT!!! I TOLD YOU, I'M NOT WITH THOSE..


SILENCE!
LEONARDO!
SETTLE DOWN!
THIS IS SPIRALING OUT OF CONTROL! TELL HIM I M NOT YOUR ENEMY!!
I DON'T KNOW HIM..
HUMPH.
I DON'T CARE WHAT HE THINKS OF YOU..
I'M THE PERFECT NINJA.
I DON'T CARE ABOUT THAT CURSE
AND ANYONE LESS WORTHY THAN I WHO CROSSES MY PATH
..WILL DIE BY MY HAND!!


H.. HAVE AT YOU!!
HE'S THE REAL THING..
SHIT SHIT SHIT..
HAH...
HAH...
FOCUS
FOCUS..
FOCUS..
FO--AAAH!!
THE FOOT CLAN.
MY SENSEI'S ENEMY..


I WON'T REST...
UNTIL I KILL YOU ALL!!
SIR !
WAIT.
WAIT!!
H.. HELP. ME.
I NEED TO BITE THE BULLET AND JUST.. REMOVE THOSE THINGS ON MY OWN. SOMEHOW! IT'S GOING TO HURT LIKE HELL!!
Y..YOU!! (COUGH) (COUGH)
OW OW OW. IT HURTS..
S..STAY THERE! LISTEN TO ME!!


I M. . NOT (COUGH COUGH) NOT YOUR ENEMY!!
IF IF I WERE A CRIMINAL, A FOOT NINJA. .
...YOU'D BE DEAD BY NOW, SEEING HOW BUSY YOU WERE WHINING IN PAIN ALL THE TIME!!
N. .NOW... (COUGH COUGH) WHA. WHAT DID YOU HEAR ?
ME? HEAR WHAT?
WHAT'S GOING ON?
DON'T PLAY DUMB!!
I JUST GOT HERE!!
I JUST WANTED TO ASK MR LEONARDO A FEW QUESTIONS!!
I KNEW HE WAS STILL OUT HERE GETTING SOME AIR. SO I WENT AFTER HIM.
AND I FOUND HIM WITH YOU GUYS!
AND NOW HE' RAN OFF!! I'LL HAVE TO TRACK HIM DOWN AGAIN. !!
GIVE ME THAT DEVICE.
PFF
I'M NOT HEARING ANY MAGIC WORDS...


I JUST.
...HAND IT OVER!
AAAAAH!! WHAT'S WRONG WITH YOU?
ARE YOU OKAY?
...


YOUR WOUND... DID IT JUST HEAL?
I...IS THAT DUE TO YOU BEING A MUTANT? OR IS IT THE CURSE?

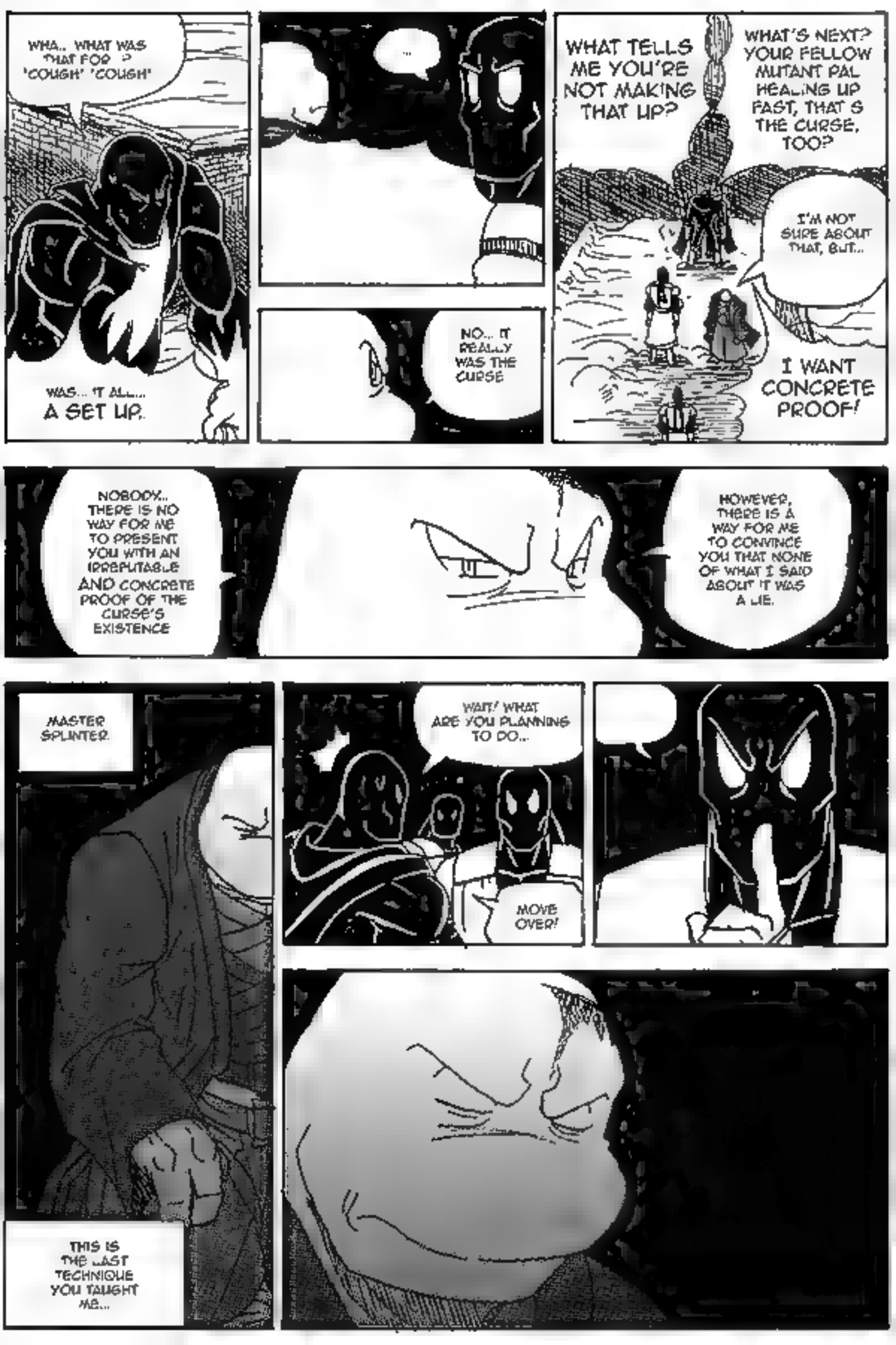

I DON'T KNOW AND EVEN IF I DID...
DO YOU REALLY THINK I'D TELL YOU? YOU PRICK! PSYCHO! LOSER! "RAPEMAN"!


VERY WELL. I.. I KNOW SOMEONE WHO CAN TELL ME (COUGH) (COUGH)
AND STOP CALLING ME RAPEMAN I FIND THAT OFFENSIVE
WAIT! WHERE DO YOU THINK YOU'RE GOING?
DON'T WALK OUT ON ME!!


SNOOPY
THAT'S THE ONLY WAY I CAN BRING YOU BACK
TRY TO REMEMBER WHAT THIS PAIN STANDS FOR
ALL THOSE YEARS YOU KEPT TELLING ME HOW SIGNIFICANT THAT SINGLE STAR YOU BEAR ON YOUR PLASTRON IS TO YOU
AND ALL THE SACRIFICES YOU HAD TO MAKE TO COME THIS FAR!


STOP THINKING ABOUT THAT SCAR, RIGHT NOW YOU HAVE NO PART YOUR EXISTENCE
THAT SCAR
A TRACE LEFT BY...
HARDSHIPS
MY FIRST NEAR-DEATH EXPERIENCE BY MY OWN HAND.
...AND SACRIFICES
THAT INCIDENT IN SENDAI.
Y..YOU'RE RIGHT I I'VE COME THIS FAR..
I CAN'T LET THE CURSE WIN.. I CAN'T FAIL..


COME ON. WE'RE NOT DONE HERE YET.
...
THAT'S GOING TO LEAVE A MARK.
YEAH. I GUESS IT WILL.
FOR WHAT IT'S WORTH... SORRY ABOUT THAT..
AND FOR BRINGING UP THOSE MEMORIES.
DON'T WORRY. I'LL BE FINE.
THANKS, SADAO
YOU'RE LUCKY HE DOESN'T SEEM DETERRED BY YOUR RANDOM ACT OF VIOLENCE.
HALT!
RETURN TO THE NEGOTIATING TABLE THIS TIME, PLAY YOUR CARDS RIGHT.


WHA.. WHAT WAS THAT FOR ? 'COUGH' 'COUGH'
WAS... IT ALL... A SET UP.
...
NO... IT REALLY WAS THE CURSE
WHAT TELLS ME YOU'RE NOT MAKING THAT UP?
WHAT'S NEXT? YOUR FELLOW MUTANT PAL HEALING UP FAST, THAT'S THE CURSE, TOO?
I'M NOT SURE ABOUT THAT, BUT...
I WANT CONCRETE PROOF!
NOBODY... THERE IS NO WAY FOR ME TO PRESENT YOU WITH AN IRREFUTABLE AND CONCRETE PROOF OF THE CURSE'S EXISTENCE
HOWEVER, THERE IS A WAY FOR ME TO CONVINCE YOU THAT NONE OF WHAT I SAID ABOUT IT WAS A LIE.
MASTER SPLINTER.
THIS IS THE LAST TECHNIQUE YOU TAUGHT ME...
WAIT! WHAT ARE YOU PLANNING TO DO...
MOVE OVER!


THE ASTRAL PLANE AND TODAY, IT'S YOUR OWN TERMS.
ME ALONG FOR THE RIDE TOO. TCH! YOU COULD'VE LEFT ME IN OUR BODY.
LISTEN WELL, WIMP.. YOUR FEELINGS FOR THOSE FOOLS YOU CALL "BROTHERS" MIGHT BE STRONG ENOUGH TO SUBDUE ME FOR THE TIME BEING..
BUT THIS WILL FAIL EVENTUALLY, AND YOU KNOW IT!
THE MOMENT THEY KNOW THE TRUTH, THEY'LL TURN THEIR BACKS ON YOU!
YOUR SACRIFICES WON'T MEAN A THING TO THEM!
THEN I'LL TAKE OVER.. FOREVER!
JUST BE QUIET AND FOLLOW ME
YOU CAN MOCK THE FAITH I HAVE IN MY BROTHERS ALL YOU WANT BUT IT'S CLEAR TO ME THAT IT'S A VERY EFFECTIVE MEANS TO KEEP YOU UNDER CONTROL.
NOBODY.. I FOUND YOU.
I'M GOING TO PERUSE THE DARK CORNERS OF YOUR SOUL JUST A BIT


AH.
W. WHAT S HAPPENING TO ME?
VOICES!! VOICES IN MY HEAD!!
NO... NO!!! WHY AM I THINKING ABOUT THAT?
SHIT!!
WHY CAN'T I CONTROL MY THOUGHTS??
HE MIGHT'VE BEEN A REPEAT OFFENDER.. BUT HE WAS JUST A KID. YET, YOU STILL...
STOP IT!! DON'T SAY IT!!


DON'T TELL ME...
...YOU SAW ALL OF THIS??
YES. ALL OF IT. THE PERSUIT. THE UNMASKING AND THE EXECUTION THROUGH THE EYES OF MY DARK SELF. I CAN SEE YOURS
I DON'T INTEND TO BLACKMAIL YOU WITH THIS INFORMATION. I ONLY WANT YOU TO UNDERSTAND THAT THIS CURSE PROBLEM IS NO JOKE IF YOU NEED MORE CONVINCING I CAN DIG DEEPER IN YOUR SOUL.
NO THERE'S NO NEED FOR THAT.
I'LL... COOPERATE

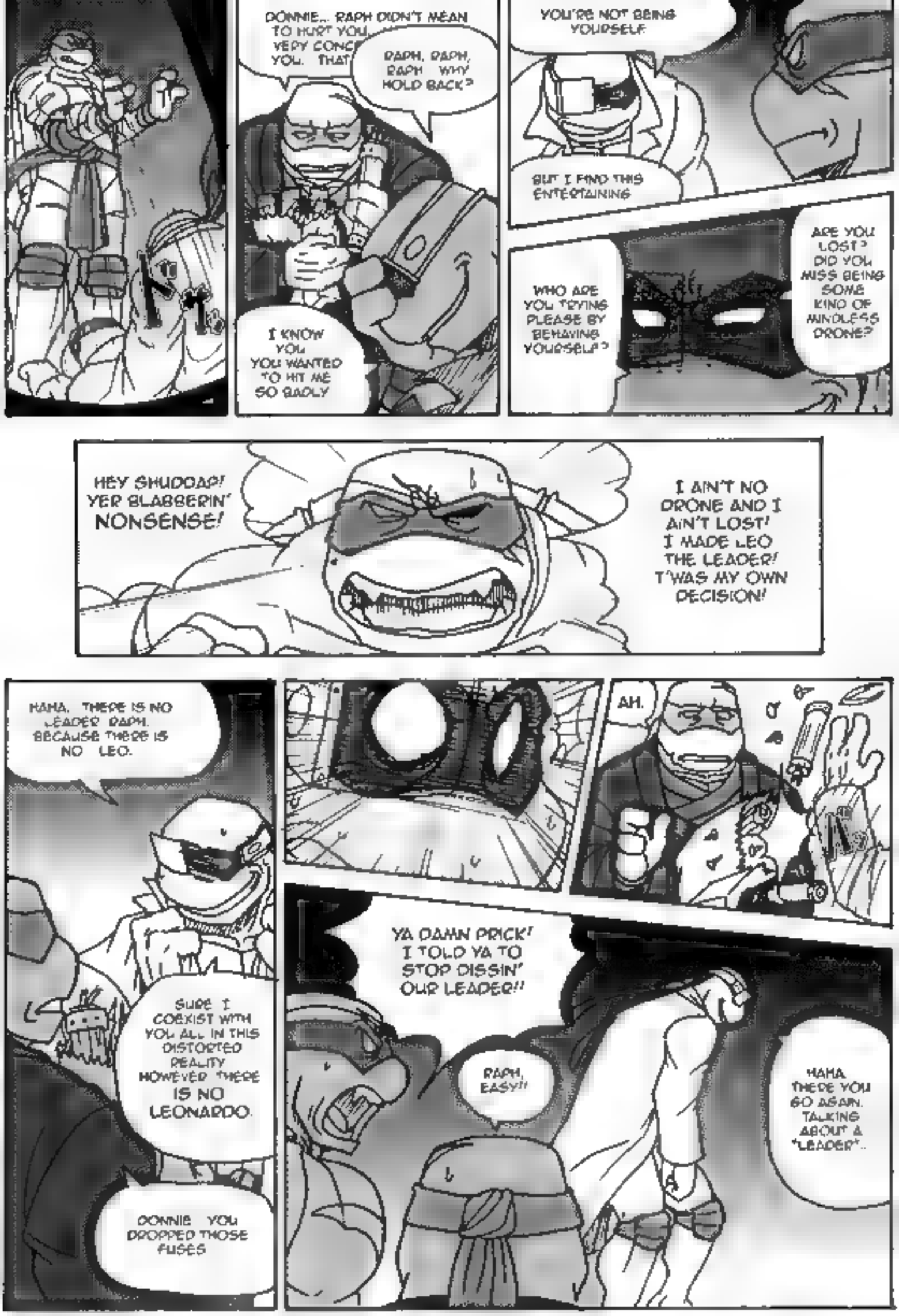

MR. LEONARDO! THERE YOU ARE!
RENOIR!
ARE YOU ALRIGHT?
YEAH!
COMING!
BE CAREFUL!
DIDN'T RAPHAEL TEACH YOU HOW SAFELY PUT AWAY YOUR WEAPONS?
N NOT REALLY.
WAIT... WHAT IF HE OVERHEARD ABOUT MY MISSION?
I THINK IT'S STILL INTACT
HOW MUCH DID YOU HEAR BACK THERE?
THAT NUTTY VIGILANTE ASKED ME THE SAME THING. WHEN I FOUND YOU, YOU WERE ALREADY TALKING WITH YOUR FISTS.
WHY WAS THAT CONVERSATION SO IMPORTANT?
CLOSE CALL.
PAST GRUDGE IT'S BETWEEN HIM AND I. BUT NO WORRIES, I WAS PERSUASIVE ENOUGH TO PACIFY HIM.
HE'S OUR ALLY NOW.

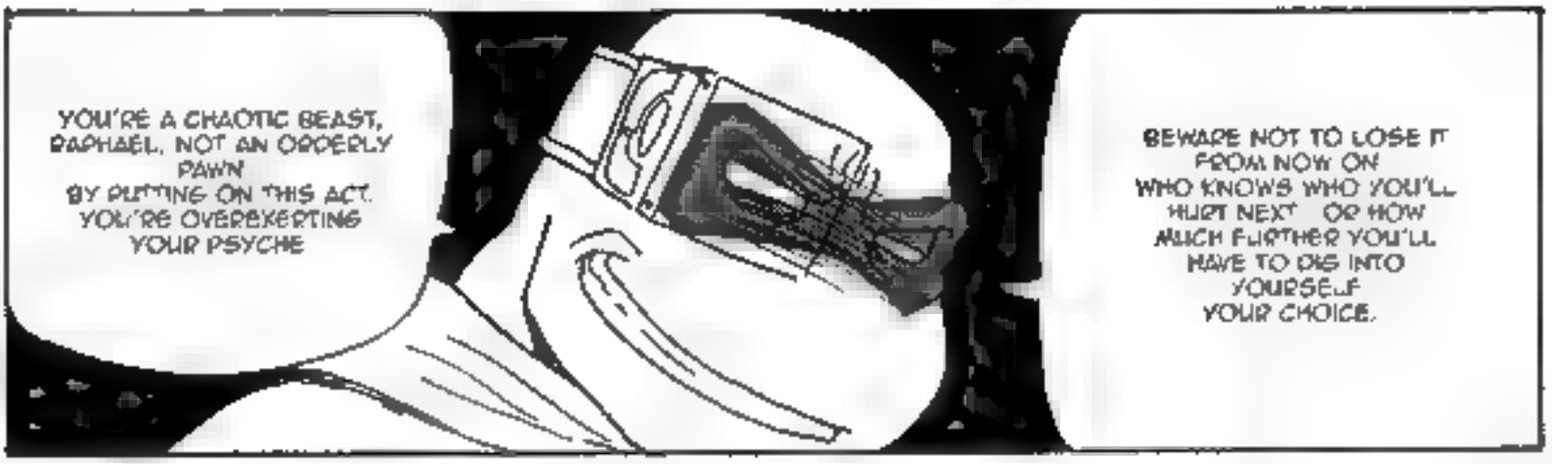
CHAPTER 23: FOLLOWING THE LEADER




DON'T WORRY, LEO
WITH ME HERE HE AIN'T GONNA IGNORE YA
RAPHAEL
WHAT DO YOU WANT WITH ME?
IS RENOIR WITH YOU TODAY?
NOPE BUT THIS BRO HERE IS
DONNIE WE NEED TO TALK.
GHHHR
HEY. HE'S FREAKIN' OUT...
DONNIE! ARE YOU ALRIGHT?
RRRHRR..
HRRKK...


WAIT!
ARE YA FUCKIN KIDDIN' ME ?
OK, YA ASSHOLE! NOW, YA LISTEN UP!
CRAZY WORLD.
NO TIME LEFT
EVERYTHING'S SO ABSURD.
IT AIN'T LEO'S FAULT THAT THE SENSEI'S DEAD! FACE THE GODDAMN TRUTH AND FUCKIN' ACCEPT IT!! QUIT BEIN' A DICK TO OUR LEADER!!
RAPH!! CALM DOWN!
THAT'S NOT HELPING!
TCH!
OK
LEO CAME TO CHECK ON YER SORRY CARCASS EVERY SINGLE DAY SINCE HE CAME BACK TO US. THAT'S MORE THAN A MONTH.
THINK 'BOUT IT JACKASS

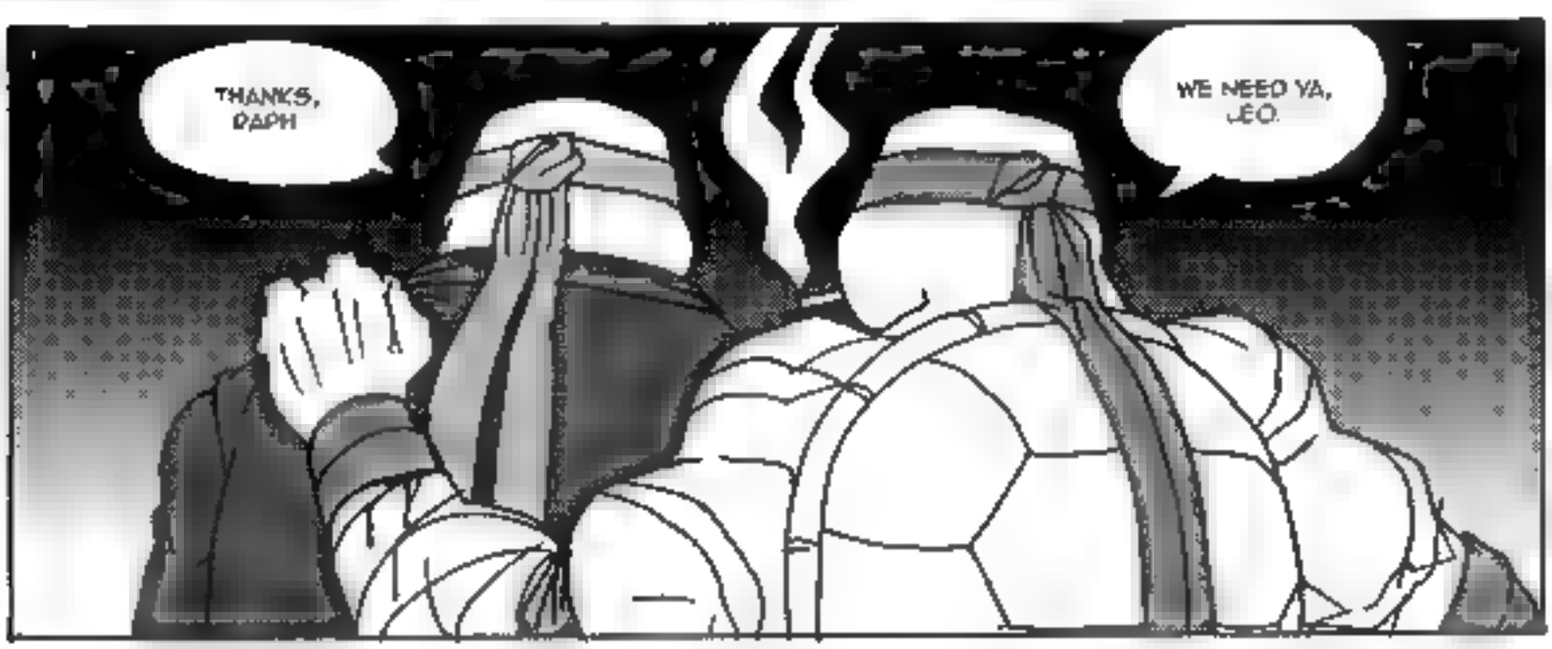

DONNIE... RAPH DIDN'T MEAN TO HURT YOU, VERY CONC YOU. THAT
RAPH, RAPH, RAPH WHY HOLD BACK?
I KNOW YOU YOU WANTED TO HIT ME SO BADLY
YOU'RE NOT BEING YOURSELF
BUT I FIND THIS ENTERTAINING
WHO ARE YOU TRYING PLEASE BY BEHAVING YOURSELF?
ARE YOU LOST? DID YOU MISS BEING SOME KIND OF MINDLESS DRONE?
HEY SHUDDAP! YER BLABBERIN' NONSENSE!
I AIN'T NO DRONE AND I AIN'T LOST! I MADE LEO THE LEADER! T'WAS MY OWN DECISION!
HAHA. THERE IS NO LEADER RAPH. BECAUSE THERE IS NO LEO.
SURE I COEXIST WITH YOU ALL IN THIS DISTORTED REALITY HOWEVER THERE IS NO LEONARDO.
DONNIE YOU DROPPED THOSE FUSES
AH.
YA DAMN PRICK! I TOLD YA TO STOP DISSIN' OUR LEADER!!
RAPH, EASY!!
HAHA THERE YOU GO AGAIN. TALKING ABOUT A "LEADER"..

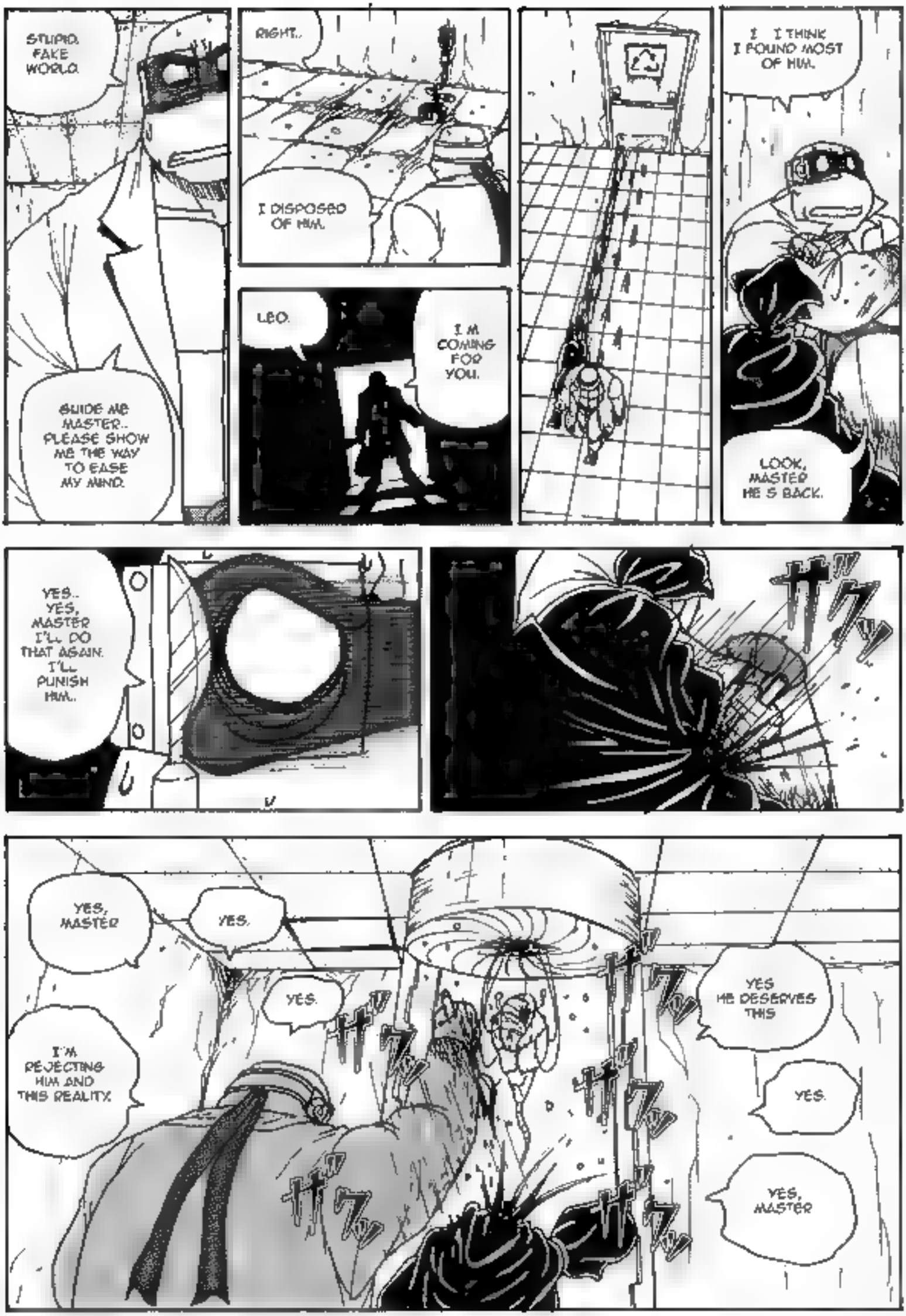

YOU'RE A CHAOTIC BEAST, RAPHAEL, NOT AN ORDERLY PAWN
BY PUTTING ON THIS ACT, YOU'RE OVEREXERTING YOUR PSYCHE
BEWARE NOT TO LOSE IT FROM NOW ON
WHO KNOWS WHO YOU'LL HURT NEXT OR HOW MUCH FURTHER YOU'LL HAVE TO DIG INTO YOURSELF
YOUR CHOICE.


UNGH..

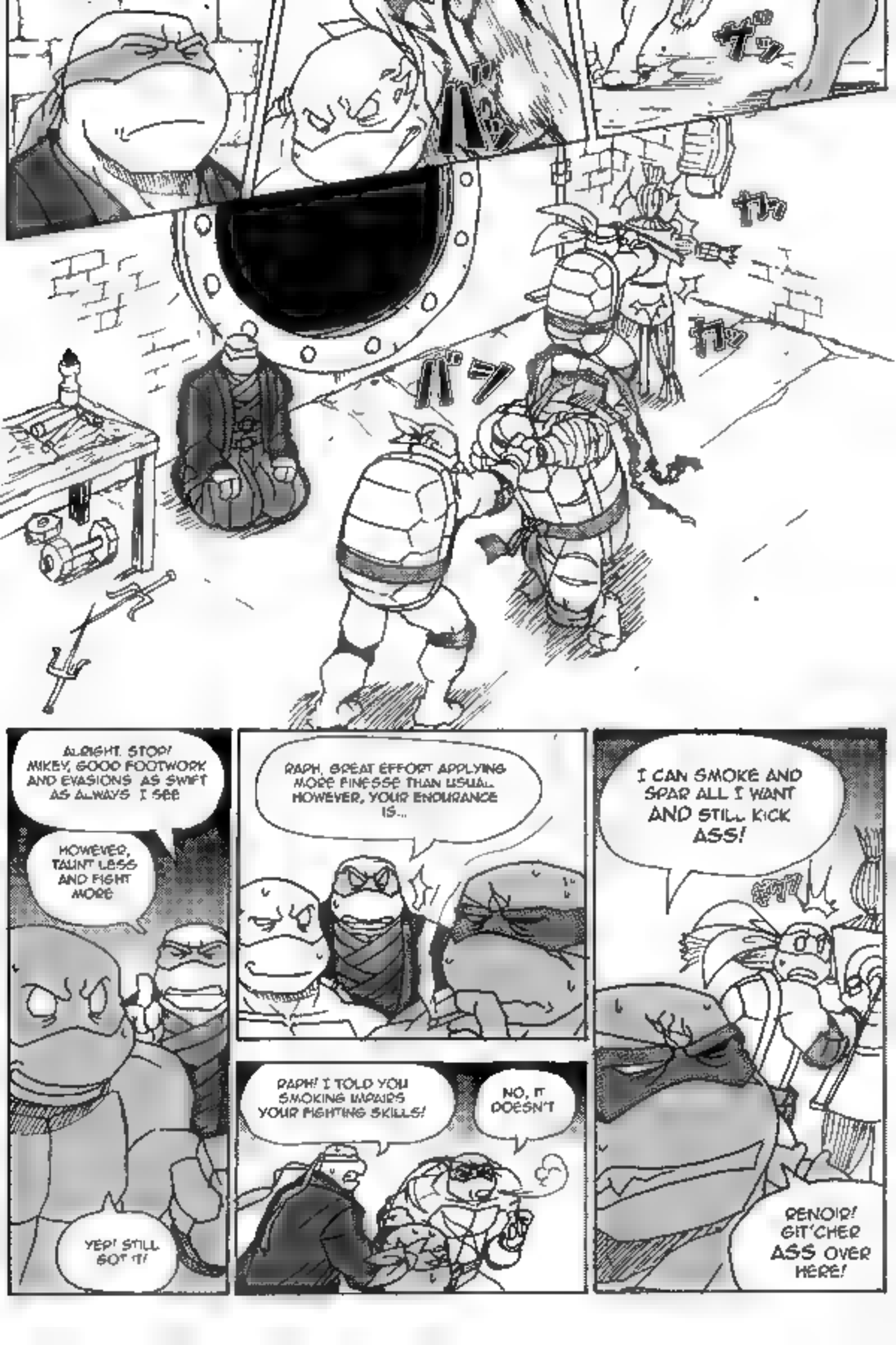

DONNIE I WON'T GIVE UP ON YOU. I'LL BE BACK
HE HE

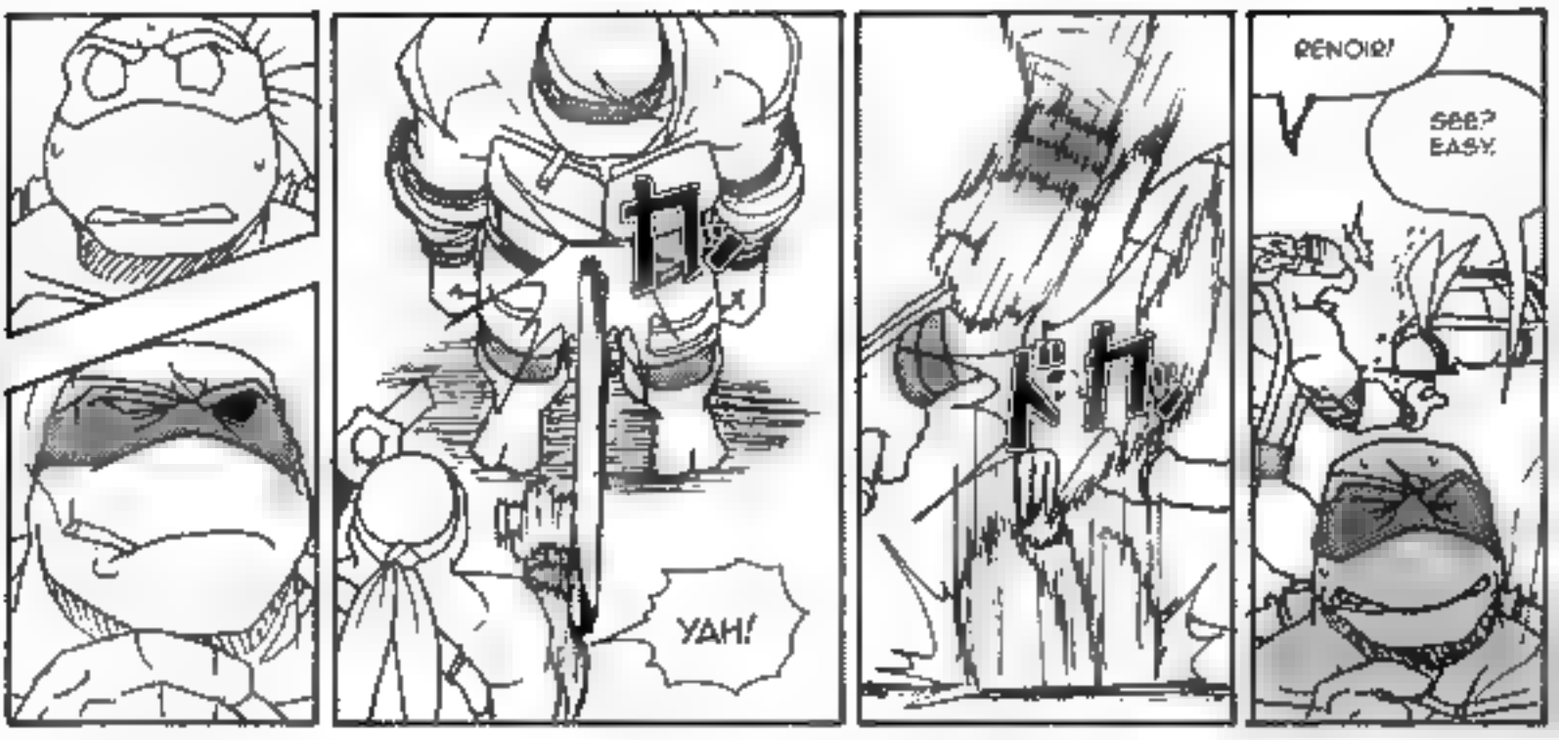

RAPH, I'M SORRY YOU HAD TO PUT UP WITH THIS ARE YOU REALLY FINE WITH ME BEING THE LEADER?
WHAT?
I IDIOT! I AIN'T GOIN' BACK ON MY WORDS! I PUT ALL MY TRUST IN YOU, BRO!


THANKS, RAPH
WE NEED YA, LEO.


STUPID FAKE WORLD.
GUIDE ME MASTER.. PLEASE SHOW ME THE WAY TO EASE MY MIND.
RIGHT..
I DISPOSED OF HIM.
LEO.
I M COMING FOO YOU.
I I THINK I FOUND MOST OF HIM.
LOOK, MASTER HE S BACK.
YES.. YES, MASTER I'LL DO THAT AGAIN. I'LL PUNISH HIM..
YES, MASTER
YES.
YES.
I'M REJECTING HIM AND THIS REALITY.
YES HE DESERVES THIS
YES.
YES, MASTER


IT'S BEEN ALMOST TWO MONTHS SINCE I REINSERTED MYSELF INTO THE LIVES OF MY BROTHERS
ALMOST TWO MONTHS I'VE BEEN TRYING AS HARD AS I COULD TO KEEP THEM OUT OF THE FOOT CLAN'S WAY USING NINJUTSU TRAINING AND HEALING AS MY MAIN ARGUMENTS TO KEEP THEM UNDERGROUND AS MUCH AS POSSIBLE.
IN THE MEANTIME, THE FOOT CLAN PROCEEDED WITH THEIR MISSION. THERE ARE VERY FEW MORMEGAS LEFT TO TAKE OUT BEFORE THE CURSE IS ERADICATED.
HOWEVER I'VE BEEN HAVING A HARD TIME SLIPPING AWAY FROM MY FAMILY WITHOUT RAISING SUSPICION TO HELP THE FOOT CLAN PINPOINT THEIR TARGETS WITH THE MIRROR YATA-NO-KAGAMI. AS A RESULT OF THIS, THERE IS ALWAYS A LONG DELAY BETWEEN EACH TARGET'S ELIMINATION.
LUCKILY NEITHER RAPHAEL OR MYSELF HAVE LOST CONTROL TO THE CURSE [redacted]. MAYBE OUR CURRENT SITUATION AS A REUNITED FAMILY GRANTED US WITH A TEMPORARY INNER PEACE THAT STRENGTHENS OUR RESISTANCE TO THE CURSE
I DON'T THINK MIKEY'S CURSED, SO I'M NOT WORRIED ABOUT HIM. SAME THING FOR DONNIE
AS FOR CONNIE.. HIS BEHAVIOR CONCERNS ME..


ALRIGHT. STOP! MIKEY, GOOD FOOTWORK AND EVASIONS AS SWIFT AS ALWAYS I SEE
HOWEVER, TAUNT LESS AND FIGHT MORE
YEP! STILL GOT IT!
RAPH, GREAT EFFORT APPLYING MORE FINESSE THAN USUAL. HOWEVER, YOUR ENDURANCE IS...
RAPH! I TOLD YOU SMOKING IMPAIRS YOUR FIGHTING SKILLS!
NO, IT DOESN'T
I CAN SMOKE AND SPAR ALL I WANT AND STILL KICK ASS!
RENOIR! GIT'CHER ASS OVER HERE!


YAH!
RENOIR!
SEE? EASY.


DON'CHA MAKE THAT FACE
I WANNA MAKE A POINT HERE
RENOIR STILL SUCKS AT FIGHTING TOYIN' 'ROUND WITH DUMMIES AIN'T CUTTIN' IT. HE NEEDS MORE REAL LIFE EXPERIENCE
I'M FINE BY THE WAY, THANKS.


BESIDES WE'RE BEEN POLISHIN' OUR FIGHTIN' SKILLS UNDER YER GUIDANCE FOR ALMOST TWO MONTHS NOW. WITH OUR NINJUTSU UP TO DATE WE'RE READY TO KICK ASS!
HEY!
EVEN MIKEY CAN CARRY HIS OWN WEIGHT. DESPITE BEIN' A BIT FATTER THAN BEFORE
LET'S GO OUT THERE AND DESTROY THAT DAMN CURSE ALREADY.


RIGHT. LET'S THINK OF A PLAN, THEN...
STEP ONE: FIND ARTIFACTS LINKED TO CURSE. STEP TWO: DESTROY 'EM. THERE!


ARTIFACTS. YES. THOSE WE MUST FIND THEM.
JUST GIVE ME SOME MORE TIME TO DOUBLE CHECK MY INTEL ABOUT THEM...


MY BROTHERS ARE GROWING RESTLESS
IT'S GETTING HARDER AND HARDER TO STALL THEM.
I CAN ONLY DISTRACT THEM WITH TRAINING FOR SO LONG BEFORE THEY DECIDE TO TAKE ACTION AGAINST THE CURSE
IT DOESN'T HELP THAT I MADE UP SOME STORY ABOUT THE CURSE BEING LINKED TO SOME RELICS. NOW THEY WANT TO FIND THEM.
KARAI TOLD US ABOUT YOUR CLUMSY LIE. A STORY LIKE THAT SCREAMS FOR SOMETHING TO BE DONE ABOUT IT
I KNOW. WHAT HURTS ME MORE IS THAT THEY ALL SEEM TO TRUST MY EVERY WORD.
AT LEAST WITHIN THE LAST TWO MONTHS, WE'VE DONE A LOT OF PROGRESS. ALMOST ALL THE TARGETS HAVE BEEN ELIMINATED, I BELIEVE.
NOW, LET'S DO THE USUAL. HAND ME THE MIRROR.
WELL, WHERE IS IT? THE YATA-NO-KAGAMI.
YOU KNOW THAT WITHOUT IT, I CAN'T IDENTIFY THE MORINAGA FOR YOU.
IT'S NO LONGER IN OUR POSSESSION.
RYOTA'S BROTHER, EIKICHI, STOLE IT FROM US AND RAN AWAY.


...!
KARA THOUGHT HE KNEW MORE ABOUT THE CURSE THAN HE LET ON SO SHE TRIED TO MAKE HIM TALK.
HOWEVER SHE WAS UNSUCCESSFUL... EVERY TIME HE OPENED HIS MOUTH, IT'D BE TO INSULT US OR REITERATE HIS ALLEGIANCE TO THE LATE SHREDDER
WHAT HAPPENED?
SOMETIME YESTERDAY HE MANAGED TO ESCAPE
AND TO STEAL THE YATA-NO-KAGAMI FROM US

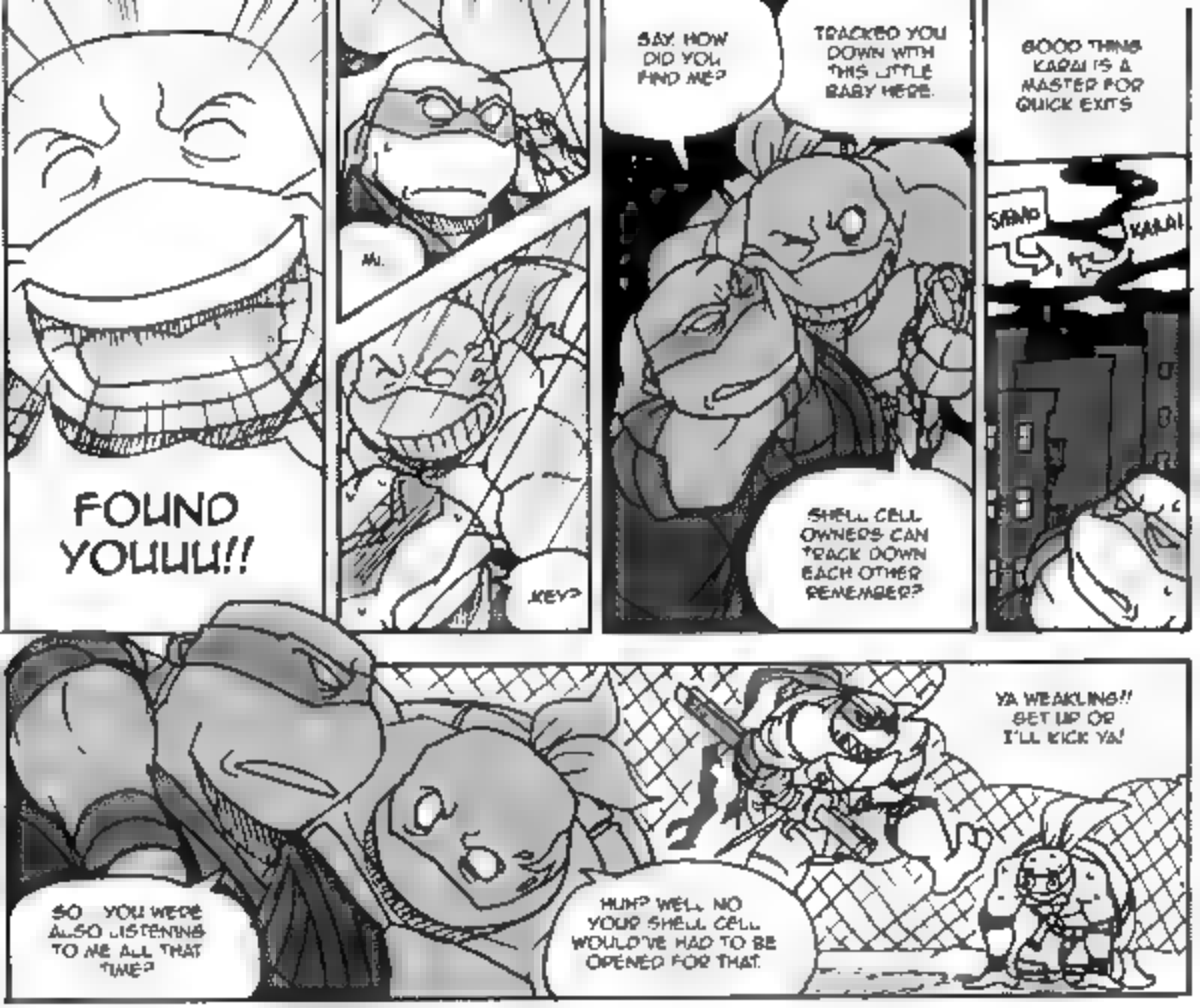
WITHOUT THE GUIDANCE OF THAT MIRROR YOU KNOW THAT WE MIGHT PLACE HITS ON INNOCENT PEOPLE.
WE NEED IT BACK.

KARAI.
DIDN'T YOU USED TO ACCEPT THAT RISK?
YES BUT THOSE WERE ONLY INSTANCES WHERE WE
INTEL.

EVEN WITH THE COMBINED EFFORTS OF ALL OUR CONTACTS, WE'RE UNABLE TO CONCLUSIVELY IDENTIFY MORINABAS.
I THINK WE RAN OUT OF LEADS

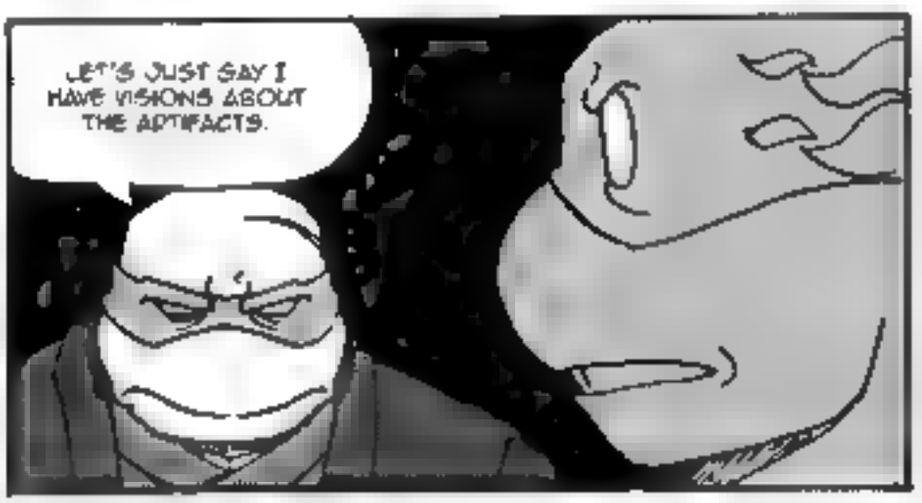

SO. THE ONE WHO LEFT THE TOTSUKA SWORD IN THE SEWERS TO CURSE US..
..AND ATTACKED MY BROTHERS LAST CHRISTMAS EVE..
IS NOW CARRYING WITH HIM A RELIC LINKED TO THE CURSE?
I CAN SEE A SILVER LINING IN THIS WHOLE SITUATION.. AND IT'S UNBELIEVABLY CONVENIENT FOR ME


INDEED.
PLEASE HANDLE IT.
I APPRECIATE IT. IT'LL HELP ME WITH MY [redacted] SITUATION.
DO YOU HAVE ANY LEADS ON EIKICHI'S WHEREABOUTS?
UNFORTUNATELY, ALL I CAN DO FOR YOU IS NARROW IT TO THE FOLLOWING:
HE'S STILL WITHIN A RADIUS OF TEN MILES AROUND OUR HEADQUARTERS.
I SET UP A TIGHT SECURITY PERIMETER AS SOON AS HE ESCAPED.. WE'D HAVE KNOWN IF HE GOT ANY FURTHER
DON'T WORRY. WE'LL LAY DOWN LOW WHILE YOUR FAMILY TAKES TO THE STREETS
JUST DO WHAT YOU MUTANTS DO BEST. PATROL THE CITY. YOU KNOW SO WELL.
SURE, BUT..
A TEN MILE RADIUS IS A LOT OF GROUND TO COVER. ANY OTHER LEADS?
WAIT. YOU WON'T [redacted] TO GO LOOK FOR EIKICHI.
HE'LL BE THE ONE LOOKING FOR YOU.
?
REALLY?
YES. I KNOW HIM. HE HOLDS GRUDGES [redacted]ST THOSE WHO WRONG HIM.
HE'LL SEEK REVENGE FOR HIS DEFEAT AT THE HANDS OF YOUR SIBLINGS.
THAT SOUNDS GOOD ENOUGH FOR ME
AS SOON AS I RECLAIM THE MIRROR, I'LL CONTACT YOU AND LET YOU KNOW WHO THE NEXT MORINAGA IS. IN THE MEANTIME TRY TO [redacted] MORE.
OOOOY!!! LEOOO!! WE'RE COMING!


FOUND YOUUU!!
MI.
KEY?
SAY. HOW DID YOU FIND ME?
TRACKED YOU DOWN WITH THIS LITTLE BABY HERE.
SHELL CELL OWNERS CAN TRACK DOWN EACH OTHER REMEMBER?
GOOD THING KARAI IS A MASTER FOR QUICK EXITS
SWISH
KARAI!

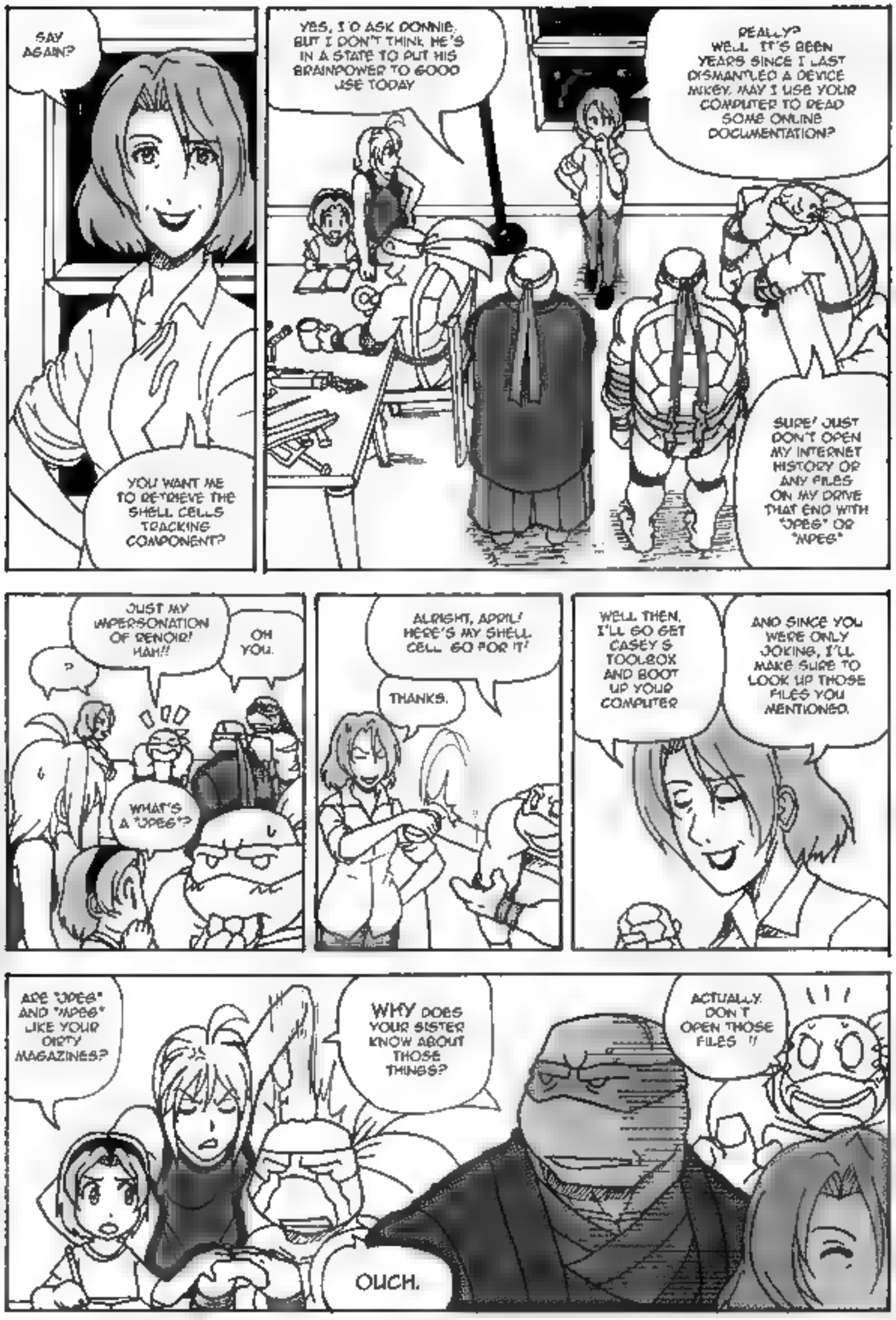
SO YOU WERE ALSO LISTENING TO ME ALL THAT TIME?
HUMP WELL NO YOUR SHELL CELL WOULD'VE HAD TO BE OPENED FOR THAT.
YA WEAKLING!! GET UP OR I'LL KICK YA!


RAPH DENOIR.
WELL WELL I MADE IT HERE FIRST DESPITE BEING "A BIT FATTER" IRONIC
SHUDDAP MIKEY! LEO THAT'S YER IDEA OF "DOUBLE CHECKING" YER INTEL? YOU BE JUST MEDITATIN ON YER OWN, BRO! HOW'S THAT HELPIN US?


LET'S JUST SAY I HAVE VISIONS ABOUT THE ARTIFACTS.


THE ONE RESPONSIBLE FOR SENDING US THE CURSED SWORD...
HAS ONE OF THEM.


THAT PERSON IS EIKICHI SOTOH.
SHREDDER'S LAST ELITE NINJA.
WAIT... THAT PSYCHO IS STILL ALIVE?
HEY...
DON'T WORRY, RAPH.
I GOT YER BACK, BRO. JUST LETTIN' YA KNOW.
THANKS.
IT MUST FEEL NICE.
I GOT YOUR BACK, RENOIR
WHAT??
REALLY?? WELL...
...THANK YOU, SIR
SO MUCH FOR FEELING GOOD.
WELL, I DIDN'T EXACTLY BACK HIM UP LAST TIME
'KAY, LEO.
WHAT'S THE PLAN?
FIRST, I'D LIKE TO CHECK SOMETHING WITH THE SHELL CELL.
LET'S GO SEE SOMEONE WELL-VERSED IN TECHNOLOGY. SOMEONE WHO'S ON SPEAKING TERMS WITH ME


SAY AGAIN?
YOU WANT ME TO RETRIEVE THE SHELL CELLS TRACKING COMPONENT?
YES, I'D ASK DONNIE, BUT I DON'T THINK HE'S IN A STATE TO PUT HIS BRAINPOWER TO GOOD USE TODAY
REALLY? WELL IT'S BEEN YEARS SINCE I LAST DISMANTLED A DEVICE MIKEY. MAY I USE YOUR COMPUTER TO READ SOME ONLINE DOCUMENTATION?
SURE! JUST DON'T OPEN MY INTERNET HISTORY OR ANY FILES ON MY DRIVE THAT END WITH "JPEG" OR "MPEG"
?
JUST MY IMPERSONATION OF RENOIR! HAH!!
OH YOU.
WHAT'S A "JPEG"?
ALRIGHT, APRIL! HERE'S MY SHELL CELL GO FOR IT!
THANKS.
WELL THEN, I'LL GO GET CASEY'S TOOLBOX AND BOOT UP YOUR COMPUTER
AND SINCE YOU WERE ONLY JOKING, I'LL MAKE SURE TO LOOK UP THOSE FILES YOU MENTIONED.
ARE "JPEG" AND "MPEG" LIKE YOUR DIRTY MAGAZINES?
WHY DOES YOUR SISTER KNOW ABOUT THOSE THINGS?
ACTUALLY, DON'T OPEN THOSE FILES !!
OUCH.


LOOK SHADOW! I FINISHED MY HOMEWORK!
GOOD JOB, CAROLE!
LOOK, AUGUSTUS. DADDY BROUGHT ME TO A SHOP WHERE I COULD MAKE MY OWN PLUSHIE SO I MADE A NEW FRIEND FOR SHAKESPEARE!
HE'S JUST LIKE YOUR FAT FRIEND.
HAHAHA!
YOU'RE RIGHT! HE LOOKS JUST LIKE MY P.
YEEEES?
P, FAILPROOF GREAT MASTER...
YOU DON'T WANT TO FOLLOW MOM IN CASE SHE OPENS UNCLE MIKEY'S SECRET FILES?
I'M WAY AHEAD OF Y'A ALL I ALREADY EXPLORED HIS PC ONCE BEFORE
IT'S FULL OF
LET GO OF MY BROTHER!
YOU'RE A BIG FAT BULLY, MR RALPH!
R RALPH? FAT?
I'M RUBBER YOU'RE GLUE, WHATEVER YOU SAY BOUNCES OFF ME AND STICKS TO YOU.
SO I WIN.
NOO!
WHY ARE YOU BABYSITTING MY SISTER?
JUST EARNING SOME POCKET MONEY UNTIL I FEEL WELL ENOUGH TO JOIN YOU GUYS IN YOUR PATROLS.
#1 DAD
HEY, LOOK AT ME WHEN I TALK TO.
MY BOOBS ARE NOT MY EYES.
#1 DAD
BUT OF COURSE!
LOOK, NOW IT'S A VOODOO DOLL OF MR RALPH! LET'S HURT HIM!
CAROLE THAT'S NOT NICE
(SIGH)

THERE I MODIFIED THE TRACKING COMPONENT SO IT CAN FUNCTION ON IT'S OWN. IT SEEMS LIKE I STILL REMEMBERED A THING OR TWO FROM MY TIME AS BAXTER STOCKMAN'S ASSISTANT.

YOU'RE A GENIUS. APRIL

WELL, THIS "GENIUS" HAS ONE MORE TRICK UP HER SLEEVE CARE TO HEAR ABOUT IT?

YES?

I REPROGRAMMED THE TRACKING COMPONENT TO MAKE IT SEND IT'S COORDINATES TO MIKEY'S COMPUTER IN ADDITION TO THE OTHER SHELL CELL.

IN OTHER WORDS, THIS COMPUTER HERE CAN ACT AS A THIRD SHELL CELL WITH THE PROPER EQUIPMENTS

WHOEVER SITS IN THIS CHAIR HAS THE WEB OF INFORMATION AT THEIR FINGERTIPS

THIS COULD PROVE VERY USEFUL, IF YOU RE ON THE MOVE AND NEED A SPECIFIC PIECE OF INFORMATION, OR A SHORTCUT.

WAIT YOU MEAN..

THAT'S RIGHT. MIKEY

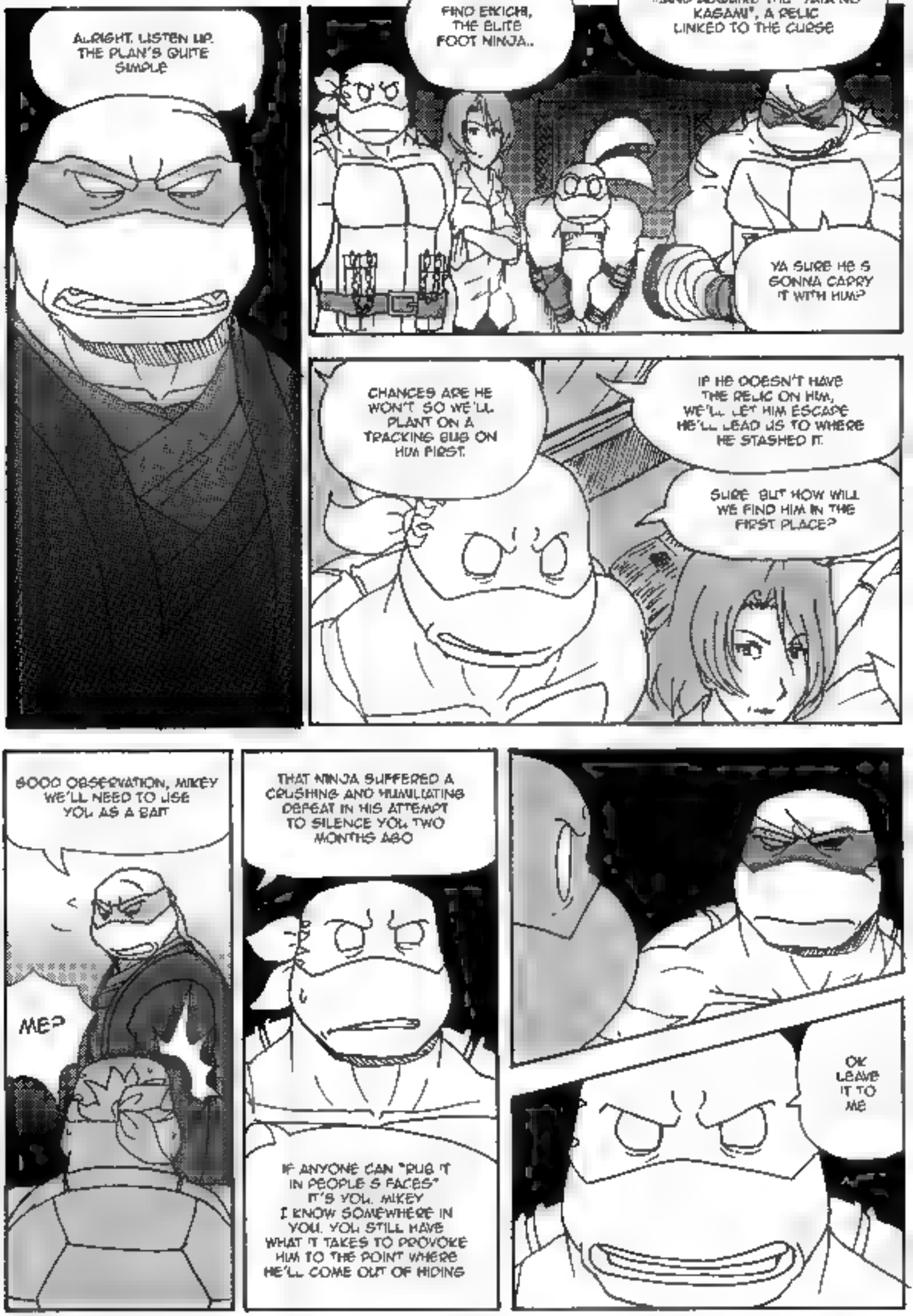
FROM TODAY ON I'LL BE YOUR NAVIGATOR

I FEEL LIKE THERE IS SO MUCH MORE I SHOULD'VE DONE FOR YOU

I DON'T LIKE BEING A BYSTANDER TO MY FAMILY'S SUFFERING. LET ME BE PART OF THE SOLUTION.

APRIL.. I WELL...

THANK YOU. APRIL..


ALRIGHT. LISTEN UP. THE PLAN'S QUITE SIMPLE
FIND ENICHI, THE ELITE FOOT NINJA..
...AND ACQUIRE THE "YATA NO KAGAMI", A RELIC LINKED TO THE CURSE
YA SURE HE S GONNA CARRY IT WITH HIM?
CHANCES ARE HE WON'T SO WE'LL PLANT ON A TRACKING BUG ON HIM FIRST.
IF HE DOESN'T HAVE THE RELIC ON HIM, WE'LL LET HIM ESCAPE HE'LL LEAD US TO WHERE HE STASHED IT.
SURE BUT HOW WILL WE FIND HIM IN THE FIRST PLACE?
GOOD OBSERVATION, MIKEY WE'LL NEED TO USE YOU AS A BAIT
ME?
THAT NINJA SUFFERED A CRUSHING AND HUMILIATING DEFEAT IN HIS ATTEMPT TO SILENCE YOU TWO MONTHS AGO
IF ANYONE CAN "RUB IT IN PEOPLE S FACES" IT'S YOU, MIKEY I KNOW SOMEWHERE IN YOU, YOU STILL HAVE WHAT IT TAKES TO PROVOKE HIM TO THE POINT WHERE HE'LL COME OUT OF HIDING
OK LEAVE IT TO ME


HEY I'M LEAVING NOW
I ENVY YOU. WELL, HAVE FUN PATROLLING!
I DON'T FIND IT EXACTLY "FUN"...
HUH? ALREADY?
YOU KNOW, I'M SLEEPING OVER SO WHEN YOU'LL BE DONE WITH YOUR WORK CAN YOU COME WAKE ME UP AND SAY HI?
SURE NO PROBLEM!
AWW, HOW SWEET. NOW I KINDA WANT A HUG TOO.
HMMM.
HMMM.
I HEARD YOU! MOMMY'S HUGS TO THE RESCUE!
AH, GEEZ MOM!
AUGUSTUS. STAY CLOSE TO RAPHAEL AND LISTEN TO HIM, ALRIGHT?
NO WORRIES, MRS. JONES! EVEN THOUGH I MIGHT NOT ALWAYS AGREE WITH HIM...
I KNOW MOST OF THE TIME, HE'S RELIABLE AND HAS MY BEST INTEREST IN MIND.
MOVE OUT YA WUSS! AND IF YOU STILL SUCK AT RUNNING ON ROOFTOPS, YOU'LL REGRET IT!!
I TAKE IT ALL BACK, MRS. JONES!!
MAYBE VOODOO DOESN'T WORK


ALRIIIGHT! FIRST OPERATION IN SEVENTEEN YEARS FOR THE HAMATO CLAN! AND APRIL'S IN ON IT TOO!
KINDA BRINGS YOU BACK, HUH?
ERRR. YES IT DOES.. LIKE OLD TIMES..
MAYBE THAT WAS A STRETCH. WE DO HAVE A NEWBIE THIS TIME AROUND.
RENOIR. HE'S A BIT SKITTISH BUT HE'LL GET THE HANG OF IT
AND NO DONNIE
I KNOW. I KNOW THAT TOO WELL.
LISTEN LEONARDO. IT MIGHT SEEM LIKE I'M ALWAYS EASYGOING BUT I'M VERY WELL AWARE OF THE ELEPHANT IN THE ROOM.
I WAS JUST GIVING YOU TIME TO SETTLE DOWN NOW. I ASKED RAPH TO GIVE ME A MINUTE ALONE WITH YOU SO YOU CAN LEVEL WITH ME ABOUT IT
CAN YOU DO THAT FOR ME?
SURE
SORRY, YOU BEING OCCASIONALLY SERIOUS AND CALM IS STILL NEW TO ME
REALLY?
ALSO. YOU USUALLY JUST CALL ME "LEO"


SO.
DONNIE STILL HOLDS AN OVERBEARING GRUDGE AGAINST YOU OVER OUR SENSEI'S DEATH... NO MATTER WHAT YOU SAY OR DO. HE'LL ANTAGONIZE YOU.
AS FOR RAPH, DONNIE USED TO GET ALONG A SIT WITH HIM.
HOWEVER THIS CHANGED WHEN BENOIR CAME INTO THE PICTURE FOR SOME REASON. HE NOW MERELY "TOLERATES" RAPH AND WILL TRY TO PICK ON HIM WHENEVER THEY MEET.
AS FOR MYSELF, I THINK I'M STILL ON HIS GOOD GRACES... OR AT LEAST THAT'S THE FEELING HE GAVE ME
WE'VE ALWAYS RESPECTED EACH OTHER'S PRIVACY AND LIFE CHOICES.
THE SAME THING CAN BE SAID FOR THE JONES FAMILY.
HE'S ESPECIALLY NICE TOWARDS APRIL
THERE'S STILL SOME GOOD IN DONNIE I KNOW IT HOWEVER IT'D BE FOR THE BETTER IF YOU COULD LET APRIL OR MYSELF DO THE TALKING
WE'LL HAVE A BETTER SHOT AT REASONING WITH HIM.
SO DON'T WORRY. HE'LL COME AROUND ONE OF THESE DAYS TRUST ME!
TRUST YES YOU'RE RIGHT THANKS, MIKEY
HE HE HE
HMMMMMM...




HEY, MASTER WHAT IF THE [illegible] SUDDENLY DECIDES TO ATTACK MRS. JONES?
BECAUSE YOU KNOW, HE WENT AFTER SHADOW LAST TIME
I'M ON CASEY'S GONNA PROTECT HER


OKAY BUT MR. JONES WASN'T HOME..
HE'S GONNA BE SOON! HE'S JUST OUT ON AN ERRAND!
QUIT WORRYIN'

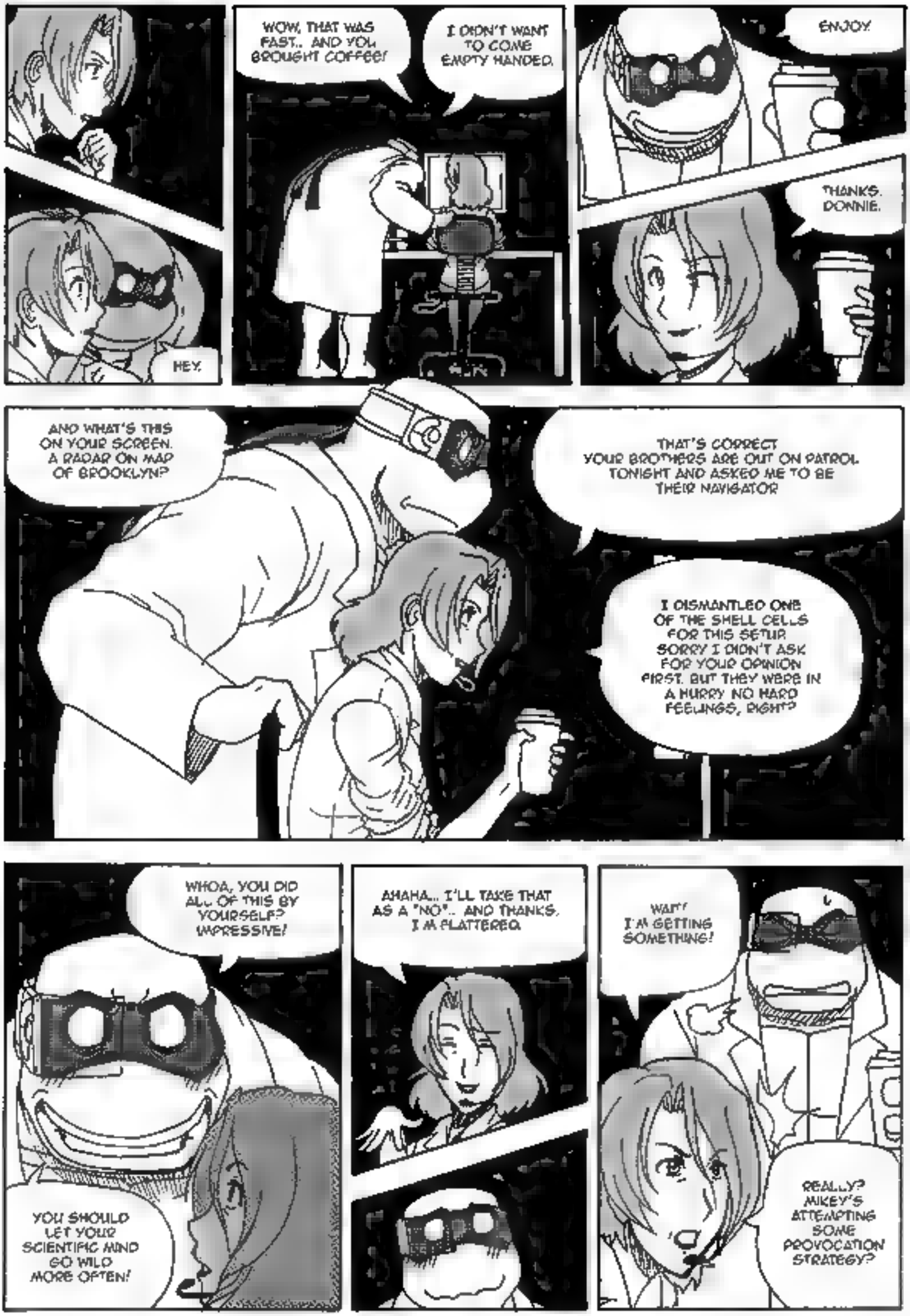

STUPID WORTHLESS RENTAL CAR BROKE DOWN AFTER I LEFT THE CONVENTION CENTER! NOW I'M IN THE MIDDLE OF NOWHERE WAITIN' FOR THE TOW TRUCK I'M AFRAID I'M GONNA BE HOME MUCH LATER HONEY
OH CASEY, I TOLD YOU TO GO EASY ON THE CAR! IT'S NOT AS ROBUST AS YOUR HUMVEE! WELL ANYWAYS, JUST COME HOME IN ONE PIECE ALRIGHT?
YEAH OKAY I WILL [illegible] GIVE YA KISS


GREAT THE MAN WHO TRIED TO KILL SHADOW IS ON THE LOOSE AND I M ALONE WHAT IF HE COMES BACK TO FINISH THE JOB? HOW WILL I KEEP SHADOW SAFE?
I DON'T STAND A CHANCE AGAINST A [illegible] ON MY OWN CASEY'S FAR AWAY FROM HOME AND [illegible] IS ON PATROL TONIGHT I COULD [illegible] TO COME BACK OR [illegible] WILL HELP ME
Dialing


(SIGH) WHO IS IT?
I DON'T WANT TO BE DISTURBED RIGHT NOW..
HELLO.
HUH? APRIL?
NO, NO, NO! IT'S ALRIGHT!
I WASN'T DOING ANYTHING IMPORTANT AT ALL!
SO CASEY'S GONE AND YOU NEED SOME MUSCLE?
I'LL HOP IN THE SHOWER AND I'LL BE RIGHT OVER!
APRIL AND I ALL ALONE FOR ONCE. NO CASEY
THIS FAKE WORLD IS GIVING ME ALL THE RIGHT REASONS TO PLAY ALONG THIS TIME..


I'LL PAY YOU BACK NEXT WEEK. C'MON, JUST GIMME..
AW SHIT.. HEY MAN, SOME ASSHOLE STOLE MY COFFEE
H...HEY! CAME HERE AS FAST AS I COULD!
FEAR NOT, THE CAVALRY HAS ARRIVED!
HEY, UNCLE DONNIE!!
MOM'S EXPECTING YOU!
I COMPLETELY FORGOT ABOUT SHADOW.
FOR ONCE, I WAS LOOKING FORWARD TO PLAYING ALONG TOO.
THIS FAKE WORLD IS MOCKING ME ISN'T IT?
LET ME HELP YOU WITH THIS!
I'M AMAZED AT HOW FAST YOU GOT HERE
AH. .ER... THANKS.
THEN I'LL PLAY ALONG MY WAY, ALRIGHT.


I GOT THIS.
HUH?
YOU CAN GO BACK TO WHAT YOU WERE DOING
UNCLE DONNIE, YOU OFTEN SOUND A LITTLE COLDER THAN EVERYONE ELSE...
BUT THAT'S YOUR WAY OF SHOWING THAT YOU CARE ISN'T IT?
ANYWAYS, BACK TO MY MATH HOMEWORK.
SEE YOU LATER!
SUCH A MEANINGLESS ORTVEL. SHE THINKS SHE CAN READ ME. YET UTTERLY FAILS AT IT.
THAT FOOLISH GIRL TAKES FROM HER EQUALLY ANNOYING FATHER IN NAIVETY, NO DOUBT..


HEY.
WOW, THAT WAS FAST.. AND YOU BROUGHT COFFEE!
I DIDN'T WANT TO COME EMPTY HANDED.
ENJOY.
THANKS, DONNIE.
AND WHAT'S THIS ON YOUR SCREEN. A RADAR OR MAP OF BROOKLYN?
THAT'S CORRECT YOUR BROTHERS ARE OUT ON PATROL TONIGHT AND ASKED ME TO BE THEIR NAVIGATOR
I DISMANTLED ONE OF THE SHELL CELLS FOR THIS SETUP SORRY I DIDN'T ASK FOR YOUR OPINION FIRST. BUT THEY WERE IN A HURRY NO HARD FEELINGS, RIGHT?
WHOA, YOU DID ALL OF THIS BY YOURSELF? IMPRESSIVE!
YOU SHOULD LET YOUR SCIENTIFIC MIND GO WILD MORE OFTEN!
AHAHA... I'LL TAKE THAT AS A "NO".. AND THANKS, I'M FLATTERED.
WAIT! I'M GETTING SOMETHING!
REALLY? MIKEY'S ATTEMPTING SOME PROVOCATION STRATEGY?


EIKICHI GOTOH!
YEAH, YOU! SHREDDER'S #1 LAPDOG!
SO MUCH FOR TRYING TO SHUT ME UP, HUH?
I'M STILL ALIVE AND KICKING! I CAN STILL DIG OUT DIRT ON YOU!
I HOPE YOU LIKE LOVE STORIES.
BECAUSE MY NEXT BOOK WILL BE ABOUT HOW YOUR BOSS, OROKU SAKI, PROBABLY NEVER GOT LAID!
EXACTLY WHAT I EXPECTED OF MIKEY.. HE KNOWS EXACTLY HOW TO PUSH THE BUTTONS OF OUR TARGET
AS ONE OF SHREDDER'S ELITE NINJA EIKICHI WORSHIPS HIS BOSS. HE'LL WANT TO SILENCE MIKEY
AND AS A COMPANION PIECE
I'LL WRITE ABOUT HIS LOSER BRO WHO DIED TRYING TO SCORE!!
HEY. DESPITE BEING IN A MOSTLY INDUSTRIAL AREA THERE MIGHT BE BYSTANDERS WHO'LL HEAR MIKEY
YEAH? THAT JUST ADDS TO THE PRESSURE FOR THAT ELITE NINJA TO SHUT UP MIKEY THERE AIN'T ENOUGH PEOPLE AROUND TO INTERFERE WITH OUR PLAN, JUST ENOUGH TO PISS OFF THAT GUY.


YOU'RE AN ELITE ALRIGHT..
..AN ELITE LOSER IN THE FOOT CLAN!!
HUFF..HUFF.. HE'S FAST!
THEN RUN FASTER SLOWPOKE!
WE GOTTA BE READY TO BACK MIKEY UP!
MY TURTLE SENSE IS TINGLING!
GAHAHAHA! M.SSED ME!
YOU.
I'LL KILL YOU !!
CRAP! BOOST ME UP, RENOIR!
AH!
OK. OK!
READY WHEN YOU ARE!

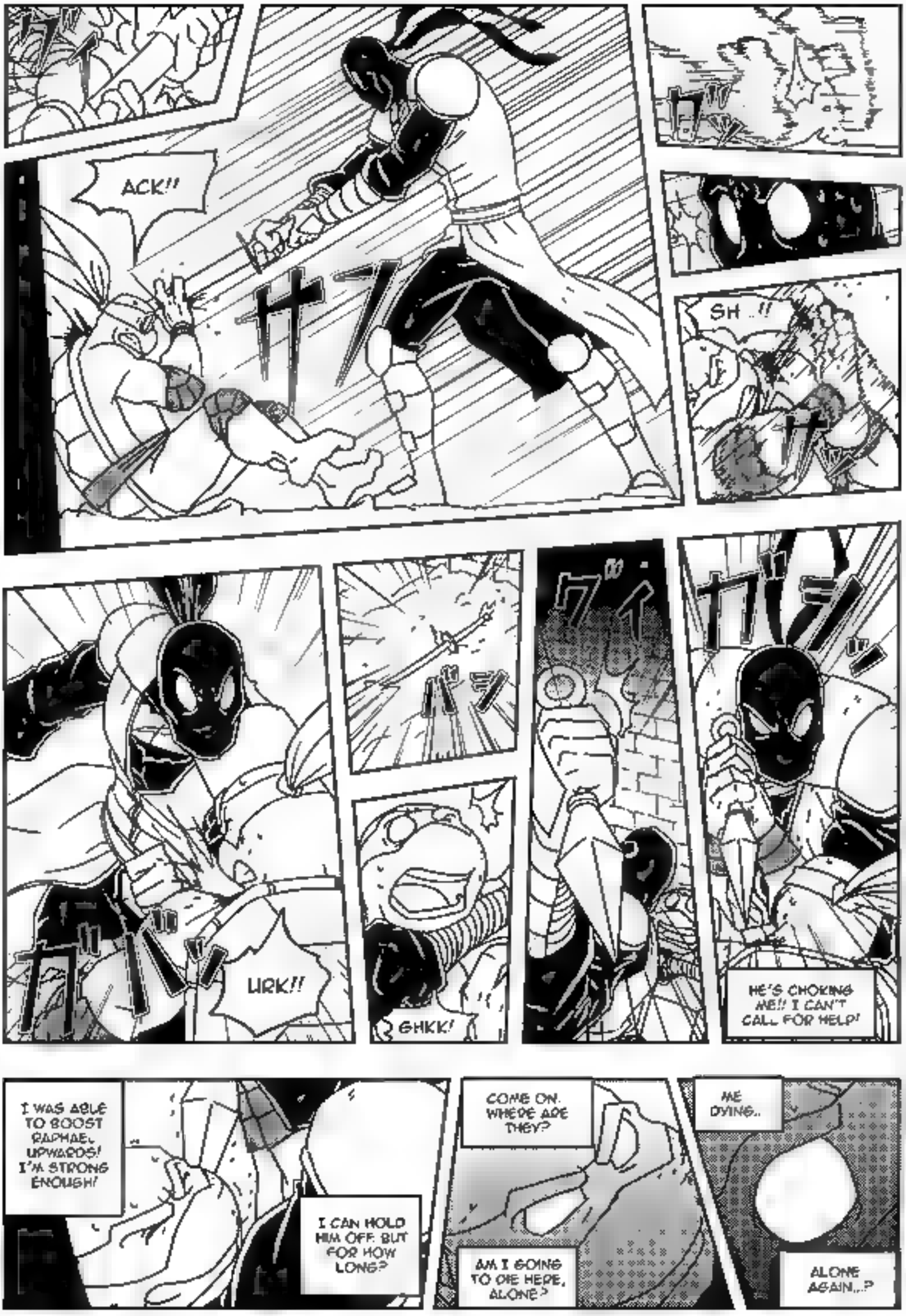

SHOW ME SOME RESULTS!
REMEMBER ALL THAT BENCH PRESS YA DID?
ドス
GGRRR..
RRAAAH!!
ドン ドン ドン


KILL THEM!!
THIS IS WHERE YOU'LL REGRET SUCKING AT CARDIO, RAPH!
IDIOT I'LL MAKE UP FOR THAT WITH SHEER BRUTE FORCE!
I THOUGHT EIKICHI WAS ON HIS OWN! DIDN'T KARAI TAKE CARE OF HIS FOLLOWERS?
WAIT! THEY'RE WEARING JAPANESE FOOT NINJA GEAR! THEN.
HAS THERE BEEN A MUTINY WITHIN KARAI'S GROUP?
NO.. THEY'RE NOT LIKE THAT.. BUT
NO.. I CAN'T WASTE ANY TIME THINKING ABOUT THIS! NOT NOW!
I HAVE A MISSION TO FULFILL!


CHECKED. NO MIRROR ON HIM.
SWITCHING TO PLAN B.
YOU FREAKS HAVE RUINED ME TWICE ALREADY!
YOU'LL PAY FOR THAT HUMILIATION!!
HUFF. HUFF
HOW UNWISE OF YOU TO FIGHT US. YOU LOOK LIKE YOU JUST CAME BACK FROM ANOTHER BATTLE AND STILL HAVEN'T RECOVERED.
OUT OF THE FRYING PAN AND INTO THE FIRE...
SILENCE! YOU HAVEN'T HEARD THE LAST OF ME!
EVERYBODY! FALL BACK NOW!


カッ
カッ
カッ
ALL GONE!
HEY LEO! YOU COULD'VE WAITED A BIT LONGER BEFORE SCARIN' 'EM OFF!! I WAS JUST GETTING WARMED UP!
SORRY, RAPH, BUT HE DIDN'T CARRY ANYTHING ON HIM.. WE HAVE NO TIME TO WASTE
THE TRACKING BUG'S BEEN "PLANTED" ON OUR TARGET TIME TO MAKE GOOD USE OF THIS MODIFIED SHELL CELL..
YOU... "PLANTED" IT?
SHOVED IT INTO AN OPEN WOUND.
ヒロ
ヒロ
WHAT?
I FORGOT ABOUT HIM.
RENOIR!! DRAG YER LAZY ASS UP HERE! WE'RE LEAVIN'!


RENO!!!!!!R!! SPEAK UP OR I'M GONNA KICK YER ASS!!
HEY. YOUR FRIENDS ARE ALL GONE...
WHY ARE YOU STILL HERE ?
WHAT ARE YOU TELLING ME?
WAIT... NO! IT CAN'T BE!
YOU SURVIVED!
I.. I MEAN THAT IN A GOOD WAY!
YOU KNOW, IT WAS AN ACCIDENT! I JUST WANTED TO PUSH YOU OFF AND.
ERR
THIS TIME, LET'S NOT FIGHT, OKAY?
WE DON'T HAVE TO!


ACK!!
SH..!!
URK!!
GHKK!
HE'S CHOKING ME!! I CAN'T CALL FOR HELP!
I WAS ABLE TO BOOST RAPHAEL UPWARDS! I'M STRONG ENOUGH!
I CAN HOLD HIM OFF BUT FOR HOW LONG?
COME ON. WHERE ARE THEY?
AM I GOING TO DIE HERE, ALONE?
ME DYING..
ALONE AGAIN...?


MY BODY... I FEEL LIKE IT'S REMEMBERING SOMETHING
A DARK PLACE I FELT WEAK AND CONFUSED.
A DEAD END. I COULDN'T SCREAM. I COULDN'T CALL FOR HELP
THEN I FELT BETTER AND IT WAS WARM AND SALTY
AGAIN COULDN'T BREATHE COULDN'T CALL FOR HELP TRIED TO GET SOME AIR DYING
AGAIN. WARM. SALTY. SAME TASTE..


ガ
ガ
ゴゴゴ
ゴゴゴ
SEEZ LOUISE!!
RENOIR!
RENOIR!! HEY, SAY SOMETHIN'!!!

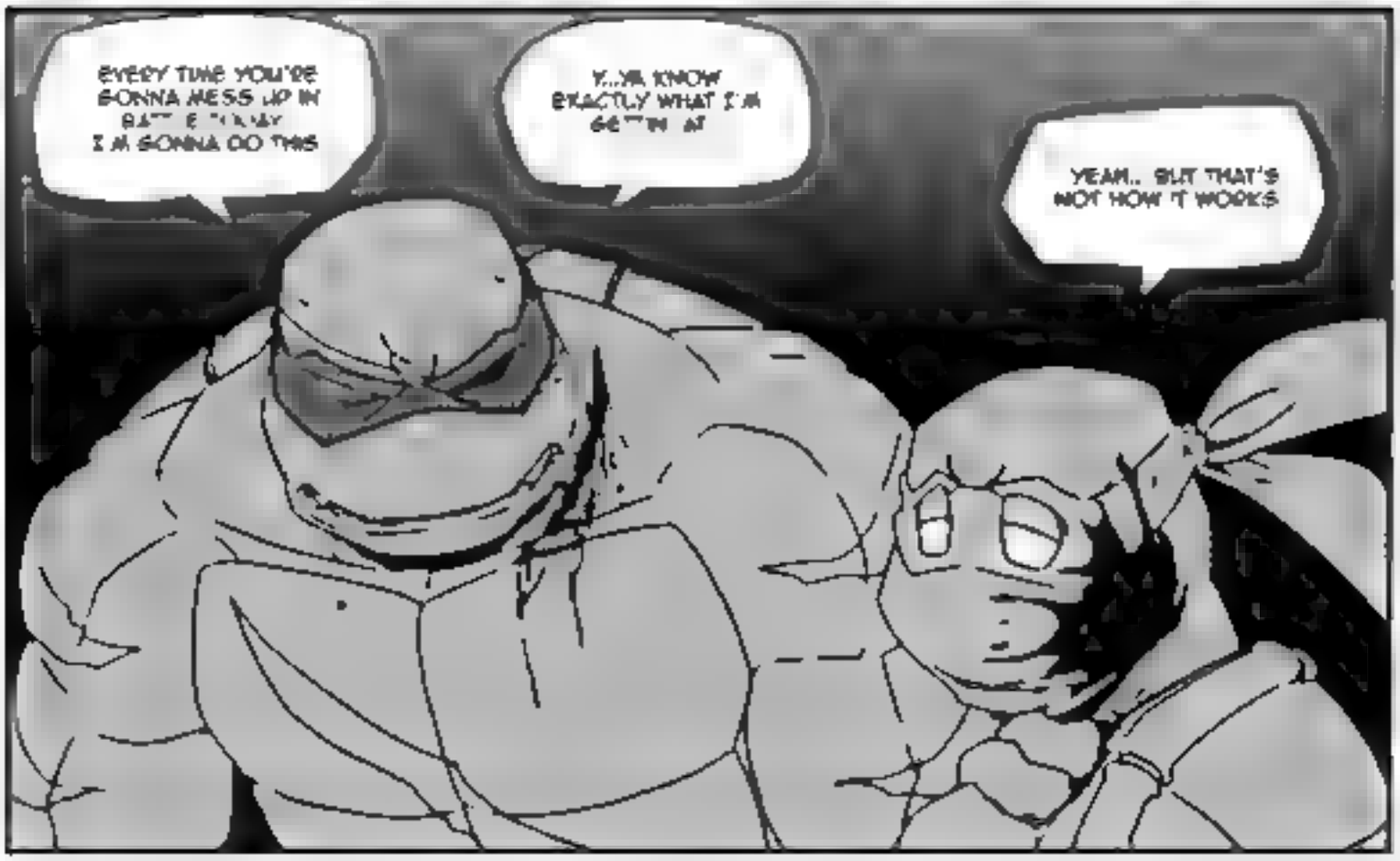

M.. MASTER?
..GOOD. SNAPPED OUT OF IT.. GOOD..
SIT STILL, I'M GONNA TRY TO STOP THE BLEEDIN'
..YA DUMBASS! WHY DIDN'T YA FIGHT BACK?
I... I DON'T KNOW. I.. I BLACKED OUT..
B. BUT NOW IT HURTS NOW THAT I WOKE UP.. IT JUST HURTS SO MUCH..
RAPH, LEAVE ERICH TO MIKEY AND I' CARRY RENOIR TO DONNIE AND HAVE HIM ADMINISTER FIRST AID ON HIM!
I AGREE! I MEAN, JUST LOOK AT HOW MUCH HE'S BLEEDING!
NO!
HE CAN TOUGH IT OUT!! HE'S STAYIN' WITH US!!


..OKAY, RAPH. I GET IT.
LEO. PASS ME THE SHELL CELL, PLEASE
OK
ALRIGHT. SEE WHERE HE IS APRIL? I'M GOING TO CLOSE IN ON OUR TARGET BUT I'M LEAVING THE RADAR WITH LEO.
WHAT?
IF I LOSE SIGHT OF HIM, I'LL CALL YOU FROM A PHONE BOOTH FOR DIRECTIONS
WAIT..
CAN'T WAIT, LEO.
THEY'RE WEAKER WHEN SPREAD OUT I'M OFF TO LURE AS MANY NINJAS AS POSSIBLE AWAY FROM THEIR BOSS.
YOU HELP RAPH PATCH UP DENOIR BEFORE GOING AFTER THAT EIKICHI. I'LL CLEAR THE WAY FOR YOU.
BUT... BUT I "
THANKS FOR YOUR VOTE OF CONFIDENCE LEO! WHEN YOU SENT ME OUT ALONE TO PROVOKE THAT ELITE FOOT NINJA ON MY OWN I KNEW YOU HAD BIG EXPECTATIONS FOR ME
THEREFORE REST ASSURED! YOU CAN COUNT ON ME TO DO AN EVEN BETTER JOB ENTERTAINING OUR LOCAL NINJA THUGS UNTIL YOU JOIN IN ON THE FUN!
AND RAPH.
...I GOT THIS DON'T WORRY.
YEAH. I KNOW. SORRY, MIKEY.
AH. !


WHAT?
HE DOESN'T LOOK SO GOOD.
WE REALLY SHOULD DROP HIM SOMEWHERE SAFE.
HE'S COMIN' WITH US!!
LOOK HOW PAST HE HEALED! HE'S OKAY!
THE BLEEDIN' STOPPED!
HE'S STILL IN TERRIBLE PAIN! IF YOU MOVE HIM AROUND LIKE THIS HE'LL SUFFER EVEN MORE! JUST LIKE MIKEY DID WHEN YOU CARRIED HIM ON YOUR BIKE DURING THE CHRISTMAS INCIDENT...
SHADDAP, LEO!!!!!
YA WEREN'T EVEN THERE..
I SAW YOU ON THAT NIGHT
SO. YOU JUST COULDN'T HELP YOURSELF, COULD YA
YA WAITED AND WAITED. 'TILL THE DAY I'D SCREW UP AGAIN TO BRING THAT UP...
YA MUST FEEL SOOOOO GOOD RIGHT NOW.
I KNOW I ALWAYS SCREW UP. I KNOW I'M NO GOOD..


YA KNOW THAT!!
BUT YA JUST HAD TO FUCKIN' REMIND ME OF MY MISTAKES LIKE YA ALWAYS DO!!
I'M DOIN' MY BEST ALREADY!! AIN'T THAT GOOD ENOUGH FOR YA? HUH? HUH?
MR. LEONARDO!
RAPH... DON'T LET THE CURSE WIN...
SHUDDAP..
DON'T GIVE IN TO YOUR DARKNESS..
SHUDDAP..!
FOCUS!! YOU MUST RESIST!


DON'T FUCKIN' PATRONIZE ME, ASSHOLE!!
I KNOW MYSELF AND I KNOW RENOIR, DAMMIT!!
HE CAN DEAL WITH HIS RAGE ALONE
HE'LL JUST HAVE TO CARVE A LITTLE DEEPER INTO HIS SCARS.
WHAT THE...!
MASTER! DON'T DO IT!!
NOT AGAIN..
HAAH.. HAAH..
HAAH... HAAH.
R-RENOIR
...


EVERY TIME YOU'RE GONNA MESS UP IN BATTLE I'M GONNA DO THIS
Y...YA KNOW EXACTLY WHAT I'M GETTIN' AT
YEAH... BUT THAT'S NOT HOW IT WORKS

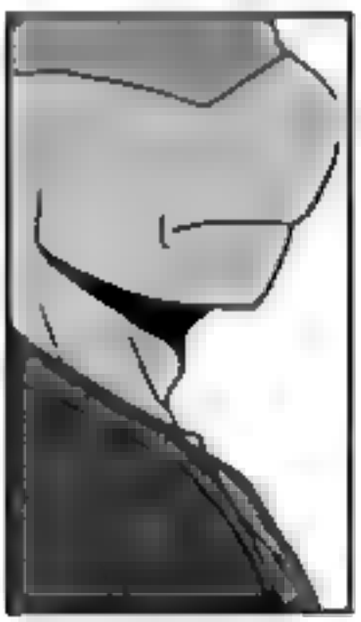

AND THE REASON WHY YOU DID THIS MASTER... IT'S NOT...

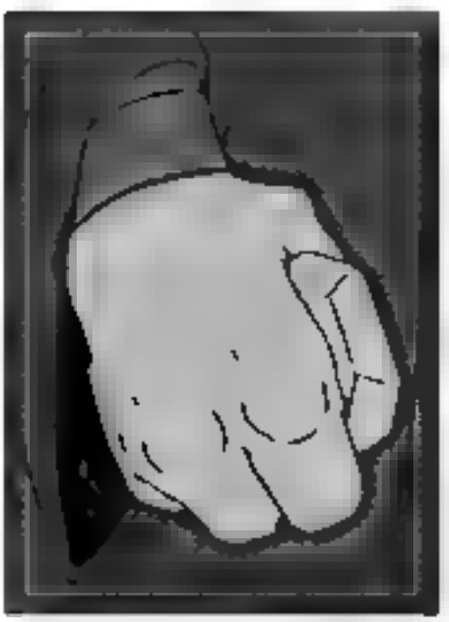

CRAM IT, KID.
HOP ON MY BACK POONTO

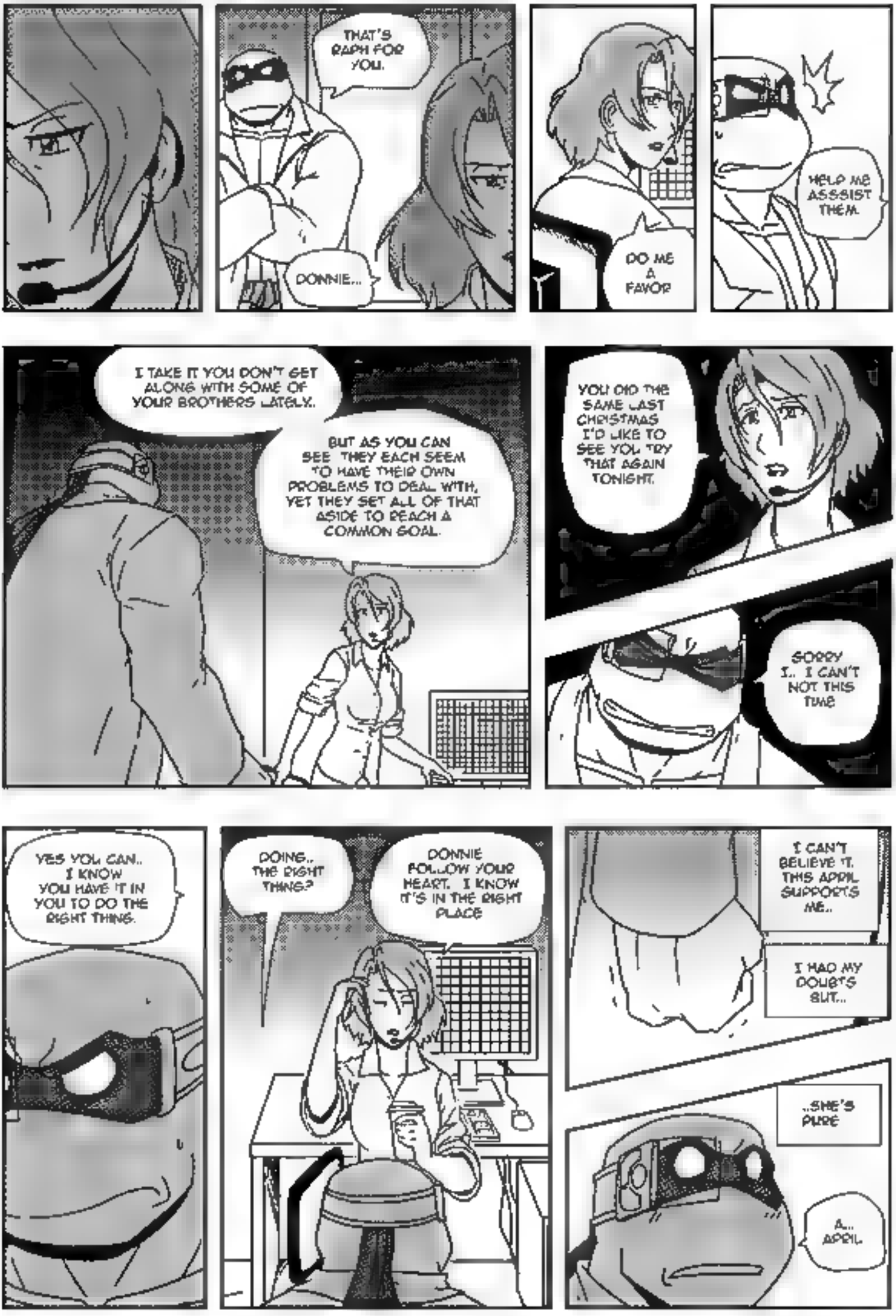

(SIGH)










THAT'S RAPH FOR YOU.
DONNIE...
DO ME A FAVOR
HELP ME ASSIST THEM.
I TAKE IT YOU DON'T GET ALONG WITH SOME OF YOUR BROTHERS LATELY.
BUT AS YOU CAN SEE THEY EACH SEEM TO HAVE THEIR OWN PROBLEMS TO DEAL WITH, YET THEY SET ALL OF THAT ASIDE TO REACH A COMMON GOAL.
YOU DID THE SAME LAST CHRISTMAS I'D LIKE TO SEE YOU TRY THAT AGAIN TONIGHT.
SORRY I.. I CAN'T NOT THIS TIME
YES YOU CAN.. I KNOW YOU HAVE IT IN YOU TO DO THE RIGHT THING.
DOING.. THE RIGHT THING?
DONNIE FOLLOW YOUR HEART. I KNOW IT'S IN THE RIGHT PLACE
I CAN'T BELIEVE IT. THIS APRIL SUPPORTS ME..
I HAD MY DOUBTS BUT...
..SHE'S PURE
A... APRIL

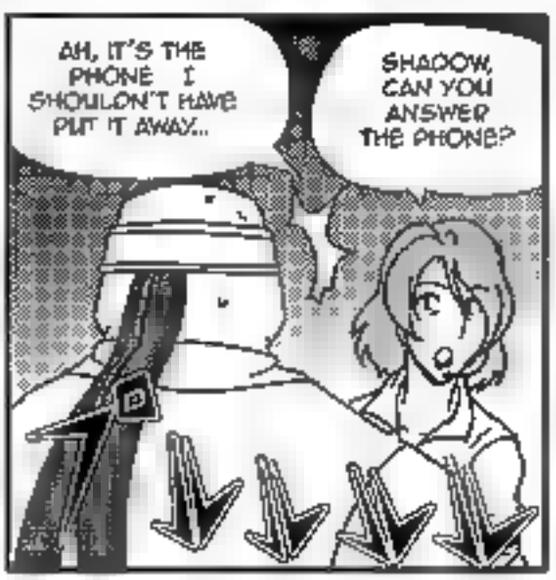

I'LL DO IT THEN...
..FOR YOU.

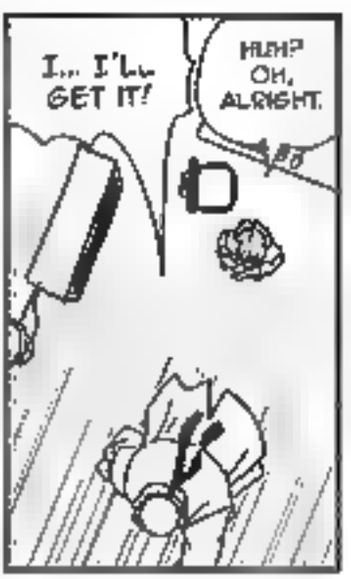


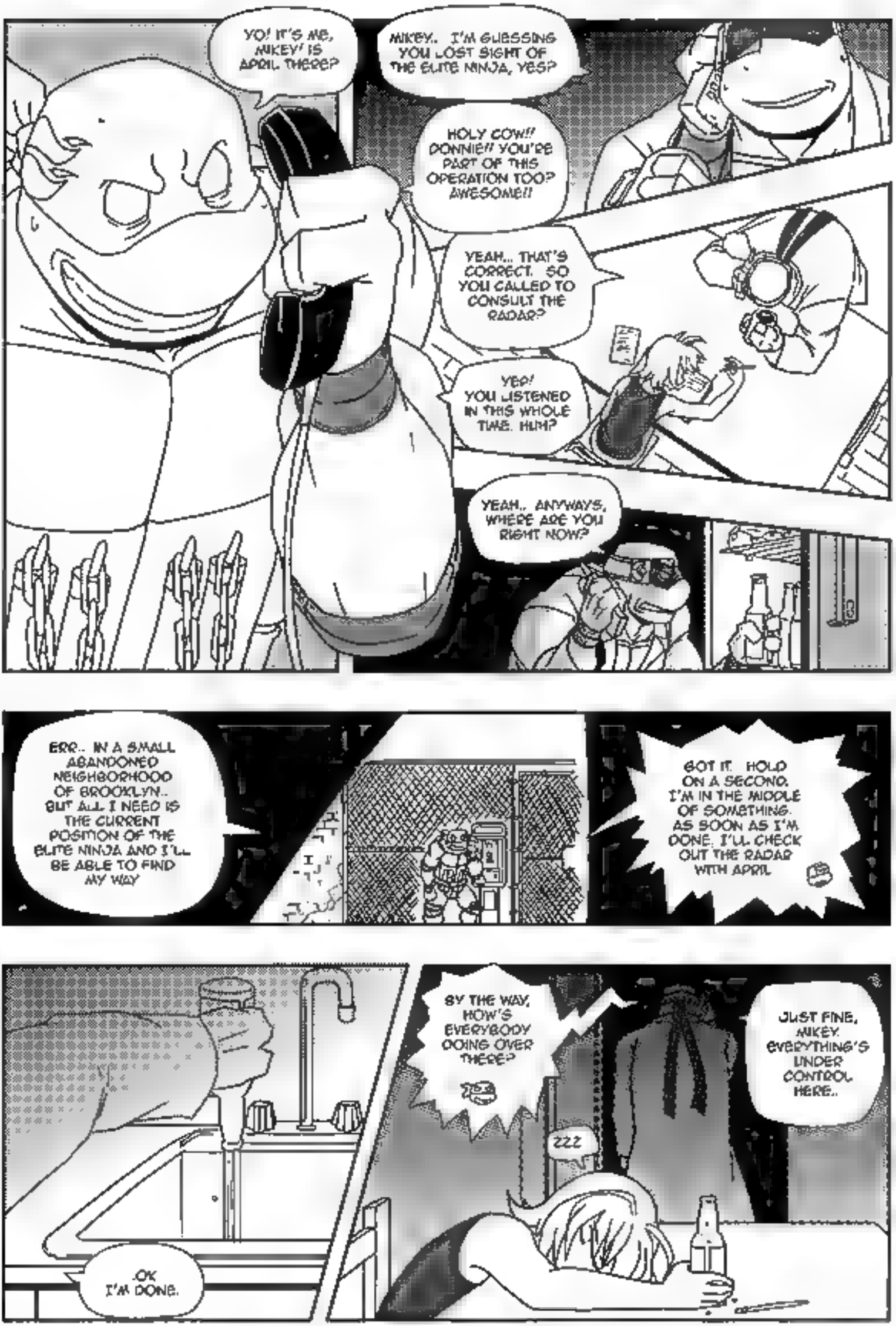

DONNIE... DON'T DO IT FOR ME OR ANYBODY ELSE. DO IT FOR YOURSELF
I KNOW YOU UNDERSTAND WHAT THAT MEANS.


APRIL... YOU'VE ALWAYS BEEN MY OASIS IN A BARREN LAND. EVEN IN THIS FAKE WORLD.
I KNOW EXACTLY WHAT YOU MEANT, APRIL..
I'LL DO EVERYTHING I CAN TO WIN YOUR TRUST... AND THEN. WHEN THE TIME COMES
I'LL SHARE THE TRUTH WITH YOU.. BECAUSE YOU'RE TOO GOOD FOR THIS WORLD.


YES. I KNOW..
I'LL DO IT FOR MYSELF.
DONNIE...! THANK YOU!


AH, IT'S THE PHONE I SHOULDN'T HAVE PUT IT AWAY...
SHADOW, CAN YOU ANSWER THE PHONE?


I... I'LL GET IT!
HUH? OH, ALRIGHT.


YO! IT'S ME, MIKEY! IS APRIL THERE?
MIKEY.. I'M GUESSING YOU LOST SIGHT OF THE ELITE NINJA, YES?
HOLY COW!! DONNIE!! YOU'RE PART OF THIS OPERATION TOO? AWESOME!!
YEAH... THAT'S CORRECT. SO YOU CALLED TO CONSULT THE RADAR?
YEP! YOU LISTENED IN THIS WHOLE TIME. HUH?
YEAH.. ANYWAYS, WHERE ARE YOU RIGHT NOW?
ERR.. IN A SMALL ABANDONED NEIGHBORHOOD OF BROOKLYN.. BUT ALL I NEED IS THE CURRENT POSITION OF THE ELITE NINJA AND I'LL BE ABLE TO FIND MY WAY
GOT IT. HOLD ON A SECOND. I'M IN THE MIDDLE OF SOMETHING. AS SOON AS I'M DONE, I'LL CHECK OUT THE RADAR WITH APRIL
OK I'M DONE.
BY THE WAY, HOW'S EVERYBODY DOING OVER THERE?
ZZZ
JUST FINE, MIKEY. EVERYTHING'S UNDER CONTROL HERE..


OKAY, MIKEY... THE RADAR SAYS THE ELITE FOOT AT THE INTERSECTION TALBOT-OOONEY. WHAT WAS THAT BUILDING AGAIN...?
LEONARDO. THE TARGET STOPPED MOVING . I THINK HE'S INSIDE THE ABANDONED WATER TREATMENT PLANT ON TALBOT-OOONEY!
WATER... PLANT?
WAIT! I KNOW THAT PLACE! LET'S NOT RUSH IN!
LEAVE THIS TO ME, APRIL
MIKEY! TRY TO LURE AS MANY NINJAS OUT OF THE BUILDING AS POSSIBLE!
SO THAT'S ONE WAY TO USE THAT GADGET...
YOU DON'T NEED TO GO IN! YOU JUST NEED TO DIVIDE AND CONFUSE THE GROUP INSIDE THE BUILDING!
AS FOR THE OTHER TEAM..
DONNIE...!!
RAPH? RENOIR?
RAPH? RENOIR?
RAPH! DONNIE'S IN ON THIS WITH US! YOU TALK TO HIM!
DONNIE?? YOU GOTTA BE KIDDIN'!
RAPHAEL HERE! WHAT? WE GOTTA HEAD TO THE SEWERS?
YES! YOU CAN GO INSIDE THE BUILDING THROUGH THE SEWERS! I'VE USED THAT ROUTE MANY TIMES WHEN I WAS SCAVENGING FOR MECHANICAL PARTS!
MIKEY'S ALREADY ON HIS WAY TO CREATE A DIVERSION FROM OUTSIDE! SNEAK IN, POP OUT AT THE HEART OF THE BUILDING AND THEN STRIKE THOSE NINJAS BEFORE THEY EVEN KNOW WHAT'S GOING ON!


LEO! WE'RE TAKIN' THE SEWERS! C'MON!!
I'M RIGHT BEHIND YOU!
KARAI! WHY ARE NINJAS OF OUR FACTION SIDING WITH EIKICHI?
THOSE ARE HIS FOLLOWERS IN DISGUISE!
LEO! DOWN, WILL YA?
SADAO INFILTRATED EIKICHI'S RANKS TO TO ASSESS THIS S ION.
HE'LL STAY AWAY FROM FIGHTS BUT IF YOU'RE IN DANGER HE'LL BACK YOU UP
THEY WAITED FOR MOST OF OUR UNITS TO BE DISPATCHED TO BREAK OUT OF THEIR CELLS BACK AT OUR HEADQUARTERS, WEARING OUR GEAR TO BLEND IN.
SORRY I COULDN'T LET YOU KNOW SOONER WHEN THIS HAPPENED I HAD TO WAIT FOR YOU TO CONTACT ME, JUST TO BE SURE YOUR BROTHERS WEREN'T NEARBY.




WHAT WAS THAT FOR?


I'M SUPPOSED TO BE IMPRESSED? I TOLD YA TO CLIMB DOWN NOT PUT ON A SHOW. TCH.


RAPH'S DARK SIDE CAN'T BE REPRESSED FOREVER TIME IS RUNNING OUT
THE SOONER I FIND THE MIRROR, THE SOONER WE CAN KILL ANOTHER MORINAGA AND "RESET" RAPH'S CURSE


LEADER, WHAT ARE WE TO DO NOW THAT WE'VE REASSEMBLED?
THINGS AREN'T LOOKING GOOD FOR US.. WHAT WITH THE GREEN FREAKS AND THE JAPANESE FACTION OF THE CLAN BEING ON OUR TAIL..


THEY'RE ALL ENEMIES OF THE SHREDDER WE'LL TAKE CARE OF THEM ONE BY ONE
FOR STARTERS, WITHOUT THIS MIRROR, I KNOW THE CLAN WON'T BE ABLE TO CARRY OUT THEIR MISSION.
I DON'T CARE ABOUT THEIR MISSION.
I DON'T CARE ABOUT YAMATA-NO-OROCHI.
I DON'T CARE ABOUT SAVING THE WORLD.

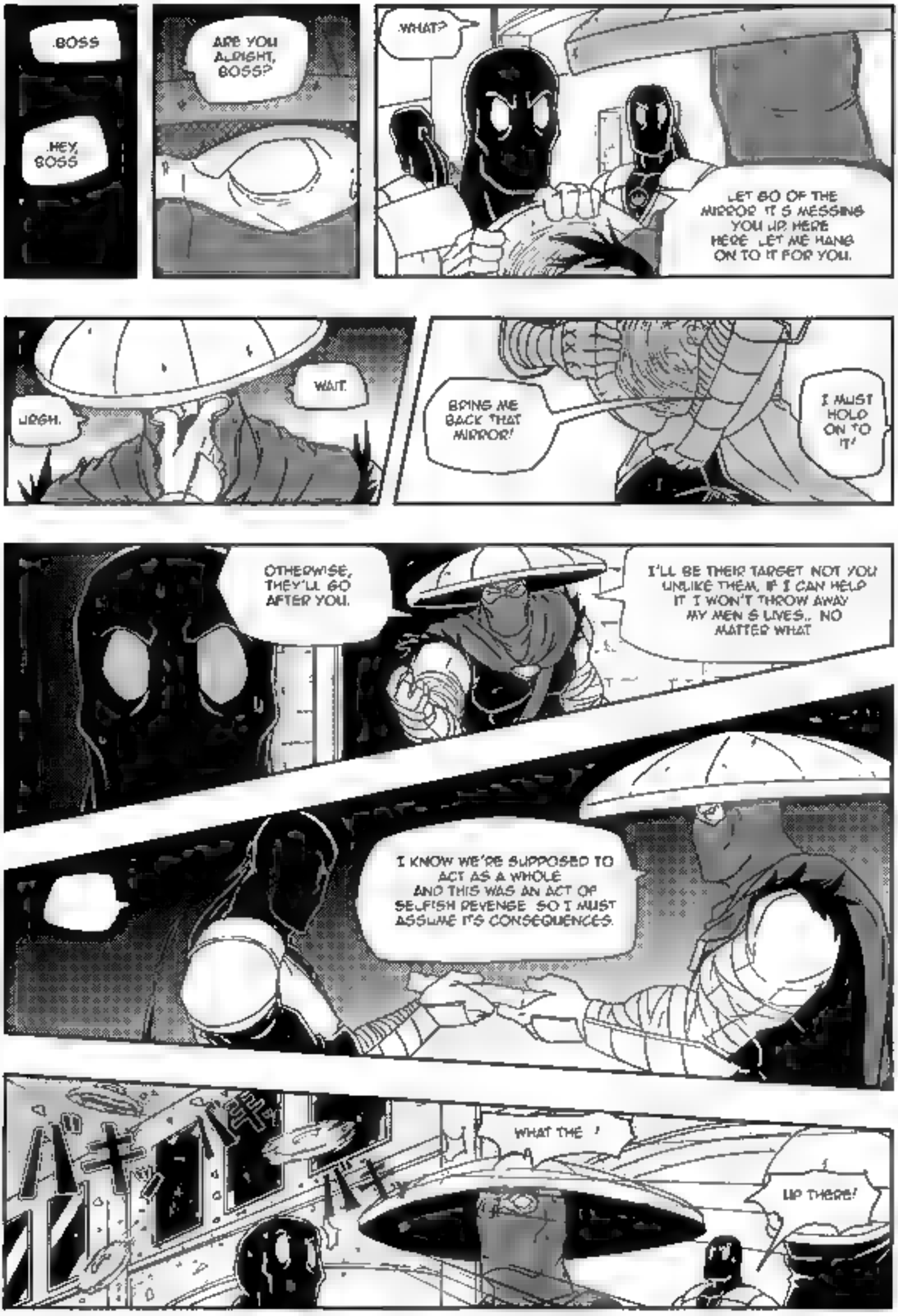

THE SHREDDER DIDN'T CARE ABOUT IT EITHER THAT'S WHY HE TRIED TO USE THE TOTSUKA SWORD AS A TOOL FOR HIS REVENGE AGAINST HAMATO YOSHI.


AND I FINISHED THE JOB FOR HIM. I BROUGHT THAT SWORD TO THOSE FREAKS... AND THAT'S PROBABLY WHY...


..I CAN SEE PEOPLE USING THIS MIRROR


MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
GAIDEN
CHAPTER 24:
BLIND TRUST


YOU'RE NO LONGER SAFE HERE!
YOUR UNCLE TOLD ME "THEY" WERE IN NEW YORK BEFORE HE VANISHED WITHOUT A TRACE YESTERDAY!
THEY MUST BE ON CLOSING IN ON US AS WE SPEAK NO TIME TO WASTE!
WAIT, DAD.
WHY ARE ONLY PACKING ONE LUGGAGE?
BECAUSE YOU'LL HAVE TO ESCAPE WITHOUT ME!
I'LL STAY HERE AND STALL THEM. I DON'T KNOW HOW BUT I WILL!
YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO! MAKE YOUR WAY TO A PUBLIC PLACE.. LIKE A SUBWAY STATION AND STAY THERE UNTIL DAWN! THEY CAN'T LAY A FINGER ON YOU WHEN THERE ARE PEOPLE AROUND. AND STAY OUT OF SHADOWS!! THEY'LL BET YOU IF YOU'RE IN THE DARK!
BUT DAD!
UPON SUNRISE GO TO THE AIRPORT AND BOARD A PLANE USING THE MONEY AND FORGED PASSPORT IN YOUR LUGGAGE! DO YOU UNDERSTAND?
YES.
DAD.. I... I'M SORRY FOR EVERYTHING.. IF IT WEREN'T FOR MOM AND I... YOU..
MARCELLA DON'T APOLOGIZE FOR ANYTHING.
EVERY SECOND THAT YOU SPEND ENJOYING LIFE, DEFYING THOSE WHO WISH FOR A WORLD WITHOUT YOU IN IT...
...YOU MAKE ME VERY PROUD. YOUR LATE MOTHER WOULD FEEL THE SAME WAY AS WELL.

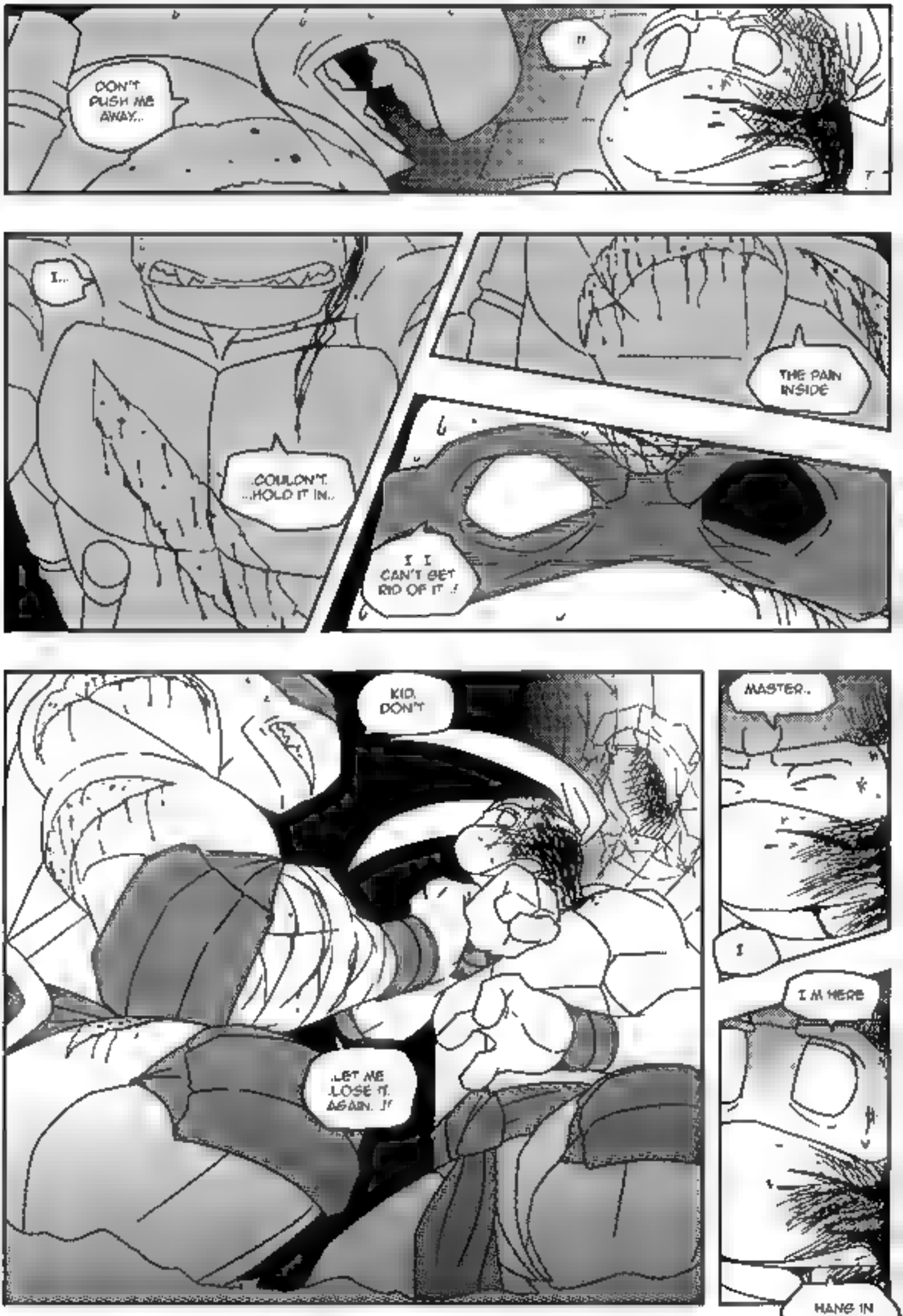

BOSS
HEY, BOSS
ARE YOU ALRIGHT, BOSS?
WHAT?
LET GO OF THE MIRROR IT'S MESSING YOU UP. HERE HERE LET ME HANG ON TO IT FOR YOU.
URGH.
WAIT.
BRING ME BACK THAT MIRROR!
I MUST HOLD ON TO IT!
OTHERWISE, THEY'LL GO AFTER YOU.
I'LL BE THEIR TARGET NOT YOU UNLIKE THEM, IF I CAN HELP IT I WON'T THROW AWAY MY MEN'S LIVES.. NO MATTER WHAT
I KNOW WE'RE SUPPOSED TO ACT AS A WHOLE AND THIS WAS AN ACT OF SELFISH REVENGE SO I MUST ASSUME IT'S CONSEQUENCES.
WHAT THE !
UP THERE!

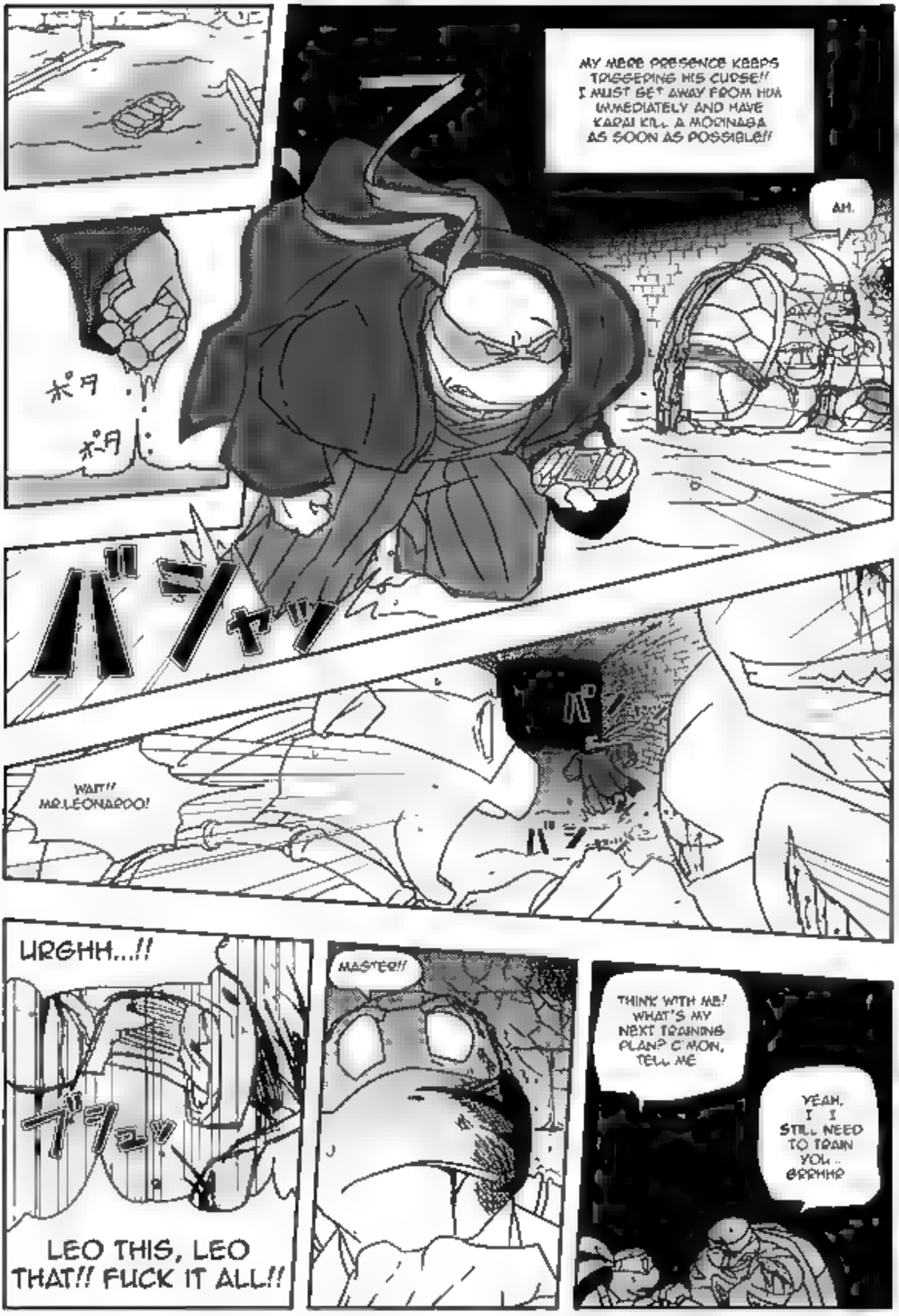

COULDN'T SHUT ME UP LAST TIME ..
AND COULDN'T DO IT TONIGHT EITHER! LOSERS!
UP YOURS!!
I STILL HAVE A LOT OF WRITING MATERIAL FOR MY NEXT BOOK!
YOUR LITTLE CLAN WILL GO DOWN!!
BECAUSE THOSE NINJAS SEEM A BIT TOO RECIPROCATIVE OF MY LOVE FOR THEM.
RAPH AND LEO BETTER MAKE THE MOST OUT OF THIS.


SO. BY THE TIME WE GET THERE, MIKEY'LL HAVE WORKED HIS MAGIC, RIGHT?
UGH.
RAPH! LISTEN. THEIR NUMBERS HAVE DWINDISHED AND WE HAVE THE ELEMENT OF SURPRISE. LET'S TRY TO HIT HARD
HEY- DON'CHA TELL ME HOW TO KICK ASS, LEO!
BUT BUT THEY'RE NINJAS... IF WE'RE TOO CARELESS, WE MIGHT SCREW UP AND..
URKKK!!
SCREW UP? MEEE?

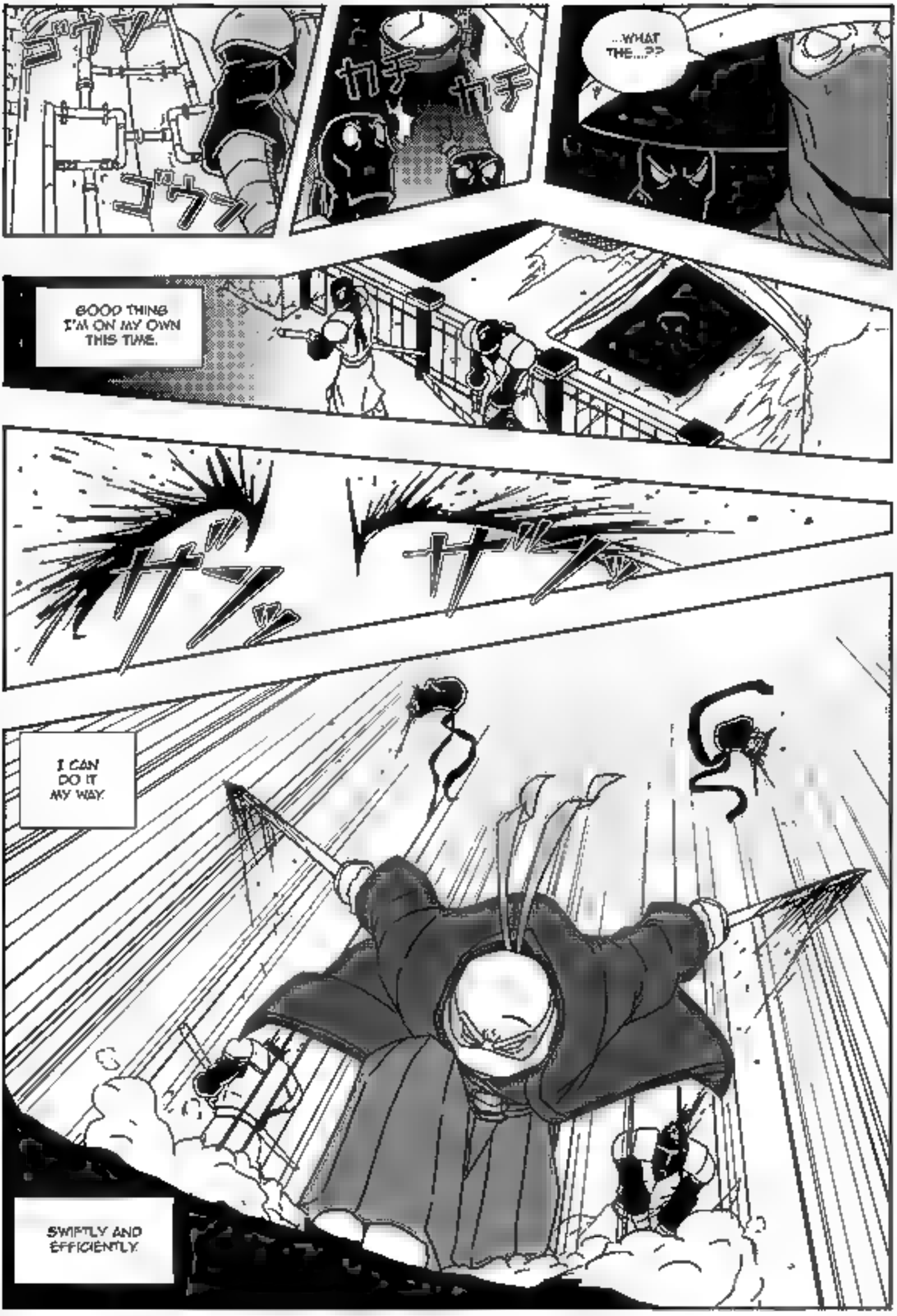

HAH..
HAH.
HAH..
HAH.
HAH.
HAH.
M...
A..AH.
URGH..
O RENOIR !
...!!!


DON'T...!!
ｶﾘﾘ"
WHAT?
JUST WHAT?


DON'T PUSH ME AWAY...
I...
..COULDN'T ...HOLD IT IN..
THE PAIN INSIDE
I I CAN'T GET RID OF IT !
KID, DON'T
..LET ME LOSE IT AGAIN. !'
MASTER..
I
I M HERE
HANG IN THERE.


MY MERE PRESENCE KEEPS TRIGGERING HIS CURSE!! I MUST GET AWAY FROM HIM IMMEDIATELY AND HAVE KARAI KILL A MORINAGA AS SOON AS POSSIBLE!!
AH.
ポタ
ポタ
WAIT!! MR.LEONARDO!
URGHH...!!
LEO THIS, LEO THAT!! FUCK IT ALL!!
MASTER!!
THINK WITH ME! WHAT'S MY NEXT TRAINING PLAN? C'MON, TELL ME
YEAH, I I STILL NEED TO TRAIN YOU.. ERRHHH


AH. YOU'RE ON THE MOVE AGAIN
DID YOU GUYS WORK THINGS OUT?
THIS IS LEONARDO. AND NO, WE HAD TO SPLIT!
THE SHELL CELL'S RADAR SAYS I'M GETTING CLOSER TO MY TARGET! I NEED SOMEONE TO GUIDE ME THROUGH THE SEWERS!
GOT IT. I'LL HACK INTO THE WATER PLANT'S CONTROL SYSTEM!
IT'S TOO RISKY ON YOUR OWN. SO I'LL TRY TO ACTIVATE SOME MACHINES THERE TO CREATE A DISTRACTION.
DONNIE! YOU SAID YOU KNOW YOUR WAY INTO THAT PLANT THROUGH THE SEWERS!
I NEED YOU TO GUIDE LEONARDO WHILE I DO THIS!
I KNOW IT'S HARD FOR YOU..
BUT SHOW ME HOW STRONG YOU ARE!
WAIT BY CHALLENGING ME, SHE WANTS ME TO BECOME A BETTER, STRONGER PERSON..
..FOR HER! SHE CAUGHT ON TO MY INTENTIONS SHE'S NOW PLAYING HARD TO GET!
LEO!! GO STRAIGHT AND WHEN YOU REACH A THREE WAY INTERSECTION, TAKE THE LEFT PATH!
ONCE YOU'VE GONE THROUGH THAT, I'LL GIVE YOU YOUR NEXT INSTRUCTIONS!
DONNIE!!
YES! GOT IT!!


...WHAT THE...??
GOOD THING I'M ON MY OWN THIS TIME.
I CAN DO IT MY WAY.
SWIFTLY AND EFFICIENTLY.


WHAT'S HAPPENING?
LEO!!
SZZT!!
THE LESS I NEED TO EXPLAIN.
THE BETTER.
ACK!!
YOU... YOU TRAITOR!!!
DO IT.


I SEE A GIRL IN HER TEENS, HALF-JAPANESE, HALF ITALIAN MAYBE RED COAT, LONG HAIR ABOUT 5'04"
SHE SEEMS TO BE IN BROOKLYN. I SEE.. HALSEY STREET
IN ANY CASE, SHE MATCHES ONE OF THE SUSPECTS WE HAD UNDER SURVEILLANCE IN OUR FILES...
I... I CAN SEE ANOTHER GIRL BUT I HAVE A HARD TIME FOCUSING ON HER ..


YOU'LL CHECK LATER.. WE HAVE THE MIRROR NOW.
KARAI. OUR NEXT TARGET IS SUSPECT "C" IN OUR FILES. SHE'S NEAR HALSEY STREET, BROOKLYN.
GOT IT I'M SENDING OUT A SQUAD TO TAKE HER OUT

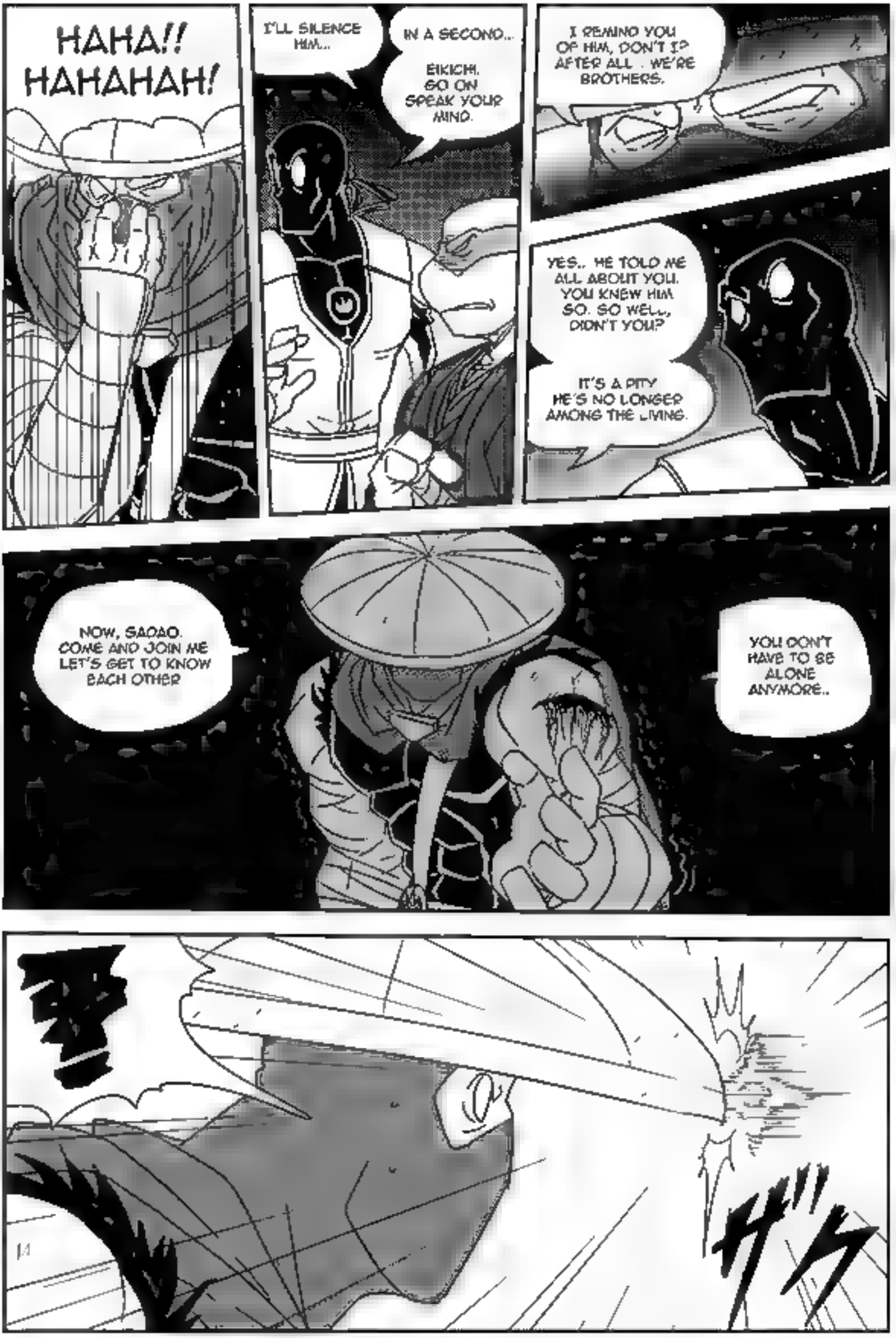

BRING BACK THE MIRROR TO KARAI.
SADAO?


THIS IS THE END OF THE LINE FOR YOU, EIKICHI GOTOH
..S.. ...SADAO...?


YOU WOULDN'T COOPERATE WITH KARAI EVEN AFTER SHE SPARED YOUR LIFE WHEN WE CAPTURED YOU.
YOU KILLED SEVERAL OF MY COMRADES AS YOU ESCAPED..


BLINDED BY YOUR DEVOTION TO OROKU SAKI, AND THEN BY YOUR DESIRE TO BUILD A FACTION TO DEFY THE REST OF THE CLAN.
..YOU WERE UNABLE TO SEE THE BIGGER THINGS AT STAKE THE IMMINENT DESTRUCTION THAT LOOMS UPON US SHOULD YAMATA-NO-OROCHI AWAKEN.
LOOK AT WHERE ALL OF THIS BROUGHT YOU.. ALONE ALL YOUR FOLLOWERS GONE OR DEAD COMPLETELY LOST

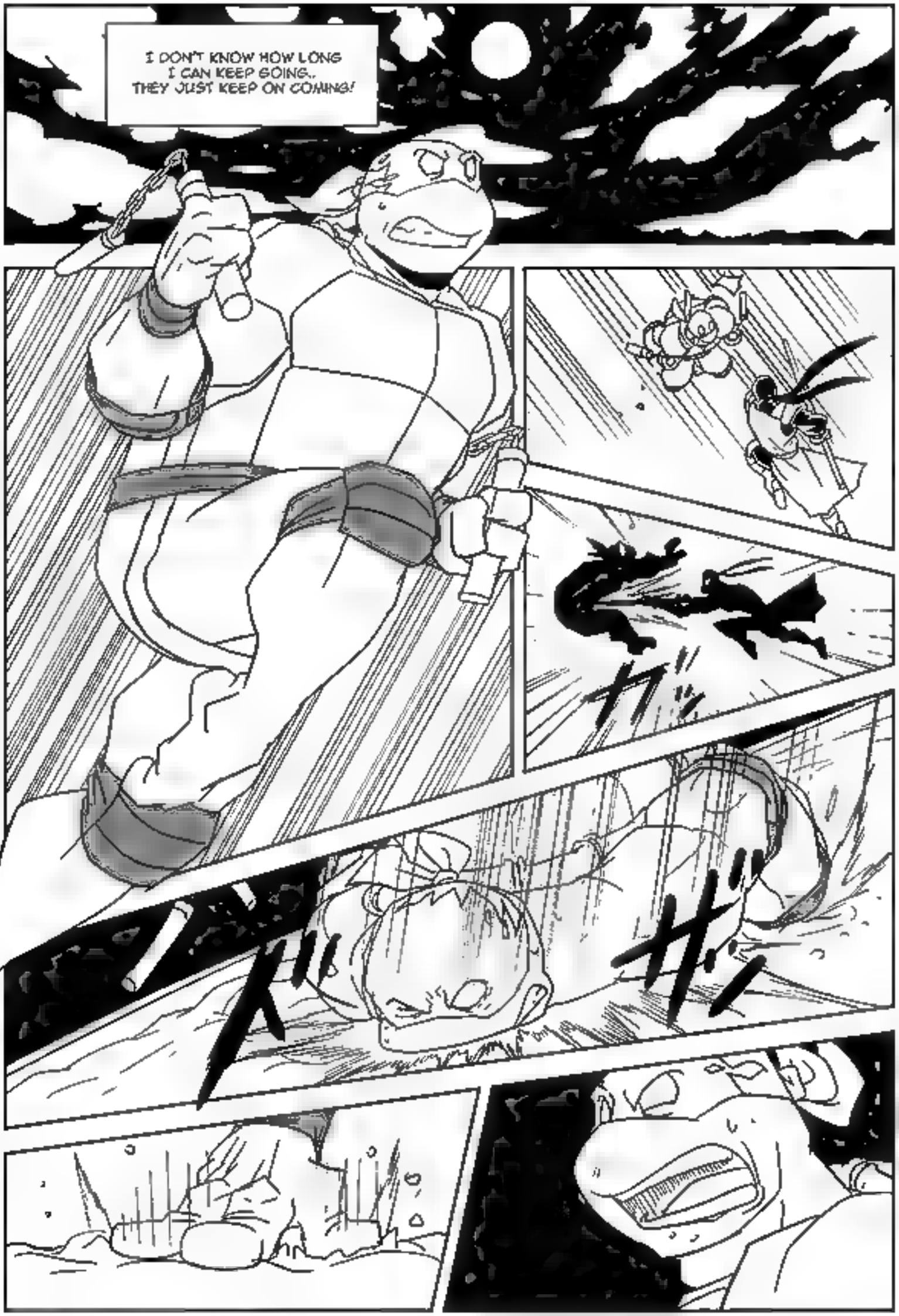

RYOTA WOULD BE ASHAMED OF YOU...
HRRP
HRR. HRRR...


HAHA!! HAHAHAH!
I'LL SILENCE HIM...
IN A SECOND...
EIKICHI. GO ON SPEAK YOUR MIND.
I REMIND YOU OF HIM, DON'T I? AFTER ALL . WE'RE BROTHERS.
YES.. HE TOLD ME ALL ABOUT YOU. YOU KNEW HIM SO. SO WELL, DIDN'T YOU?
IT'S A PITY HE'S NO LONGER AMONG THE LIVING.
NOW, SADAO. COME AND JOIN ME LET'S GET TO KNOW EACH OTHER
YOU DON'T HAVE TO BE ALONE ANYMORE..


PREYING ON MY MISERY. HOW INSULTING
I SEE. YOU THINK YOU CAN SEE RIGHT THROUGH PEOPLE DON'T YOU?
LET ME HUMOR YOU. THEN
TELL ME, SADAO
DID YOU REALLY BELIEVE MY BROTHER WAS BEING TRUE TO YOU?
WHEN I HEARD RUMORS ABOUT YOU TWO. I ASKED HIM ABOUT IT HE TOLD ME HE WAS JUST PRETENDING ON KARAI'S ORDERS
YOU WANTED TO LEAVE THE FOOT CLAN SO SHE USED MY BROTHER TO GIVE YOU A REASON TO STAY
PRETTY SURE YOU DISGUSTED HIM THE WHOLE TIME


I KNOW THAT "STORY" HE TOLD IT TO KARA AND I
DID YOU KNOW THAT? DO YOU KNOW ANYTHING AT ALL, EVEN NOW?
YOU WERE ALWAYS OBSESSED WITH SERVING UNDER OROKU SAKI
ONE DAY HE TOLD ME YOU WANTED TO MEET HIM TO ASK ABOUT US
HE'D USUALLY OPEN UP TO PEOPLE HE TRUSTS AND WANTS TO KEEP IN HIS LIFE
YOU SHARED SAKI'S AMBITIONS THAT WAS ALL YOU'D EVER TALK ABOUT
THAT'S WHY HE DECIDED TO TELL YOU A CONVENIENT LIE TO KEEP YOU HAPPY AND KEEP YOU OUT OF HIS LIFE
TO THE POINT WHERE HE NO LONGER RECOGNIZED HIS OWN BROTHER IN YOU
SCREW THAT


NOW YOU GET IT
NO... HE'S A BROKEN MAN HE JUST REALIZED THAT THE ONE PERSON HE TRUSTED MOST AFTER OROKU SAKI DECEIVED HIM.
HE COULDN'T LOOK MORE PATHETIC AND PITIFUL
MY ALLIES...
OROKU SAKI
RYOTA..
SHOULD WE DISPOSE OF HIM?
YOU LOST EVERYTHING. AND THINGS YOU THOUGHT YOU HAD. YOU NEVER HAD THEM IN THE FIRST PLACE. YOU'RE NOT EVEN A THREAT TO US ANYMORE.
SO GET LOST LEAVE BEFORE THE CLEANING CREW GETS HERE
AND IF YOU EVER GET IN OUR WAY AGAIN... I'LL END YOU.

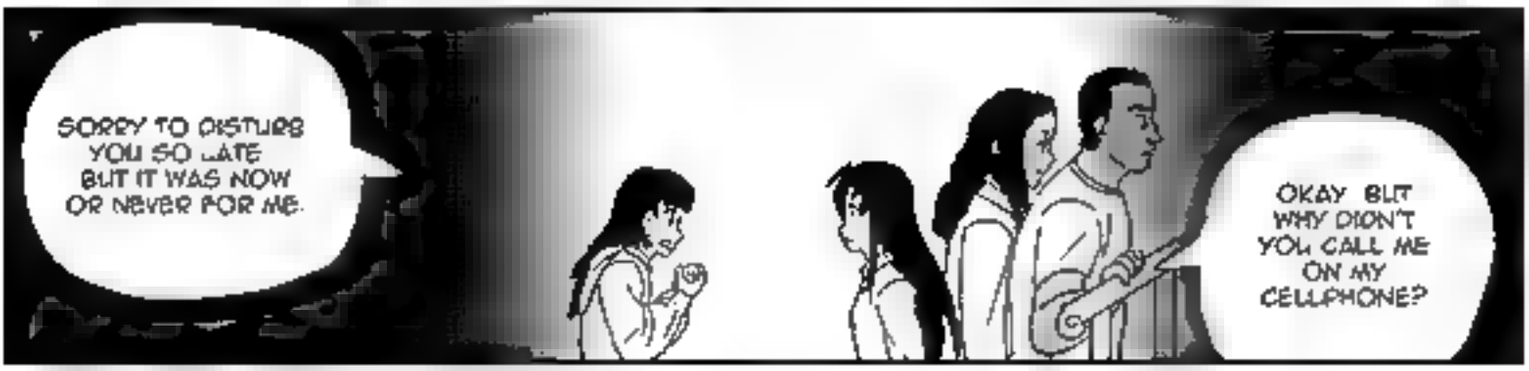

I DON'T KNOW HOW LONG
I CAN KEEP GOING..
THEY JUST KEEP ON COMING!


WHERE ARE THOSE NINJAS?
MISSION ACCOMPLISHED
ズラ
YOU MEAN...?
YEAH, I DESTROYED THE MIRROR.
LET'S GO BACK TO RAPH.
THERE WERE NINJAS AFTER ME... WHAT HAPPENED TO THEM?
THEY JUST RAN AWAY I SAW THEM JUMP OFF THE ROOF
YOU TRAITORS. WE TRIED TO REFORM YOU BUT I SEE YOU'RE BEYOND HELP.
WE DON'T CARE ABOUT YOUR CURSE WE DON'T TRUST KARAI...
OROKU SAKI'S WILL IS ALL THAT GUIDES US.
H..HEHE.. HEHEHE..
WE'RE HIS LEGACY! WE'LL NEVER BOW TO THE REST OF THE FOOT CLAN!
WE---


HEY LEO. WHAT HAPPENED TO RAPH AND RENOIR?
RAPH WAS OVERCOME BY THE CURSE SO I HAD TO LEAVE HIM WITH RENOIR.
BUT THE CURSE IS DONE FOR, RIGHT?
RAPH WILL NO LONGER HAVE VIOLENT OUTBURSTS, RIGHT?
HEY?
EARTH TO LEO?
ドサッ
MIKEY ..! LOOK, THERE'S MORE TO IT, BUT I NEED TO LOOK INTO IT, OKAY?
EHEHE! SORRY, SORRY IT'S JUST.. THAT'S WHAT WE'RE FIGHTING FOR, NO?
YOU CAN SPARE ME THE UNSPOKEN DETAILS ABOUT YOUR SOLUTION. BUT.


.DON'T BREAK RAPH'S TRUST IN YOU
I SWEAR, MIKEY ..
.EVERYTHING I DO IS FOR HIS OWN GOOD.
AAAND YOU'D DO THE SAME FOR YOUR #1 BROTHER TOO, RIIIGHT?
OF COURSE COME, LET'S GO BACK TO APRIL'S


WHO COULD BE AT THE DOOR AT THIS HOUR?
YES, WHAT IS IT?
EX...EXCUSE ME!
I'M A FRIEND OF DAVIANNA'S... I NEED TO TALK TO HER!
AT THIS HOUR?
CAN IT WAIT TOMORROW?
OH NEVERMIND THERE SHE IS.
MARCELLA?

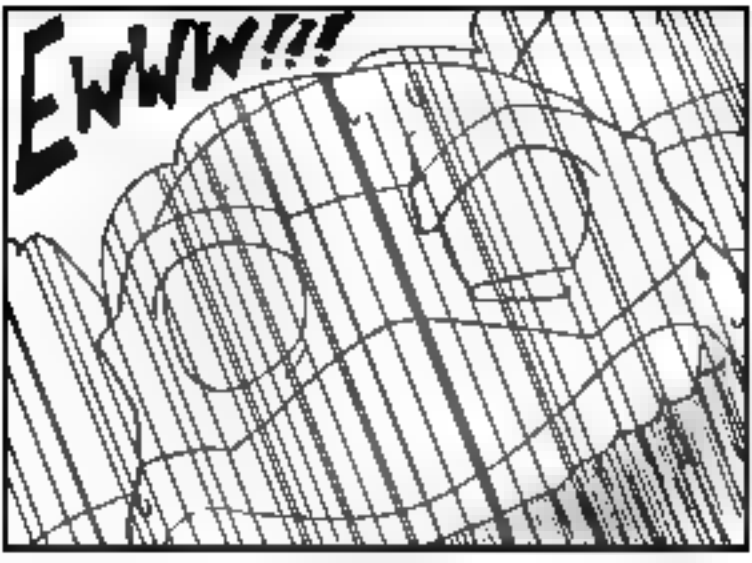

SORRY TO DISTURB YOU SO LATE BUT IT WAS NOW OR NEVER FOR ME.
OKAY BUT WHY DIDN'T YOU CALL ME ON MY CELLPHONE?

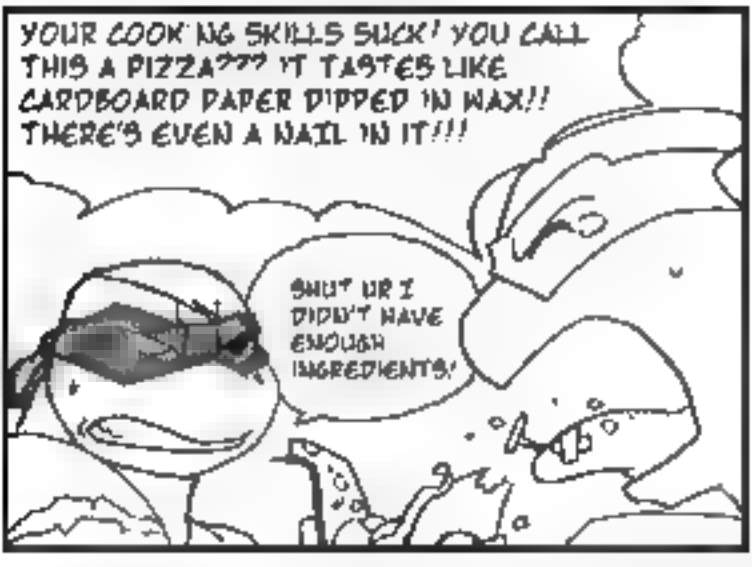

I CAN'T!
THERE ARE THINGS I MUST SAY IN PERSON.
LOOK .. I'M GOING AWAY TOMORROW SOMEWHERE FAR AWAY..
I DON'T KNOW WHEN WE'LL SEE EACH OTHER MAYBE THIS IS THE LAST TIME I'LL GET TO TALK TO YOU.
SINCE I WON'T BE AROUND FOR MUCH LONGER...
...I JUST WANTED TO TELL YOU...


...IF I WERE STILL AROUND FOR VALENTINES'S DAY...
...I WOULD'VE WANTED YOU TO BE MY VALENTINE!
AH-
MARCELLA! HOW TO PUT IT I... UM..
I KNOW! I KNOW! YOU DON'T BEND THAT WAY! I JUST NEEDED TO GET IT OFF MY CHEST!
YOU'VE ALWAYS BEEN SO NICE TO ME
SINCE THE DAY WE FIRST MET, YOU LOOKED AFTER ME AND..
RELAX YOU'RE DOING GREAT.

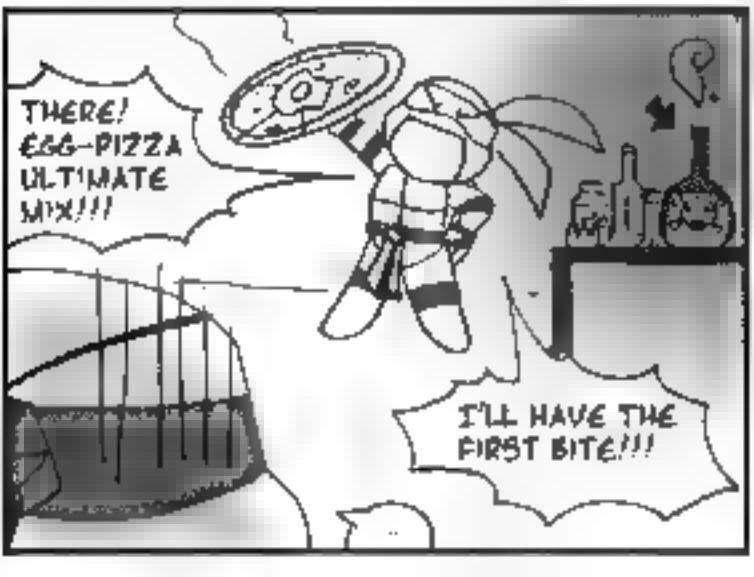

IT TAKES A LOT OF COURAGE TO CONFESS YOUR LOVE TO SOMEONE.
..ESPECIALLY WHEN IT'S NOT EVEN VALENTINE'S DAY!
WE MIGHT NOT BE A MATCH. BUT IT HONORS ME THAT YOU CONSIDER ME YOUR TOP PICK FOR A VALENTINE!
ONE DAY, YOU'LL FIND THE RIGHT ONE AND THAT PERSON WILL BE THE LUCKIEST PERSON ON EARTH.
YEAH... ONE DAY
THANKS, DAVIANNA!
WAIT .!
YOU'RE ACTING LIKE YOU'RE LEAVING FOREVER. THAT'S NOT THE CASE, RIGHT?
PLEASE PROMISE ME WE'LL MEET AGAIN!


FOR SURE, DAVIANNA! WE'LL MEET AGAIN!
IT'S A PROMISE!
MARCELLA...?
GOODBYE...

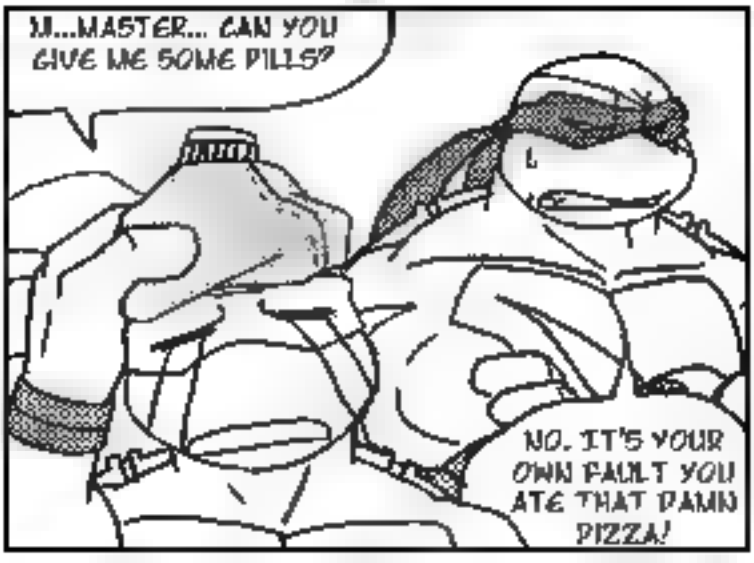

EWWW!!!


YOUR COOKING SKILLS SUCK! YOU CALL THIS A PIZZA??? IT TASTES LIKE CARDBOARD PAPER DIPPED IN WAX!! THERE'S EVEN A NAIL IN IT!!!
SHUT UP I DIDN'T HAVE ENOUGH INGREDIENTS!


THEN IMPROVISE COMPETENTLY!
LOOK, THERE'S EGG (KINDA OLD), ONIONS (WILTED), FLOUR AND LOTS OF SAUCE!!

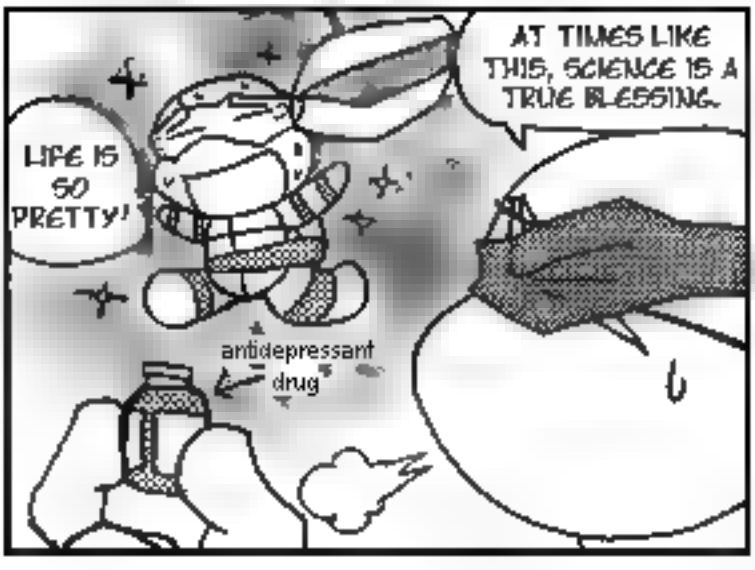

THERE! EGG-PIZZA ULTIMATE MIX!!!
I'LL HAVE THE FIRST BITE!!!

MNT Gaiden Bakabakashii
002 - Give me relief.

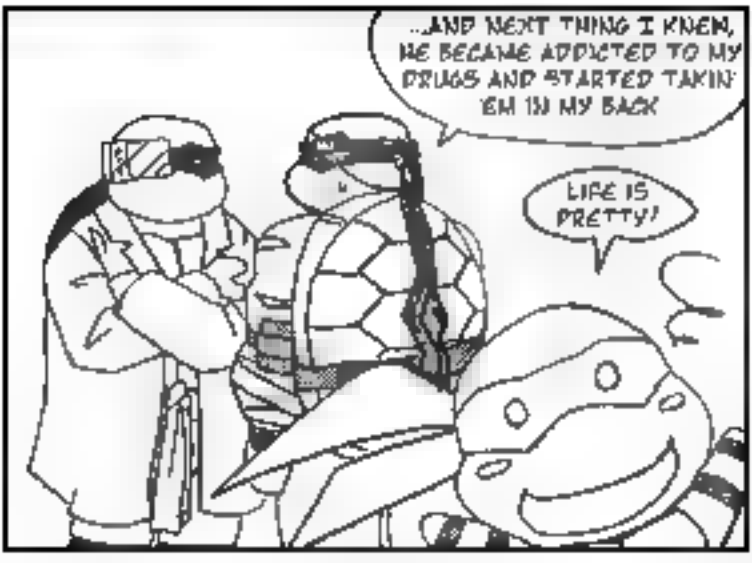




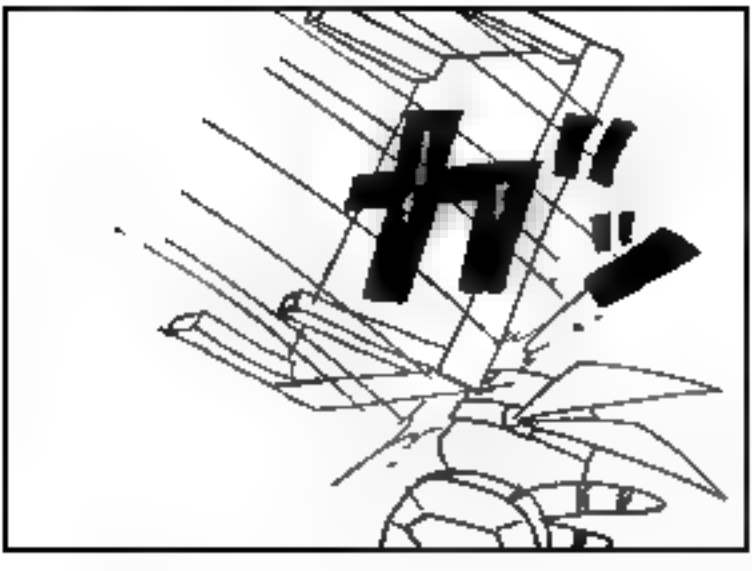


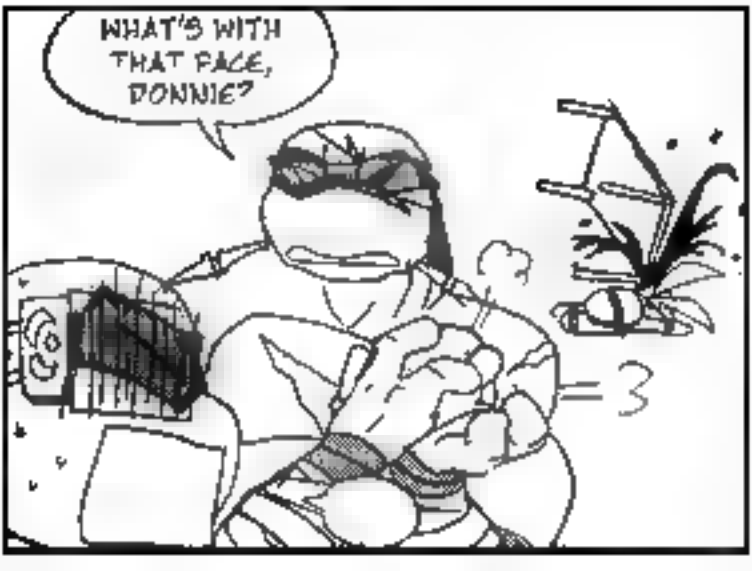


MNT Gaiden Bakabakashii
003 - Medical care.









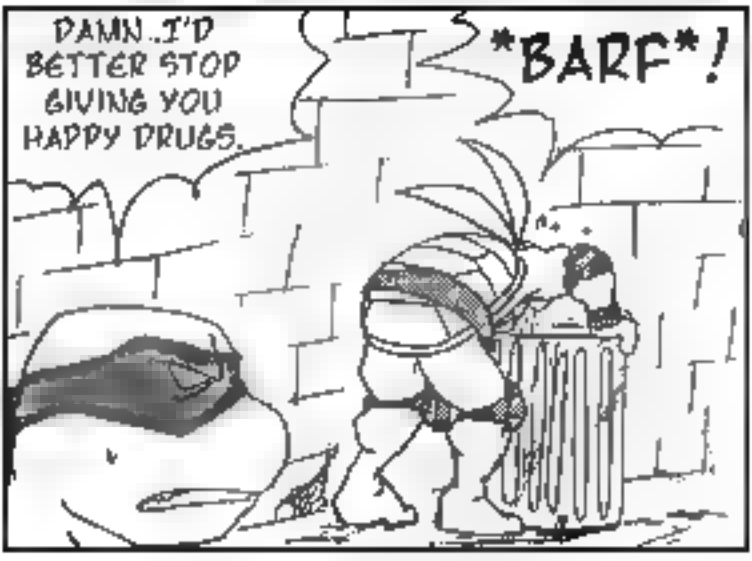
MNT Gaiden 4KOMA – 004 - "For Great Science!!"

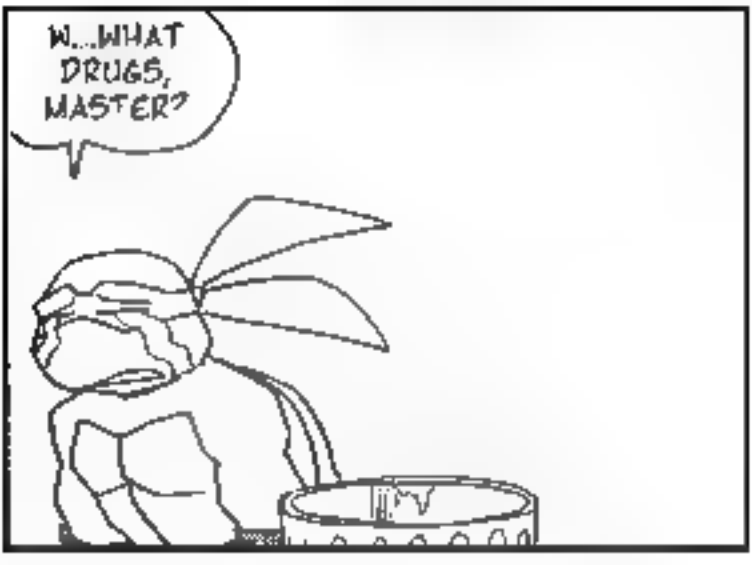


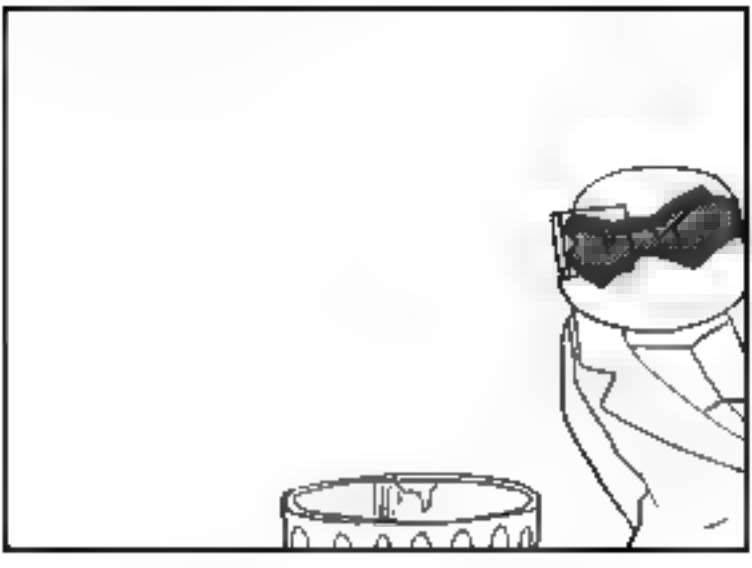
MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
005 - Second thoughts


MAN.. I DREAMED THAT I WAS SIMPLY EXTREMELY HAPPY FOR NO REASON..
RENOIR!
WAIT... THIS IS PLAIN WRONG.!
ME. HAPPY WITH LIVING IN THIS STINKY HOLE?
...
I... I HAVE NO FUTURE!!! I'M DOOMED TO LIVE WITH
THIS AGGRESSIVE OLD FAT MUTANT! NOOOOOOO !!
YAY! I LOVE MY WIFE.
IT'S BETTER THIS WAY, TRUST ME, DONNIE

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA :
006 - Collecting samples

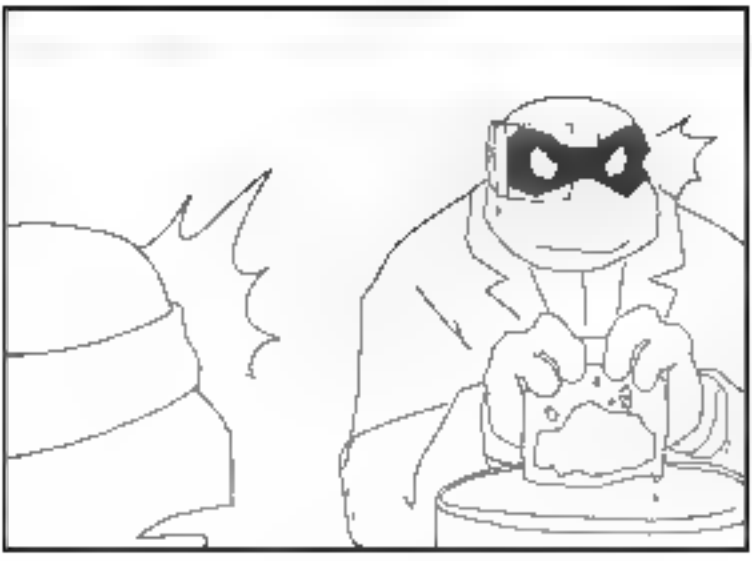


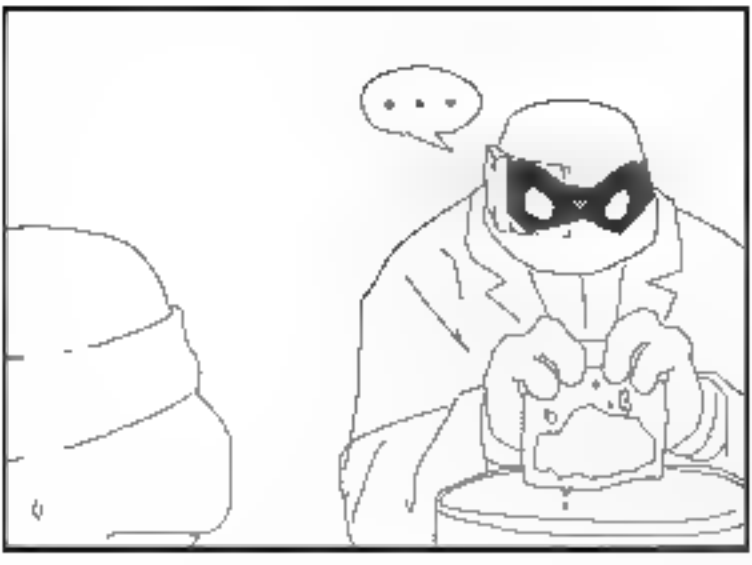


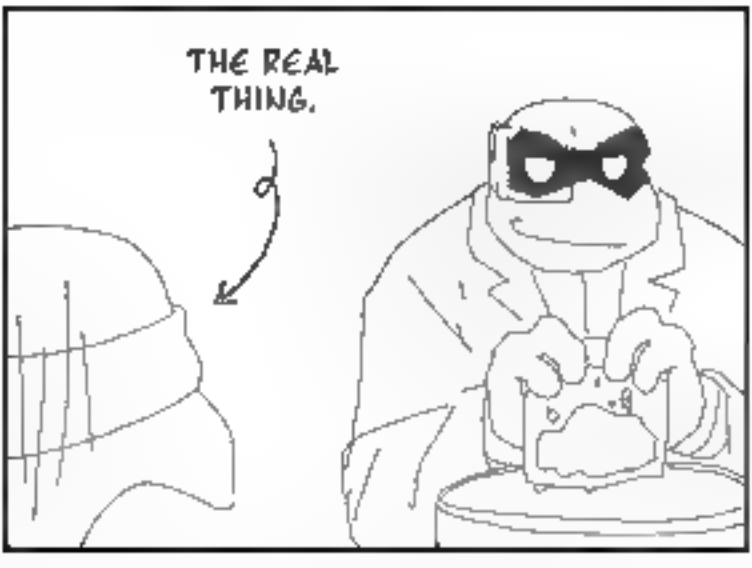


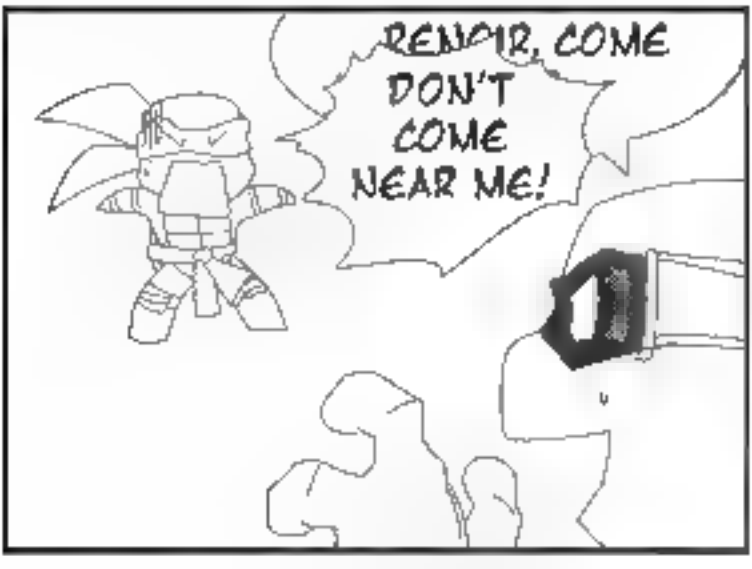


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
007 - Specimen

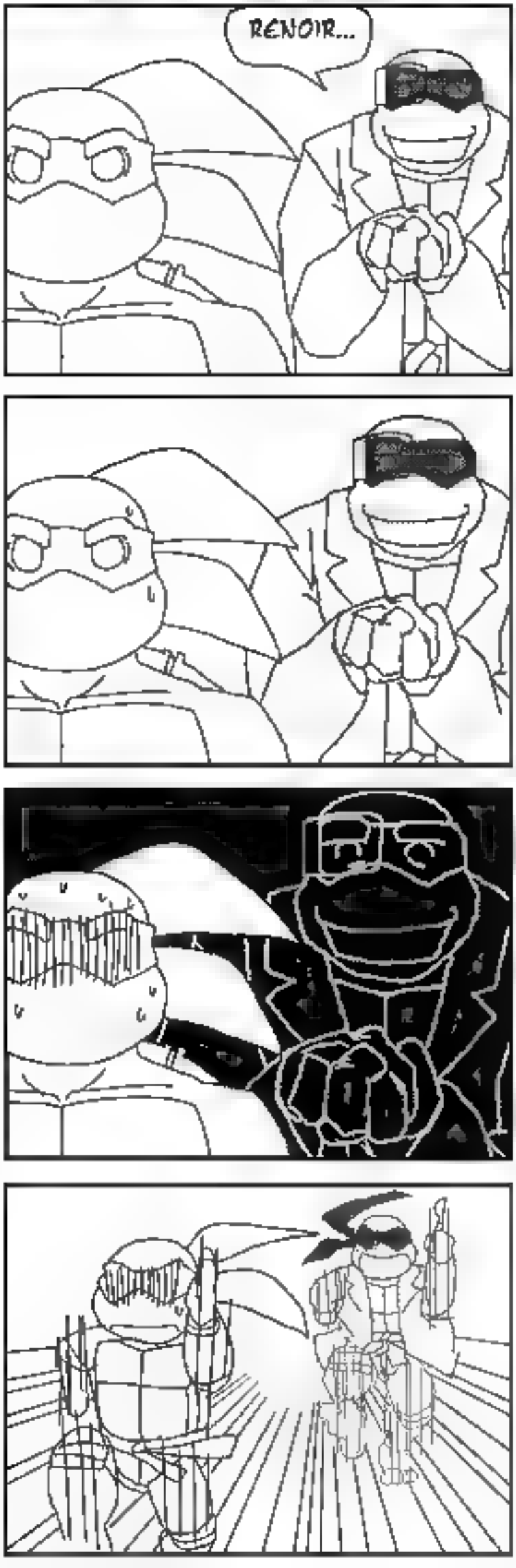








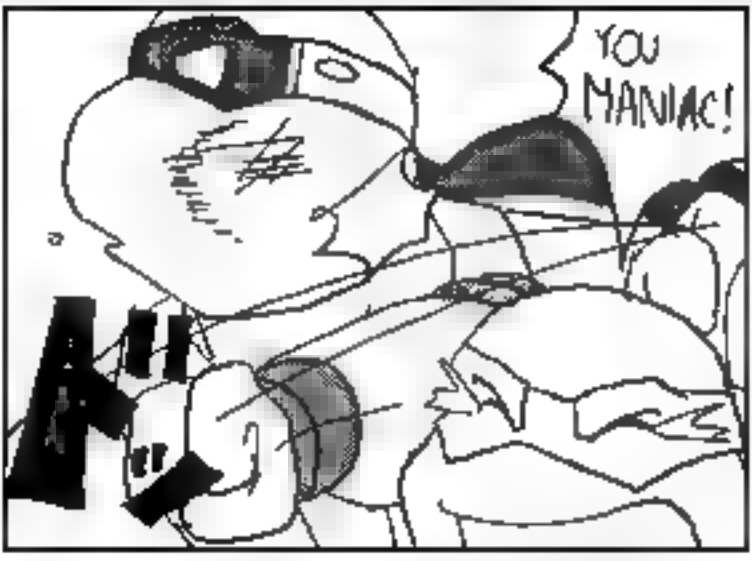
MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
008 - Asking kindly



MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
089 - Dutiful Master


For Science
COME HERE...
HELP! HE WANTS TO DISSECT ME!
DO YOU HAVE A SET OF OUR USUAL CIVILIAN COSTUME?
HERE YOU GO.
No!
I'M GONNA GO BUY SOME BOOZE.
I'LL BE BACK IN A MINUTE.

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
010 - "Violent Behaviour"





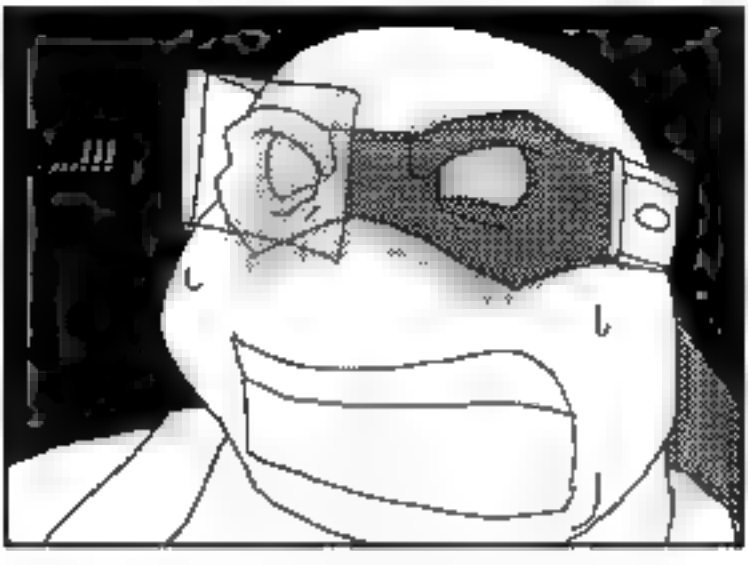




MNT Golden 4KOMA
011 - Equivalent trade?

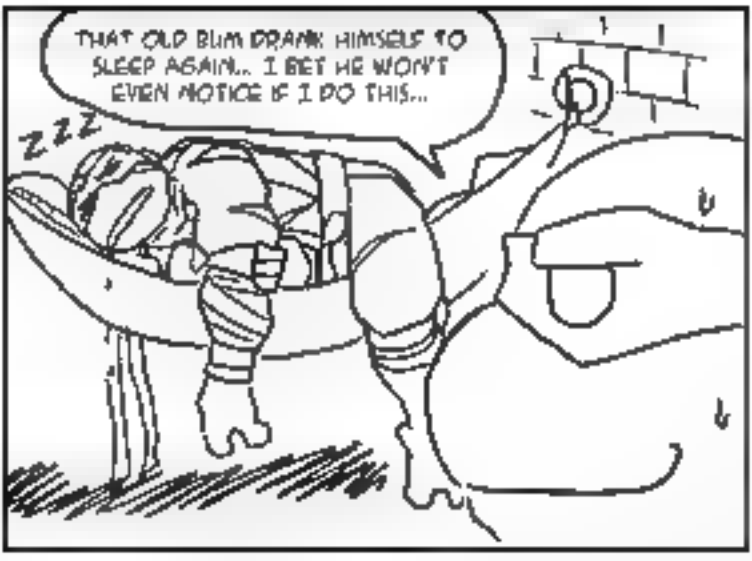




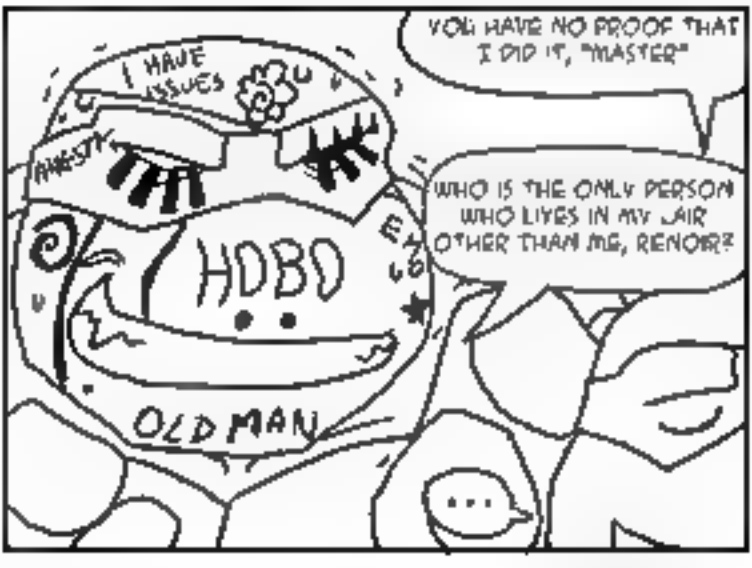




MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
012 - Assessing the situation...



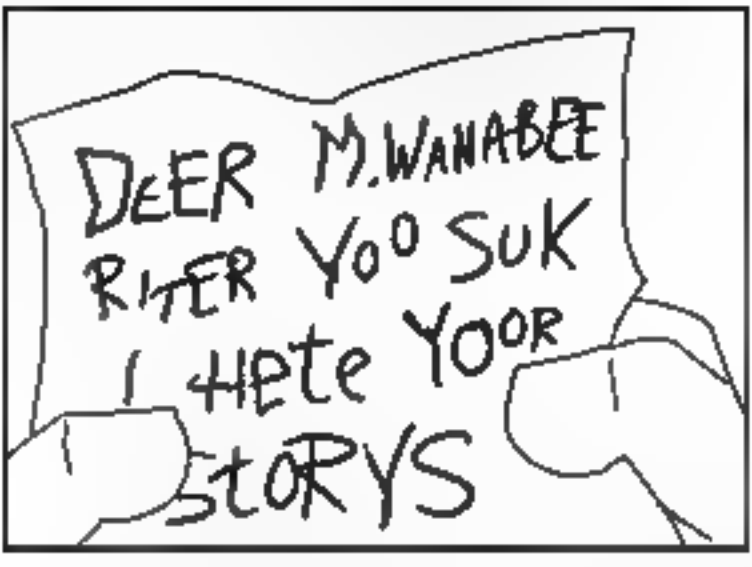



I HAVE ISSUES
HOBO
OLD MAN
YOU HAVE NO PROOF THAT I DID IT, "MASTER"
WHO IS THE ONLY PERSON WHO LIVES IN MY LAIR OTHER THAN ME, RENOIR?
...



MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
013 - A writer's influence


WOW. SO MANY FANMAILS. DON'T YOU SOMETIMES GET HATEMAILS TOO, UNC' MIKEY?
YEAH, BUT THEY'RE USUALLY SO POORLY WRITTEN THAT I'M NOT A BIT AFFECTED BY THEM.



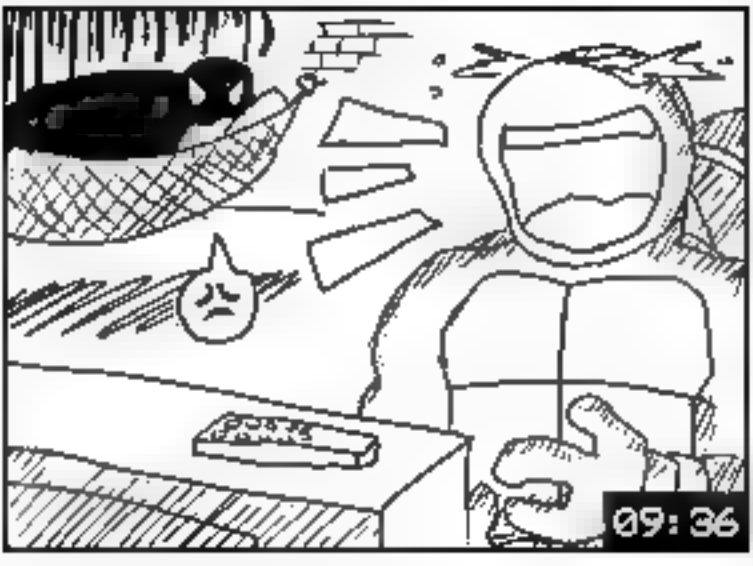



"DON'T OFFEND MY FAVORITE AUTHOR, SCUM! DIE!" DO YOU USUALLY HAVE PEOPLE DROPPING HATEFUL MAILS IN THE SEWERS?
SHUT THE HELL UP RENOIR.

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
014 - Different lifestyles



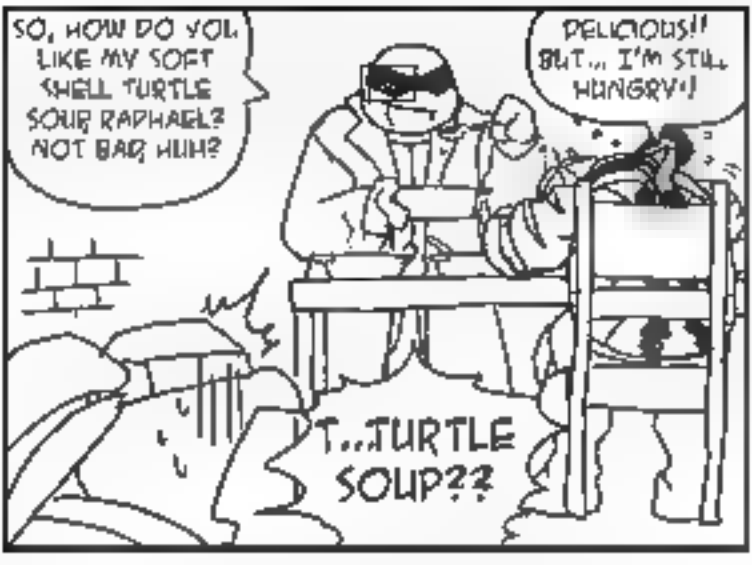






MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
015 - Food chain logic


MASTER! IT SEEMS TURTLES DO NOT EAT MEAT SO HOW COME WE'RE EATING PIZZA?
WHEN WE MUTATED OUR DIET MUTATED TOO.
NATIONAL GEOGRAPHICS







MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
016 - Casey Jones, gallant vigilante




I'M GONNA HELP YA CARRY THIS HEAVY PIANO TO YOUR APARTMENT, APRIL, OR YA GONNA BREAK A NAIL!
THANKS FOR HELPING. CASEY, BUT DON'T SAY SUCH SILLY.


...NO. 'TIS OKAY. AS A MAN, I TAKE GREAT PRIDE IN HELPIN' POWERLESS WOMEN LIKE YOU.
...
AND I TOOK THE REAR OF THE PIANO SO YA CAN FEEL SUPERIOR FOR ONCE... 'CUZ I KNOW SELF-CONFIDENCE AIN'T INNATE FOR WOMEN. AIN'T I GALLANT?



MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
017 - Writer's block (1)


I NEED TO COME UP WITH AN ORIGINAL CHARACTER FOR A NEW SHOW... BUT I'M OUT OF IDEAS. !
スッ
スッ
Tofu DISH
SOYA SAUCE
THAT'S MY TOFU-KONGFU, DEFENDER OF VEGETABLES! YOU CAN USE HIM IF YOU WANT
I'M NOT THAT DESPERATE

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
018 - Writer's block (2)





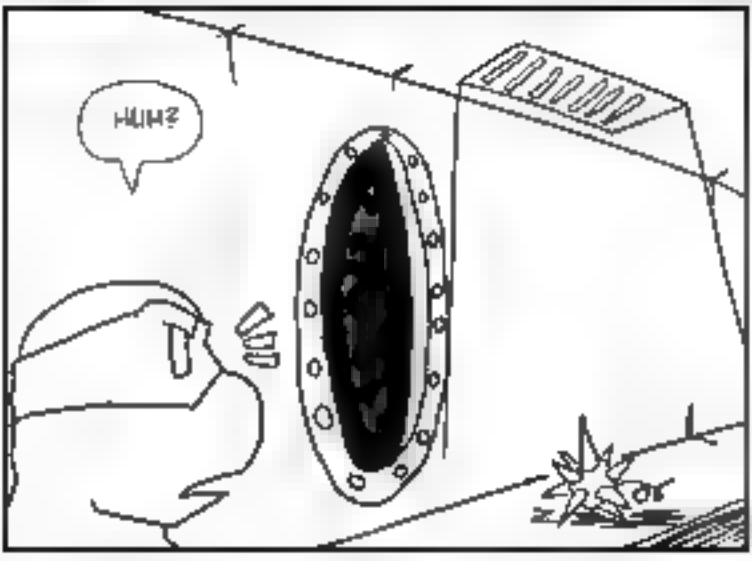




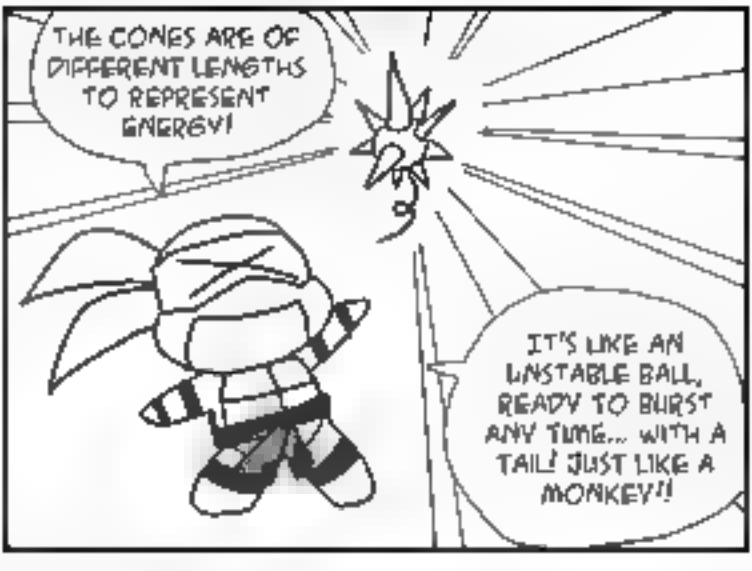
MNT Gaiden 4KOMA

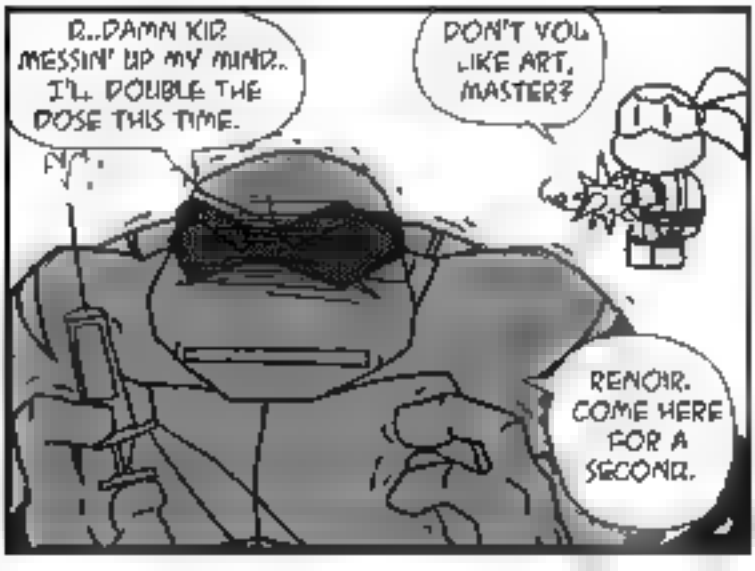
#19 - Discovery of the "Monkey"

(big thanks to my friend Soft for letting me use her "monkey" https://soft284.blogspot.com)






THE CONES ARE OF DIFFERENT LENGTHS TO REPRESENT ENERGY!
IT'S LIKE AN UNSTABLE BALL, READY TO BURST ANY TIME... WITH A TAIL! JUST LIKE A MONKEY!!



MNT Gaiden 4KOMA

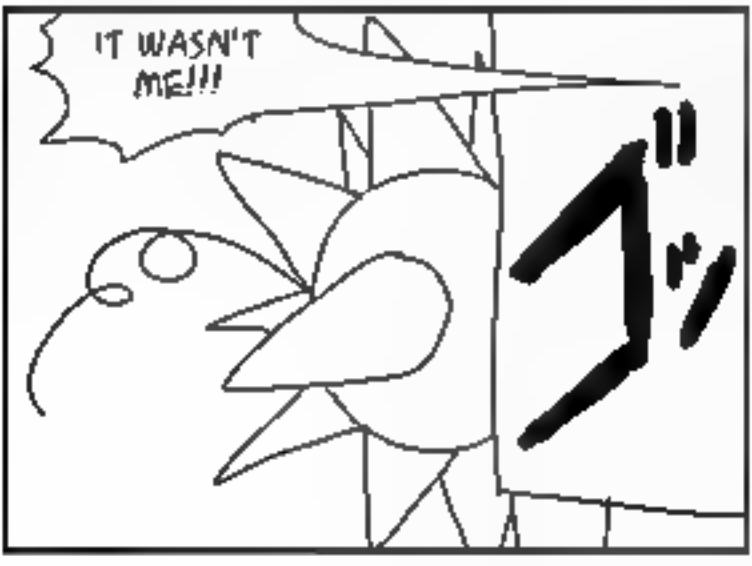
020 - Prankster

(Big thanks to my friend Sofi for letting me use her "monkey" http://sofi264.blogspot.com)









MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
#21 - Donnie has imagination too







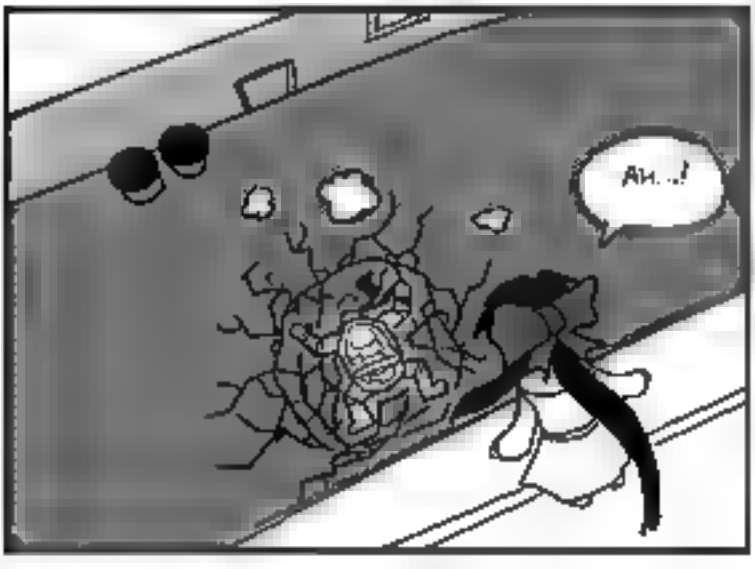

AND IT ENDS WITH THE PROTAGONIST STATING THAT ANY SACRIFICE FOR THE SAKE OF SCIENCE IS WORTH IT...!
ERASE
ERASE ERASE ERASE
IDEAS FOR STORIES
T... THANKS, DONNIE. I'LL USE YOUR IDEAS... I WILL...

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
022 - Davianna's melancholy









MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
023 - Happy pills





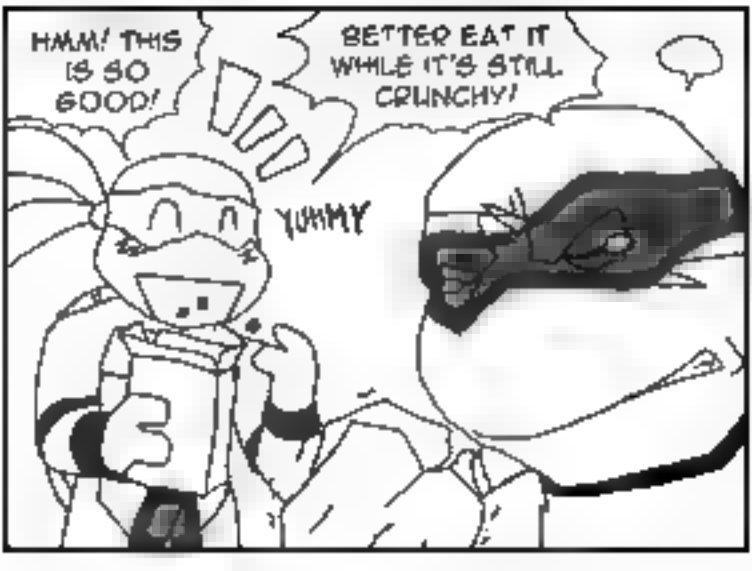




MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
024 - Get tempted


AH!! MASTER, YOU ARE NOT EATING CEREALS TODAY?
ERR... NO I RECENTLY REALIZED I HAD AN UNHEALTHY ADDICTION TO CEREALS... WITH SIDE EFFECTS.

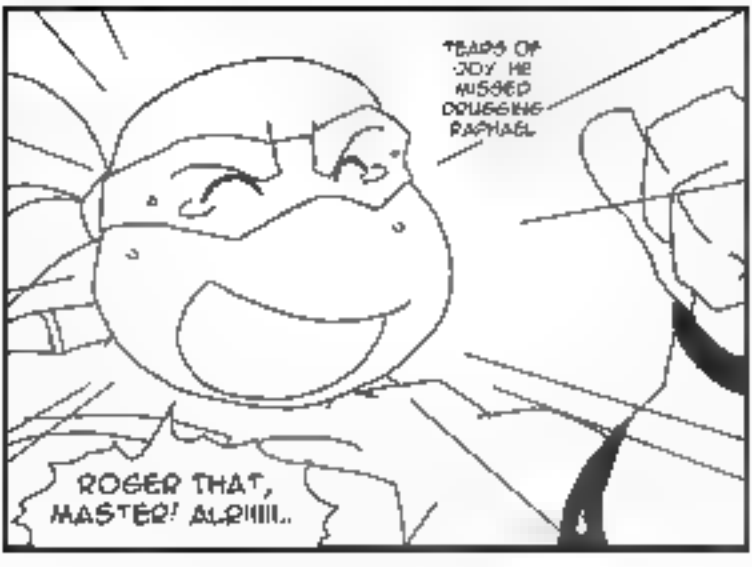


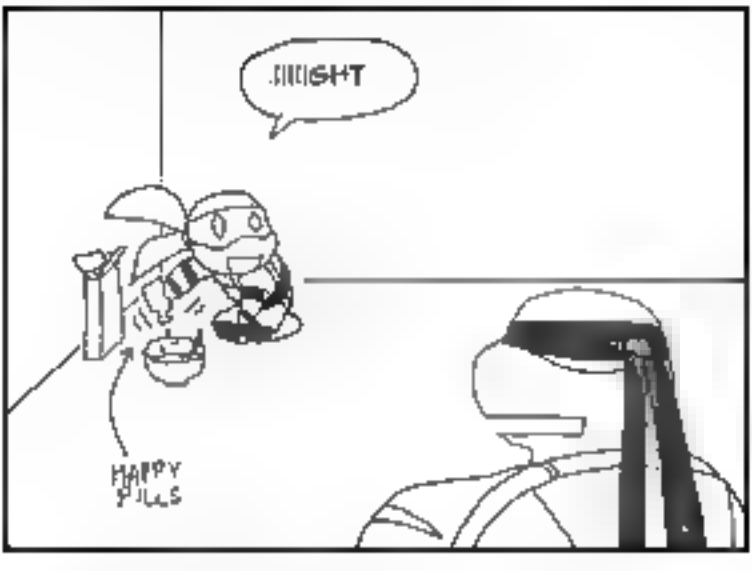




MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
025 - Let's do it again!





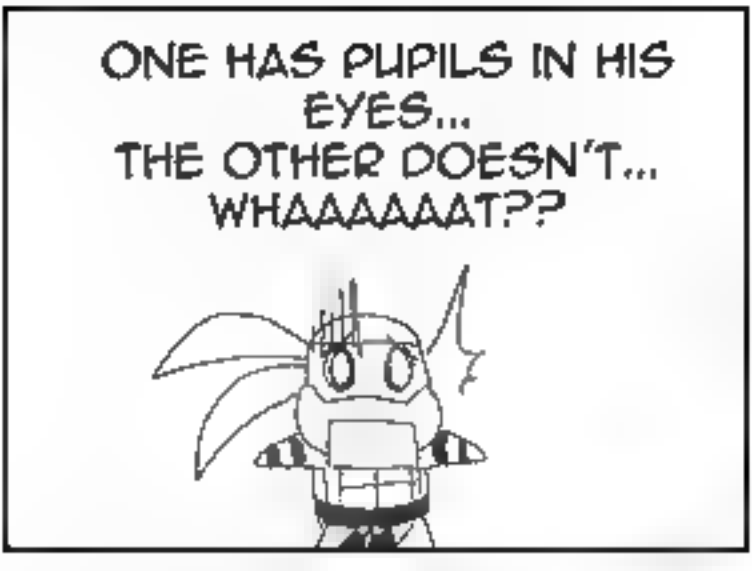


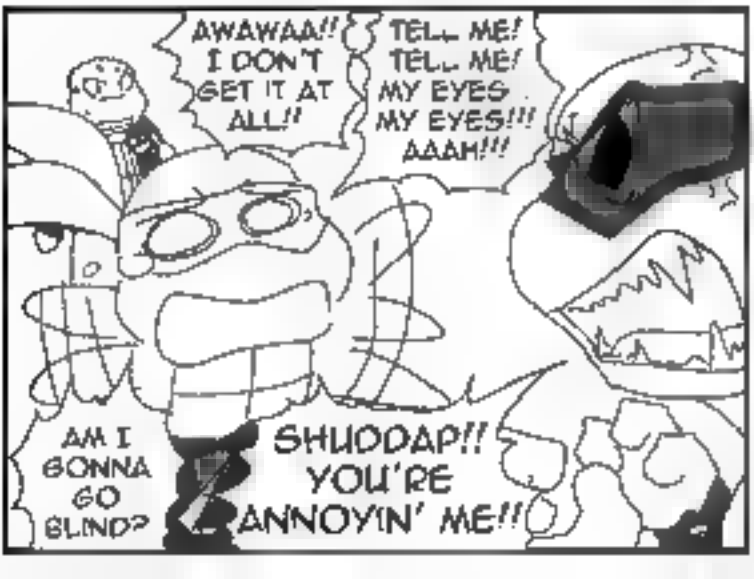


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
026 - Eyes of truth (1)


RAPH! WHY WON'T YOU STOP SENDING ME JUNK MAIL!! DON'T EVEN PRETEND YOU DIDN'T DO IT! I CAN RECOGNIZE YOUR GRAMMAR AND HANDWRITING. THEY'RE WORSE THAN A KINDERGARTEN KID'S!


OH SHADDAP MIKEY! WHY WOULD I EVEN BOTHER LOOKIN FOR YOUR STUPID FANMAIL'S ADDRESS? JUST THINKIN' BOUT WRITIN' SOMETHIN' TO YA MAKES ME WANNA PUKE! IN FACT, GET OUTTA MY LAIR! YOU'RE AN EYESORE!





MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
027 - Eyes of truth (2)



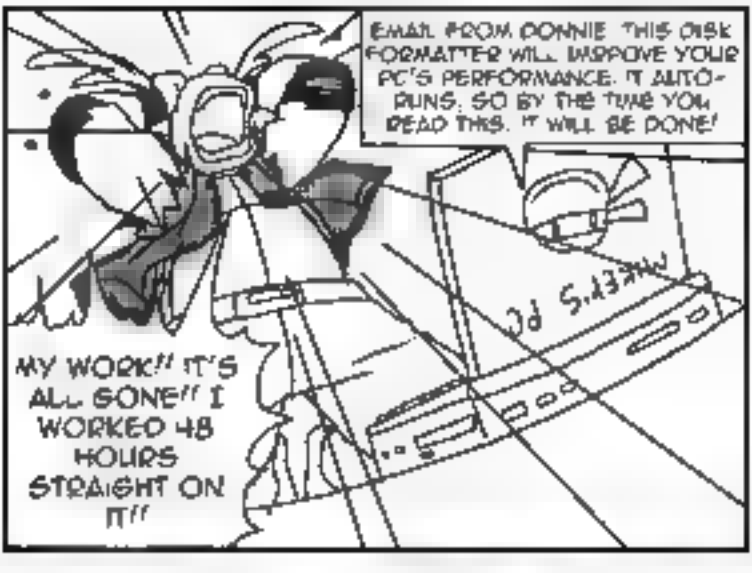
MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
028 - Eyes of truth (3)


DONATELLO, YOU ARE A SCIENTIST RIGHT? HOW COME OUR EYES DON'T HAVE IRISES WHEN WE WEAR MASKS?
HMM.
YOU MEAN.
UNLIKE MINE?
WAH!!
SHOW ME HOW TO DO THAT!
...
STEP RIGHT IN. REMOIR ALL YOUR QUESTIONS WILL BE ANSWERED
EXPERIMENT POD #1

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
029 - More science is good?






EMAIL FROM DONNIE: THIS DISK FORMATTER WILL IMPROVE YOUR PC'S PERFORMANCE. IT AUTO-RUNS, SO BY THE TIME YOU READ THIS, IT WILL BE DONE!
MY WORK!! IT'S ALL GONE!! I WORKED 48 HOURS STRAIGHT ON IT!!!



MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
030 - Casey Jones, errand-vigilante





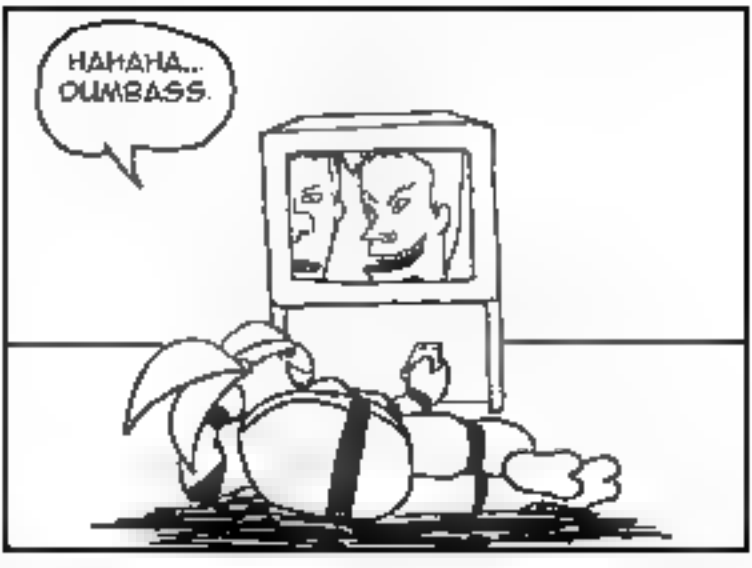

WAIT I DIDN'T FORGET ANYTHING, WHICH MEANS..
SHE'S DESPERATELY TRYING TO FEEL USEFUL BY TALKING TO ME FOR NO REASON! I MUST CHEER HER UP!!


I TOOK TOO MANY WEAPONS. SO PUT THOSE AWAY FOR ME AND YOUR PURPOSE WILL BE FULFILLED.. HAPPY?
YOU'RE A NICE WOMAN WHO'S NOT USELESS.
THAT'S NOT WHAT I MEANT, YOU DAMN CHAUVINIST!!

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
031 - Burning passion



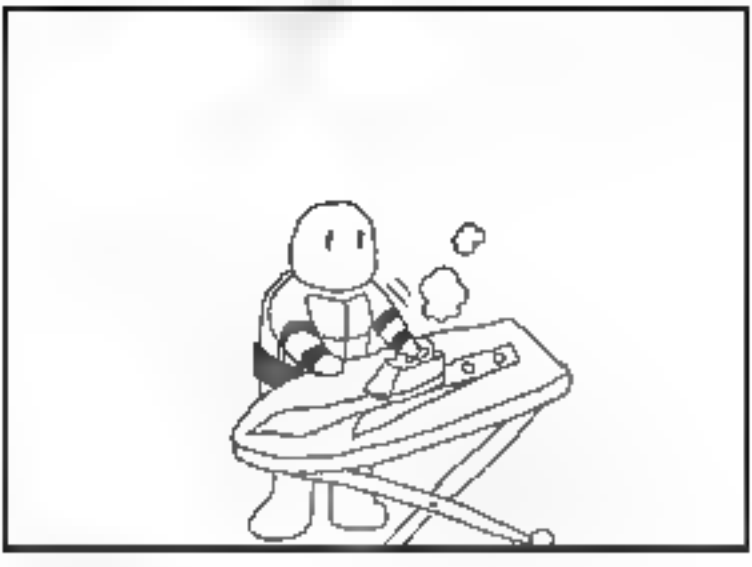


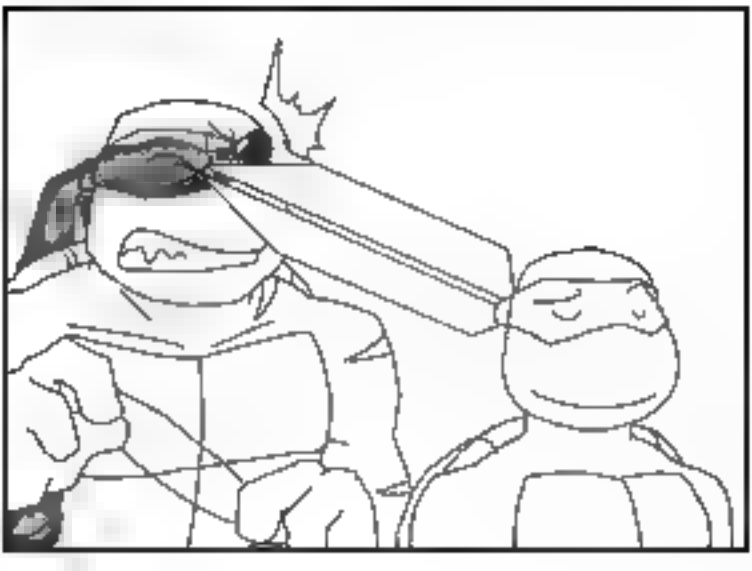


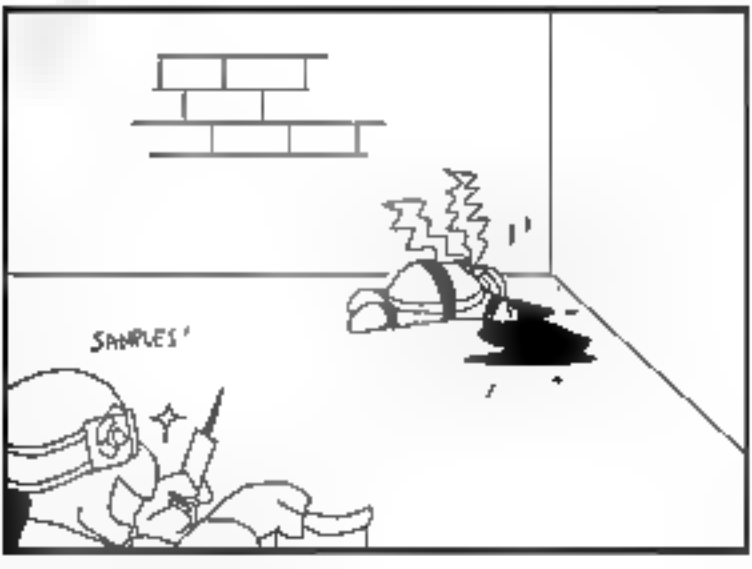


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
032 - Flimsy mask







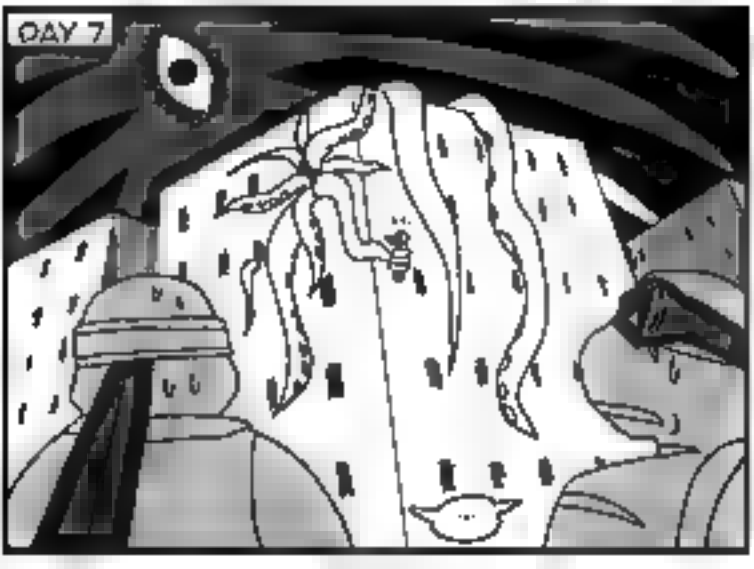


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
033 - Passion for Inspiration


DAY 1
I'M READING BOOKS ABOUT THE OCCULT FOR INSPIRATION, BUT I NEED TOTAL IMMERSION, SO DON'T DISTURB ME FOR A WHILE, OKAY?
OKAY, BUT BE CAREFUL, MIKEY





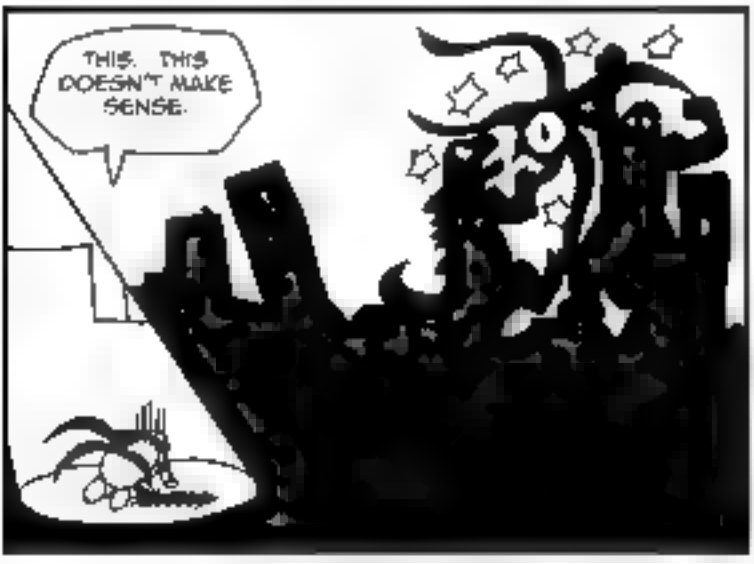


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
034 - Kaijuu attack!





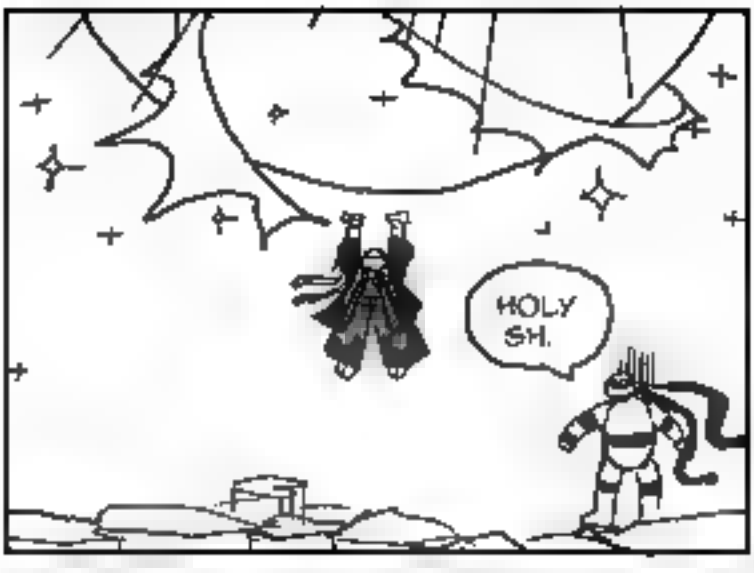


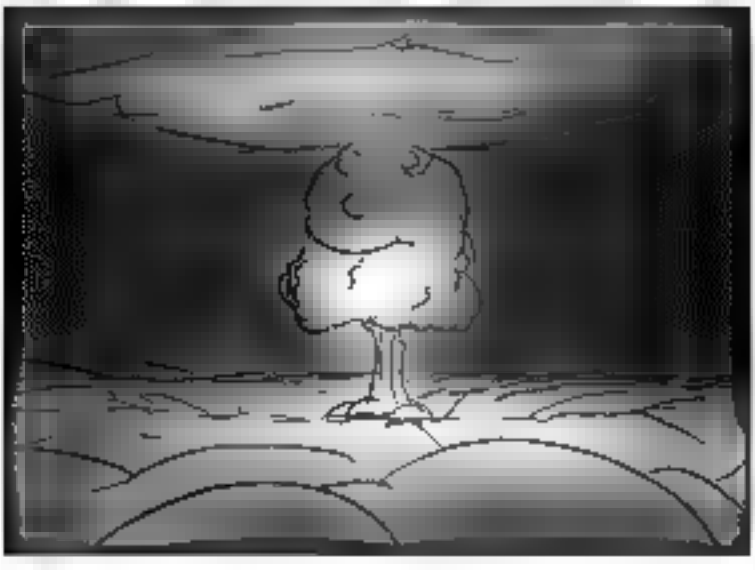


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
035 - Collective mistake

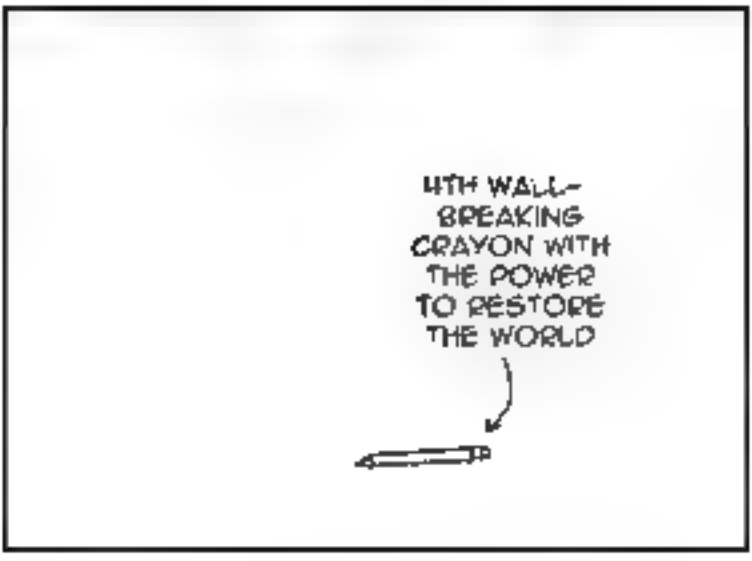


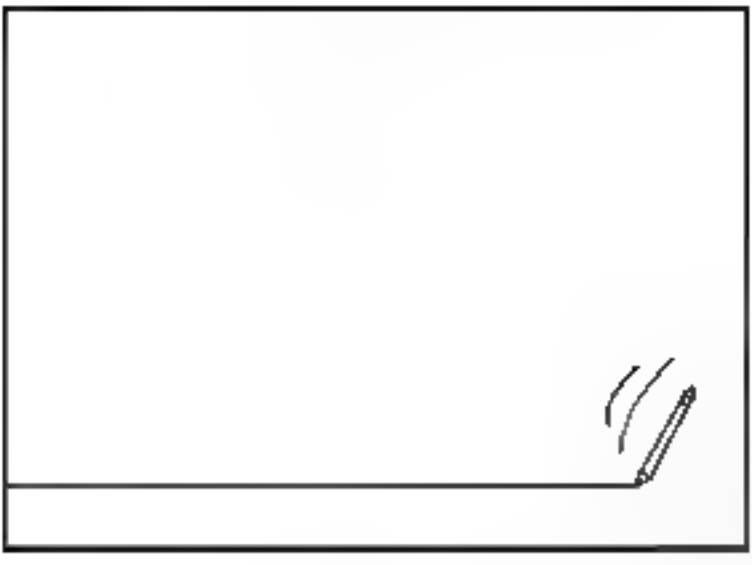


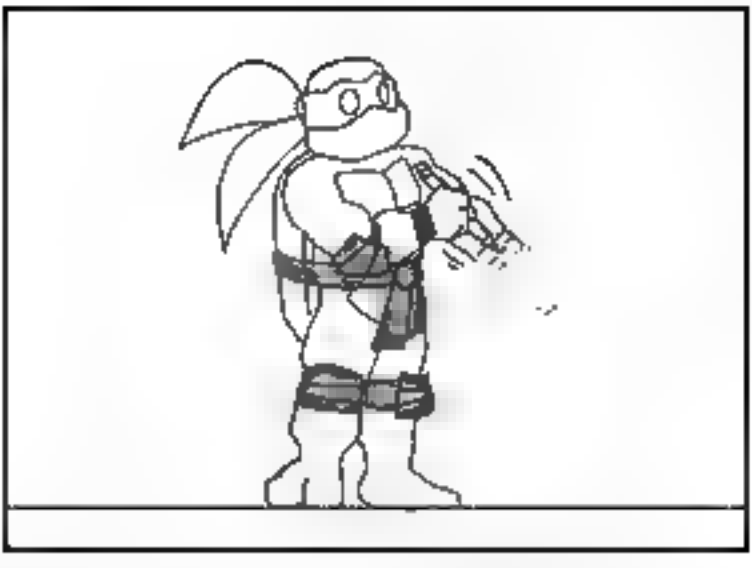




MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
036 - Reboot!

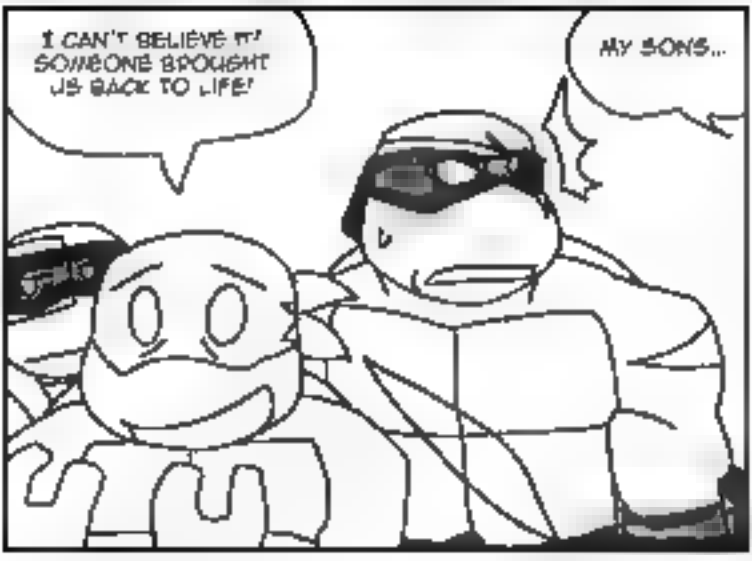






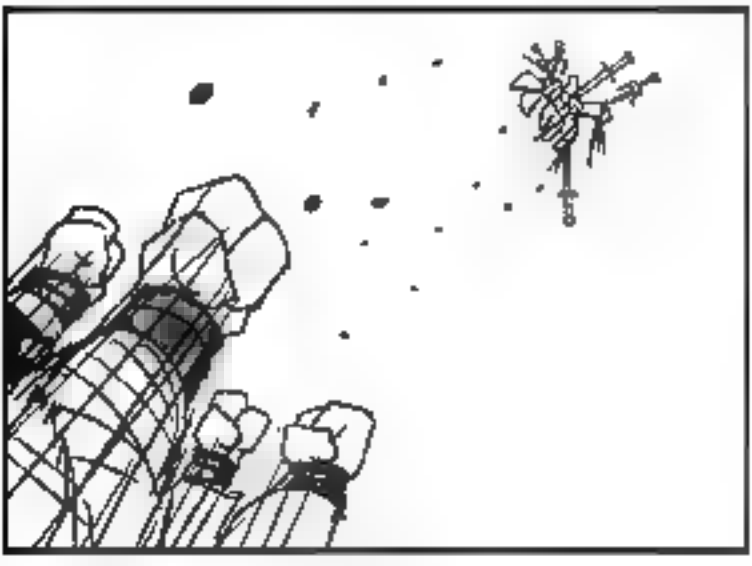


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
037 - Byebye sensei... again.









MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
035 - Abstract sensei


I WENT TO PENCIL'S CRASH SITE AND THIS IS ALL WHAT WAS LEFT OF THE PENCIL... IT'S OUR LAST HOPE TO BRING BACK OUR SENSE!
NO WAY!
NO SAMPLES?

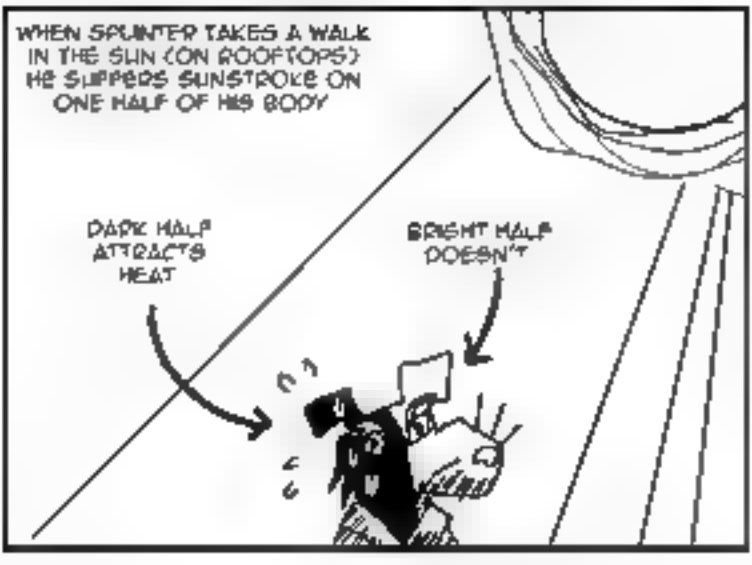


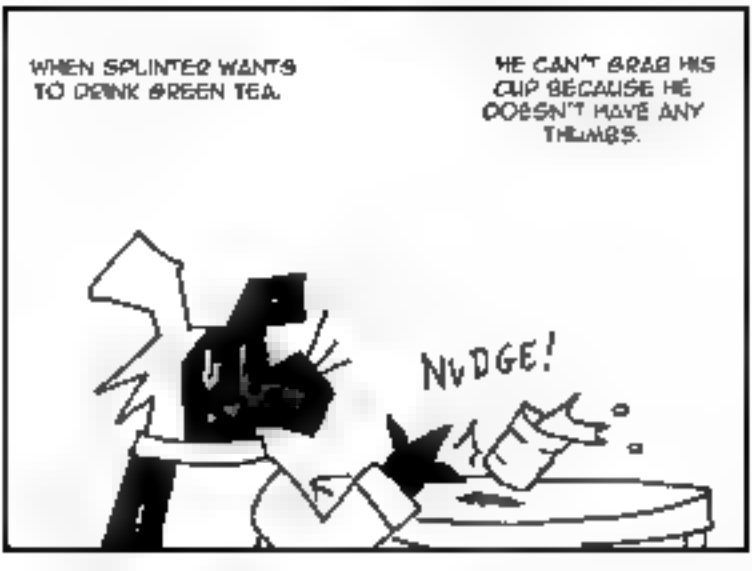




MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
039 - Woes of Picasso Splinter



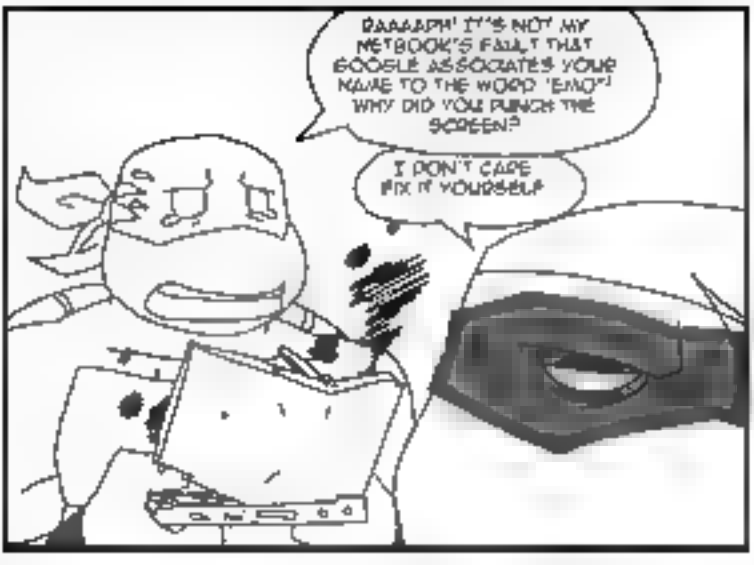

WHEN SPLINTER TAKES A WALK IN THE SUN (ON ROOFTOPS) HE SUFFERS SUNSTROKE ON ONE HALF OF HIS BODY
DARK HALF ATTRACTS HEAT
BRIGHT HALF DOESN'T



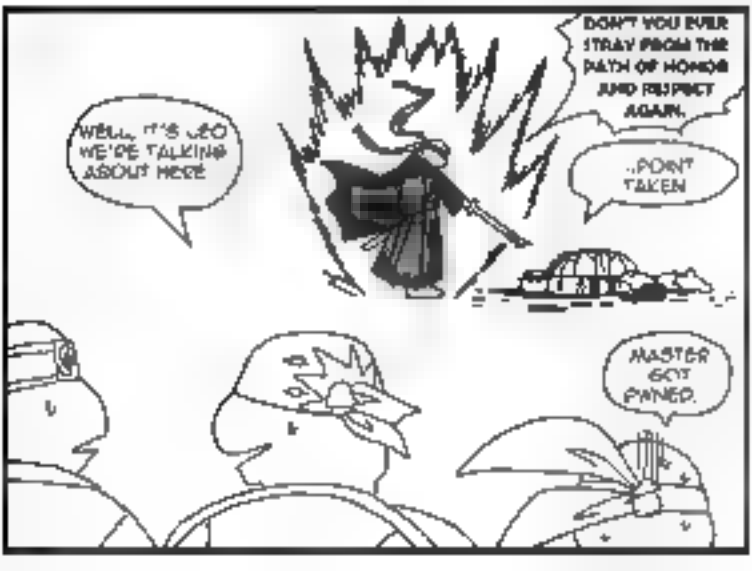


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
040 - Temper control


RAPH! MY HOLOGRAM GENERATOR FLICKERED DURING YOUR TRAINING BUT THAT'S NO REASON TO CHUCK IT AGAINST A WALL!
I DON'T CARE FIX IT YOURSELF


RAAAAPH! IT'S NOT MY NETBOOK'S FAULT THAT GOOGLE ASSOCIATES YOUR NAME TO THE WORD 'EMO'! WHY DID YOU PUNCH THE SCREEN?
I DON'T CARE FIX IT YOURSELF

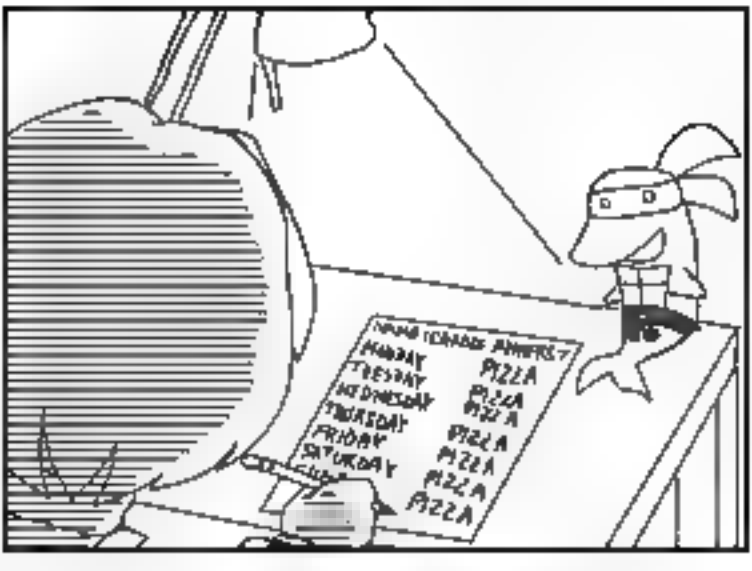



DON'T YOU EVER STRAY FROM THE PATH OF HONOR AND RESPECT AGAIN.
..DON'T TAKEN
WELL, IT'S LEO WE'RE TALKING ABOUT HERE
MASTER GOT PWNED.

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
041 - Balanced Diet




OH? YOU WANT TO HELP ME INSTEAD, SIR?
YOU ARE SAYING THAT THE TEACHER WILL PUT A GOLD STAR ON MY HOMEWORK IF I WRITE THAT?
OKAY
OKAY
THANK YOU, SIR




MASTER! MY SISTER IS UPSET ABOUT NOT GETTING A GOLD STAR OR SOMETHING. DO YOU KNOW ANYTHING ABOUT THIS?
NO ONE CALLS ME FAT AND GETS AWAY WITH IT

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
042 - Blind Socializing

<admin> LOV3RB0I has entered chatroom.

<LOVRB0I> yo, any pretty girls in here??
<n00bLOVR> hey
<LOVRB0I> hello ASL?
<n00bLOVR> 16/F/brooklyn lol you?
<LOVRB0I> 20/M/in ur dreams
<n00bLOVR> just 2 let u knew im not easy 2 get
<LOVRB0I> kk lol i knew how i can make you happy
<n00bLOVR> liek what

<LOVRB0I> my love will be all u need. ur missing it in ur life but u just dont knew it yet.
<n00bLOVR>...
<n00bLOVR> sFDUSIGFASDULIFSDHL
<n00bLOVR> RENOIR!!!111! WTF R U DOING ONLINE SCREWING AROUND???????? IM TRYING 2 LURE OUT PEDOPHILES!!!111!!
<LOVRB0I> omg shadow?????
<n00bLOVR> GTFO R ILL COME AND BEAT U UP /W MY BASEBALL BAT!!!111!!!!1!!!
<LOVRB0I> lelelelol i wanna see u do that ;]
<n00bLOVR> UR GONNA REGRET THIS!!1!!!

<admin> n00bLOVR has left chatroom.

<LOVRB0I> lelelelolelelelelol

<admin> redhead has entered chatroom.

<LOVRB0I> hello ASL?
<redhead> 16/F/manhattan. what r u doing?
<LOVRB0I> lol im hiding from a retarded emo old guy. hes really dumb tho and he wont look in his own room 4 me.

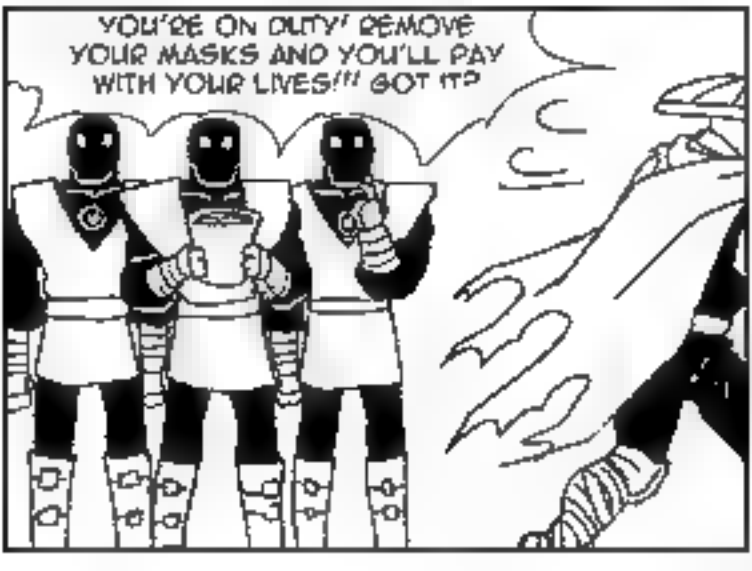
<admin> redhead has left chatroom.



MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
043 - Ninjas are human too





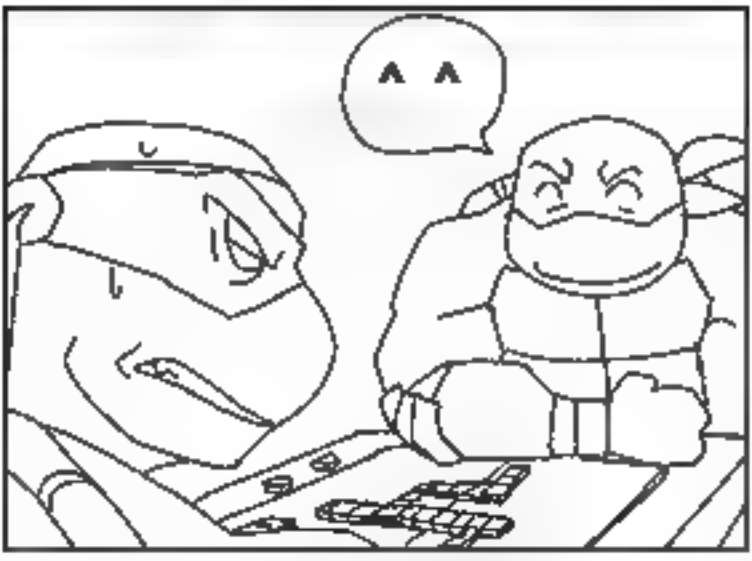


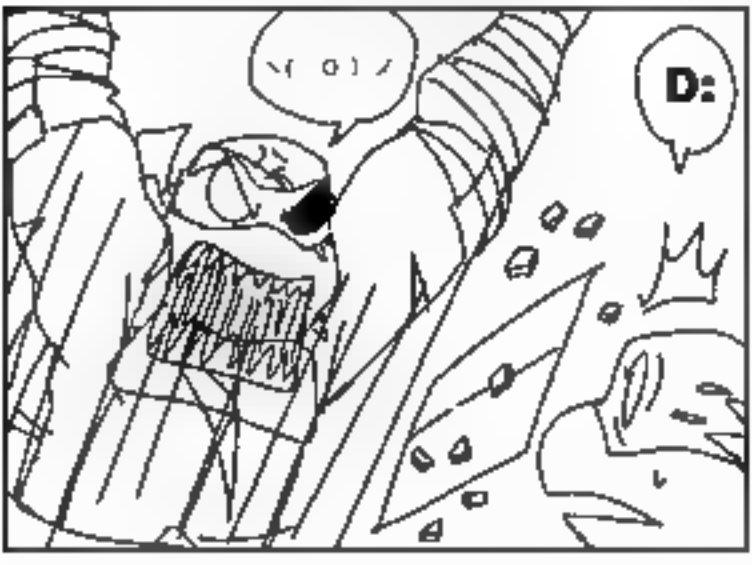


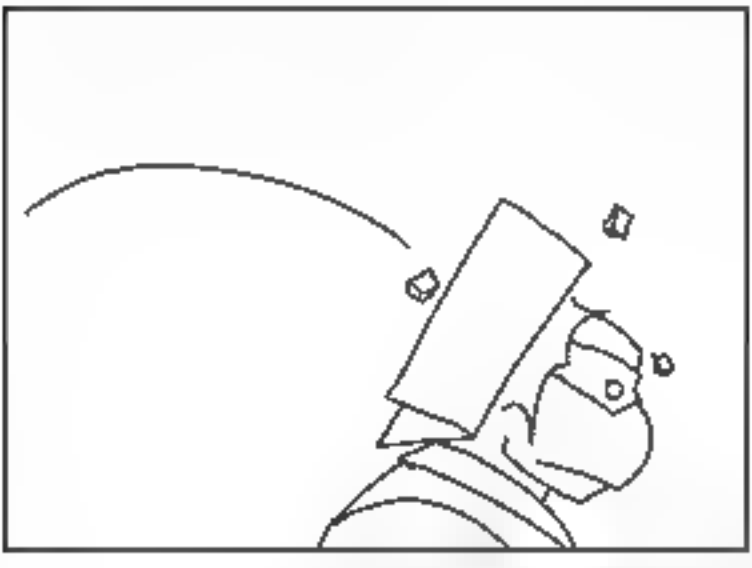
MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
044 - WRONG PARTY!!

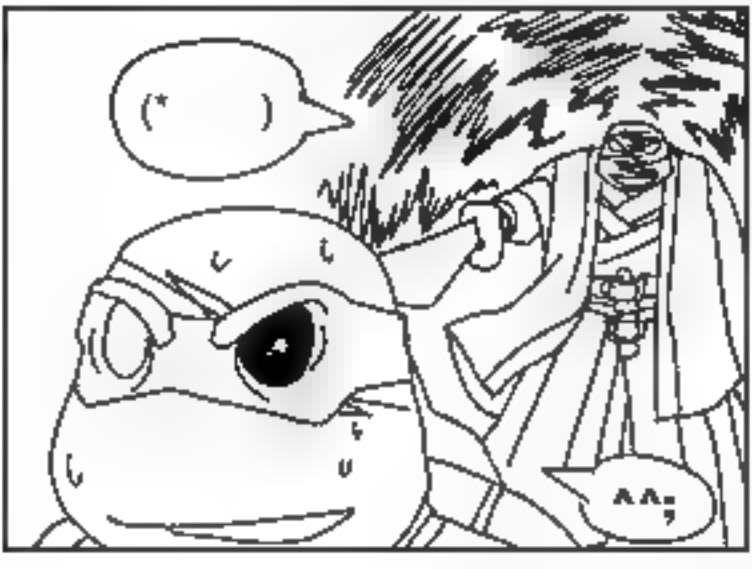


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
045 - Emoticon talk









MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
846 - Smoke's related to your weight?









MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
047 - Raph's willpower







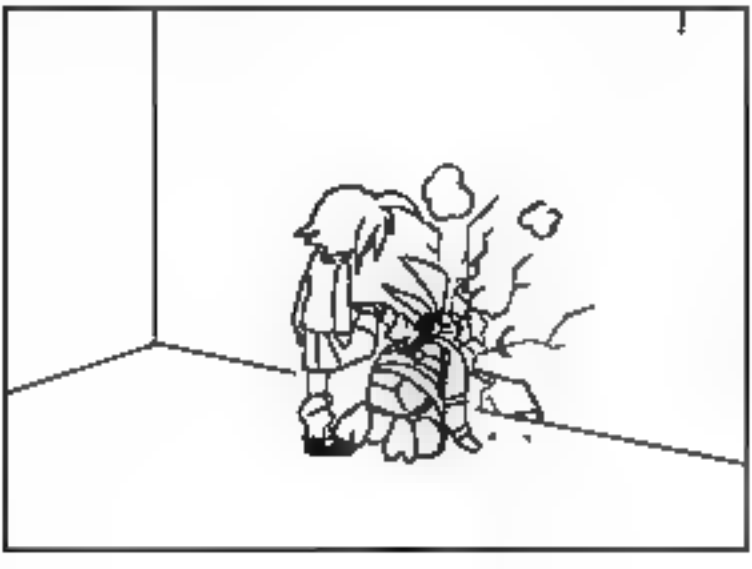


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
048 - Remove it for proof!!









MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
#50 - Writer's block (3)





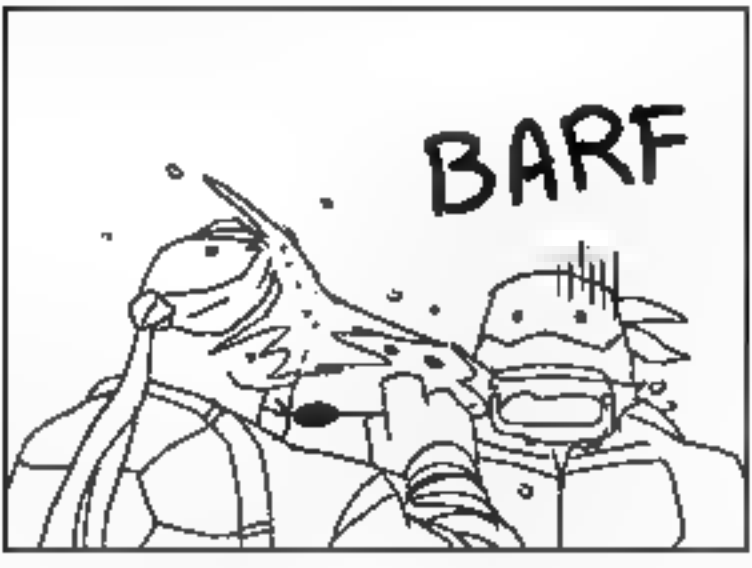

DAD! I PUT THAT SPAGHETTI IN THE FRIDGE SO I COULD BRING IT TO SCHOOL TOMORROW!
OH, SORRY SHADOW.
IT'S OKAY I'LL JUST MAKE A SANDWICH!



MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
051 - Behind the eye





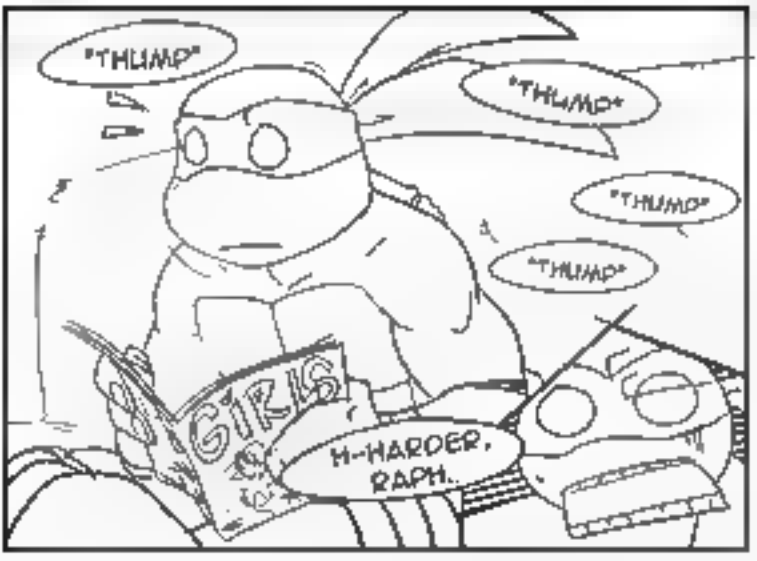


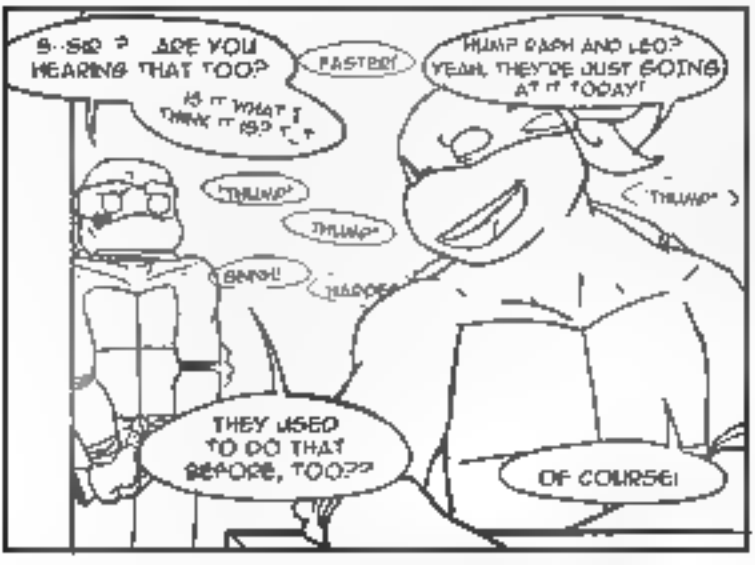


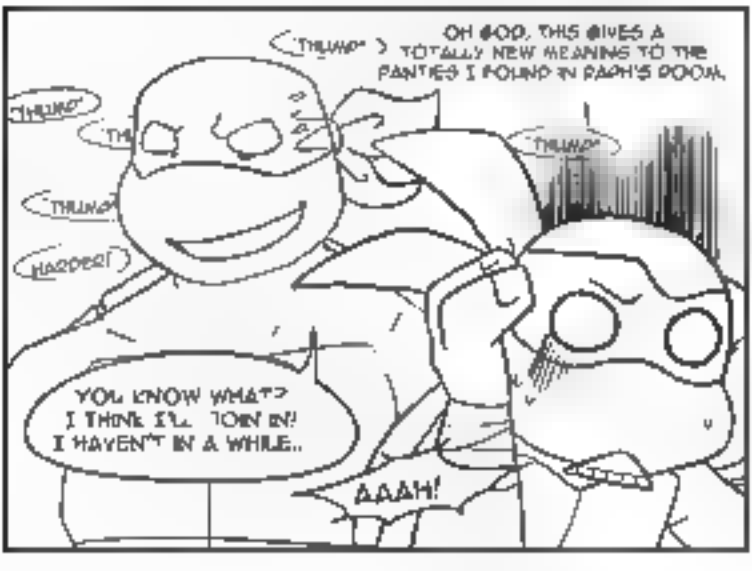
MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
052 - Enter the Mona Lisa

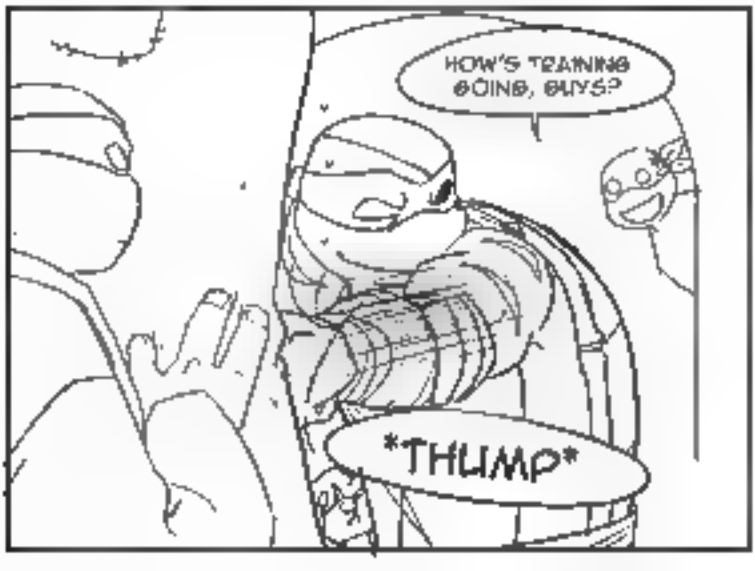

OH HI THERE FELLOW MUTANT!!
MY NAME IS MONA LISA AND I M FROM ANOTHER DIMENSION... I SEEM TO HAVE ACCIDENTALLY DRIFTED INTO YOURS!
WELL, UNTIL HELP COMES, I'D LIKE TO SEE WHAT MY "BOYFRIEND" RAPHAEL LOOKS LIKE IN YOUR WORLD!
?
?
MODE: FEMALE MIND ANALYSIS
WHA... WHAT IS IT?
YOU'RE LYING YOU'RE LOOKING FOR ANOTHER GUY CUZ YOU NEVER WERE OFFICIALLY TOGETHER WITH YOUR EX.
ACUTALLY, YEAH THAT S WHY I WAS ONLY IN A SINGLE EPISODE
RAPH COMPLETELY FORGOT ABOUT ME

Quest MNT Gaiden 4KOMA by Sneffee
053 - (Slight misunderstanding.)



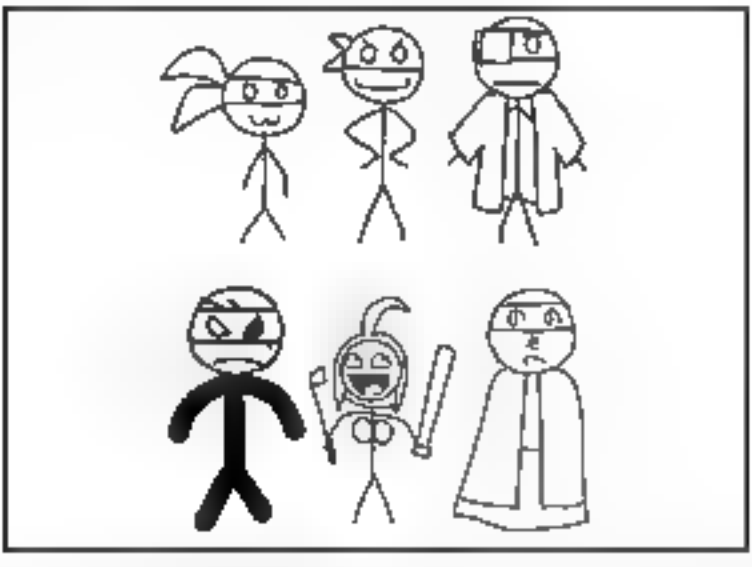



"THUMP"
OH GOD, THIS GIVES A TOTALLY NEW MEANING TO THE PANTIES I FOUND IN RAPH'S ROOM.
"THUMP"
"THUMP"
"THUMP"
"THUMP"
HARDER!
YOU KNOW WHAT? I THINK I'LL JOIN IN! I HAVEN'T IN A WHILE..
AAAH!

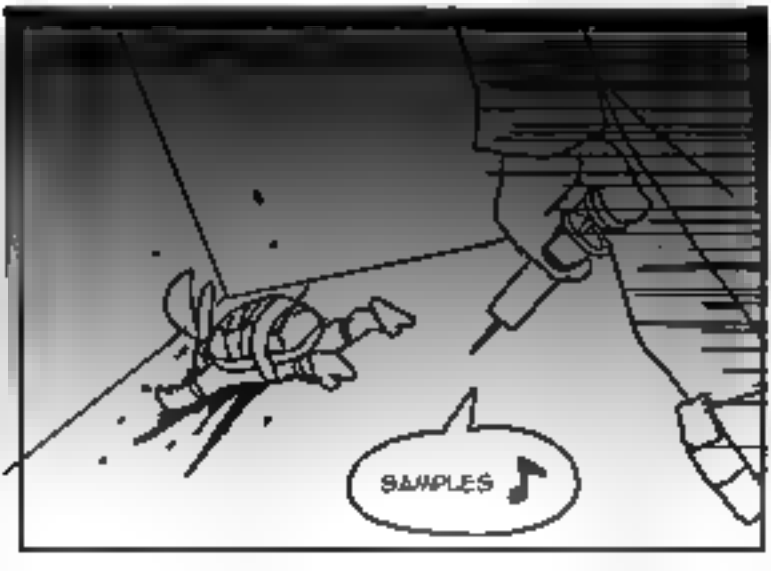


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
054 - Scribblez



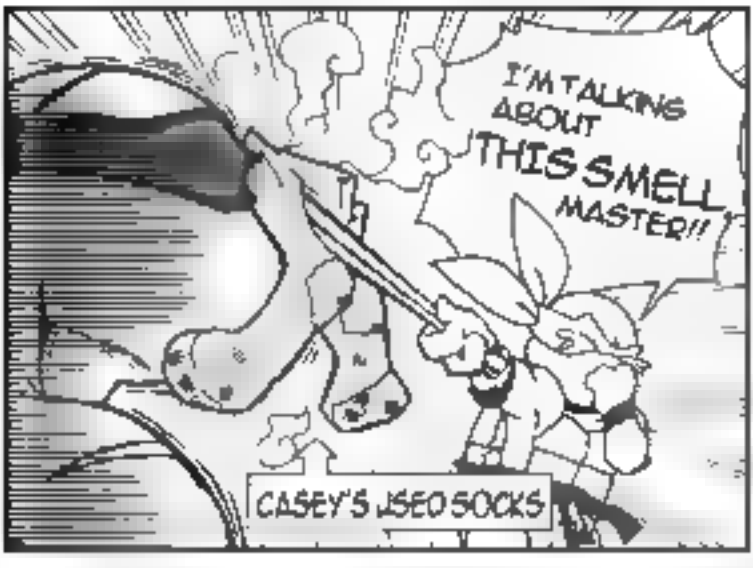







I BROUGHT A SOUVENIR FROM JAPAN FOR YOU GUYS. IT'S GOOD FOR YOUR HEALTH!
THIS IS NATTO!
IT'S DELICIOUS! DO YOU WANT TO TRY SOME?

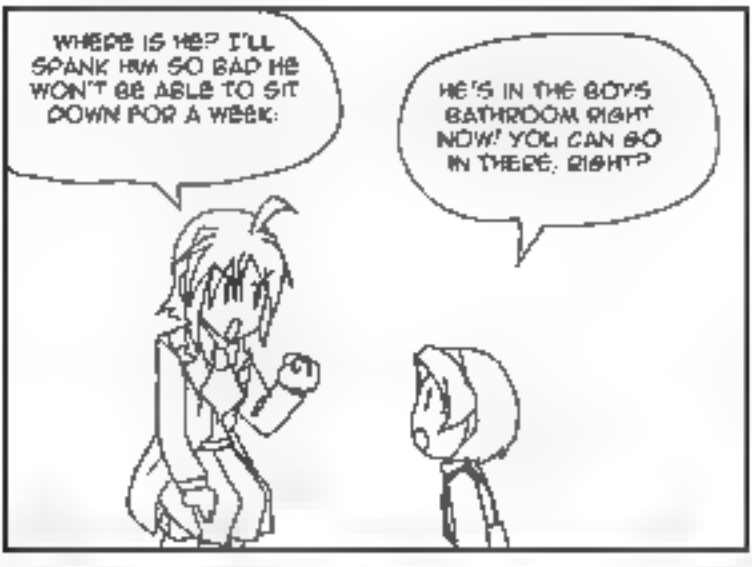

IT SMELL SO MUCH LIKE _THAT_ "THING" FROM MR.JONES!!
EEEEW! STINKY!!!
EH? WHAT'CHA TALKIN' ABOUT?

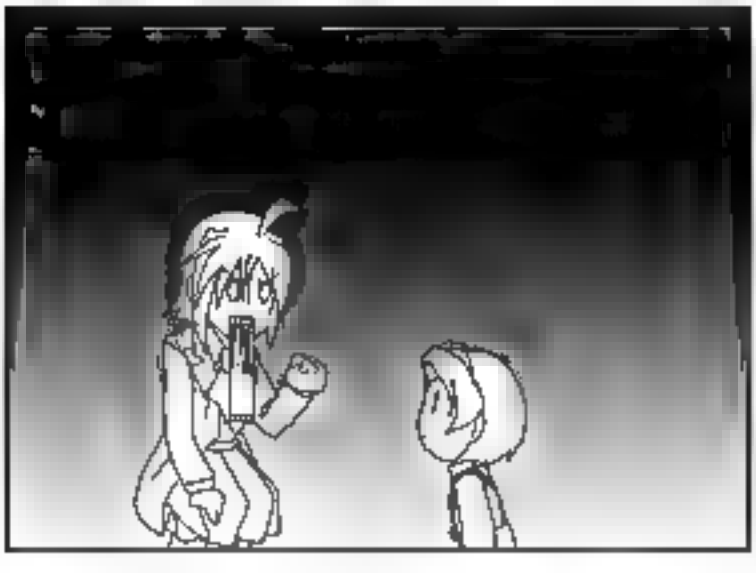

I'M TALKING ABOUT THIS SMELL MASTER!!
CASEY'S JSEO SOCKS


BWAAAAAAR!
For Sample!
MIKEY OPEN WIDE.
NO WAY!!!

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
056 - Shadow's Identity




WHERE IS HE? I'LL SPANK HIM SO BAD HE WON'T BE ABLE TO SIT DOWN FOR A WEEK!
HE'S IN THE BOYS BATHROOM RIGHT NOW! YOU CAN GO IN THERE, RIGHT?







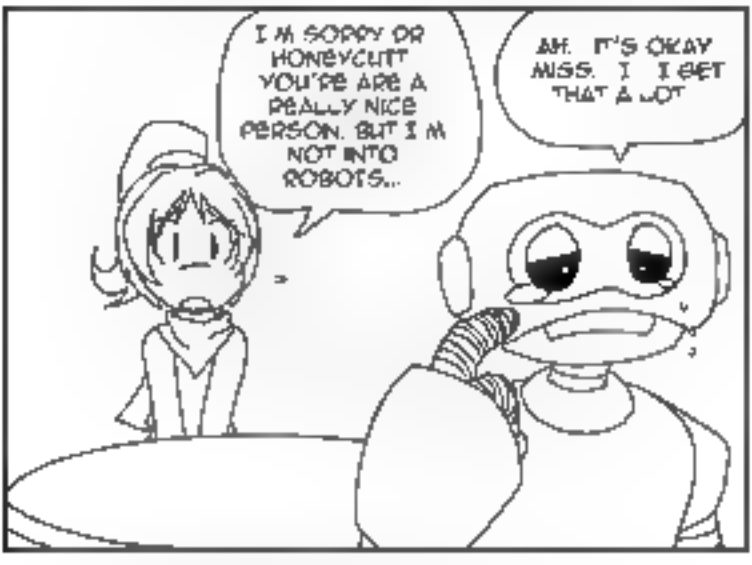




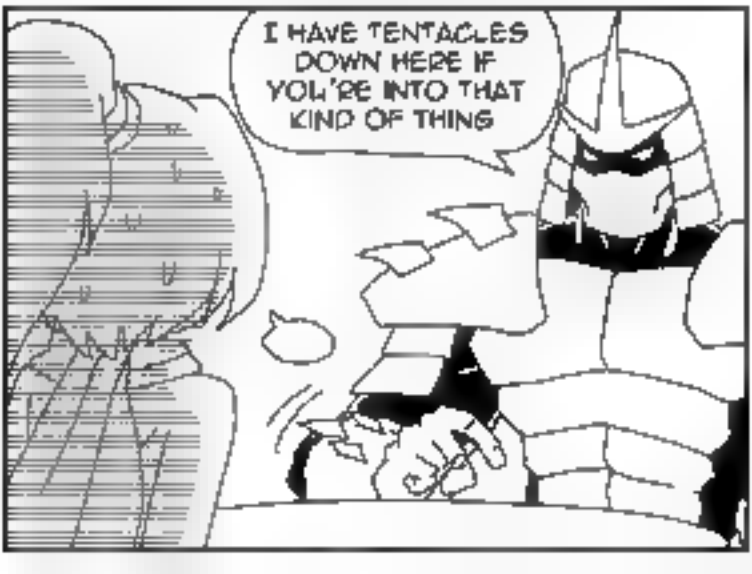

I AM A WOMAN AND I HAVE THE RIGHT TO DEFEND MYSELF!

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
058 - Mona Lisa's Speed Dates


TODAY I MONA LISA SHALL TRY TO FIND MY SOULMATE THROUGH SPEED DATING!
THAT WAS MY IDEA, RIGHT SUGARPLUM?
KEEP YOUR HANDS OFF ME

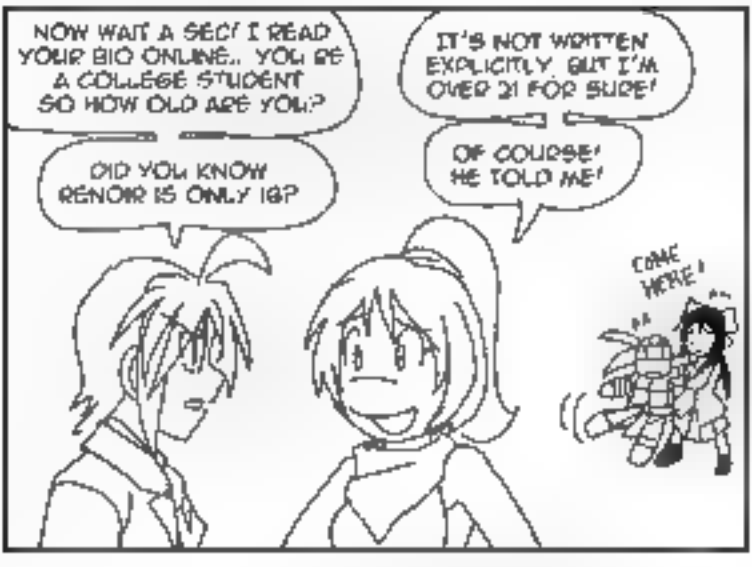




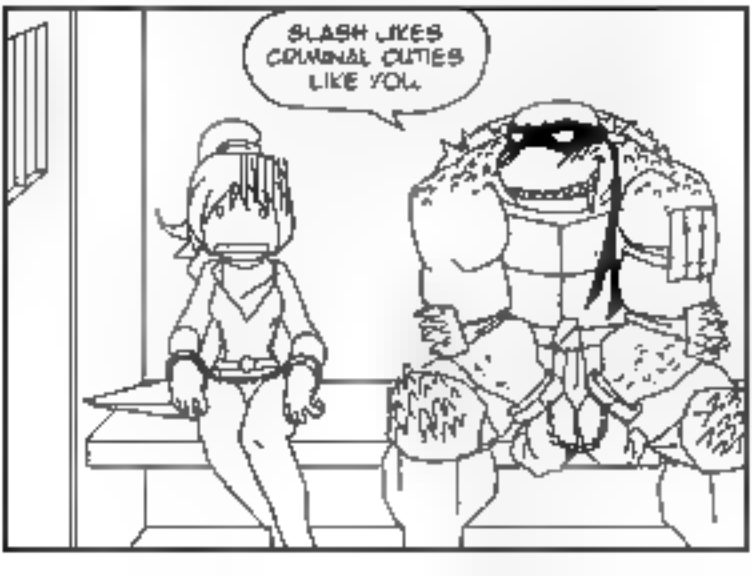


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
059 - Not legally correct




NOW WAIT A SEC! I READ YOUR BIO ONLINE.. YOU'RE A COLLEGE STUDENT SO HOW OLD ARE YOU?
DID YOU KNOW RENOIR IS ONLY 18?
IT'S NOT WRITTEN EXPLICITLY, BUT I'M OVER 21 FOR SURE!
OF COURSE! HE TOLD ME!
COME HERE!


AAAAAWWWW WHAT ARE YOU DOING? SPREADING THE NEWS ABOUT ME AND RENOIR BEING TOGETHER?
YES. AND I'M USING AN EMERGENCY HOTLINE

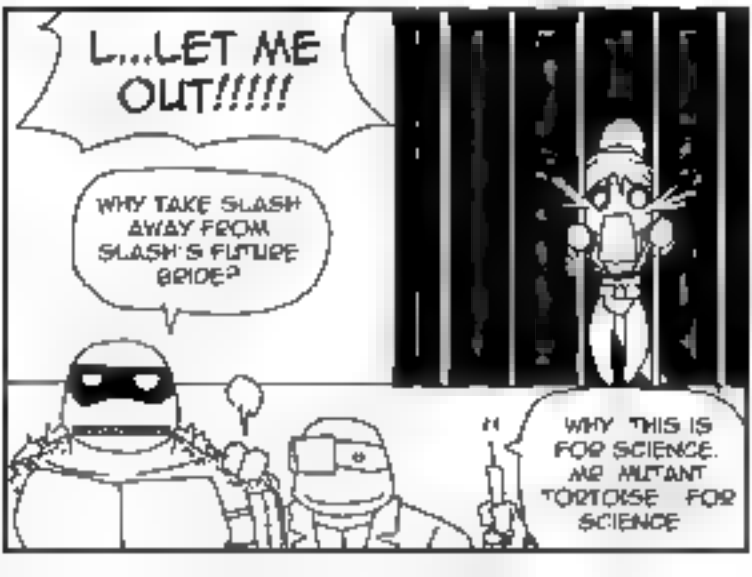


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
060 - Bailing out for science

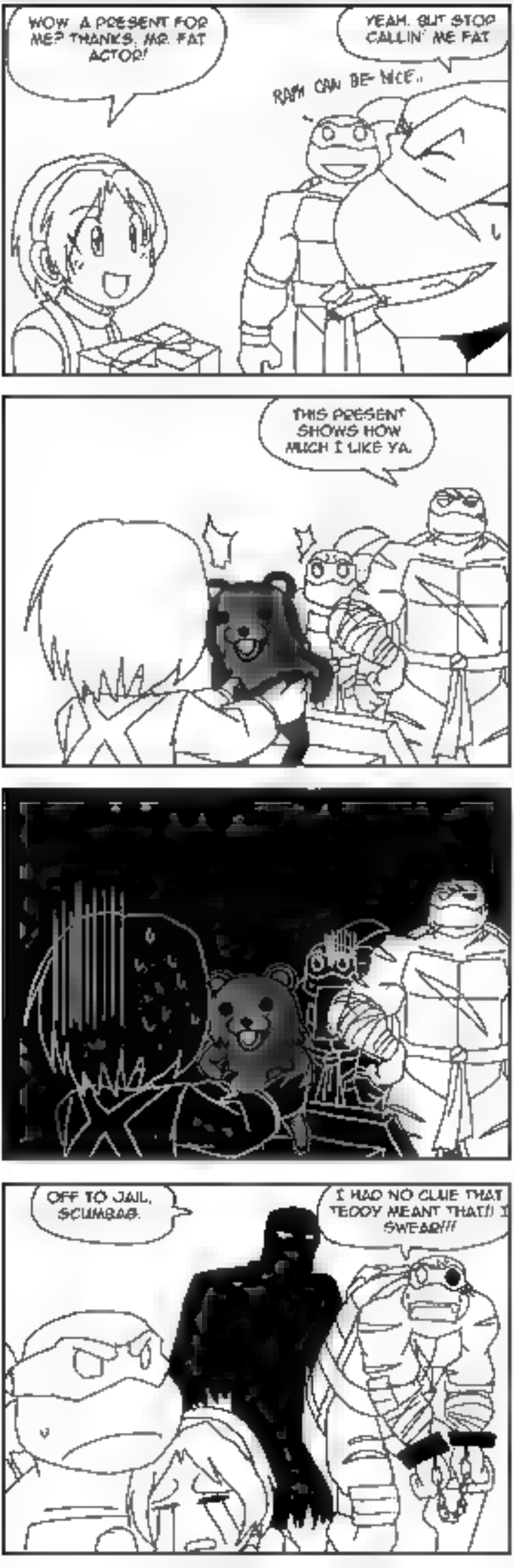

OKAY SLIMEBALL!! NEXT TIME YOU MENTION ANYTHING ABOUT "MATING" AGAIN, I'LL CHOKE YOU TILL YOUR HEAD TURNS WHITE! GOT IT???
S. SLASH LIKES VIOLENT GIRLS!!







MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
051 - Common sense, know your internet memes.

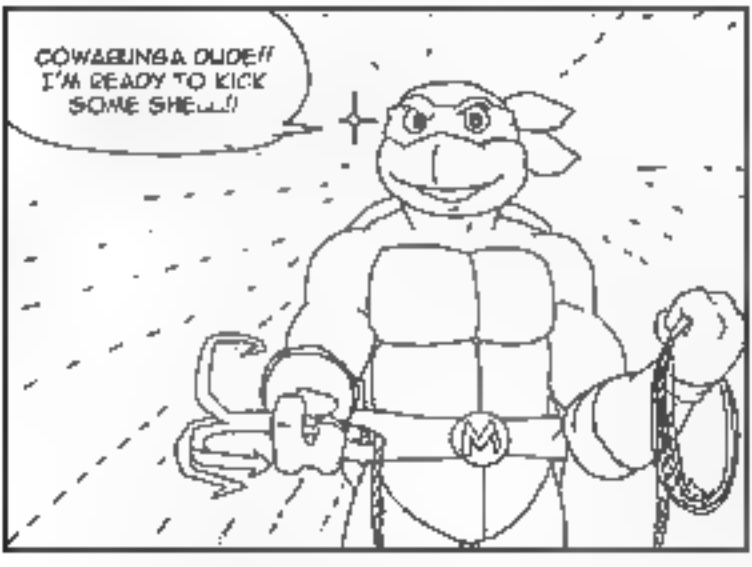

WOW. A PRESENT FOR ME? THANKS, MR. FAT ACTOR!
YEAH. BUT STOP CALLIN' ME FAT
RAWR CAN BE NICE..
THIS PRESENT SHOWS HOW MUCH I LIKE YA.
OFF TO JAIL, SCUMBAG.
I HAD NO CLUE THAT TEDDY MEANT THAT!! I SWEAR!!!

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
062 - First reactions

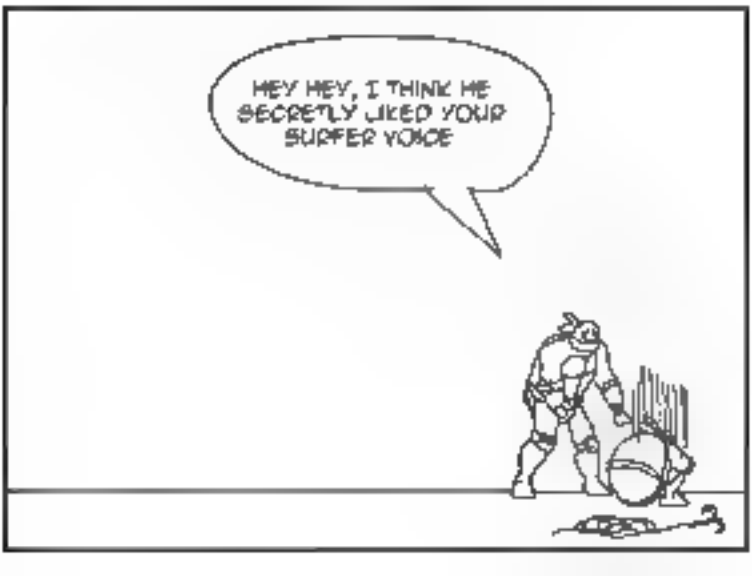

WHOA.. I WALK INTO DONATELLO'S MODIFIED FRIDGE AND HERE I AM IN A WHOLE NEW WORLD...!!
WHOA!! ANOTHER ME!!
HOLY COW!!!
...
A. ARE THOSE EYES REAL? CUZ I CAN SEE YOUR IRISES THROUGH YOUR MASK
OUCH! DUDE!! WHAT'S YOUR PROBLEM?

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
063 - Thanks to censorship...


WHAT? YOUR SELF FROM ANOTHER UNIVERSE WILL JOIN US IN OUR RAID ON THE PURPLE DRAGONS HIDEOUT?
YESSS! I'LL INTRODUCE YOU TO HIM!




HUH? OKAY LESSEE HERE
A GRAPPLING HOOK FOR A WEAPON? THAT'S NO CLOSE RANGE WEAPON.
WHY "KICK SHELL" INSTEAD OF KICK ASS? I THINK THAT'S A HINT THAT THIS GUY'S TOO MUCH OF A SOFTIE TO HANDLE REAL HUMAN CRIMINALS
YAH, AND HE'S CLEARLY HIGH. JUST LISTEN TO HIS RASPY VOICE. SAYING "DUDE" JUST MAKES IT MORE OBVIOUS

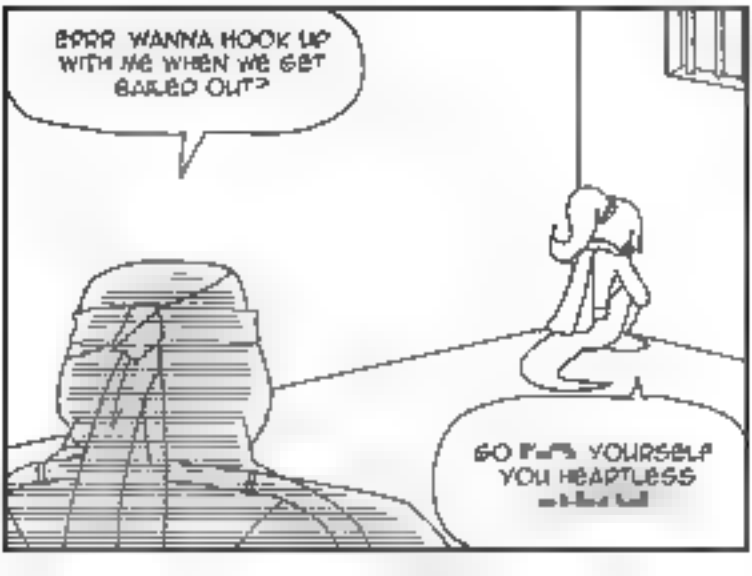


MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
064 - Who is worse?


OH. SO WE MEET AGAIN, RAPHAEL. WHAT ARE YOU IN FOR?
I ACCIDENTALLY GAVE A PEDOPHILE TEDDY BEAR TO A SIX YEAR OLD GIRL AND NOW I'M BRANDED A PEDOPHILE



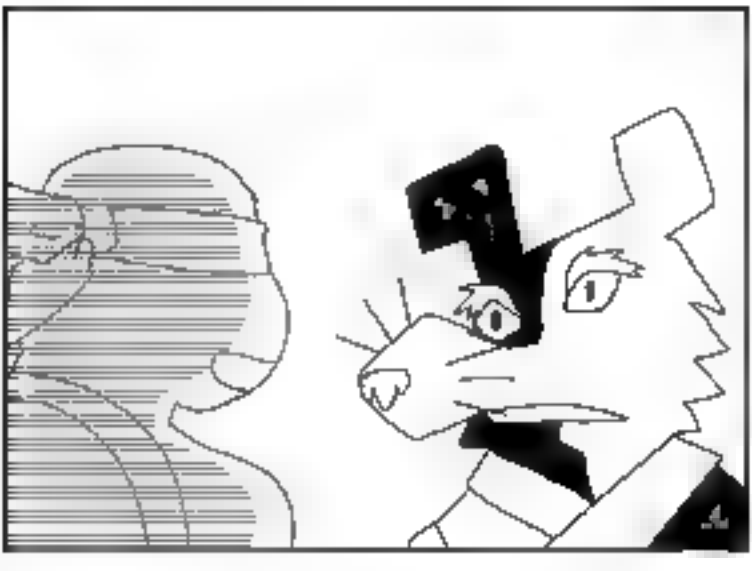

OH YEAH? WELL AT LEAST IT AIN'T INTENTIONAL!
I HEARD YA TRIED DATIN' RENOIR EVEN THOUGH YOU KNEW HE WAS UNDERAGE! THAT MAKES YA AN WHORE! A PEDOPHILE! A CRIMINAL! A SEXUAL DEVIANT!!
YA BITCH!



MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
065 - Reappearnace of Picasso-Splinter sensei





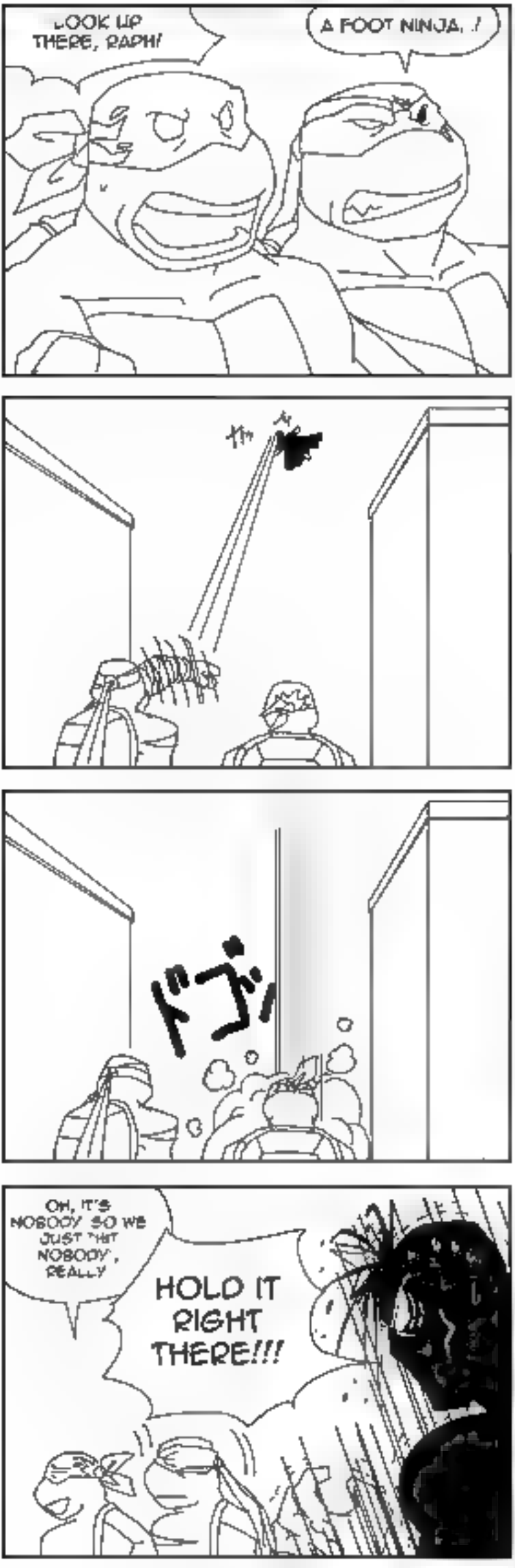




MNT Raiden 4KOMA
066 - In debt Raphael


THANKS FOR BAILIN' ME OUT, BRO!!
LEAVE OUT TOO!!
URGH. I HAD TO PAY A 2000$ BOND. CAN YOU PAY ME BACK LATER?
YEAH. WELL... I AIN'T GOT A PENNY ON ME OR AT MY LAIR
MONEY DOESN'T GROW ON TREES, RAPH..
I HEARD DONNIE MAKES SOME INCOME. MAYBE YOU CAN SELL HIM YOUR SERVICES SOMEHOW..
WHAT? DONNIE HAS MONEY?
SAMPLES
MASTER! HOW CAN YOU DO THIS TO ME??
REMEMBER DONNIE IT'S 5$ PER ML OF HIS BLOOD

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
057 - It's a bird? It's a plane? No!, it's...

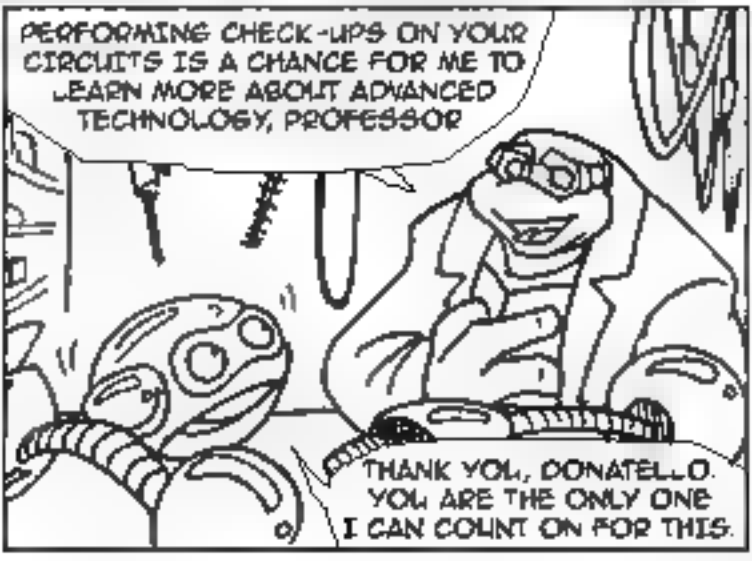


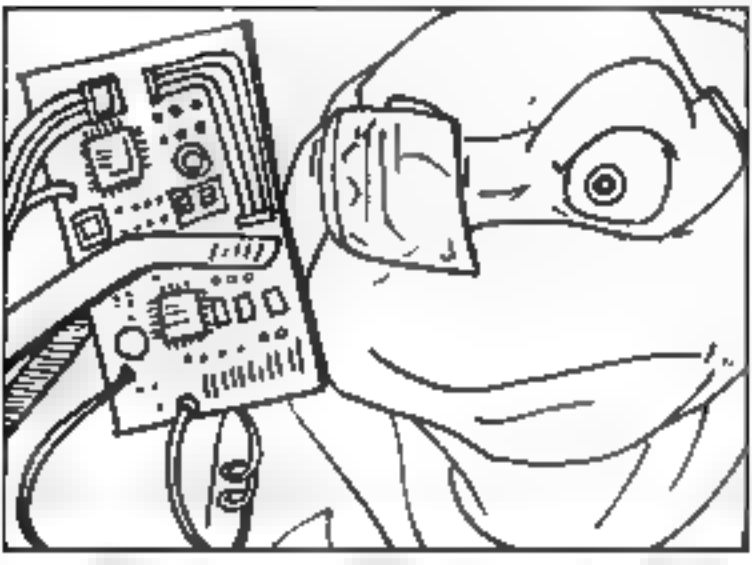
MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
068 - Cheap scares



MNT GAIDEN BAKABAKASHII 069 - WITH LOVE FROM AKIHABARA

GUEST STRIP BY KAT
THEBLINDALLEY.DEVIATNART.COM


PERFORMING CHECK-UPS ON YOUR CIRCUITS IS A CHANCE FOR ME TO LEARN MORE ABOUT ADVANCED TECHNOLOGY, PROFESSOR
THANK YOU, DONATELLO. YOU ARE THE ONLY ONE I CAN COUNT ON FOR THIS.



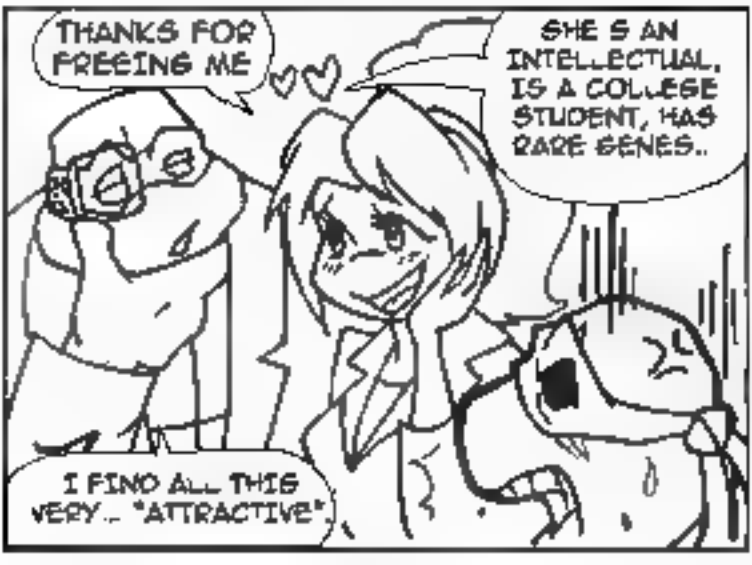


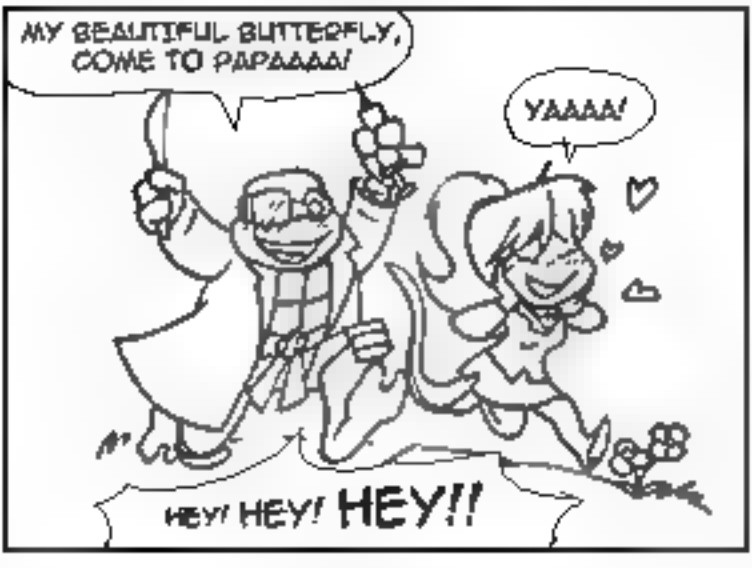


MNT GAIDEN BAKABAKASHII 070 - OLD-NEW RECRUIT

GUEST STRIP BY KAT
THEBLINDALLEY.DEVIATNART.COM









MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
071 - Leo's medication




JUST ONCE I'D LIKE TO SEE HOW HE IS WHEN HE'S "HAPPY"
HOW ABOUT SLIPPING SOME HAPPY PILLS IN LEO'S TEACUPP
HM. NOT A BAD IDEA, DONNIE




IT'S NOT EASY BEING GREEEN!
OH MY, I USED SAD PILLS INSTEAD OF HAPPY PILLS OH WELL. COME RENOIR YOUR MASTER'S BUSY. LET'S DO SOME EXPERIMENTS
HMMFF!!!
DONIIIEEE!!

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
072 - Karai, curry, karree.









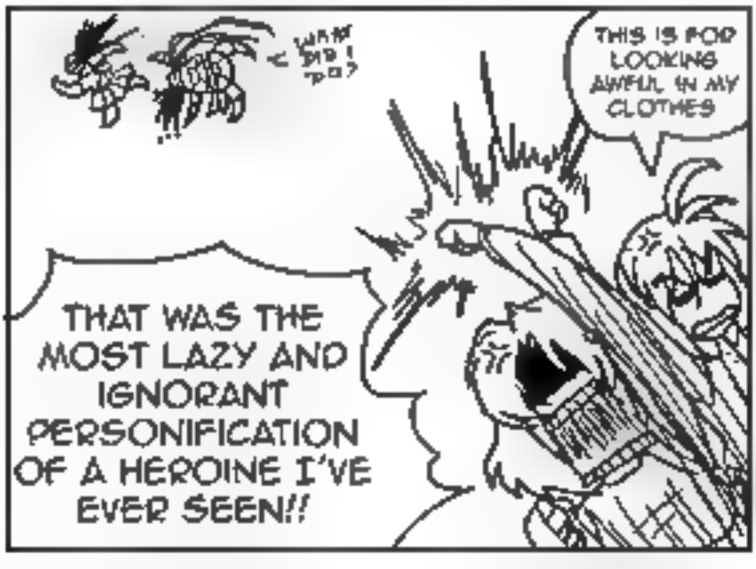
*"KARAI" MEANS "SPICY" IN JAPANESE

MNT Gaiden 4KOMA
#73 - Desperate for Ideas




RAPH, BUDDY! HELP ME OUT HERE!!
COME ON! I'M OUT OF IDEAS! JUST SAY ANYTHING!!
I M HUNGOVER TALK TO ME LATER..
I DUNNO! GET IN CHARACTER! DRESS UP! NOW GO AWAY!




WHAT DID I DO?
THIS IS FOR LOOKING AWFUL IN MY CLOTHES
THAT WAS THE MOST LAZY AND IGNORANT PERSONIFICATION OF A HEROINE I'VE EVER SEEN!!




EAT
GYM
SLEEP
DRAW
SOCIAL
NETWORK
PALS
VIDE
GAM



